

SWALLOWED STAR

BOOK 05

I Eat Tomatoes

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Swallowed Star

(*The Legend Of Spacewalker*)

(*Tun Shi Xing Kong*)

(吞噬星空)

by

I Eat Tomatoes

(*Wo Chi Xi Hong Shi*)

(我吃西红柿)

Synopsis

Year 2056, in a city in the Yuan Jiang Su Jin area.

On top of a ruined, shattered six story residential apartment sits a teenager wearing a combat vest, militaristic trousers, and alloyed battle boots.

On his back is a hexagonal shield and equipped is a blood-shadow battle knife.

He sits there silently on the edge of the roof. At this time, the sparkling sky was shining and there was a refreshing breath within the air that blew towards him.

However, there was only silence within the ruined, deserted city, with an occasional howl that makes your heart skip a beat.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by the team @ Wuxia Translations, Translation Nations, and Qidian International.

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Volume 12: *Universe Secret Region*

Chapter 1 – Absolute Beginning

Yu Xiang Mountain common region, Wan Yu tower's 9th level.

Sitting beside the railing, with a glance one could see the distant mountains and spring water.

"Then the Virtual Universe Company, seeing how well the Ping Hai company was doing with it's great growth and its huge scale, hence they bought the firm. Also, back then they were prepared to offer only 6 times..." Xu Xin sat at the other end of the table, explaining to Luo Feng how she became a core member of the Virtual Universe Company.

"Our company's capital increased 10 fold in a short while..."

"That was very dangerous back then. Luckily your younger brother Luo Hua got his people to help circulate the funds."

"...finally before you left primal chaos city, we reached the goal..."

Luo Feng sat there and stared at his wife as she spoke. He had mixed feelings within, he felt incredibly moved from the depths of his heart. He truly never really expected his strong business minded wife of his, to work so hard. All for the sake of standing beside him, to be closer to him.

"Geniuses will make others feel the pressure." Babata's voice

resounded in his mind. “When they are with other geniuses, they will only see themselves get left further and further behind. No matter how much harder they work, the distance will only grow. Hence...the friends of geniuses, are mostly all geniuses!”

Luo Feng was stunned.

Right!

His high school friends from when he was young, just how many of them does he actually keep in touch with now? Even his childhood friend who grew up with him, someone as close as a brother Mei Wen, he only occasionally meets with him in the virtual universe. Even when it comes to his relatives, he only sees them occasionally. However Rong Jun, Wuka etc, he meets much more often.

“Watching her own husband make it in the universe, with his status rising further. Your wife naturally felt happy and proud. However, you were leaving her further and further behind, even to the point of meeting her only once in ten years! What kind of impact will that have on your wife?”

“Hence!”

“Your wife wanted to get closer to you, stand by your side, and not get left behind!” Babata exclaimed.

.....

Babata's voice resounded in his mind. Looking at his wife before him who was still speaking, "Just like that, I became a core member of the Virtual Universe Company. I am capable right?" Xu Xin shifted her nose and raised her head proudly, following which she looked embarrassed at Luo Feng. "The company's buy over and so on, I never once asked for your opinion. You are not angry right? You passed all responsibility to me back then to control the company, and even said you were training in primal chaos city, with no time to..."

Silence.

Luo Feng extended his arm to hold hers.

"Xu Xin." Luo Feng looked at his wife who was in front of him.

"Hm?" Xu Xin was stunned.

"Sorry." Luo Feng said softly She could hear the guilt and shame in his voice.

Xu Xin's eyes teared up.

Virtual universe headquarters, it was an incredibly vast continent in the universe. In comparison, even planets and stars seemed like little dots.

“Primal region members Bolan and Long Yun who are heading to the primal secret region, you’ll have to follow the knight and leave with him. Wait here for the knight.

Absolute beginning members, you’ll head that way. Have a seat in that grey meteorite universe ship.”

“Heaven and ground members, you’ll sit in that 2nd purple ship.”

“Last phase members, you’ll take that 3rd largest ship, the black one.” Standing in the meeting room was a silver robed lady. Her voice resounded, simultaneously pointing through the transparent glass at the 3 ships that had just landed. “You can leave right now.”

Rumble...

816 youths stood up together.

“The 4 secret regions are all in different places. We brothers will only be able to meet in the virtual universe in the future.”

“We’ll leave first.”

“Goodbye.”

The friends said their goodbyes, Bolan and Long Yun remained in the meeting room. The rest of them followed the exit out and

waited outside, naturally forming their groups and heading to the different ships.

“Your majesty Rong Jun, Your majesty Luo Feng, Your majesty Qian Shui…” That meteorite looking ship’s cabin door opened and a handsome looking and polite man with blood red long hair smiled as he welcomed the 8 members of the absolute beginning. While entering the ship, Luo Feng turned back to look at the meeting room.

It was a pity that from the outside, one couldn’t see through the windows of the meeting room. But Luo Feng could feel…within, that someone was looking at him.

“Bolan, you are my current level’s rival.” Luo Feng thought, following which he entered.

……

After a while.

The 3 F grade ships, with a rumble, flew and left.

Within the meeting room, Bolan and Long Yun were awaiting the 9 blade knight. They both looked out the glass at the 3 ships that were leaving.

“Luo Feng! Rong Jun!” Long Yun looked on, that heart yearning for victory was burning strong, “I will exceed you two, definitely!”

The 3 ships very quickly accelerated to light speed, entering universe transfer. As the absolute beginning, heaven and ground and last phase secret regions were at different locations, the 3 ships had long separated and headed in their own directions.

Dark universe.

A meteorite was swiftly flying, accelerating more and more, 20 times light speed, 21 times...

Within the meeting room of the dining hall of the meteorite.

“Welcome all of you to the absolute beginning region.” There were 9 undyings at the long table and 8 universe level youths. The person speaking was a tall and sturdy man with 18 horns and scales all over his face. His entire being emitted a strong and fierce aura. “I, Meteorite emperor will protect you as you head towards the absolute beginning region.”

“Thank you Meteorite emperor!”

Luo Feng, Rong Jun and the rest of the 8 bowed.

“Haha...” Meteorite emperor laughed loudly. The scales on his face creased slightly, making one’s heart palpitate. “Let me tell you all first, the 4 secret regions are in completely different locations They are not even in the same universe country.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng and the rest of them were shocked.

The territory of a universe country was incredibly vast.

“The primal region is the closest to the headquarters. It’s in the same universe country as the headquarters! Next is the absolute beginning, and then the heaven and ground region. The last phase region is the furthest away.” Meteorite emperor’s voice was like a metal clashing, booming, “The absolute beginning region you are headed to is about 1.2 hundred million light years from the headquarters.”

“1.2 hundred million light years?”

Luo Feng, Rong Jun, Qian Shui and the others were all shocked as this was an incredibly impossible distance. Even with light speed, it would take 1.2 hundred million years!

“Right now the ship has already reached 50 times light speed. It will travel for about 3 months in the dark universe before reaching the absolute beginning region.” Meteorite emperor smiled. “Let me first introduce the absolute beginning region and give you a brief description of it!”

Luo Feng and the 8 listened intently.

“The absolute beginning region is actually a universe secret region. However, it was simply given the name.” Meteorite emperor exclaimed, “Our primal universe is the most ancient and

incredibly vast universe. It has produced many life forms, trillions of races etc, with countless warriors."

"During its evolution, many regions and sectors become galaxies, stars, planets etc...the galaxies are the most commonly seen."

"However, due to unknown special circumstances, during its evolution, it also produced several special sectors that don't follow its regular laws." Meteorite emperor exclaimed. "These special regions will completely challenge your imagination. The life forms and many strange things within these places, treasures and so on will also challenge your imagination."

The eyes of Luo Feng and the others gleamed.

"These special regions have been called universe secret regions."

"Everyone is different." Meteorite emperor exclaimed, "Different universe secret regions will produce different unexplainable treasures, even terrifying disasters."

"Universe secret areas also have different levels of danger."

"Even with the safest ones, a few sector lords will die even as they enter. But, most will die while competing and fighting for the treasures within."

"As for the most dangerous regions, I heard that even a universe country leader wouldn't have much hope of surviving." Meteorite

emperor looked at the shocked faces of the group, smiling, “Why, is it shocking?”

Luo Feng and the 8 were stunned.

My god.

Universe country leader, these were absolute beings that opened a universe country for trillions of years. Even they had very little hope of survival when entering the most dangerous secret regions.

“A newly discovered universe secret region, no one can imagine what goes on inside.” Meteorite emperor exclaimed, “It maybe a disaster inside, or it could even hold an unbelievable miracle!”

“There are big and small regions.”

“The big ones are comparable to a universe country!” Meteorite emperor emphasized, “The small ones can go up to the size of a galaxy.”

Silence.

Luo Feng and the others were completely stunned and silent, such a huge secret region? Comparable to a universe country?

“And the primal, absolute beginning, heaven and ground and last phase secret regions that belong to the virtual universe have all

been excavated and remodeled, they don't hold any more dangers within." Meteorite emperor laughed. "As universe secret regions have incredibly thick amounts of universe energies within, they are very suitable for training."

"Universe energies?" Luo Feng thought.

When the universe energies condense into solid form, they form universe crystals!

Sector lords, the reason why they can create their own worlds was because of their ability to condense a large amount of universe energy.

"The absolute beginning region you are headed to is comparable to a starfield." Meteorite emperor said, "Living and training in the secret region, the most important and useful thing is the points! Within the company, the points are more effective than gold."

.....

Meteorite emperor's words had indeed filled the youths' with anticipation towards the secret regions. However, it was obvious that a even the safest of the newly discovered regions required at least a sector lord to enter. Unless it was an already excavated and remodeled one like the absolute beginning region.

Time flowed.

Days passed and in the blink of an eye, 26 days had passed.

“We are arriving at the absolute beginning region soon. During my 30 years in primal chaos city, I passed 5 levels of the heavenly bridge. According to the 10 times reward, my points have reached 30,360.” Luo Feng calculated within his resting room. “Luckily I earned more points while in primal chaos city, otherwise it’ll be hard to acquire them.”

If it weren’t for the 10 times reward, passing 5 levels would only give him 3,100 points, it was because it was 10 times that, that it reached 31,000 points.

Right now, they had already left primal chaos city.

Passing any levels of the heavenly bridge wouldn’t yield the 10 times reward anymore.

“Come out.” Meteorite emperor’s voice resounded throughout the ship. “We’ve arrived at the absolute beginning region, we’ll begin universe travel now!”

Shua! Luo Feng stood up, his eyes filled with excitement.

They’ve arrived, they’ve finally arrived at the absolute beginning secret region!

Chapter 2 – Star Fragment

Within the control room of the ship.

Luo Feng and the rest of the 8 absolute beginning members were gathered with Meteorite emperor along with the other undyings.

“We’ll begin universe travel immediately.” Meteorite emperor laughed loudly, as his voice resounded within the entire control room. “Travelling to the absolute beginning region is different than travelling to any other normal star fields.”

“Ah?”

Luo Feng and the others were curious.

“You’ll know in a moment.” Meteorite emperor had just ended his speech and a cold mechanic voice resounded throughout the control room: “Beginning universe travel, 10, 9, 8,7 ,6…3…2…1…” Immediately the ship shook and within a second it returned back to normal.

“Travel complete.”

“External simulation.” Meteorite emperor shouted.

Immediately the surrounding scenery changed, allowing Luo Feng and the others to see the scenery outside.

“My god!”

“Ah!”

Luo Feng and the rest of the 8, including the Manka prince Wuka were all completely shocked and stared at the simulation.

“How is it?” Meteorite emperor laughed.

“It’s too unbelievable.” Luo Feng looked outside. It was shrouded in thick mist. In the distance there were colorful clouds, and one could even occasionally see large meteorites.

“It’s actually…”

“How is this possible?”

The 8 were shocked, because engaging in universe travel meant usually passing through space where there was nothing in their path, hence it would normally be very safe. And right now the ship meteorite emperor was taking them in was passing through the internal areas of a certain starfield, which looked extremely dangerous.

“Not right.” Wuka shouted. “This, this is the inside of the absolute beginning region?”

“Hm.” Meteorite emperor smiled. The scales on his face creased, “Right, this is already a core district of the absolute beginning secret region.”

“Then, what happens if we want to leave the region?” Wuka pointed outside. “Look at the meteorites outside. There are dust clouds around and there’s no space for a ship to even accelerate! To engage in universe travel requires a ship to accelerate to lightspeed, That’s the only way to do it!”

Luo Feng nodded, right.

Universe travel to the absolute beginning region was easy, but what about leaving?

“You are right.” Meteorite emperor nodded and smiled. “The absolute beginning has a diameter of about 5 million light years, which is similar to a star field.”

“In normal space, we can accelerate to lightspeed, However, a universe secret area is different, as there are special fire flows, cold flows, astral winds, and also cosmic dusts, making the resistance against ships extremely large. It’s almost impossible to accelerate to lightspeed.” Meteorite Emperor said.

Universe Travel had high requirements.

One had to accelerate to lightspeed!

And accelerating to lightspeed, one first had to have very little resistance, and also a long area to accelerate. Just like an airplane runway, these universe ships required a large enough space before it could reach lightspeed, and this distance was tens of millions of that of a plane. This was usually easy to do in normal space.

However in the secret area...it was almost impossible!

“Right, within the universe secret regions, it’s normally impossible to engage in universe travel.” Meteorite emperor nodded. “However, the absolute beginning is different. It’s been excavated and remodeled! Within this secret region, there are certain territories that have been swept by the absolute warriors, making enough space there for a universe ship to accelerate.”

“Ah?”

Luo Feng, Rong Jun, Qian Shui, Wuka, Ai Chen and the others were shocked.

Swept enough to let a universe ship accelerate to lightspeed. Just how big of a space did they have to clear out.

“There’s no way around it! The absolute beginning region is too huge. If they didn’t do so, we would have to fly slowly from the outer perimeter. With the greatest 5 million light years distance to calculate, we’d have to fly 5 million years. Not travelling straight to the core won’t do.” Meteorite emperor laughed. “When you return, you will all be given a star map. This is a map of the territories within the entire region. With the help of this map,

you'll know how to enter and exit the absolute beginning region."

.....

Universe ship, it was flying within the absolute beginning region.

"I need to send each of you to each of your living quarters." Meteorite emperor laughed in the control room. "It requires about 3 days of time before I can send every single one of you."

Luo Feng and the others remained silent.

To reach the living quarters for the 8 of them required 3 days of flying in the universe ship?

"Hm, Rong Jun, we've arrived at yours." Meteorite emperor shouted. Simultaneously through the external simulation everyone could clearly see the space outside shrouded in thick heavy mist, and there was a beautiful little continent floating. As they drew closer, that continent got bigger, finally the ship landed on it.

Du!

The cabin door opened.

"Go out and take a look." Meteorite emperor laughed and shouted.

Luo Feng and the others excitedly flew out of the ship. As they flew out, they could feel the thick universe energy revolving about them. Luo Feng and the others landed on the ground and looked at the distant endless space. It was shrouded in mist and one could occasionally see cold streams flowing past.

“There’s a continent in this space?”

“It feels too good.”

“How big is this continent?” Luo Feng and the others looked around. This floating continent was extremely huge, it was at least beyond what their eyesight could perceive.

Rumble!

Meteorite emperor landed on the ground and laughed. “This is star fragment 80389092, its diameter is 5800 km. In the center of this fragment there’s a huge mansion. Rong Jun, that’s your living quarters. Naturally this entire star fragment, from now on will belong to you alone.”

“Hm.” Rong Jun surveyed his surroundings. This continent was lush with vegetation and many forms of plants.

“Absolute beginning region, the universe energies are incredibly thick.” Meteorite emperor pointed at the mist around them. “Look, this mist all around you can form little crystals filled with universe energies.” With that, Meteorite emperor grabbed the air

and a large amount of the mist swiftly compressed.

Forming a large crystal.

“Universe crystal?” Luo Feng, Ai Chen and Rong Jun couldn’t help but shout out.

“Right, universe crystal.” Meteorite emperor laughed. “The limitless mist, when gathered will form universe crystals. As the universe energies are too thick…training in the absolute beginning secret region will allow one to feel the ripples of the universe energies clearer. It’s extremely beneficial to one’s training.”

Hu! Hu! Hu! From the distance, 10 silhouettes flew over.

“Your majesty!”

10 armored universe soldiers landed in an orderly fashion. They were led by a sector lord, they all shouted respectfully together.

“Everybody else up on the ship, we are heading to Wuka’s quarters next.” Meteorite emperor shouted.

“Rong Jun, see you later.”

“Rong Jun, we’ll leave first.”

Luo Feng and the others waved and entered the ship once again. The ship took off and flew once more.

……

Each of the members were being sent to their own quarters and Luo Feng was the 5th to arrive at his.

“Star fragment 80389081?” Luo Feng muttered while walking on the continent. “It’s diameter is 6200km. According to what Meteorite emperor said, this star fragment was split by absolute warriors from the Virtual Universe Company, creating many star fragment bases.”

“What thick universe energies.” Luo Feng waved his hand to feel the mist, he couldn’t help but exclaim.

If he wanted universe crystals, he could create it anytime he wished.

As long as they compressed the mist, they would form crystals. However, to Luo Feng and these core members, even 1 trillion universe dollars was but 1 mixed element. And to compress and create 1 trillion universe dollars, my god, how many years would that require? Hence it wasn’t even worth it!

Naturally, if normal citizens from normal planets saw this, they would go crazy.

Universe dollars, to the normal folk of the universe, was still a very expensive currency.

“Hm?” Luo Feng looked up.

In the distance 10 silhouettes flew over. Leading them was a bald old man, it was the leader of Luo Feng’s guards Ao Duo Li Ke Wen Shen Lai Suo.

“Your Majesty.” The 10 bowed respectfully.

“Hm.” Luo Feng smiled, “Ao Duo, we’ve finally met in reality.”

“I’ve been looking forward to this day too.” The bald old man smiled. “Your majesty, I’ll lead the way.”

After a while.

With the protection of his guards, Luo Feng arrived in an ancient villa. This villa had a length and width of 300km. There were many constructs within, such a large construct...to the Virtual Universe Company was simply too easy to create.

“Your majesty.” Ao Duo smiled. “I’ll do the introductions.”

Hu!

Following which Ao Duo immediately flew up and Luo Feng followed. The two of them flew tens of thousands of meters above the ground.

“From this height we can barely see the edge of the star fragment.” Luo Feng looked down and surveyed below. Ao Duo only looked ahead, “Your majesty, look that way.”

“Hm?”

Luo Feng glanced and was shocked.

In the far away distance, there was a dark blue planet. Even the extremely thick mist couldn’t block its glimmer.

“That’s an extra large planet.” Ao Duo exclaimed. “It has a diameter of 1.28 million km. The strange thing is that it’s extremely cold. Our star fragment revolves around this ice planet constantly and there are a total of over 3000 star fragments that revolve around this ice planet and almost all of them have absolute beginning members.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng felt a sense of how unbelievable it was.

Diameter of 1.28 million km?

It was close to the size of the stars in the solar system, however it was a huge ice planet, and it glimmered? How peculiar!

“The Virtual Universe Company ordered a long time ago that before one reaches undying, he is forbidden from entering the ice planet. It’s almost certain that any sector lords who enter it will die.” Ao Duo exclaimed. “An ice planet that glimmers...and also capable of killing sector lords, it’s much stronger than a normal star.”

“Universe secret regions, they are indeed mysterious. Many of them don’t even follow common knowledge.” Luo Feng shook his head.

Actually, a place that had such thick universe energies that one could easily form universe crystals, spread throughout the entire starfield. For such a place to exist, nothing weird from it would be shocking.

“This...” Luo Feng surveyed below. Amidst the thick mist, a large star fragment floated. “Is my future training spot, let’s go down.”

Sou!

Luo Feng and Ao Duo rushed downwards.

Chapter 3 – New Journey

Star Fragment 80389081 had a diameter of 6200 km. This was close to a quarter of earth's surface area, however this was only the living quarters for 1 absolute beginning member.

Within the villa, there was a team of guards with 111 people.

1 general at sector lord level, 10 captains at domain lord level, and 100 universe soldiers at universe level. This formed Luo Feng's guard team. And his waiters and staff members were made up of an even greater number, as there were a total of 1800 staff men and women. After all, the area of the star fragment was simply too huge. Even with the help of technology and machines, protecting the entire star fragment required a large amount of work.

111 guards, 1800 staff, and 1 Lord, this was the population of the star fragment.

……

"From today on, without my orders, I do not wish to see anyone enter here." Luo Feng ordered while looking around a quiet little building.

"Yes your majesty." The bald old man Ao Duo bowed respectfully.

"Hm." Luo Feng looked at the bald old man. "Ao Duo, from what

I know, the core members should be able to bathe in the Life pool to evolve their bodies to the highest levels, right?”

“Life pool?” The bald old man was stunned.

Luo Feng was curious, Ao Duo was a core member of the last phase region and he should know this.

“What life pool?” Ao Duo asked curiously.

“After breaking through to universe level 1, bathing in the life pool will raise one straight to universe level 9 no?” Luo Feng asked again.

“I believe that your majesty is referring to the nutrition cabin.” Ao Duo laughed. “What’s a life pool? Right, core members in the Virtual Universe Company have a certain privilege. As long as one breaks through to the universe level 1, domain lord level 1, or even sector lord level 1, they can immediately head to the nutrition cabin. It has very valuable essences, allowing the person to evolve within!”

“Ah.” Luo Feng nodded.

Right!

The life pool was Wuka’s name for it. The young generation of Manka’s would all enter the life pool. The Virtual Universe Company didn’t necessarily have a life pool. But they did have a

nutrition cabin, or even a nutrition river, wasn't it the same?

"Right right, Nutrition cabin." Luo Feng asked, "How do I request it?"

"Your majesty hasn't entered the virtual universe network yet." Ao Duo smiled. "Every new batch of the company has to first go through the basic training in primal chaos city first. After which, their rights and privileges change. Many things they were unable to do before will now be enabled. Once you go online, you will know."

"Ah?" Luo Feng nodded, following which his consciousness entered the virtual universe network.

Virtual universe, absolute beginning region villa 1136.

Within the study.

Luo Feng sat in the chair. As he opened the laptop and looked at the screen, he discovered 1 new mail from Background management.

"Hm?" Luo Feng tapped it gently.

The mail automatically opened and there were 3 choices on the summary page, Life, Study, and Training.

“Life.” Luo Feng gently tapped.

Large amounts of pages unfolded before him which contained information from star maps to food and beverages, nutrition cabin, ships and so on. There were all sorts of information. Luo Feng opened all of them, and was able to find solutions for any questions or problems related to living in the absolute beginning region. As for the nutrition cabin, one could choose the option of the nutrition cabin to help one evolve to the highest level.

“Request!” Luo Feng tapped it gently.

Du!

A small screen appeared and in it displayed was a beautiful jade haired lady in a white robe with a smile on her face. “How do you do, Your majesty Luo Feng, did you request to use the nutrition cabin to evolve from universe level 1 to universe level 9?”

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Your Majesty Luo feng, we will send the nutrition cabin to your quarters within a day.” The jade haired lady smiled.

“Thanks.” Luo Feng smiled.

The call ended.

“That was easy.” Luo Feng muttered. “As for food and beverages along with many other request such as even ships are provided for. Although, the good ships have to be bought. However, the A grade to D grade ships are provided.” Right, the normally not too expensive items are all provided for.

……

Closing the Life section, Luo Feng opened the Study section.

The Study section was separated into Theory and Practical!

Theory, the main thing was the public lessons in the entire absolute beginning region. These were normally taught by undyings, and occasionally having a universe country leader teach! These courses, provided information about gold, wood, water, fire, ground, wind, thunder, and light, the 8 origin laws, plus the laws of space and time, the hardest 2 laws.

They also spoke of the fusion of space and gold, space and wood etc.

There were also skills lessons.

And consciousness training lessons.

……

Many different types of lessons. The teachers were all at least undying level, and occasionally universe country leaders. These public lessons all belonged to the absolute beginning public lessons, only absolute beginning members could attend them!

“They actually don’t force anything.” Luo Feng smiled. “That’s good, when I want to I’ll attend, if not I’ll train alone.” However just from the course names and the absolute beings teaching, these were enough to let Luo Feng understand just how vast their wealth was.

Normal warriors would dream of getting an undying teacher.

Just like Luo Feng’s slave Bai Kalo, his teacher was Nuolan Shan!

Nuolan Shan was a universe level 9. Because of his Huge Axe title, many had gone to become his students. This showed that in the universe, just how sparse the teacher resources were. As for Luo Feng and his group, they had a large group of undyings to teach them. These undyings all spoke of what they were proficient in, even occasionally having a universe country leader to come in and teach!

How luxurious!

“Study section is separated into theory and practical?” Luo Feng thought. “Theory is the classes by the absolute warriors, what about practical?”

He gently tapped it.

Hua!

The practical segment was separated into the heavenly bridge, fantasy ocean and undying altar. Within them were the detailed explanations of each of them.

Heavenly bridge: Virtual Universe Company core members have the right to attempt the heavenly bridge. The requirements of the bridge are related to one's comprehension of the origin laws. The deeper one's level of comprehension is, the higher level he can pass on the bridge. The higher the level, the amount of points awarded will also be higher!

Fantasy ocean: Virtual Universe Company core members have the right to attempt the fantasy ocean. It tests one's consciousness strength and willpower! Consciousness and willpower, by training them, it will allow one to breakthrough the bottlenecks and is very important in battle and many other aspects. One will attempt to breakthrough the fantasy ocean from the outermost layer to deep within...the deeper one goes, the higher the points!

Undying altar: The undying altar test's one's ability to unleash energy. Even with the same type of body, different warriors have different unleashing strengths and usage! Pure raw power will be measured as 1 point. A few powerful warriors can reach 10 or 20 points, but one's maximum potential is set at 100 points. This is the perfect standard for using one's strength, and the degree to how one controls his strength to perfection is a requirement for breaking through to undying. Undying altar tests one's strength

exertion! The stronger it is, the higher the points!

“Heavenly bridge? Fantasy ocean? Undying altar?” Luo Feng held his breath. “I didn’t expect that other than the heavenly bridge, there’s also the fantasy ocean and undying altar?”

“Damn!”

“The Virtual Universe Company is indeed the Virtual Universe Company. They have everything mapped out.” On Luo Feng’s shoulder, Babata stared wide eyed. “They actually have a group of undyings and even a universe country leader teaching classes? Making just the heavenly bridge is more than enough. Yet, there’s even a fantasy ocean and undying altar? How do they make those?”

“Body, Consciousness strength, willpower and origin law comprehension, these are the main aspects to becoming undying.” Babata shouted. “Especially the undying altar, this can actually tests one’s strength?”

“What’s hard about that?” Luo Feng laughed, “When we were on earth, couldn’t we also test one’s strength exertion?”

“It’s not the same!”

“When one trains to your level, a punch alone will naturally be infused with origin laws.” Babata explained. “For example, your raw power is 1, when you exert strength it can reach 20. However

with the laws, your attack can rise to a 100 points. The test will read is as 100, but that's not your true strength, do you understand?"

Luo Feng realized.

Right.

The origin laws could increase one's power a lot, it wouldn't just be one's raw energy.

"Tap the undying altar." Babata shouted.

Luo Feng gently tapped.

Undying altar: Specially created for the virtual universe. It isolates universe origin laws, universe energies, spirit energy and so on to accurately test one's strength exertion.

"Hehe, I've never heard of such a place, normal warriors would never even know of such a place." Babata shook his head and exclaimed.

"The best thing is that, the heavenly bridge, the fantasy ocean and undying altar can all get you points." Luo Feng laughed happily.

.....

The background management, after finishing life and study, Luo Feng excitedly opened the 3rd option, which was training.

When it was opened, a summary page popped up with several words.

“In the Virtual Universe Company, points are more effective than money.

And other than the heavenly bridge, fantasy ocean and undying altar, one can also choose to do missions to gain points.

A true warrior cannot be born in a completely safe environment.

Only through grueling and intense battles will one constantly evolve and get stronger.

The training missions are a form of training in reality.

The missions are separated according to their difficulty and danger levels such as Safe, Normal, Difficult, Danger, Impossible.

Safe level: Mortality rate 0.

Normal: Mortality rate 10%.

Difficult: Mortality rate 20%.

Danger: Mortality rate 50%.

Impossible: Mortality rate 90%.

As the danger levels differs, the amount of points for each mission too will naturally differ. All core members should choose according to their levels of strengths. Don't choose a level that is too safe, as others will exceed you that way. However do not blindly choose the most dangerous on as well, as without sufficient preparation, one will be walking towards death.

Whether its study or training, everything will be decided by you, the core member. You make your own choices, you'll bear the consequences of your own actions.

The path to becoming undying is filled with danger. I wish you all to walk this path and become undyings."

……

Finishing the final training segment page, Luo Feng was silent for awhile.

Chapter 4 – Fixing the Yun Mo Planet Ship?

“There’s a saying on earth. A flower may seem beautiful in a greenhouse, but it can never withstand wind and rain.” Luo Feng said softly. “It’s delicate and fragile.

“Right.”

The little demon exclaimed. “It takes a hundred years to be tempered into iron, the people of earth are able to withstand certain diseases because of vaccines, they all share the same theory Luo Feng. Just like that example, you shouldn’t be too ambitious in the beginning. Start from the lower difficulty ones and try them out before gradually rising up.”

“There is no rush. I currently don’t even wish to take any missions yet.” Luo Feng said. “My study from primal chaos city, I still require some time to digest all that information. And my body requires the nutrition cabin as well.”

“Hm.” The demon Babata smiled and nodded.

Back when he chose Luo Feng to inherit the Yun Mo Planet legacy, never would he expect him to come to this point in life, where before he would be worried about his identity as the disciple of the Yun Mo Planet being revealed, attracting many sector lords and others. However with his status now, even normal undyings wouldn’t dare mess with him. Even the emperor of the Black Dragon Mountain had to be respectful.

When Luo Feng enters the primal secret region, his guards would be led by an undying!

When that happened, even the god leader of the Black Dragon Mountain sacred land would have to be extremely respectful with Luo Feng.

“Background management.”

Luo Feng gently tapped and later closed the document.

Life, Study, and Training, the Virtual Universe Company provided the best of everything.

Dying halfway? Stuck at the pinnacle of sector lord with the lifespan ending? Becoming undying? That all depended on one’s hard work.

“I currently have 30,360 points.” Luo Feng opened the treasure trove document. As he looked at the materials, valuable treasures, manuals, weapons and variety of items that were available, his heart suddenly skipped a beat.

Right.

This treasure trove had almost everything. As for his most treasured possession, the F grade Yun Mo Planet ship which couldn’t be used at all, even repairing it was difficult. At least in the black Dragon Mountain Starfield it was impossible, the Ganwu

universe country may have barely been able to scrape together enough to fix it, but the treasure trove here would most definitely have what was needed to fix it.

“Babata, take a look at this treasure trove. Will we be able to fix the Yun Mo Planet ship with the available items?” Luo Feng asked.

“Yes!” The demon Babata was an AI after all. It was able to collect the information about all the necessary materials in an instant.

“Ah?” Luo Feng was surprised.

The Yun Mo Planet ship was a ship that even an undying could barely break. An undying’s battle, would leave nothing but just a fist imprint within. And the reason behind his teacher Hu Yan Bo’s death in the past was due to his opponent using a spirit attack. With this ship, Luo Feng would truly be intrepid.

Spirit attack?

He could hide his two other bodies into his internal world and use the Mosha clan. As it didn’t have a soul, it wasn’t afraid of a spirit attack at all!

“The important materials can be exchanged through the treasure trove.” Babata said. “Also, you can also hire the technological department of the Virtual Universe Company to repair it through the Life segment. As long as you provide the materials, these members will repair it.

“How many points does it require?” Luo Feng asked.

“About 560,000 points.” Babata said.

“560,000?” Luo Feng stared wide eyed.

“That’s not considered much.” Babata said. “If we use real cash in the actual universe, it would require about 80,000 mixed elements.”

Luo Feng was stunned.

The buying power of the points was indeed absurd.

“Babata, if we were to build a new Yun Mo Planet ship, how much would we need?” Luo Feng asked.

“About 3.6 million mixed elements!” Babata said.

“Damn!” Luo Feng couldn’t help but curse. “Even buying and selling the entire Black Dragon Mountain starfield wouldn’t cost this much right.”

“A normal galaxy’s worth isn’t that much. However to sell an entire Black Dragon Mountain starfield, the price would jump much higher, about 300 thousand to 1 million mixed elements. The main thing is that it will depend on the situation, auctions usually

have highs and lows.” Babata said.

Black Dragon Mountain starfield, even selling it entirely didn’t compare to one Yun Mo Planet ship!

“This is very normal.” Babata said with disdain. “The Black Dragon Mountain starfield is the property of that undying of the sacred land Black Dragon Mountain! And that undying...his power doesn’t even compare to your teacher!In order to build this ship, your teacher back then spent an enormous amount. The Yun Mo Planet ship being more expensive than a normal starfield is normal. And it’s extremely durable too, since it is able to block any physical attacks. Plus, your teacher focused on the spirit offense and defense. Hence with that ship, it was extremely safe!”

“He still died in the end.” Luo Feng shook his head.

“His enemy was an emperor level undying, and he focused on spirit attacks too.” Babata said. “If he was a fighter, he wouldn’t have been able to kill your teacher at all.”

“Black Dragon Mountain starfield, is afterall just a territory.”

“However one Yun Mo Planet ship is a ship that protects your life. Which is more important? One look and you should know!” Babata said.

.....

Whether it was 560,000 points or 80,000 mixed elements.

They were both far from Luo Feng's reach, his meager points were nowhere near it.

Deep in the universe, Absolute beginning region core.

Orbiting around this huge Ice planet were many star fragments. On fragment number 80389081, a universe ship landed on the continent.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, the nutrition cabin stores within it valuable nutritious liquid. You only require one third of it to raise from universe level 1 to 9." A jade haired man dressed in a white robe said respectfully. "Just in case, we've prepared more than required."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded satisfied.

This nutrition cabin was very similar to the one he had bought. However, this one was definitely better, and it couldn't be bought outside. Even if one could, Luo Feng would most definitely be unable to afford it.

……

Hua!

The nutrition cabin opened automatically. Inside it, about one fifth of it was filled with a light purple liquid. This formless liquid was extremely cold, this made Luo Feng frown. He extended his hand close to the liquid, slightly touching it, chi! The cold shocked Luo Feng. It was at least negative 10 degrees.

While touching the liquid with his fingers, he noticed that the cells in his fingers seemed to jump with glee.

“Such a cold nutrition liquid? However the effects are shocking.” Luo Feng thought. With that he stripped and entered the cabin Immersing himself in that cold purple liquid, the strange entity began to flow and entered through Luo Feng’s body, through his muscles, bones, skin, internal organs...

His entire body from outside to inside began to evolve at a shocking rate. Normal evolution from universe level 1 to 9 required hundreds to thousands of years. However, the Virtual Universe Company paid a hefty price to allow one’s evolution to happen within a few short months.

As for the chillness of the nutrition liquid? Universe level warriors weren’t affected by such temperatures.

Hua!

The cabin closed.

Virtual universe, Absolute beginning villa 1136.

“It’s really not the same. It not only permeates through my entire body, even my spirit energy is growing. This is unbelievable.” Luo Feng sat at his desk, opening his laptop and exclaiming. “To be able to evolve my body and soul from level 1 to 9...hehe, impressive.”

On the screen, Luo Feng looked at the timetable for classes.

“I don’t need to listen to the other classes. I’ll just go and check out the classes for space and gold.” Luo Feng didn’t want to study any other laws. One’s attention and energy had a limit, and his two bodies within were naturally proficient in these two laws. There was no need to even bother with the others.

“There’s a class tomorrow night? Speaking about gold origin laws? On top of that, It’s an emperor level undying speaking, hm, I’ll have to go listen.”

Following which, Luo Feng jumped out from the balcony of his study. With a flash in mid air, he came to his private training quarters and began his training.

.....

One had to bathe in the nutrition cabin for 3 months. During this time, when Luo Feng wasn’t in his training grounds studying and comprehending his study of the primal chaos tablet and the experiences before, he was listening to classes. However honestly, even though other absolute beginning members regarded the

classes as pretty important, Luo Feng discovered one thing after attending...

The effects of the classes didn't compare to his own teacher True Yan's lessons.

Studying under True Yan for 20 years, even though there were several classes that would make his eyes gleam occasionally, the effects were average.

There was no helping it.

Public classes were for all of the absolute beginning members.

And True Yan's pointers were catered specifically for him. He was given information specifically according to his progress and condition. And True Yan was a being close to becoming a universe country leader, naturally the effects were much better than normal classes.

.....

"My improvement speed is obviously much slower than primal chaos city." Luo Feng sat in a chair in his villa. He lifted a good glass of wine and frowned. "And these classes obviously aren't better than my own teacher, what do I do?"

It wasn't just Luo Feng.

The others were also discovering this problem. The training speed right now paled in comparison to primal chaos city. After all, the visible origin laws within the city allowed one to study them and improve faster.

“Luo Feng, your teacher has requested a call.” On his shoulder, Babata shouted.

“Teacher?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed. Standing straight up and respectfully speaking, “Accept.”

A screen floated before his eyes. On it an intrepid and powerful True Yan emperor appeared. That golden fur added to his powerful aura, True Yan laughed loudly and said, “My good disciple, how are you feeling after leaving primal chaos city for a while?”

“My studying speed has slowed.” Luo Feng shook his head.

“Haha…”

True Yan laughed even more happily. “That’s normal, Primal Chaos city has the 3 treasures. Hence, one’s studying efficiency is 10 times faster than outside! Everyone who leaves primal chaos city will encounter this problem. However, your teacher has a way to solve it.”

“Hm?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, “Please speak, teacher!”

“If you are able to frequently study the 9 universe tablet, your improvement speed will be even faster than in primal chaos city itself.” True Yan Emperor said.

“But of course.” Luo Feng said, after which he shook his head helplessly. “It’s a pity, it’s hard to even get one chance to study the tablet, and every time the study only lasts 7 days. Even so, the rewards gained from these chances are very high. If I’m able to frequent study it, even if I’m not in primal chaos city, my improvement will be shocking.”

Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed. “Don’t tell me that teacher has a way for me to study the tablet?”

“No, the 52 primal chaos tablets are only available here in primal chaos city.” True Yan said.

“Then what teacher means is.” Luo Feng was curious.

“In the Virtual Universe Company’s treasure trove manuals department, there’s a book called the Time space scribbles.” True Yan continued, “This book was written by the creator of the 9 universe tablet.”

“Are you referring to one of the top 100 most heavenly priced books, Time space scribbles?” Luo Feng stared. He had looked through the treasure trove and towards the end of the list for the manuals, there were terrifyingly priced manuals.

Time Space scribbles, the set required a total 100 billion points!

A number so high Luo Feng could only stare wide eyed at the absurdly priced books. Luo Feng didn't even bother to look at them, 100 billion points!

"Haha, don't get excited. This time space scribbles is something even your teacher cannot afford." True Yan smiled.

Chapter 5 – Time Space Scribbles

Passing the 1st level of the heavenly bridge was 100 points, the 2nd level yielded 200, the 3rd was 400…it compounded as it grew.

After passing the 21st level, one could become a universe country leader. At the same time, they will also gain 1 hundred million points in reward!

Don't even mention True Yan Emperor not being able to afford it, even those universe country leaders would have to go out on a limb to buy it. 100 billion was simply too huge a sum, enough to make even a universe country leader tremble. Much less the little Luo Feng, he could only stare wide eyed.

"Haha, shocked?" True Yan laughed on the screen.

"Teacher, what's the point of telling me about the Time Space scribbles. I can't afford it at all." Luo Feng muttered. "Even if it's written by the creator of 9 universe tablet, I can't afford it."

Passing the 21st level of the heavenly bridge, could lead to one becoming a universe country leader.

That level of being, carving out the 9 universe primal chaos tablet that actually allowed one to train up to level 27, the Time Space scribbles deserves to be sold at such a price. That absolute being…was definitely one that stood at the absolute pinnacle of humanity itself, a powerful warrior that dominated over status and rank!

“If one said that the 9 universe was deep and profound, and is able to entice and help many with comprehension.” True Yan said, “Then this Time space scribbles itself has recorded thousands to tens of thousands of techniques.”

“Thousands to tens of thousands of techniques?” Luo Feng starred.

“Hm.”

True Yan nodded. “Right, back then the being that created the 9 universe tablet put his main ideas about the path he took into the 9 pictures! These 9 pictures naturally enticed people in its path to comprehension. Also, while this being was creating the 9 pictures, according to the 9 pictures, he struggled quite hard in his comprehension and during which he recorded all the techniques he thought of in that process. These techniques that resonate with the 9 pictures, there’s a total of 10,829 techniques.”

“10,829 techniques?” Luo Feng blinked hard.

A true absolute being could create so many techniques from just those 9 pictures.

“These techniques are extremely scattered.” True Yan emperor said. “Hence the name scribbles, this was mainly due to it being random writings, or pictures. Some are extremely profound and some not, some of them even very random and scattered. When the later generations studied the Time Space Scribbles, they

couldn’t even find all 10,829 techniques within.”

“Since they couldn’t find them all, how did they know there were so many?” Luo Feng asked curiously.

“The creator himself wrote it in the first page.” True Yan laughed. “Even though they couldn’t find everything, but they still discovered tens of thousands. This entire set has 9 books!”

“9 books?” Luo Feng thought about it. The 9 universe tablet had a total of 9 pictures too.

“The scribbles were originally written according to the 9 pictures. The 1st book is in accordance with the 1st picture, the 2nd with the 2nd picture…9th with 9th.” True Yan smiled.

Listening to his teacher say so, Luo Feng thought about it and used his finger to point at a another screen on the side. He swiftly opened the manuals in the treasure trove and quickly found the exorbitantly priced Time Space scribbles. Even the author’s name was anonymous, Luo Feng opened it to examine it.

Time Space scribbles, 1st book 1,000 points.

Time Space scribbles, 1st two books 10,000 points.

Time Space scribbles, 1st three books 100,000 points.

……

Time Space scribbles, 1st seven books 1 billion points.

Time Space scribbles, 1st eight books 10 billion points.

Time Space scribbles, entire set 100 billion points.

And this Time Space scribbles didn't come with a discount!

"It's really exactly as I thought." Luo Feng laughed loudly. "These expensive books, really sell separately too."

"Ah, like what you thought?" On the screen True Yan laughed.

Luo Feng laughed too.

Back when he was on earth, the normal fighter's 9 level Thunder blade was sold separately too!

"However, the price is still very expensive." Luo Feng frowned.

"The price is expensive." True Yan nodded. "The moment you choose to buy it, then later on you'll have to work hard to earn back the points."

The 1st seven books reflect the first 7 pictures of the 9 universe

tablet. Comprehending them all would allow one to reach universe country leader level. However, even after passing the 21st level of the bridge one would barely have a little over 1 hundred million points, and just the 1st seven books require 1 billion points. Those who bought these 1st 7 books were normally not universe country leaders.

"Luo Feng, this is definitely considered an extremely expensive book. The floating blood you bought was only 800 points, and they resonate with the 1st 3 pictures. This book however, just the 1st 3 require 100,000 points. And it gets worse later on. However they are definitely the best training option in training and studying the 9 universe tablet as large amounts of techniques are stored within. By studying these techniques, the effects may be even better than directly studying the 9 universe tablet." On the screen True Yan emperor smiled happily as he looked at Luo Feng. "Luo Feng, my good disciple, it's your choice whether to buy it or not."

"Buy, definitely." Luo Feng didn't even hesitate.

"Ah?" True Yan's golden eyebrows creased.

"Anyway I have points now." Luo Feng smiled. "I can afford it now, as for later on whether I can afford it or not, that's a problem for the future!"

His eyes gleamed. "Teacher, since you said that its effects are comparable and maybe better than actually studying the 9 universe tablet itself, no matter how many points it requires I still have to buy it. The points are nothing but little playthings, the comprehension of the laws...that's the true mark of becoming a

strong warrior.” Finishing up, Luo Feng didn’t even hesitate. He immediately bought the 1st two books.

“Exchange successful!”

“Deducting 10,000 points, remainder 20,360 points.”

“Please wait, someone will send the manual over immediately.”

On the screen a notice popped out.

“Teacher, I’ve already bought it.” Luo Feng looked at the other screen in which True Yan was in.

“Hm.”

True Yan smiled. “With this Time Space scribbles, your study of the 9 universe tablet will speed up a lot. If you have any questions…bear with it for 3 months, and if after 3 months you still haven’t understood it, come ask me.”

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Also, let me advise you on one more thing.” True Yan smiled in the screen. “There’s no need to waste time studying in Yu Xiang Mountain that much. It is important to study and comprehend the laws. However, you can totally go take on a mission. Exploring and doing missions in reality…training in reality and studying the laws

simultaneously, these two shouldn't be delayed, the efficiency of the two together will rise greatly

Luo Feng thought and nodded, "Understood teacher."

Primal chaos city.

Within that ancient mansion, True Yan Emperor smiled and nodded. "Luo Feng this punk, he is indeed straightforward."

.....

Luo Feng quickly received the two books that he ordered, they were both stored in a silver briefcase.

In his study.

Luo Feng opened the briefcase, shocked, "Two books?"

The time space scribbles, one had to know that when he purchased the floating blood before, all 110 books almost just filled up the entire briefcase. However, these 2 books alone took up half of the entire briefcase.

These two books, accurately speaking were made of metal, even the pages were gold in color!

The 1st book was 50cm long, 40cm thick and 40cm tall.

The 2nd book, was 50cm long, 40cm thick and 30cm tall.

“Damn, how can one even call these two books, they are even larger than my laptop bag, they are almost like a huge bag itself.” Luo Feng was speechless. No wonder the 2 books alone took up half of the entire briefcase. He looked down to look at the covers. On it were the simple universe language words, Time Space Scribbles.

Simple words, yet they held within them the universe space itself.

“Hm?” With a glance, he felt himself getting drawn into the words themselves, almost as though he was staring at stars exploding, galaxies evolving etc.

After a second, Luo Feng awoke with a shock.

“Unbelievable.” Luo Feng started. “This, these two books sent over by the virtual universe system, they aren’t even the original copies and they can actually entice my consciousness already. The being that wrote Time Space Scribbles, is too terrifying.”

Luo Feng quickly opened the metal cover.

This 1st book was 40cm thick. However, it had 1,000s of pages. Even though they were metal pages, they were still thin and soft.

“There’s a total of 9 books for the entire manual, casually writing and creating a total of 10,829 techniques. If one can find all 10,829 techniques within, at least, you’ll be able to become a universe country leader, haha…” These simple words were on the 1st page. Strangely enough, it seemed like a voice of a brash and confident person resounded within Luo Feng’s ears.

“Hypnotism?” Luo Feng was suspicious, flipping to the 2nd page.

On the 2nd page, there were simple strokes. However, these strokes…in Luo Feng’s eyes, seemed to resonate with simple yet fierce blade work and strokes.

“Elegant.”

“Powerful.”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but compliment, “The raindrop picture has but 9 simple wonders, and he’s able to create such simple yet powerful blade techniques.” Luo Feng who had long comprehended the 1st raindrop picture could swiftly see through these seemingly messy strokes and scribbles He was able to clearly feel the circumstance behind each stroke, clearly seeing the techniques.

And as he had already comprehended the raindrop pictures, he was immediately able to learn the technique.

Luo Feng flipped to the 3rd page.

On this page, a simple leaf was there. On it were simple brush strokes that formed the veins. In Luo Feng's eyes however, he saw 9 spirit weapons in mid air forming one body, descending from above, surrounding and killing an enemy.

"Simple, fierce offense."

"Using 8 weapons to affect the space, surrounding the enemy and killing him directly." Luo Feng was completely shocked. "This is much stronger than the 9 thread loop I created. When I unleash the totem pillar, I can only rely on the Nan Shen Armament to get stronger."

His own technique, the 9 thread loop obviously paled in comparison to the random techniques this absolute being had scribbled.

"Its wonderful."

Luo Feng flipped to the 4th page, his eyes gleaming.

Metal pages of the book were flipped constantly. Every one of them held within different offensive attacks, all using the wonders of the raindrop picture. The simple rain drop picture, the absolute being had created wonderful and powerful techniques according to that one picture. Be it close combat, or a controller's distant attacks, or hypnotism, or spirit attacks...

Many different techniques were all at his disposal.

As Luo Feng had fully comprehended the raindrop picture, just from simply looking at these techniques, he almost instantly comprehended all of them.

“It’s unbelievable.”

“Vicious.”

“Powerful.”

Luo Feng was like a starving beast flipping through page after page. He had never thought of such ways to unleash such techniques. It was simply like a heavenly horse flying, he couldn’t even imagine the mindset of that being. Also, the techniques were all exciting and absolute, yet they all still relied on the foundation of the raindrop picture.

These techniques were also a way to use the origin laws!

That absolute being, casually wrote 1,000s of ways to use the raindrop picture.

……

3 days later.

“Worth it, worth it!” When Luo Feng finished flipping through the last page of the 1st book, he couldn’t help but shout out excitedly.

Finishing the 1st book.

There were 3,219 techniques in that 1st book and Luo Feng had fully grasped them all.

“This was only 1,000 points, even if I had to buy it with 30,000 points, it’d still be worth it.” Luo Feng closed this book. He was excited, as in his mind the many techniques floated within. Right, that being had opened a window that wasn’t there before for him. It wasn’t just his comprehension of the 9 universe tablet that leveled up, it also spurred many new ideas on how to battle, and increased the amount of knowledge to a whole new level about many other things.

Chapter 6 – Weakness

“The techniques can actually be used this way?”

“That great being, how did he even come up with so many techniques just from one rain drop picture?” Luo Feng placed the 1st book of Time space scribbles to one side and picked up the 2nd book. Opening the thick metal book, he once again jumped right into reading it.

Time Space scribbles 2nd book, it reflected the 9 universe tablet’s 2nd Drizzle picture.

In terms of deepness, this one was obviously more profound than the 1st one by hundreds to thousands of times. As Luo Feng had only comprehended just a bit of the 2nd picture, the techniques revealed within the many pages of this book felt extremely mysterious to him. These techniques were built from the Drizzle picture and it held within it, bits and pieces of the Drizzle picture. Some more so than others, some even incorporating the entire picture.

“So it’s this way!”

“So that’s it!”

“Ah!”

Luo Feng was completely immersed with reading this thick 2nd

book.

The 1st book's 3,219 techniques, Luo Feng took a total of 3 days to learn all of them.

However, of the 2nd book's 2,102 techniques, 2083 of them felt profound and incomprehensible to him. As for the other 19, he barely managed to forcefully comprehend them. As he drilled these into his mind, the drizzle picture of the 9 universe tablet slowly became clearer to him.

Many factories could disassemble machines and according to the way the deconstruction took place, one could later learn and figure out how to rebuild it.

1 theory.

Why were these techniques so valuable?

It was because each technique could grow and get more and more profound, eventually pointing towards the depths of the origin laws! Studying these techniques was actually beneficial to comprehend the laws! This was also why, in the universe, many people would risk everything to obtain valuable techniques. After all, the ones who could truly view the primal chaos tablets were extremely few and privileged.

Normal warriors would never even get a chance to see the 52 tablets!

……

Luo Feng took a deep breath and put down the thick book in his hands.

“Good book.”

“It really is a good book.” Luo Feng looked at the cover of the book. The words Time Space Scribbles alone could make one feel the evolution, the change of stars in space among other phenomenon. “If only they were a bit cheaper. The 3rd book is going to cost 100,000 points, where will I get so many points.”

The points were extremely hard to acquire.

“Babata, how long have I been studying?” Luo Feng placed the heavy book back into the shelf behind him, asking.

“The 1st book, you took 3 days. As for the 2nd book, you’ve been reading it for 29 days!” The little demon on his shoulder said.

“29 days?” Luo Feng nodded, after which he shook his head and laughed. “For the 1st book’s 3219 techniques, I took only 3 days to complete. But this 2nd book’s 19 techniques alone took me 29 days, and I still haven’t even fully grasped them yet.”

“How’s the effect?” Babata asked.

“It’s still ok.” Luo Feng smiled. “I’ve comprehended the 10th and 11th wonder.”

“Damn!” Babata’s eyes were almost popping out. “Luo Feng, you are too, too, shameless! This is called still ok?”

The raindrop picture held within 9 wonders.

The drizzle picture had 27 more profound wonders within.

The rainstorm picture held the final 72 most profound wonders.

A total of 108 wonders, these were the foundation of the space origin laws.

“I guess I’m also digesting everything I’ve learned from the past now.” Luo Feng said. “In primal chaos city, there were many fragments and pieces that I understood somewhat, but not fully comprehended. And now while diving into these techniques, many things that I was just about to fully understand, resonate with each other, allowing me to continuously study two wonders. The Floating Blood’s 108 techniques, I know 11 of them. Of course, the previous knowledge that I had, through the Time Space scribbles, has allowed me to have great benefits. However as it goes further, it won’t be that easy.”

The 1st time looking at Time Space Scribbles had the greatest enlightenment.

As one tried to comprehend more, it will only become harder..

Unless he managed to go study the primal chaos tablet again, however that was in primal chaos city. Moreover, a chance to go back in was extremely valuable.

“Ah.” Luo Feng suddenly stared, fiercely standing up and shouting. “I’ve been studying Time Space scribbles these past 32 days, that means I haven’t attended any classes at all these past 32 days? Damn, even the ones I liked I didn’t attend.” There were many classes in the absolute beginning region, however they were all optional.

Luo Feng didn’t care that much about the normal ones who gave lectures about space and techniques. Those undyings didn’t teach as well as his teacher did.

However!

The ones explaining the gold origin laws and space and gold fusion, these were the ones Luo Feng emphasized on. As his teacher True Yan Emperor was proficient in space, even though he had some comprehension of the gold origin laws, it couldn’t compare to those undyings who specialized in it.

“What’s the use of regretting?” The little demon laughed. “Here’s some good news, your favorite space and gold fusion class is on tonight.”

“Ah, then I’ll attend tonight!” Luo Feng nodded. “However I should go try out first to see just how much my strength has improved by.”

Luo Feng jumped out of the balcony from his study, leaving behind images as he arrived at his training grounds entrance.

……

Within the training grounds, the ground was shiny.

“Simulate Horned Dragon city.” Luo Feng ordered. With Babata’s help, the place immediately morphed into a large portion of a huge city.

The city was empty.

In a 9 storey normal building’s balcony, Luo Feng carried the dark golden long rod on his back and shouted, “Rise!”

Immediately from behind the long rod shot out little golden blades that covered the skies and land. The blurry images of these 1600 blades were like little spirits dancing and swiftly flying about. In mid air they swiftly began to extend golden threads infused with origin laws, and in the blink of an eye, they formed a golden totem…Totem pillar!

“Go!” Luo Feng pointed ahead at a bank skyscraper.

Rumble...

The totem pillar rolled and the space around it compressed. Its movement was almost like teleporting, within an instant it crossed several kilometers and immediately smashed into that skyscraper. The entire building shook from the impact and was reduced to dust. Simultaneously, the entire ground below the building also shook and the impact rippled in all directions, causing a large wave throughout.

Later, several kilometers around the epicenter were all reduced to nothing but dust.

“My strength control is still not precise.” Luo Feng stood in mid air, surveying the buildings that were reduced to dust below. Frowning, “I want to control my attack and condense it into 1 line, however it still rippled along the ground.”

“However!”

“According to the Time Space scribble’s over 3000 techniques that I’ve slightly tweaked and combined with my comprehension of the 10th and 11th wonder, the power of my totem pillar is obviously much stronger.” Luo Feng pointed far away, “Go!”

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The totem pillar was like a god punishing the land, crashing here and there. The moment it hit, that entire area would be reduced to dust.

"It may seem heavy but its light to control, I finally have this feeling." Luo Feng was very satisfied. Studying Time Space scribbles was indeed a huge benefit, it actually made his Nan Shen Armament's 4th level so much stronger, then what about the 5th?

"I'll give it a shot!"

With a thought, the totem pillar first separated into countless gold lights returning to the golden long rod on his back.

"Rise!" Luo Feng roared and his eyes focused.

Immediately tens of thousands of little golden lights flew in all directions from his back. It was almost like a sun glaring in all directions, countless golden lights immediately followed a path and gathered, immediately forming 36 1 Chi long golden blades. The next thing to do was to combine all of these 36 blades into 1 dark golden long blade!

Nan Shen Armament 5th level, every blade was made of 81 little blades. When these 36 were added together, it would form a total of 2,916 little golden blades.

Luo Feng took a deep breath and watched the floating 36 blades, roaring, "Combine!"

Immediately the 36 blades combined together. Every one of them followed the complex golden engravings and shot out tens of thousands of golden thread. Every thread represented Luo Feng's comprehension of the space and gold origin laws. Also while controlling so many blades individually, Luo Feng's consciousness was like a quantum computer managing everything.

"Succeed, succeed, combine together." Luo Feng's forehead was filled with perspiration.

The blur of golden threads interweaved and formed between the 36 golden blades, finally forming a 3m long golden blade shape. However, there were still regions on that blade itself where it was shaking and unstable as the gold threads floated about and unable to fully combine.

"Combine, combine together."

Luo Feng's face was flushed red.

His consciousness and spirit energy were stretched to the limit, as they were controlling everything. However, the repulsion of those spots was strong.

"Peng!"

The dark long golden blade violently shook and dispersed.

“Phew.” Luo Feng sighed. Shaking his head, he immediately dispersed the 2,916 blurs of little golden blade lights and they returned to the dark golden long rod.

“If my spirit energy is domain lord level, then I can rely on it to force the combination.” Luo Feng thought. “If my comprehension of the gold origin laws was deeper, I would then be able to form it too.”

At the final point, him wanting to control the golden threads to combine perfectly, there were multiple spots that were unsuccessful. This was mainly due to his comprehension not being deep enough.

Nan Shen Armament was a spirit weapon that was created from the fusion of space and gold origin laws.

It was one of the 9 godly weapons.

Gold, wood, water, fire, ground, wind, light and thunder, these 8 were much easier to comprehend than space and time. Hence during the formation of the Nan Shen Armament, it emphasized more on the gold laws, and its requirement of the space laws was slightly lower.

“My space origin law comprehension is enough for the 5th level.”

“However, my gold origin law comprehension isn’t enough.” Luo Feng laughed helplessly.

Gold laws, in this aspect, Luo Feng's study speed wasn't slow at all.

Space laws, with the 9 universe tablet, floating blood and Time Space scribbles, along with True Yan's instructions and the space pet Mosha clan studying, his studying speed was close to the gold origin law speed.

However!

In theory, the speed of his gold origin law study should far exceed the space study speed!

"After all, I did not have a teacher who specializes in gold to teach me." Luo Feng thought, "Also, I haven't studied any gold origin law techniques. From what I see, it's time for the golden horned beast to pick a technique. That way, I can raise my improvement speed of the gold laws."

"Inherited memories, the techniques within these memories were as vast as the ocean."

"My golden horned beast, which technique should I choose?"

Chapter 7 – Yi Ke

There were many battle techniques within the golden horned beast's inherited memories. When Luo Feng and Babata were analyzing which was most suitable...it only took awhile before the night class was about to begin.

Absolute beginning region villa 1136, a silhouette rushed into the sky.

"This public class speaks about gold and space fusion, it's not bad." Luo Feng swiftly left the villa and headed towards the distant large skyscraper that could almost be deemed a large art work. At this time, a line of silhouettes were flying towards it and entering.

The entire building took up a few hundred kilometers in area. If placed on earth, it would be an unbelievable construct.

Classroom number 2, the size of this room was 80km long and 60km wide.

Scattered around the back of the room were 1,000 seats, the rest of the space was for the undying teacher to sit cross legged.

"Luo Feng."

"Yi Ke." Luo Feng smiled and waved at a skinny youth in scaled armor. This youth was bald and had bronze skin. He emitted a powerful fierce aura. He was one of the few friends Luo Feng had

in the absolute beginning region.

Following which Luo Feng sat beside that youth.

“I haven’t seen you this past month.” Yi Ke smiled. “Usually during these gold space fusion and gold classes you’d attend. There’s been close to 10 classes this month already and I haven’t seen you around at all. I even sent you calls, but it was cut off?”

“I was studying some techniques, I got immersed and forgot to attend.” Luo Feng laughed.

Yi Ke, domain lord level, absolute beginning member!

As he would attend every gold class, along with the gold and space fusion classes, Luo Feng had met him numerous times and became friends.

“Immersed in it?” Yi Ke blinked. “I guess your rewards aren’t small then.”

Luo Feng nodded.

“Congrats, haha.” Yi Ke laughed loudly, following which he said softly, “However my brother, I estimate my own rewards too aren’t small.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

“You know, I control quite a bit of authority now. Occasionally I would meet some unexpected surprises.” Yi Ke’s eyes had a sense of anticipation within. “I hope this time around, I will succeed. The moment I do…”

“Good for you, you have such authority outside. However, we are still stuck training within.” Luo Feng shook his head.

Virtual Universe Company, their nurture for the core members had different levels.

The top 1,000 of the genius battles were immediately sent to train in primal chaos city for 30 years to lock in their foundation.

Universe level core members were to train in the Virtual Universe Company’s 4 secret regions, safely listening to undying lessons, and to train and take on missions.

Domain lord level members would command bodyguard teams, going to a particular universe country to control the territory. According to Luo Feng…that would be akin to going to the border and acting as a governor. This was truly the beginning of interactions with affairs of the universe. It was considered leaving the safety of the Virtual Universe Company, as everything was to be decided on one’s own.

Sector lord members were placed in even more dangerous situations. They were going to explore the universe itself, and were even sent to the terrifying external battlefield where the strong

were like minced meat Sometimes, they were also sent to the even more dangerous universe secret regions...

"Value your chance."

Yi Ke sighed. "Luo Feng, you are currently still universe level, you can safely stay under the protection of the Virtual Universe Company to train and take missions within a controlled area. When you reach domain lord level and get placed in a universe country, controlling a large territory, that's when your true grueling training begins. That's truly dangerous. Especially at sector lord level, where you are not even allowed to bring your guard team, you'll go through many life and death situations then."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Universe level was considered a child that required nurturing.

Domain lord was considered youths, who were able to explore outside.

Sector lords were considered adults, who were beginning their life or death struggles. If successful, they would reach the undying level. It was a pity that the efficiency rate was very very low.

.....

Within classroom 2, more absolute beginning members entered,

there were already more than 100.

While Luo Feng and Yi Ke sat together and chatted, another golden bearded dwarf walked over, smiling, “Yi Ke, Yi Ke, this person beside you should be Luo Feng right.”

“Za Ji Wu?” Yi Ke glanced at him.

The dwarf smiled at Luo Feng. “How do you do? I’m Za Ji Wu, similar to Yi Ke I am in the domain lord level. I have heard of you before and I’ve always wanted to meet you. However, there hadn’t been a chance until now.”

“How do you do.” Luo Feng smiled and waved.

“Luo Feng, Za Ji Wu this punk is crafty, but he’s still not bad. I’ve known him for over a thousand years.” Yi Ke introduced.

“Luo Feng.” Za Ji Wu rubbed his golden beard. Sitting beside them, he said softly, “I heard that during your 1st time in primal chaos city, you passed 5 levels of the heavenly bridge in 30 years?”

“Right.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Powerful indeed, respect.” Za Ji Wu nodded.

“Zi Ji Wu, speak what’s on your mind.” Yi Ke frowned.

Zi Ji Wu said softly, “Luo Feng I want to discuss something with you.”

“Hm?” Luo Feng frowned.

“I want to exchange for some things in the virtual universe treasure trove. However, I don’t have enough points.” Za Ji Wu shook his head. “I hope…Luo Feng you can help me exchange for them. And when that happens I’ll use cash to buy them from you. Depending on how many points you use, I’m willing to exchange 1 mixed element for every 5 points spent.”

“If you use 1,000 points, I’ll give you 200 mixed elements.” Zi Ji Wu said, “You should know…this is a good deal.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng was shocked.

Every 5 points he spent he would receive 1 mixed element?

This price was not bad. According to the prices of the treasures within the trove, from what Luo Feng calculated, about 7 to 8 points equated to 1 mixed element.

“Go away.” Yi Ke pushed Za Ji Wu away. “Get away, you bastard, actually trying to swindle my friend.”

“It’s not considered swindling. He passed 5 levels, with the ten times reward that’s 31k points, and he has no need for them now. Also, the price I offered him is quite high.” Za Ji Wu said. Yi Ke

frowned and said, “Alright, with your little calculations, you think I wouldn’t know? I will not stop you. But, I will speak directly to Luo Feng about this and explain certain things to him. If he then still wishes to deal with you, I won’t bother with your deals anymore.”

“What’s going on?” Luo Feng was curious.

“Speak.” Za Ji Wu seemed unhappy, almost like a gangster.

“Luo Feng.” Yi Ke said softly, “Right now when you exchange for items you’ll discover 1 mixed element equates to about 7 or 8 points right?”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

“But let me tell you, the things within the treasure trove can only use points. Core members under the undying level, they can only rely on the heavenly bridge, Fantasy ocean, undying altar and taking on missions to acquire points. The points are extremely valuable.” Yi Ke emphasized, “Of course, you still think…as long as you have money, you can buy these treasures in the real world right?”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but nod.

Right.

With enough money, he could buy any treasure within the

auctions.

"You are wrong." Yi Ke shook his head. "The auctions are separated into basic, mid and high level. Universe country auctions are all basic level and the lowest requirement is a 3 star client. The high level auctions however require at least a 5 star client! Simply preparing for it requires many years. Hence it takes very very long before a high level auction occurs. And within these auctions...you won't necessarily get what you want!"

"However, the treasure trove is different! Everything you need is available there."

"A few high level items, are rarely seen even in the high level auctions, because the 5 major powers do not wish to circulate these extremely rare items." Yi Ke said, "However, all these items are usually available in the treasure trove."

"The further you get, the more obvious the importance of the treasure trove becomes."

"However, exchanging for items in the treasure trove relies solely on points." Yi Ke sighed, "And the points are hard to acquire. Anyone under undying level cannot use money to exchange for points. And after becoming undying...only then can one use money to exchange for points. The rule for undyings of the Virtual Universe Company is...1 mixed element for 1 point!"

Luo Feng was shocked.

“I’ve said what I needed to, you make your own choices.” Yi Ke said.

“Yi Ke is right.” Beside, the gold bearded dwarf nodded. “A few rare items can’t be bought at all outside. Hence the points are extremely valuable! However, Luo Feng you are currently only universe level, the things you need can be bought outside as well. You have no need to waste your points. If you help me buy them, I’ll give you cash…5 points for 1 mixed element. It’s very worth it.”

Luo Feng laughed.

……

Yi Ke watched as Za Ji Wu left unwillingly. Laughing, “Luo Feng, I was worried you’d agree.”

“I was never going to deal with him.” Luo Feng smiled.

What a joke!

Simply buying the 3 books of the Time Space scribbles required 100,000 points. He was still worrying about how to get points, why would he help someone else buy things using his points.

“That’s right, you are considered powerful. 1st time in primal chaos city and completing 5 levels, one has to know the 10x reward is only for the 1st time.” Yi Ke shook his head. “The 31,000 points you have with the initial 10,000 award. It may seem like points are

easy to acquire, but you'll see later on."

Luo Feng listened intently.

Yi Ke was after all a domain lord. His accumulated experience was much more.

"I have an assisting metal life form Kale." Yi Ke shook his head. "This life form can form armor, form weapons, and even fuse with a ship...it's an excellent helping hand. In order to nurture this Kale and make it evolve to domain lord was easy. However, to sector lord level, the materials required alone cost 86 thousand points. I can only look at it and let my head ache. And after reaching sector lord level...the amount to be spent on Kale alone would get even more shocking. As for it to become an undying, I don't even dare to imagine the number of points required for the materials now."

Luo Feng thought.

Yi Ke had the metal life form. He himself had the plant life form cloud contact vine. Right now it was already domain lord level 2. Back when it was breaking through from universe level 9 to domain lord, it cost him 1 life fruit.

"Babata, the cloud contact vine's breakthrough and evolution to sector lord, how many points do I have to spend?"

"And the breakthrough to undying?" Luo Feng asked.

“According to the process of how the Yun Mo master nurtured his cloud contact vine from domain lord level 9 to sector lord, it requires many treasures and combinations. So, that would amount to about 120,000 points. As for sector lord level 9 to undying...this is the hardest breakthrough. Humans breaking through to undying is already unbelievable. To help the cloud contact vine...according to how much he spent back then, it would require about 6.2 million mixed elements, plus luck. Afterall, to actually breakthrough the shackles of life itself to become undying, there’s no 100% guarantee!”

Chapter 8 – Undying Altar

“6.2 million mixed elements and luck?” A huge wave crashed within Luo Fengs heart. 6.2 million mixed elements! what a terrifying amount that was? The entire Black Dragon Mountain star field alone was only worth about 300,000 to one million mixed elements.

“Back then, your teacher had to break out his entire fortune to make it successfuly! When the cloud contact vine reached the undying level, it was extremely powerful. It was even more powerful than normal human undyings. When your teacher had it, it was almost like his power had doubled. Even if others were stronger than your teacher, they would find it extremely hard to kill him.” Babata said.

Very hard to kill?

Didn’t he get killed in the end anyway? Luo Feng thought.

“Points, points.” Luo Feng was nervous.

The amount needed to be a accumulated wasn’t easy to complete.

Breaking through however was very difficult. To nurture a cloud contact vine up to the sector lord level…the price alone gave him a headache, as it would require about 120k points in total.

“Buying the Time Space scribbles requires points, nurturing the

cloud contact vine requires points, repairing the Yun Mo Planet ship requires points, and on top of that they all need such huge amounts of it." Luo Feng thought, "At least currently my stress level still isn't that elevated."

.....

Luo Feng had barely enough point to use at the moment. He didn't need to nurture the cloud contact vine or repair the ship yet.

"Teacher!"

Within classroom 2, over a 100 absolute beginning members bowed respectfully.

"Hm." A 30m tall demon god undying walked into the room. His entire body was almost like metal, with 3 horns on his head. With a rumble, "Gold, as strong as the sun and iron, it's sturdy, unstoppable! Space holds within it all sorts of things and their energies. When time stops space is all that is in the universe!"

Silence.

This undying didn't allow anyone to speak at all during his classes, and he would always start the classes with those symbolic words about gold like the sun, space encompassing everything! This violent tempered and wild being with a weird temperament, still had many members that enjoyed his lessons.

This undying explained to the class. With a wave of his hand, origin laws could be seen floating in its path.

“It’s that way.”

“Ah.” Luo Feng carefully listened, occasionally realizing something important, sometimes nodding and at other times frowning.

After a while…

The class ended.

Luo Feng turned and was taken aback. Yi Ke who was beside him had suddenly vanished.

“Ah? Usually even if he leaves the virtual universe, he would say goodbye.” Luo Feng was curious, “It’s weird that he left halfway?” At this time, Luo Feng tried to call Yi Ke, however…

“It’s cut off?”

Luo Feng smiled, “Must be something important.”

The call denial service was normal and regularly seen. Usually while one was studying, training or on a mission…they couldn’t be distracted. Hence, they would choose to cut off all contact from the virtual universe network. There was of course one more possibility

and that was death. The moment one dies, the AIs and quantum computers would be unable to go online, naturally not allowing any calls.

******

After finishing the lesson, Luo Feng didn't rush to choose a technique from the golden horned beast. He decided to head to the undying altar and Fantasy ocean to give it a shot.

"Points!"

"Right now I require 100s of thousands of points, and i would even need more in the future." Luo Feng was worried. "How do I get more points? Just from the heavenly bridge won't be enough at all." From what the two domain lords Yi Ke and Za Ji wu had said, Luo Feng was able to deduce that the points would get more valuable later on. Even undying would use money to exchange for points.

Because, the Virtual Universe Company's treasure trove only allowed exchanges for points.

"First I'll hit the undying altar and fantasy ocean to take a look."

.....

Core members could easily enter any of the 3 places, heavenly bridge, undying altar and fantasy ocean.

Undying altar.

A black endless mountain range and on each of the peaks there was a golden altar. With one look, one could see that on the tens of thousands of peaks there were similarly tens of thousands of golden altars.

Shua!

A black haired youth appeared in one of the golden altars.

“Hm?” Luo Feng appeared before the altar, feeling somewhat uncomfortable. “I can’t feel the universe origin law ripples. I can’t feel the energies from the outside world too, the genetic energy within is gone too, and my spirit energy has been reduced to a bare minimum as well.”

Peculiar, it was a very uncomfortable feeling!

Losing his genetic energy, spirit energy, all the ripples of the origin laws…everything was gone.

The only thing that remained was his physical body strength!

“Purely testing my strength.”

“Undying altar!” Luo Feng looked up. This altar had a total of 99

points. Right at the top was the 100 point mark. “Only when one’s body exertion reaches 100 points will one have perfect control over their body.”

Standing on the altar, he swiftly reached the stand.

On the stand was a human shaped target. Beside it was a screen with the words, which, when translated into mandarin read, “Within 1 second, please use your fists, elbows, head, knees and feet separately to attack the target. According to the lowest attack, we will determine your strength.”

“5 attacks?” Luo Feng was stunned.

He originally thought it would be like earth’s measurement, where just 1 punch would do.

He didn’t expect that he had to do 5 attacks separately with these body parts all within 1 second.

“Let’s give it a shot.” Luo Feng started to wiggle his muscles and bones.

“Pa!” He attacked the target.

Rumble! His leg swished through the air.

“Hm.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, immediately attacking the target

before him.

In an instant Luo Feng's body became like a circular movement. His fists were like a mythical beast punching strongly against the target's head, 1 attack!

After which he bent his body and condensed his energy, violently kicking the chest of the target, causing it to cave in slightly, 2nd attack!

The moment he landed, he once again fiercely jumped up and raised his knee to smash into the target's stomach, exploding with energy, 3rd attack!

After which he arced his body and almost like a large bow, slapping backwards and smashing his forehead into the target's chest, 4th attack!

After which his entire body jumped up and with a right twist, his muscles seemed to condense into knots and released all his energy into his right elbow, smashing hard into the target, 5th attack complete!

"Hm?" Luo Feng looked at the screen.

The numbers that appeared...

"31, 28, 36, 29, 35, score 28, points awarded 0."

“My exertion is only 28 times?” Luo Feng shook his head.

Back on earth, that 9 level thunder blade’s highest level was only 7 times. Of course the current Luo Feng’s perspective was completely different. He could easily create thousands of techniques better than the 9 level thunder blade, just like how the creator of the 9 universe tablet could write so many techniques in Time Space Scribbles.

“In 1 second, use 5 portions of your body to attack, the lowest score will be your score.”

“Hm, the requirements are harsh.”

After trying that one time, Luo Feng understood why, “In a short amount of time to use all these parts to reach 100 points, that would mean one should have perfect control of his body.”

“Again!”

5 continuous attacks, 5 results again, “35, 30, 36, 29, 35, score 29, points awarded 0.”

“Again!”

Score 28.

“Again.”

Score 30.

……

Time and again, he tried non stop over hundreds of times. His best score was only 32, and the lowest was at 26. Ultimately, he still got 0 points!

Passing the heavenly bridge, fantasy ocean and undying altar could help one get points.

However they had different rules.

The 9 universe heavenly bridge had a total of 27 levels. The 1st level gave 100 points, 2nd 200, 3rd 400…and they compounded on, each giving twice the amount of the last level before.

The fantasy ocean had many islands. From the outermost island, as one was heading inwards deeper into fantasy ocean islands, the hypnotism and mental pressure would get increasingly terrifying. The point system was similar to the heavenly bridge.

From outside going in, there were a total of 21 islands.

The 1st gave 100 points, 2nd 200, 3rd 400…it compounded on, the deepest of the fantasy ocean being island 21.

……

Even undyings and the knights would attempt fantasy ocean and heavenly bridge as they yielded high points.

However the undying altar was different.

Perfect control of one's entire body was a prerequisite to becoming undying. Hence the points given were the lowest of the 3.

If one got a score of 50, he would be awarded 1,000 points.

Score of 60, 2,000 points.

Score of 70, 4,000 points.

Score of 80, 8,000 points.

Score of 90, 16,000 points.

Score of 100, 50,000 points.

But for a score below 50, 0 points.

……

“My strength usage is so weak?” In that particular altar amidst the tens of thousands of golden altars on the black mountain range, Luo Feng tried over and over. He tried for a total of tens of thousands of times. Even after using one entire day, his best score was still only 34.

He couldn’t blame anybody.

Firstly he was a spirit reader, he never really trained using his strength that way.

Even though the Mosha clan was proficient in close combat, it was after all an energy life form. It didn’t rely on muscles or bones to unleash its strength, it didn’t even have a strength per se, hence it couldn’t train in this aspect.

As for the golden horned beast, it was a blood and flesh life form, and it did emphasize on strength exertion!

However!

These many years, the golden horned beast had been specializing in Absolute space and Deities of the world. The rest of it’s time was spent studying the gold origin laws. It never actually trained in any battle techniques. However, its body make up was naturally gifted in strength exertion. Even if it didn’t specially studied it, it could still reach about 60 or 70 points.

Human body's strength usage however was harder.

For Luo Feng to reach 34 points, that was still mostly because of his strong consciousness and his comprehension of the origin laws.

"How shameful, I actually got 0 points." Luo Feng thought. "When I return, I have to find a battle technique for the golden horned beast that emphasizes on strength exertion. Strength exertion is one of the requirements to become undying, I cannot overlook it."

"Hm, so what if I can't get any points from the undying altar, I'll head to fantasy ocean next."

"My consciousness and willpower is what I'm the most confident in."

"Fantasy ocean, I have to go deeper and get more points." Luo Feng immediately headed towards fantasy ocean.

Suddenly...

"Hm, mail?"

Luo Feng pointed in mid air and a screen appeared, and on it was a mail. "It's from the Virtual Universe Company?"

Di!

Luo Feng opened the mail and as he read, his entire face went completely pale.

“That’s not possible, it’s impossible.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but shake his head.

Chapter 9 – Heart like a Mirror, Heart like a Blade

“How can this be?”

“How can this be?” Luo Feng looked at the contents of the mail and shook his head. “Yi Ke, Big brother Yi Ke is dead?”

This was a mail that had been sent to all members of the absolute beginning region. As there were very few members, with a total of 1,100 of them, they were all considered absolute geniuses amongst the universe countries. Over 10,000 years, the absolute beginning area had only absorbed less than 20 people. Every one of them were considered valuable.

Everytime one fell, they would send a reminder to inform all the members.

“Yi Ke…” Luo Feng’s body trembled and his eyes were filled with shock.

Right.

During yesterdays public lesson, without him noticing Yi Ke’s consciousness had left the virtual universe network. Even his own call request didn’t go through. Back then he still thought Yi Ke had a sudden inspiration or was looking for treasure etc. But from the looks of it now, Yi Ke may have met with misfortune back then.

“This Big brother Yi Ke was a huge figure sent by the Virtual Universe Company to control a large territory. How did he just die? Even if he left the safety net of the Virtual Universe Company, meeting many events outside, he was still after all a core member of the company. How could he just get killed like that?” Luo Feng couldn’t believe it.

Scenes appeared and flashed in his mind.

“You again? I noticed you during the last two classes. What a coincidence.” An intrepid youth dressed in scaled armor walked over and laughed as he shouted.

“What a coincidence.” Luo Feng laughed as well. “I’m Luo Feng.”

“I’m Yi Ke.”

……

“Let me tell you, when the Virtual Universe Company sends their domain lords out, they’ll put them in their own home universe country. When I return this time…I’ll control a large territory. The feeling will definitely be different. My clansman’s position too have since risen because of this. No one dares to ever bully my Copper Flame clan anymore.” Yi Ke was proud.

“My home earth is the same. When I entered the Virtual Universe Company’s core, the people of earth’s statuses rose greatly in the Black Dragon Mountain starfield.” Luo Feng laughed

too.

“Hm, if there’s a strong warrior in the clan, the others will rise in status. However if we fall, their status will fall greatly too.” Yi Ke’s eyes stared. “However, I will definitely work hard to become undying, definitely!”

“We’ll work hard together.” Luo Feng’s eyes too were filled with anticipation and fighting spirit.

……

“Luo Feng, you are currently still at the universe level. You can safely stay under the protection of the Virtual Universe Company to train and take missions, everything within a controlled area. When you reach domain lord level and get placed in a universe country, controlling a large territory, that’s when your true grueling training will begin. That’s when it will truly become dangerous. Especially at sector lord level, where you are not even allowed to bring your guard team, you’ll go through life or death training then.”

……

Different scenes appeared in Luo Feng’s mind.

He hadn’t known Yi Ke for too long, but the two of them did have an affinity, maybe its because of their many similarities.

“The path to undying is extremely tough...”Luo Feng muttered, looking at the screen before him.

On it the text read.

“To all absolute beginning members in Yu Xiang Mountain:

Our virtual universe just confirmed that Yi Ke, an absolute beginning member, one that had been exceptional since the genius battle has...fallen!

This is a very heartbreaking news.

The absolute beginning region absorbs members through the genius battle and the absolute warriors battle. Every 10,000 years, we absorb less than 20 people. However, as time flows, every hundred to thousand years, someone will fall. One after another, the geniuses will continue to fall. Eventually, extremely few members will pass the road to become an undying.

95%!

A terrifying number!

This is the mortality rate of our absolute beginning region. 95% of the members from the absolute beginning region will fall!

Yes!

Right now, there were 1137 members living in the region. About 95% of them will fall along the way to becoming undying, and only 5% will reach the end and become undying!

I hope that all living members will be extra careful. Listening to classes? Training? Missions? Placed in their own universe countries? Sector lord missions? Our virtual universe has given you all very huge liberties and power. The path is the one thing that you choose for yourself. The danger level too will be decided by you, and you'll bear the consequence for everything!

I only hope that in the future, you all don't regret the decisions you made in the face of death!

……

Virtual Universe Company"

One mail, all the living 1137 absolute beginning members received it. The entire region seemed to have a heavy aura hanging over it.

……

Absolute beginning region, Manka prince Wuka's villa, living room.

Luo Feng, Rong Jun, Ai Chen, Ao Pa Te La, Wuka, Jiang Mo, Qian

Shui, Lancelot. The absolute beginning members from the latest genius battle sat together unlike ever before. They usually formed their own little cliques, like Luo Feng, Rong Jun and Wuka.

Ao Pa Te La, Lancelot were close, Ai Chen, Jiang Mo and Qian Shui were close.

However at this time...

The 8 of them sat around the living room in silence.

“95%, 95% of us will fall.” Lancelot, a devilishly handsome youth muttered. “The moment I think about the many geniuses falling and imagining the currently bustling absolute beginning region becoming a cemetery, I feel shock and fear. I can’t help but feel a chill.”

Silence.

The air in the living room seemed stiff. There was heavy pressure, everyone could feel this pressure.

95%!

This number had completely shocked the newcomers.

Luo Feng felt a chill.

“These days I’ve been training, listening to classes, simulation in the training grounds, studying Time Space scribbles, immersed in study. Teacher personally reminded me to go take on missions, to study and experience reality simultaneously, yet I never took it seriously.” Luo Feng’s eyes were cold. “30 years of a safe life has numbed me. A true warrior can only be born from grueling hardship. Just like how it takes 100 years to temper iron, experiencing many life or death instances, only then can a true warrior be made.”

……

Silence.

The 8 sat there, thinking about many things.

Hu!

Luo Feng stood up, the other 7 all looked over.

“Since we are walking this path, unless we choose to back out and return to our safe lives, we can only push forward. If we fall, we’ll stand back up. We’ll recover from heavy injuries and only death will end everything!” Luo Feng’s eyes were cold. “The path to undying isn’t something everyone can walk!”

Luo Feng immediately turned and walked out, flying into the sky and vanishing.

The other 7 were stunned.

Hu!

Rong Jun stood up and said solemnly, “Luo Feng is right. The path to undying isn’t something anyone can just walk. Without the right heart, it’s better to just give up.” After which he turned and left too.

“Haha, good. Isn’t it just a battle. Haha, the people of Manka are people that love battles.” Wuka too stood up and laughed loudly. However his laugh had a sense of pressure and coldness.

“Go.” Jiang Mo stood up.

“Hm.” Qian Shui followed her big brother and left.

Yi Ke’s death had given the members of the absolute beginning region a huge wake up call, and the ones that were truly awoken were Luo Feng and the other 7. They didn’t even seem to sense any danger from before.

“Training mission.” Rong Jun sat in his study. He opened the screen and looked carefully. “Safe level, normal, difficult, dangerous, impossible? This is the 1st time i’m taking a mission. Without any danger there won’t be any effect. I can still choose the level now, in the future I won’t even get a choice. However, the 1st time shouldn’t be too dangerous, after all I have no experience.”

“Difficult level!”

Rong Jun opened the difficult level and chose the mission.

……

Fantasy ocean.

Rumble, a black ocean roared. The waves rose as high as 10m, crashing over and over into the Cliffside.

Luo Feng stood above the cliff, looking at the endless fantasy ocean.

“For a strong warrior, other than talent, comprehension, hardwork, resources and techniques, the most important thing is his heart!” Luo Feng looked far ahead. “With a heart like a blade and strong willpower, for the route ahead, any obstruction will be nothing but a joke! Progressing forward, with a heart of respect and nothing to fear!”

“Heart cold as a mirror, able to see clearly through everything.”

“Heart like a blade, able to cut through obstructions.”

Luo Feng’s eyes were cold. With a rumble he became a beam of light and headed towards the 1st island of the fantasy ocean.

.....

His heart was cold like a mirror. This was the state that Luo Feng had reached long ago in spirit, in any circumstance or situation, he could maintain absolute calm and coldness.

And 30 years of quiet study.

The death of a good friend, it made him roar!

It made him reflect on himself, seeing clearly what he was, his willpower and heart were both like a blade!

Heart like a mirror, this was where the heart had reached an absolute level of strength.

Heart like a blade, was another aspect altogether.

Hong and Thunder god both focused heavily on the spirit training. These two had long reached a perfect level of the heart. Their mental state had long reached the pinnacle of chinese culture level. Chasing after their ancestors, they had many methods of training and finally reached perfection.

Maybe in other aspects they were weaker, however in mental state alone, these two could be considered at the pinnacle in the universe.

And Luo Feng too could achieve this state. He was probably only weaker than the other two by a little.

……

Primal chaos city.

A group was listening to True Yan emperor's class, Luo Feng was one of them.

"With just this level of illusion and you want to affect me? My heart is like a mirror, I see through all the haze! My heart is like a blade, I cut through all the illusions! Break! Break! Break!" Luo Feng's consciousness was like lightning, roaring and shaking the skies. The land and skies crumbled and the illusion broke, revealing the original island scenery. It was a white sandy island and on it were trees and plants, which looked silent and beautiful.

And Luo Feng stood on the beach of the island.

In the distant ocean, there was darkness.

In the distance, a white shade floated and appeared. Another deeper island had appeared, only after passing the 1st level would the next island appear.

"I really wish to see what kind of illusion can stop me!" Luo Feng rushed into the sky, becoming a beam of light and heading towards the 6th island.

Right, Luo Feng had just passed 5 islands of the fantasy ocean continuously.

5 islands, they hardly even affected Luo Feng!

Chapter 10 – Fantasy Ocean

At the deepest parts of fantasy ocean, within the 21st island, sat a golden armored, black scaled old man. He was the manager of the fantasy ocean.

"Hm?" The old man with a face full of black scales opened his eyes and gazed far away. With a dazed look, he said "A universe level 9 punk is actually passing the 7th island so easily? Even many sector lords can't pass this island, yet he is passing it that easily."

Looking at his details. "Hm, Luo Feng. True Yan emperor's disciple?"

"True Yan is good at teaching disciples. However, consciousness and will power cannot be taught. Let's see how many islands this pink can pass. If he passes the 9th island, then that's impressive. Even many pinnacle of sector lords cannot pass that." The black scaled old man smiled. He looked into space and watched Luo Feng's progress through the fantasy ocean.

After a while.

"He passed the 8th island?" The black scaled old man's eyes were filled with shock. With a swoosh he stood up, "He really passed the 8th?"

Fantasy island's 21 islands was actually very similar to passing the 21 levels of the heavenly bridge.

However...

Consciousness and willpower were from within and were hard to train. A student level punk, in terms of willpower alone may not be weaker than a sector lord! Of Course, consciousness strength would be much weaker, however just willpower alone was hard to gauge! However the fantasy island alone tested both of them and not just willpower.

“His consciousness strength definitely cannot compare to a pinnacle sector lord.” The black scaled man’s eyes were filled with shock, saying solemnly, “It’s extremely tiring for him in fantasy island, but obviously his willpower has compensated quite a bit for that.”

“His willpower is sturdy!”

“His determination and willpower is immovable! Actually, they are even stronger than the pinnacle of sector lords!”

“9th island!” The black scaled old man’s eyes were nervous. “9th island was named as one of the limits of a sector lord. Very few sector lords can pass this. This Luo Feng...a universe level 9 punk... how can he possibly pass this. It’s impossible.”

9th island, the mountain rocks and sand were all white.

The trees and plants were lush in this island. Luo Feng stood at

the peak of the island's 300m to 400m tall mountain. His body upright, eyes cold, gaze like a blade, there wasn't any hint of worry or hesitation. Within a few seconds, the illusion and pressure began to completely engulf Luo Feng!

"Rumble!"

Luo Feng felt as though a large mountain had just crashed on his consciousness. This was purely the consciousness strength alone. Even for many sector lord pinnacle warriors, their consciousness would immediately be knocked and they would feel dizzy. In that blurry state, one would unwittingly fall into the illusion and lose.

Just like how some strong willed people of earth would never sign their life or property away. However, after a few punches, kicks in that weary state, they wouldn't even know if they end up actually submitting and signing the papers.

One theory.

First heavily damage the consciousness! Once one was in a blurry state, unleash the illusion!

"Rumble..."Almost like a mountain crashing on his consciousness. Luo Feng immediately felt the tremor. He saw the land started to swirl in front of him, as he started to feel dizzy.

"Heart like a blade!"

“Gather!”

His consciousness let out a roar. His state of mind which was in a state close to desperation immediately reconstructed and his mind was clear again.

Willpower was the general!

Consciousness was the soldier!

The strength of one’s consciousness included one’s spirit energy, mental strength and so on. As one’s strength grew, it would naturally grow. For example, if a sector lord released his spirit pressure, he could easily kill a star traveller or star level. Even if his willpower was normal, his immeasurable strength was simply too much.

Luo Feng’s consciousness strength was the golden horned beast domain lord level 6!

The golden horned beast was much stronger than the same level humans. It was comparable to a domain lord level 9 or even a sector lord level 1 human!

Luo Feng’s consciousness strength had already reached the pinnacle of domain lords.

Right now, he was under the attack of a sector lord pinnacle pressure. Luckily, his willpower was incredibly sturdy. With a

powerful general, his consciousness solidified. He could withstand the attack and not crumble! If his consciousness level was at the universe level, he would have instantly crumbled.

If the soldier is too weak, no matter how strong the general was, it was still useless.

Since the soldier wasn't too weak, and the general was extremely strong, he still stood a chance!

"Luo Feng, Little Hai battled with someone at the Ganwu Dojo and was killed by his bodyguards!" The scene changed and while Luo Feng's consciousness was hit, he fell into the illusion. Xu Xin's expression was filled with worry as she shouted, that illusion even invaded his memories, attempting to meld with it.

"What, Little Hai..." Luo Feng was shocked.

Heart as cold as a mirror, even when a few specks of dust fell, the mirror would still reflect clearly. Luo Feng immediately felt unsettled after being affected by the illusion.

"The illusion is afterall just an illusion, break!" Luo Feng's consciousness solidified and immediately broke through the obstruction, cutting and slicing through the skies. However, this caused the illusionary world to only slightly tremble This slight tremble alone made Luo Feng smile coldly. His consciousness was like a blade, as quick as lightning, it produced tens of millions of blades!"

Rumble...it immediately caused the illusionary world to produce an unstable tear. After which it crumbled and the surroundings revealed the scene of the 9th island once again. In the distance a blur of white appeared, the 10th island.

“10th island.” Luo Feng immediately flew over.

.....

The black scaled old man who was located at the deepest parts of Fantasy ocean, in that 21st island, revealed a look of shock. “What strong consciousness and terrifying willpower. It’s been extremely long since I’ve seen such willpower. With such willpower, if he doesn’t reach the end of his life span and fall, he would become an absolute warrior.”

To actually enter and attempt fantasy ocean, it represented one’s talents were extremely high.

With high talents and exceptional nurturing, an absolute genius with incomparable willpower usually only had two paths. Failing at the end or becoming an absolute warrior!

“In the past, Bolan only made it to the 7th island before failing, and Rong Jun failed at the 6th. These two already had terrifying willpower. But this Luo Feng...” The black scaled old man choked and cleared his throat. “This level of terrifying willpower will be very helpful during dangerous life or death situations. As long as there’s a thread of survival, unless he meets with an impossible situation, he’ll definitely become an absolute warrior!”

“This news, I have to inform the higher ups immediately.” The black scaled old man’s expression was serious.

There more valuable one was, the more the Virtual Universe Company would pay attention to them.

Creating the heavenly bridge, fantasy ocean and undying altar, all these were to pick out the most exceptional of geniuses! The undying altar was the least emphasized of the three, mainly because almost all of the pinnacle sector lords could reach perfection in control of their bodies. As for the heavenly bridge and fantasy ocean, many undyings and even universe country leaders would still attempt them.

Hence, the heavenly bridge and fantasy ocean were more heavily emphasized!

……

10th island.

Luo Feng’s gaze focused and his consciousness condensed, like a mirror and blade, it was incredibly sturdy.

The 10th island’s illusion was accompanied by a terrifying amount of pressure.

“Rumble!”

Almost like the skies crumbling down on him, the pressure smashed into his consciousness. Within an instant, Luo Feng’s consciousness crumbled.

10th island was a failure!

No matter how strong one’s willpower was, against a normal undying’s consciousness strength, it was like an ant being squashed into nothing!

An excellent general can control 10,000 soldiers to move. With a bit of strategy, these soldiers can be controlled just like the extension of one’s arm, finally killing the enemy general and their million strong army while protecting their own.

However, if the enemy had over a hundred million soldiers, which covered the land and skies, almost like an endless ocean... that same general, no matter how exceptional he was, he would still die without a doubt.

.....

Fantasy island core island 21.

The black scaled old man wrote a letter seriously, sending the detailed news of Luo Feng’s progress and emphasizing heavily on how his willpower was terrifyingly strong.

“Hu!” The black scaled old man finally relaxed after sending it out.

“Following the old rules, I’ll inform True Yan Emperor and Jade emperor.” The black scaled man wrote a simpler version of the report and sent it to these two.

According to the rules, Luo Feng would eventually become an underling of 9 blade knight.

Hence, the details of his growth had to be constantly recorded and sent to Jade Emperor, who was under 9 blade knight and in charge of such management.

And True Yan Emperor was Luo Feng’s teacher. He had specially requested the black scaled old man to send progress about Luo Feng to him..

The black scaled old man gazed into the distant space, saying softly, “Even against tough situations, troubles, difficulties, big enemies and so on, one’s willpower can’t be that terrifying! And the greater the hatred, even though one’s willpower will be strong, they will become easily susceptible to illusions.”

“Such a terrifyingly sturdy willpower, only through special circumstance and situations can it be produced.” The black scaled old man exclaimed.

Indeed!

For Luo Feng to reach this step, he had indeed met with special circumstances.

First reason was that he had been driven since young to become a warrior and often battle in life or death battles.

Second reason was that he had sacrificed his life during the swallowing beast incident. However, the possession was successful. The feeling of such rebirth seemed to have changed his willpower tremendously.

The third reason was that due to the golden horned beast's blood and soul influence, it caused Luo Feng to be extremely cold.

And with guidance from Hong and Thunder god and the knowledge from thousands of years of chinese culture, along with the inherited mental state training from his ancestors from these thousands of years, it allowed him to reach a perfect mental state like that of a mirror.

Luo Feng had always recognized the importance of mental state training.

Yi Ke's death, along with that letter, plus the 30 years of study, all had resulted in Luo Feng's mental state rising to yet another level. It had finally reached the level of heart like a blade.

Heart like a mirror and blade!

Creating a willpower that was so powerful it couldn’t be moved!

Luo Feng was oblivious to the fact that watchman of fantasy ocean had sent the news about him to the upper management of the Virtual Universe Company. He returned to his own study in his villa at the absolute beginning region.

“Fantasy island and heavenly bridge, I’ve already reached my limit for these two. Within a short amount of time, I won’t be able to make any progress.” Luo Feng sat at his desk and looked at the screen of his laptop. “Now then, I’ll have to choose a mission to train myself.”

Chapter 11 – Training world

Luo Feng grabbed the mouse and opened the management folder, which had options for Life, study and training. He picked training from the three options.

“Training mission danger level is separated into 5 levels.” Luo Feng looked at the screen and frowned. “Which level should I pick?”

Looking at the 5 levels on the screen.

Safe, Mortality rate 0%. Normal, Mortality rate 10%. Difficult, Mortality rate 20%. Dangerous, Mortality rate 50%. Impossible, Mortality rate 90%.

“This is the 1st time I am taking on a mission. I have no knowledge about it.” Luo Feng thought. “I cannot pick randomly, and picking the impossible level would be too irresponsible. If it was Wuka or Rong Jun and the others…they would be prudent and pick the difficult level!”

“Then I…” Luo Feng pondered for a moment and nodded. “I’ll pick the dangerous level!”

Dangerous level, the 2nd highest of the 5 levels had a mortality rate of 50%.

The ones picking the missions were all the most exceptional

geniuses of the 1,008 universe countries. Even though all of them had enough wealth to buy treasures and trump cards, many didn't dare pick too hard of a level the first time. Normally, only after acquiring enough experience would they pick the dangerous level! Even so, the mortality rate was still 50%. This showed just how dangerous it was.

"I'm different from them."

"I have my two great clones, which are even stronger than this body." Luo Feng thought, "If I don't pick a more dangerous mission, there would be no challenge."

Even though he was confident, he still needed to be prudent, he didn't dare pick the most terrifying impossible level.

90% Mortality rate!

This was truly impossible for the moment.

Those who dared pick that were all fully prepared and incredibly confident. Yet, 9 out of 10 still died. The surviving ones were probably very lucky, this...was the impossible level!

.....

Luo Feng gently tapped and chose the dangerous level missions.

“Di!”

A screen appeared with red warning words.

“Warning! Warning! Your majesty Luo Feng is doing a mission for the 1st time. According to the records and calculations history from the Virtual Universe Company, those picking a dangerous mission as their 1st mission have a mortality rate of 78.2%. Please choose wisely. If you wish to continue, please confirm. Otherwise, please cancel this and accept another mission.”

Luo Feng frowned.

Picking the dangerous level as their 1st mission had a mortality rate of 78.2%?

“Hmph, there’s definitely a way to survive the mission, since the impossible level exists above it! The survival chances of the dangerous level are definitely bigger. If I can’t even pass the dangerous level, wouldn’t that be a joke?” Luo Feng didn’t hesitate and immediately confirmed the selection.

A new glossary appeared on the screen and on it were detailed introductions.

“Dangerous level mission, many core members would usually choose this after much experience and preparation as the mortality rate was still 50%. Similarly, since the danger level was high, the awarded points would be more shocking too.

Below are the dangerous level missions:

1 Wei Si Ka Planet (Virtual Universe Company Primal secret region)

2 Seven Flames Palace (Virtual Universe Company Heaven and Ground secret region)

……

6 Green Demon world (Virtual Universe Company Last Phase secret region)

……

9 Dragon pagoda Planet (Virtual Universe Company Absolute beginning secret region)

……

18 Nine star ocean (Huge Axe dojo Huge Axe secret area)

……

29 Prison Battlefield (Universe Mercenary Alliance Glory secret region)

.....

36 Blood River world (Virtual Universe Company Absolute beginning secret region)

.....

186 Flame Ice Continent (Universe Galaxy Bank Black hole secret region)

The list was filled with a blur of missions. There were a total of 186 missions that he could accept, and all of them were within secret regions. These were controlled and remodeled regions from the 5 great leviathans. The 186 secret regions were where the missions were located.

“186?” This Dragon pagoda planet is in the absolute beginning region?” Luo Feng gently tapped the 9th mission dragon pagoda planet and took a look.

Universe secret region, the small ones were similar to a galaxy or the milky way. The big ones were similar to a star sector, or even like the size of the Ganwu universe country!

How many planets were in the Milky way galaxy?

How many galaxies were there in the Ganwu universe country?

Hence, in the vast and mysterious universe secret regions, new continents may be produced in the voids of the regions, or even some special planets. Anyway, these special territories within the secret regions, many people could never calculate even with their entire life spans.

“Dragon pagoda planet, a planet produced within the absolute beginning region. Over countless years of being engulfed in universe energies, it resulted in many powerful dragon clans forming within the planet. There were some powerful thunder dragons proficient in flesh and blood battles, some humanoid dragons proficient in spirit attacks, or the golden dragon which was a fusion of the two...” Luo Feng looked at the detailed introduction of the planet.

The introduction was very long.

And the Dragon pagoda training mission was all about hunting dragons!

Become a dragon hunter!

“Hehe, challenging indeed.” Luo Feng muttered. The strongest within the Dagon pagoda is akin to a pinnacle sector lord, while the weakest are at least universe level. One has to be extremely cautious while hunting. The moment a strong dragon discovers you, that wouldn’t be hunting anymore, but rather being hunted instead.”

……

Luo Feng looked at several missions and was shocked at the many places.

“Blood river world was also located within the absolute beginning secret area.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed. The best choice for this 1st mission was one within the absolute beginning region. Otherwise, just flying to the other regions alone would take a very long time, and there were a total of 5 special sectors within the dangerous level missions. Luo Feng was leaning towards Blood river world.

“Blood river world was a floating vast continent within the absolute beginning region. A universe secret region is usually produced from the universe evolution, and this blood river world is a powerful world that was produced within during the early stages of the absolute beginning region. It’s ancientness far exceeds the most ancient universe country.

Within the blood river world, there live countless powerful humans. They’ve formed their own language, culture and training culture.

They heavily respect strength.

……

The detailed introduction for blood river world was very long,

and Luo Feng read on nervously.

"Such a mysterious world. There are even aboriginal undyings." Luo Feng looked with shock. "What a pity, because it's within the universe secret region, with large amounts of cosmic dust obstructing the way, it made the undyings unable to accelerate to lightspeed and engage in universe travel. Hence, even the undying remained as aboriginals on blood river world."

Blood river world had a diameter close to 1 light year, which was about 9 trillion km!

Such a vast surface had allowed their population to reach a huge number. Also, since the universe origin laws were circulating within, the strong were like clouds.

"A reminder."

"The people of blood river world hate outsiders."

"Hence, to accept this mission, one first has to not bring any technology related items along. As for the few special spirit and genetic weapons, unless blood river world already has them, they cannot be brought as well. One also has to follow the attire of the normal people of blood river world."

"If one's looks are too peculiar, he would also have to undergo physical alteration to fit in with the look of the people of Blood River world."

“Blood river world’s language differs from universe language. One has to learn the language before entering.”

……

Luo Feng laughed and nodded. “Luckily the humans of blood river world have tens of thousands of races. My looks are considered normal.”

“As for weapons”

“With the study of origin laws, it doesn’t make a difference whether I use a blade or spirit weapon.”

“About language.”

“With my consciousness speed that’s comparable to a quantum computer, I should be able to learn it in half a day.” Luo Feng finally decided on choosing Blood River world. Although it was an ancient world over a trillion years old, this was a place with a new culture, and had humans as the leaders of the planet, unlike the other missions with different and strange things with those secret areas.

Blood river world’s mission was:

1 Acquire 1 Blood river crystal, (This was a blood river world

specialty, as blood river crystals can be found nowhere else in the universe.). A successful mission equals 10,000 points.

2 Acquire the title Blood warrior and the Blood river medal. A successful mission equals 100k points. (Reminder, 99.5% of those who take this mission complete the 1st one.)

As long as 1 of the 2 was completed, it would represent that the mission as a success.

“Di.”

“Please confirm the acceptance of the Blood River mission.”

“Acceptance successful.”

“Please fill out the departure time. The Virtual Universe Company will arrange for a ship to send you to blood river world.”

……

Luo Feng smiled at the mission.

There were two reasons why he chose this mission. First reason was because of its unique culture and it’s unique training culture. The second reason was because it gave a large amount of points, amounting between 10k to 20k. Very few missions had 2 choices of missions, and the 2nd mission of Blood river world actually reward

100k points when completed.

My god.

How much was 100k points? Only passing the 11th level of the heavenly bridge gave 100k points, and Luo Feng was stuck at only the 5th. As for the 11th? It would take at least another 1,000 years.

“Blood warrior title, blood river medal? Maybe it’s very difficult, however I still have to try.” Luo Feng smiled.

After receiving the mission, he began to do all sorts of preparations.

“Nan shen armament is one of humanity’s 9 godly weapons. The blood river world has no such materials to make it. Hence, when I enter blood river world, I cannot take it out. The gold shadow blade too is the same way. I’ll custom make a sharp blood shadow blade.” Luo Feng custom made the blood shadow blade and a 6 edged shield.

The materials were all available on blood river world!

“As for cloud contact vine?”

“The cloud contact vine was a plant life form, and it was rare within humanity’s 1,008 universe countries. There’s no such thing on blood river world. I’ll temporarily let the Mosha clan clone wear it.”

“Luckily! Blood river world has the space ring.”

“I’ll order some armor, helmet and boots.”

Luo Feng swiftly made preparations. He first had to make sure that there weren’t any stark differences between him and the native people. As the world was huge with tens of thousands of different human races, as long as he wasn’t too peculiar, it naturally wasn’t too much of a problem!

However...

If anyone took out a laser gun in blood river world and was discovered by an absolute warrior, sector lord or undying, that would mean certain death, as blood river world had no such technology advancement.

“Blood river world language?” Luo Feng spent 3 days and with a consciousness speed comparable to a basic quantum computer, he learnt 18 types of blood river language.

“Hm!”

“Everything is prepared!”

Chapter 12 – Blood River world.

Absolute beginning region.

Thick mist shrouded the entire space. A huge ice planet had many broken star fragments orbiting about it, and Luo Feng's quarters was one of them.

"Hey, what do you think his majesty is preparing for, since he is buying so many things! There were so many universe ships flying in these past few days."

"Who knows. Anyway, he has large amounts of wealth, he can buy anything he wants."

A few universe soldiers stood guard about the villa and chatted while patrolling.

"Shut up all, don't discuss about his majesty!" In the distance a domain lord captain turned and shouted while directing the movers carrying the boxes.

"Yes."

The guards all immediately stopped talking.

"Hmph." Only then did that captain turn and continue with his instructions. "You all, place those huge boxes over there, right.

These large boxes should be put here. They are very important, be careful and lift them gently."

Within the entire villa.

Many boxes filled with different items were actually being arranged, taking up close to over 10km of area.

.....

The nutrition cabin was placed within Luo Feng's study. Within these 3 months, Luo Feng had been bathing within it all the time.

"Di!"

The nutrition cabin slowly opened, a nude, fit, black haired youth emerged from the almost clear nutrition liquid, stood up and immediately stepped out. The surface of his body immediately rose in temperature as it dried the remaining liquid. Following that, a dark red simple clothing immediately appeared and covered his body.

"My body is currently at universe level 9, and my spirit reading is at universe level 9 as well." Luo Feng flexed and exerted some strength. The solid muscles of his flexed with energy, causing the space around to tremor and explode.

"How weird."

“This nutrition cabin.” Luo Feng turned to look at it, within it was still a lot of the valuable liquid that he hadn’t finished. “In about 3 short months, I rose straight to universe level 9, essentially from the point of evolving to reaching a point of feeling full and completely satisfied..”

Luo Feng’s body strength had already reached saturation, unable to increase anymore.

Unless he broke through to domain lord level, which will allow his body to evolve more. An evolution in the basic essence of his body would be the only way to raise its strength further. Of course, if needed,Luo Feng was able to immediately raise his body to domain lord level. The only issue was that his internal world was currently only domain level 6. Hence, he was unable to evolve further directly to domain lord level 9, and could only bear with it for now.

As Luo Feng walked out from his building, the waiters and guards who were busy with their work in the villa were all shocked.

“Your majesty!”

“Your majesty!”

Everybody bowed respectfully.

“Your majesty.” Sector lord Ao Duo also became a beam of light

and flew over, bowing respectfully.

“Haha...” Luo Feng looked at the large amount of shipments and laughed. “So many goods these past few days, Ao Duo, sorry to trouble you.”

“No problem.” Ao Duo replied.

“Have all the goods arrived? “Luo Feng asked.

“Your majesty’s orders have all arrived, everything is here.” Ao Duo replied respectfully.

Luo Feng nodded and his eyes gleamed as he saw the large amount goods that took up over 10 kilometers. The goods that he spent 860 mixed elements on where all here! As he knew the points were extremely valuable, he tried not to use the points as much as possible.

860 mixed elements! This amount was available for him due to the dividends he got from Ping Hai company, especially from that huge investment..

Of course, the main thing was the money remaining within the company to generate even more funds. Since Luo Feng himself had close to 1,000 mixed elements, he ended up using 860 of them at one go.

“With these!”

“The golden horned beast’s Deities of the world 2nd level will have some progress.” Luo Feng thought. These goods before him included the cloud contact vine’s many nutritional items. These were the things that he prepared before heading to blood river world. However, the most important things were still the materials for the golden horned beast’s training of deities of the world.

Training deities of the world had extremely high requirements, the weaker one was the easier it was to train.

The 1st level of deities of the world was completed by Luo Feng in primal chaos city. This was because the golden horned beast was weaker back then. That and because Luo Feng was able to purchase many valuable materials to complete it. Many golden horned beasts only completed the 1st level throughout their entire lives!

The 2nd level required extremely rare materials. However, it was a pity that he was not able to afford some of the materials. This time, he spent 860 mixed elements, of which over 830 of them were used for the training materials for the 2nd level, and this was still only the cheaper portion of the training!

As for the special materials, even the treasure trove didn’t have it! When it came to the expensive parts, Luo Feng couldn’t afford them.

“The effects of deities of the world are intrepid, however the requirements are too harsh. The 2nd level requires the Kan Luo

Si's feathers, that alone requires 12 million. As for some items, they might as well not be in the treasure trove." Luo Feng thought, it was no wonder this technique was so hard to train.

The cost for the 2nd level to complete was extremely huge!

At least...

As he was only a small figure within the Virtual Universe Company, Luo Feng still couldn't see the end in sight.

"Phew!" Luo Feng raised his hand and had Babata keep all the items in his storage space. The many items required at least 10km in space. However, in truth it didn't take up that much space, at least with Luo Feng's current status, buying a larger space ring was easy.

.....

2nd day.

Luo Feng wore black armor and boots, and carried a 6 edged shield and a blood shadow blade. These were all custom made for his mission on blood river world. As the cloud contact vine and quantum computer on his arm didn't fit the regulations of the world, he passed them to the Mosha clan body to wear.

Of course, Babata hid within his storage space according to Luo Feng' s instructions. "Babata, you are forbidden from showing

your presence in any way on blood river planet. The most you can do is mentally communicated with me."

"Damn, I've been with your teacher through so many life or death situations, relax." Babata said.

"Hm." Luo Feng stood in the villa and looked at the skies engulfed in mist.

Rumble...a universe ship descended from the distance on Luo Feng's star fragment.

"Your majesty, be careful on your mission." Ao Duo advised respectfully.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded, becoming a beam of light and flying over.

"Good luck your majesty!"

Over a 100 guards and 1,000 staff members all said simultaneously. The distant Luo Feng had already entered the universe ship sent by the Virtual Universe Company and quickly vanished with the ship.

Dark universe, this fish shaped universe ship was swiftly progressing.

“Your majesty, we are heading to blood river world. Our speed has already reached 36 times light speed, we’ll arrive in about 19 hours.” A purple short haired, beautiful looking lady with a furry tail who appeared very serious explained to Luo Feng. “After 19 hours, I’ll inform your majesty. Until then, you can rest.”

“Thanks.” Luo Feng nodded.

After which Luo Feng sat in the sofa beside and poured himself a glass of wine. As he was tasting it, he also sent a thread of his consciousness into the virtual universe to practice the blade technique, illusionary 7 blades. Currently, every blade was already completely ingrained into his consciousness.

Even so...

Amongst the 7 blades, his most proficient was still the dutchman’s pipe! Maybe it was because the mosha clan was proficient in assassination, or the fact that long periods of time spent on this training move had made his comprehension of it the deepest. Hence, even Luo Feng’s earth body’s too was the most proficient in the dutchman’s pipe.

.....

As he was recapping the bladework and movement, 19 hours passed quickly.

“Your majesty, we’ll begin universe travel quickly and return to

the actual universe." The purple short haired lady said coldly. Simultaneously the ship's control room resounded with the countdown of the universe travel. After 10 seconds, the entire ship shook slightly and became stable again, the ship had finally arrived.

"External simulation." The lady ordered.

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed as the surrounding scenery morphed and revealed the external world's virtual simulation.

"So beautiful." Luo Feng was shocked. What appeared before him was the external world which was covered in mist. It also contained all kinds of space debris making it even more mysterious. However, in the distance was an incredibly beautiful palace that was floating in space itself.

"This palace is called Heaven Erosion palace. A few of our Virtual Universe Company absolute warriors are studying within, they are also in charge of watching over blood river world." The purple haired lady introduced. "Within the palace not far away, there's a large empty sector. It has enough space to allow a universe ship to accelerate to universe travel"

"Heaven Erosion palace, watch tower?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"Right." The lady nodded. "The moment anyone flies out from blood river world, they'll be discovered. If it's our people, they will naturally be safely taken in. If it's an aboriginal from blood river world…naturally they won't fare too well."

“I’ll send you there right away!”

“Once you exit this ship, it isn’t too far away from blood river world. Your majesty Luo Feng will have to rely on your own ship.” The dark purple haired lady said. “Your majesty should have brought your own ship right, this point was mentioned in the training mission manual.”

“Understood.” Luo Feng nodded.

Hua!

The cabin door opened and Luo Feng who was dressed in a completely black armor and boots while carrying a shield and blade, flew out of the ship into space.

“Heaven Erosion palace.” Luo Feng stood there, staring at the distant palace. With a wave, a silver pyramid ship appeared. It was the automaton ship he had acquired on earth. This ship was definitely a very exceptional ship. Whether it was mobility or defense, it was not bad.

“Ship exterior simulation, simulate a normal meteorite fragment.” Luo Feng entered the silver pyramid and ordered.

“Yes master.”

The exterior of the ship morphed and quickly became a grey normal looking meteorite fragment. looking like nothing within the space, It quickly accelerated and headed towards blood river world.

Standing in the control room, Luo Feng looked ahead.

In the distance was an incredibly vast continent floating in space. It was completely shrouded in clouds and the atmosphere.

This was blood river world!

“Another 3 hours before entering the outer atmosphere.”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

Blood river world had welcomed another outsider!

Chapter 13 – An Arrow to Save a Person

“Blood river world, was a place where the strong are like the clouds and it even had undyings.” Luo Feng looked at the world closing in. “I have to be extremely prudent and definitely not reveal my identity!”

“However it’s strange!”

“With the virtual universe’s strength, clearing out the entire blood river world should be very simple. Since they easily have such power, why did they instead chose to build a heaven erosion palace to observe from space, and not dominate the world.” Luo Feng was suspicious. This wasn’t much like the attitude of a large power in the universe.

“This isn’t up to me to bother about.” Luo Feng shook his head.

……

3 hours later.

The automaton ship with an appearance of that of a normal meteorite finally entered the atmosphere of blood river world.

“I cannot proceed further!” With a thought, he flew out of the ship’s cabin door and had Babata keep the ship in his storage space.

“Blood river world, there are a total of 18 cloud layers.” While looking at the mission’s introduction, it had a general introduction of the entire world. Blood river world’s atmosphere had a total of 18 cloud layers. The higher one headed, the greater the pressure would be. Only universe levels could use their bodies to pass through all 18 layers.

However, the aboriginals of blood river world at most fly up to the 18th level, not daring to go any further.

Because they know that the clan outside the heavens would kill all of the blood river aboriginals as soon as they left the world. There hadn’t been anyone that had survived leaving the 18 layers and returning alive.

“I don’t have to worry in space outside the cloud layers.”

“However, in these cloud layers, I might meet some aboriginals.” Luo Feng’s full body of black armor and boots, with the blade and shield on his back, was very accurately similar to the looks of a normal blood river world warrior. From the 18th layer, he followed the terrifyingly strong gravity and madly plunged downwards.

“What strong gravity.”

“With such strong gravity, only star levels would be able to fly in this.” Luo Feng calculated within. “The magnetic field within a star traveller’s body cannot combat this strong gravity pull at all.”

Sou!

Sou!

Sou!

Luo Feng became like a shooting star plunging down from the 18th layer. His speed was rising as he went lower. Finally, he controlled and maintained a normal speed of descend. After 15 minutes of descending, he finally broke through the 1st cloud layer.

Before him, the scenery of blood river world finally unfolded.

“Hua.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but exclaim with shock. Right below him was an endless vast mountain range and forest. With his gaze, he was able to determine that this ancient forest had an area of at least 10,000km. At its edges one could see little silhouettes, those were the cities.

The ancient forest and mountain range welcomed a guest from the heavens.

While descending into the forested mountain range, this black silhouette’s energy ripples immediately split apart the tree branches and leaves. He eventually slowed down and gradually landed, landing on the rotten leaves on the ground.

“What terrifying gravity. For the normal people of blood river

world, to be able to withstand this pressure means that they should at least be at star traveller level." Luo Feng stood there and calculated in his head. "The air here is produced by the universe energies, hence the air has shocking strengthening effects on the body."

"No wonder this blood river world has so many strong warriors."

"Living in a universe secret region has caused their bodies to be extremely strong, and also made training easier than outside. However, because they are within a secret region, their fate had already been sealed. Even if they became undying, they were unable to leave the secret region to explore the vast universe. Unless the undyings joined the Virtual Universe Company." Luo Feng thought.

"However, the rotting smell and stench of this ancient forest is hard to bear."

At this time...

About 2,000 meters away from Luo Feng, a thick bent tree that required 20 people to hug around was wrapped with a jade green snake that had a human face. This weird being's face had no nose, only eyes and a mouth. She was staring through the trees vines at the silhouette 2,000 meters away.

"Sila!!!" A piercing sound seemed to pierce through Luo Feng's ears. Simultaneously, a 60m long jade green snake person became a blur of light and appeared beside Luo Feng immediately. That

mouth opened wide fiercely and a 3 to 4m diameter black hole opened, attempting to swallow Luo Feng.

Luo Feng turned, with his eyes like a blade, he looked at the ferocious snake person creature.

This creature was as tall as at least a 20 storey building. Luo Feng was nothing but a dot compared to it. However, when Luo Feng looked over, that snake person's expression turned to that of shock and fear.

"Hmph!" Luo Feng snorted coldly.

Rumble!

That being lost all its strength in mid air. Due to the initial inertia, it smashed into the trunk of the thick tree, before falling hard on the ground. Once it's huge body landed, from the human face seeped out dark green blood from its eyes, as it lay there motionless.

"These are what the aboriginals of blood river world call the wild beasts? This is nothing but a beast with a power level around star level 5 or 6." Luo Feng thought. "It must have been suicidal to look for me." Luo Feng had purely used his consciousness strength to pressure it, in an instant crushing it and causing it to faint immediately.

Luo Feng's consciousness was extremely strong, as it was

comparable to that of a pinnace domain lord.

Consciousness pressure, this was the most obvious difference amongst those with great power . If he had used it to pressure a universe level, the most he could do was make that person feel uncomfortable! However against a star level that was 2 levels below, with just one gaze, it caused it to immediately crumble from within.

“A random wild beast already has star level 5 or 6 strength. Living in a secret region...really must be blessed by heaven.” Luo Feng looked in the distance. “I first have to leave the forest and head to the nearest city. Only once I head to a city will I be able to quickly look for the blood river crystal.”

Blood river crystal, it was a special treasure product of this world.

Sou!

Luo feng left a blurry image and immediately vanished into the distance.

At the edge of the mountain range forest, a team was heading forward.

“Young master, it’s your first time venturing out to the wild beast forest. Don’t get careless. Just exploring around the outer edges, killing the outside beasts and training will do.” A strong and

sturdy matured man about 1.8m tall said with his dialect. His armor revealed his thick arms and his face was covered in beard, while his brown eyes were filled with essence.

“Thunder uncle, with you around, what’s there to worry about?” Within the team, a youth dressed in silver armor, with a purple engraving on his forehead, laughed happily and said.

This youth casually carried a black bow, and on his back was a quiver with arrows.

That strong and sturdy man couldn’t help but smile. But with a sudden sniff, his expression changed and he said softly, “Everybody be careful, this should be the territory of the Mangu beast.”

“Mangu beast?”

The expressions of the guards within the team became serious, however they were still relaxed. Against these wild beasts they couldn’t be careless. This was a saying passed from long ago in blood river world. However no matter how powerful, these guards were still clear about one thing, as long as their team was careful, killing these beasts was easy.

“Mangu beast? Leave it to me.” The youth was very excited.

“Young master!” Thunder uncle frowned.

“No problem.” The youth had already drawn an arrow from the quiver. He lifted his bow, and got ready to fire.

The team approached carefully.

After a while...

When the team moved past the plants and trees, they saw a black armored skinny youth with a shield on his back by the river. His hands held barbecued meat, which he was enjoying. At this time, a huge grey blur silhouette was heading over from the distance, this caused the entire team to jump with a shock.

And the skinny youth sitting by the river seemed to detect something. He turned his head to look at the dim-witted huge grey silhouette.

“Looking for death!”

The team witnessed the scene. All the guards all knew that this stupid youth that had stumbled into the wild beast forest was definitely a punk without any experience. Otherwise why would he stupidly look at the Mangu beast that was attacking? A true warrior would firstly prepare ahead of time and would have moved to a favorable terrain.

At least, not sitting idly by!

“Mangu beast is a Sky level wild beast.” Thunder uncle roared.

“Xiu!”

A black light immediately pierced through the air and hit the grey silhouette. That grey silhouette let out a cry of pain and immediately twisted and landed on the ground. It was a furry bastard, the only thing was that it only had one claw. However that claw was as huge as its entire body, an arrow was lodged in its body and red blood spurted out from the wound.

Sou! The moment it landed, it let out cries of pain and angrily rushed towards the team.

“Xiu!” That silver youth’s expression grew serious. The purple engraving on his forehead slightly glowed with light. His hand was like a phantom, as it swiftly drew another arrow and fired. However the Mangu beast which was prepared this time, twisted it’s body and waved its sharp claw, knocking that black light away.

“Roar!” that strong and sturdy man brandished two axes from his waist and his arms fiercely crossed.

Rumble!

It seemed as though 1 axe appeared in mid air, slashing past the body of the Mangu beast. After which, the single axe disappeared and that strong and sturdy man had already reached 10m behind the Mangu beast.

Pa! The Mangu beast immediately fell from mid air, splitting in two halfs as fresh blood flowed from its organs.

“Thunder uncle sure is powerful, too powerful.” The silver armored youth clapped excitedly.

“Don’t get careless in the future. The Mangu beast has 2 trump cards. One is its claws, and the other is its poison breath. This Mangu beast has already reached sky level, if it gets close and releases its gas, that would be troublesome.” The strong and sturdy man lectured, simultaneously instructing his guards to extract the materials and essence of the beast.

“Yes.” The other guards immediately laughed happily and went to gather.

The silver armored youth walked towards the distant black armored youth and smiled and waved. With a tone that was proud of his own age and experience, “Brother, where are you from?” At this time the silver armored youth felt a sense of being a hero and savior. From his point of view, if it wasn’t for his arrow, that black armored youth would have died.

“Thanks.” Luo Feng looked at the silver armored youth, smiling and nodding.

That Mangu beast before only had a power of star level 1 or 2. Its sneak attack was long discovered by Luo Feng, and he was preparing to turn and destroy it. But who knew that the passionate silver armored youth would attempt to save him.

However...

Even though the people of blood river world worshipped strength, they still had these innocent youths. Looking at this excited silver armored youth before him, Luo Feng felt a great sense of anticipation towards blood river world.

Chapter 14 – Swallow Mound

After a while.

Luo Feng left the ancient forest with this team.

“No trouble at all. I guess I’ve trained enough, we can return. We’ll go together, it’ll be safer that way.” The silver armored youth was very excited as he thought about it. This black armored skinny youth before him was obviously one with less experience, and if he went out to explore by himself he might die. Since he was returning to home, they might as well bring him along.

“The feeling of saving someone feels good.” The silver armored youth thought.

“Ah, I haven’t introduced myself. I’m Na Ke, and you?” The silver armored youth smiled and looked at Luo Feng.

“I’m called Feng!” Luo Feng replied.

“Feng?” The silver armored youth nodded, exclaiming, “Good name! Big brother Feng is obviously older, I’ll call you big brother then. When we return to our Swallow Mound city, if you have time, I’ll show you around. I grew up in the city after all.”

“Swallow Mound?” Luo Feng smiled and nodded.

According to the Virtual Universe Company's information, even though it was pretty detailed, however Blood river world was after all too vast a world. There was no way for it to explain everything. It could only give a brief introduction of everything. At the same time, if they explained too much about many of the secrets, it wouldn't have the same training effect on the core members.

According to the information.

In blood river world, the native's strength was separated into, Ground level, Sky level, Clouds level, Domain Level, World level... undying spirit. It actually coincided with the universe's star traveller level, star level, universe, domain lord, sector lord and undying level.

And the cities of blood river world were mainly separated into Territorial cities or world cities.

The territorial city was the core of a territory. Every leader of these territories were definitely a domain level (Domain lord).

The world cities were the core of the world, and the leaders of these were definitely sector lords.

In the vast blood river world...

Every world city had a diameter of hundreds of millions of km or even billions of km. The population ranged in the trillions or more. In blood river world...there were over 10 million world

cities. Above these world cities there were even the undying palaces! The undying palaces are high in ranking and they normally didn't interfere with the normal matters of blood river world.

"It looks like, the place that I descended belongs to the Swallow mound territory." Luo Feng thought within, "Swallow mound territorial city should be a core city within the surrounding 10 million km and the city leader is most probably a domain lord warrior."!

"I require blood river crystals!"

"However, the information given by the Virtual Universe Company never explained anything about the crystals. It only states that the crystals were treasures of the world. Any idiot would know they were treasures. The Virtual Universe Company already called this huge continent blood river, wouldn't the blood river crystal be extremely important?" Luo Feng calculated within. "The blood river world had long had their own word system. Once I enter the city, there should be some books in the city that I can buy. I'll find out the details of the crystals through these books."

Through enchantment and several techniques, he could interrogate others.

However asking them wouldn't be as detailed as reading the books. A territorial city with an area of ten million km would definitely be advanced and would have what he needed.

“In advanced places, currency is definitely important.”

“The materials I got from hunting the beasts should be worth quite a bit.” Luo Feng long had a plan of what he needed to do.

He was an outsider after all!

His identity had to be kept secret. Since he had just entered blood river world, it was better to remain low profile.

This was also why when he first landed in the forest, he didn’t fly straight towards the city, as hunting and acquiring materials in the forest could get him some money. And that 10,000km area forest could only be considered a normal wild beast forest, the beasts were at most star level 8 or 9.

There wasn’t a single universe level.

……

The silver armored youth chatted with Luo Feng, as the tall and sturdy thunder uncle and the other guards all stared at them.

“This dumb little punk must be extremely lucky to have our group of brothers protect him.”

“The young master is too kind! If it were me, I couldn’t be bothered.”

“Hehe, brothers, speaking about it, just now we saw this Feng turn stupidly around at the Mangu beast flying over at him. His face was filled with shock and fear, I can’t help but laugh at that scene. Haha…I really don’t know how this stupid punk dares to enter the wild beast forest. Luckily we were only on the outer regions and haven’t met any powerful wild beasts, otherwise he would have become their shit long ago.”

The guards chatted behind.

“Shut up!”

The tall and sturdy thunder uncle ordered. The group of guards immediately stopped.

“Be careful, even though we are already on the way back, there’s still thousands of km to go. There’s usually bandits about.”

“Captain, with you around, which small bandit would dare approach us?”

“Yea, that will be suicide.”

The tall and sturdy man glanced at Luo Feng. Towards this stranger that they saved along the way, he remained wary. The young master’s kind heart…made him helpless. Because he was very clear that this was a world that favored the strong. All sorts of scheming, backstabbing and slaughter happened all the time.

Having a kind heart was disadvantageous to the young master in such a world.

"The master spoils the young master too much. He wants to wait till the young master matures before letting him taste some hardship." The tall and sturdy man shook his head.

******

In the vast flat land road ahead, a blur of people were cheering and swiftly progressing. It was Luo Feng and the silver armored youth's group, who were heading back as they were chatting and cheering.

As they maintained their speed at a thousand km per hour, to the Ground level fighters, it was very relaxing.

"Look, ahead it's our Swallow mound territorial city. We are only about 1 hour away from it." The silver armored youth gazed ahead at the large blurred silhouette of the city. He spoke with the native tongue and dialect. Although Luo Feng too used the same dialect, the accent however was not as precise.

Rumble...

Luo Feng's little team that was progressing felt ripples coming from the ground. As they looked back, they saw a vast black shadow swiftly rushing towards them. Everybody else couldn't see with their eyes, however Luo Feng could see with one glance it was

a huge team chasing them.

They all rode different types of beasts. These tamed beasts, some were huge while others small, some had wings on their backs. Among the differences, the one thing they had in common was that their speeds were extremely fast.

“Tamed beasts?” Luo Feng could recognize in one glance some of the beasts were similar to those he had hunted in the forest before.

“Let’s make way.” The tall and sturdy man communicated to the others.

Immediately the team headed to the side of the road.

The large team with hundreds of beasts ran over swiftly. The beasts’ hooves and sharp claws pierced into the ground, causing dust to fly all over and immediately settled back down again due to the strong gravity.

“Haha, isn’t this Young Master Na Ke?” An ear piercing laugh resounded like a tornado about. The large team that rushed over suddenly stopped and simultaneously tens of them flew over to where Luo Feng’s team was. In the blink of an eye, these fighters had already reached before them.

The leader of this team was a tall and handsome youth. He was riding what seemed like a tiger dressed fully in armor, however it was at least 10m long. The leader was looking at Na Ke, his face

proud and satisfied.

"Yu Fang!" The silver armored youth's expression changed.

"Tsk tsk...is the genius archer afraid?" The tall and handsome youth's expression slowly turned cold. With a snort, "You didn't expect me to catch you outside the city right!"

"Young master Yu Fang!"

A booming voice resounded. The tall and sturdy man took a step forward, gazing at the tall and handsome youth's group and saying seriously, "My family's master and the Yu family have some connections and relationships. I hope young master Yu won't do anything rash."

"I'm speaking right now!, Did I say it was your place to speak?" The tall and handsome youth angrily roared and his expression pained. "Get lost!"

"Yu Fang, you shut up." The silver armored youth roared.

"Haha, pure and kind Na Ke, haven't you grasped the situation yet? Outside the city, your father cannot come save you." The tall and handsome youth's expression was struggled. The muscles in his face twitched and his eyes resembled a venomous snake staring coldly, "I haven't forgotten how you humiliated me half a year ago."

Beside them, Luo Feng frowned.

The enemy's party was obviously superior.

The large group behind this Yu Fang was made up of just the 10 underlings alone. There was 1 star level 9 and 9 star level 7 or 8s.

And this side?

Na Ke's strongest warrior, that thunder uncle, was only a star level 6 or 7.

"We are in big trouble." The tall and sturdy thunder uncle was worried within. "The warriors in this team have about half of the Yu family's strongest. So many strong warriors following a little kid out seems strange."

"Captain, what do we do?"

"Captain, behind that young master Yu, there's that "Dripping Blood Blade" warrior, who is one of their 3 strongest in the family. He's a sky level pinnacle warrior. Just him alone would be enough to decimate us."

The team was flustered.

.....

The silver armored youth's eyes contracted. He stared angrily at the young master on the beast and roared, "Yu Fang, whatever you have, just bring it at me!"

"Ah, just like a true warrior. What a presence." The tall and handsome youth snorted and laughed, following which his expression changed and he roared, "Men, teach a good lesson to this group of people. However, don't kill them. I Yu Fang ain't that vicious. Also...grab the Na Ke and tie him up! I want to bond with him well..."

"Yes!" The group of warriors on the beasts replied together.

"Hua!"

The tall and sturdy thunder uncle along with the other guards all brandished their weapons together.

The young master on the beast laughed coldly. "Whoever resists, kill immediately! Of course...don't kill young master Na Ke. After all, he's my good brother that I grew up with! Go!"

Immediately the group of intrepid warriors flew from the backs of the beasts and headed towards Na Ke's little team.

Chapter 15 – Armor

Luo Feng stood beside that silver armored youth and frowned. He had just landed in blood river world, he didn't wish to cause a commotion.

"Haha!"

"Kill anyone who resists!" That group of warriors all laughed madly and flew over. Especially the skinny man dressed in a blood red armor carrying two dark red blades. He gazed at the guard team of the silver armored youth, his gaze focusing on the tall and sturdy thunder uncle.

On this side, the tall and sturdy thunder uncle and the guards had ugly expressions. They wanted to retaliate but didn't dare to. The silver armored youth Na Ke could only grit his teeth with rage.

"Rumble!"

The group of warriors flying over along with skinny man suddenly all stopped.

"Get lost!"

Almost like thunder god's roar, the 10 before them felt it reverberate within their minds. Like a terrifying pressure descending on them, they all felt a sense of pressure they couldn't resist. It was the type of pressure that was about to destroy them.

“Get lost! Get lost! Get lost!” That roar resounded within their minds.

The group of warriors immediately descended from mid air and didn’t attack.

“Let’s go!” The skinny man gazed at the silver armored youth’s team and ordered.

“Let’s go.” The youth too shouted, staring at the silver armored youth Na Ke.

Looking at the previously arrogant and proud team suddenly turn and leave, Na Ke and his underlings, even thunder uncle were all left stunned and suspicious.

“Why have they left?”

“This, this…”

“They are just leaving?” The guards couldn’t believe they had just escaped this crisis.

“Impossible.” The silver armored youth stared wide eyed, “Yu Fang that bastard isn’t that kind to just let me go.”

“There’s a strong warrior secretly helping us.” The tall and sturdy thunder uncle said softly, and he was very sure of it.

“Strong warrior?”

The group of guards including Na Ke looked curiously at the tall and sturdy man, “Thunder uncle, you say there’s someone else?” The silver armored youth was suspicious.

“Hm.” Thunder uncle nodded, emphasizing, “There are 3 possibilities. The first one is the master, he’s always spoiled you. He may have arranged an absolute warrior to protect you secretly.” At this, the guards around all nodded. Even Na Ke who was suspicious initially started to believe him after awhile.

“The second is that a mysterious absolute warrior is helping us secretly.” Thunder uncle said, “The third one is that someone from the Yu Family’s team is helping us.”

“The 1st and 2nd made sense, but you said someone from the Yu Family is helping us?” Na Ke was shocked.

“Captain, that can’t be.” The group of guards couldn’t believe it.

“Haven’t you discovered? The 10 that headed over here before alone had Dripping blood blade and the 9 great guards.” The tall and sturdy thunder uncle emphasized. Looking at the distant large team, “The team had more than a hundred people, but just the 10 were that strong. Of the rest of them, there should still be many other powerful warriors.”

“If it weren’t something important, they definitely wouldn’t have sent out so many strong warriors. Who knows, within the team was the true leader of the group.” Thunder uncle said seriously. “They had urgent matters to do, having such altercations while they had matters to do was the worst thing they’d wish for. That leader may have been dissatisfied and ordered all of them to return.”

“Hm!”

“Makes sense.” The group of guards nodded.

“Thunder uncle is very impressive.” The silver armored youth Na Ke complimented while laughing.

“However I’m still curious as to the large number of strong warriors, and many of the warriors were from other powers! Such a strong team, what were they doing?” Thunder uncle frowned, “Even if the family leader came out, he wouldn’t bring so many warriors.”

“Right.”

“Must be something very important.”

……

Yu Fang was swiftly taking his men to rejoin the large group.

“3rd uncle, just what warrior was secretly helping them before. Aren’t you a match for him?” Yu Fang looked at the skinny man beside him. That skinny man was one of the Yu Fang family’s top 3 warriors. With the name Dripping Blood Blade Yu Yan Ta, he was a star level 9 absolute warrior, strong even amongst those of the same level.

The skinny man Yu Yan Ta’s eyes twitched as they were filled with fear. He said, “Yu Fang, that secret warrior was extremely strong, if he didn’t control himself not to kill anyone, I’d already be dead.”

“What!” Yu Fang’s eyes stared wide.

My god.

He, Yu Fang was a Land Level, (star traveller) warrior. So, he could definitely feel the danger. However, his 3rd uncle was the sky level (Star level) pinnacle warrior. If even he felt that the enemy could easily kill him without even making a move, then that secret warrior must be terrifyingly strong.

“Just what level was that person, cloud level?” Yu Fang shook his head. “Even a cloud level wouldn’t be that strong.”

“Cloud levels aren’t that strong, a cloud level couldn’t simply just use his consciousness to pressure us and make us unable to resist.” The skinny man Yu Yan Ta nodded, saying, “I estimate…the secret warrior should be a domain level. Looking at how he could

immediately pressure the group and not kill them, his control of his pressure is very precise and controlled...he must be pretty powerful even amongst the domain levels."

"Domain level?" Yu Fang was stunned.

Swallow mound, had an area of ten million, with a population in the trillions.

Swallow mound's leader was a domain level (Domain lord). At this level, he was already an absolute being within swallow mound territory. There wasn't any family that could mess with him, he could simply make a move and destroy the families.

"That punk Na Ke, how did he find such a powerful being to protect him?" Yu Fang couldn't believe it.

"Yu Fang! Your group hurry and return to the team, don't waste time. Yan Ta, we are using our full force this time, don't you know the importance of what we are doing? You even went to waste time with that little kid Yu Fang? Hmph!" An old voice resounded within their minds.

"Uncle, we have matters to report." Yu Yan Ta communicated.

"Speak!"

"Uncle, when we went over to teach that Na family young master a lesson, we discovered one thing, there was a terrifying domain

level warrior behind that Na Ke!”

“Do, domain level?” That firm old voice suddenly stuttered.

“Yes.”

“How much guarantee do you have it’s a domain level?” That old voice couldn’t believe it. “Have you made a mistake?”

“99% sure, to be able to use only consciousness pressure to make us all crumble and unable to resist, only domain levels could do that.” Yu Yan Ta reported respectfully.

“Who is it?” The old voice asked nervously. A domain level can completely change the power hierarchy within a territory. If it’s a powerful domain level (domain lord), then he would be able to even get rid of the current leader, and acquire the god palace’s recognition. At that point, he can immediately become the new city leader.

“Not clear, maybe he was hiding within his team, or he was somewhere we couldn’t see. He was way stronger than us. Hence, I couldn’t be sure.” Yu Yan Ta said.

“Hm! We have to sort this out clearly when we return. But, first let’s return to the city.”

“Yes!”

The vast team from the Yu family swiftly progressed. A possible domain level warrior alone had made the upper echelons all flustered as messing with a domain level was simply suicide.

……

About 800km outside of Swallow mound city, the vast road pierced right through the large mountain. This mountain was split in half, forming a canyon. It seemed like a normal enough canyon. At this time, there were silhouettes walking at the peak of the mountain that was split apart by a strong warrior.

There were a total of 13 people!

All of them were dressed in armor wearing helmets, revealing only their eyes. On their backs they carried 1 or 2 axes, or single huge axes. Their armors were made up of black, blood red and gold colors.

“Big brother, they’ve come.”

“The Yu family team is here.”

The one leading was huge in stature. Dressed in gold armor, his blood red eyes gazing through the helmet, filled with cold, roaring, “Brothers, go, grab the goods!

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

13 silhouettes rushed from the peaks like bullets fiercely shooting downwards. When the 13 silhouettes swiftly descended, they immediately aroused the attention of the vast team flying over. The leader of the team was a old man with a black beard, he raised his right hand roared, Stop!”

The vast path ahead had only the 13 silhouettes.

13, like 13 devils standing there.

“10, 13...” The black bearded old man’s face went pale.

“13 Axe!” At the forefront of the team, the skinny man beside the black bearded old man Yu Yan Ta’s expression went pale too, “Why have they come, it can’t be...”

Within Swallow mound territory, there were a few strong heroes who were extremely powerful!

Much stronger than these business families. For example, this 13 axe was made up of 13 powerful warriors with similar interests that formed the group. There were no underlings in the group, just these 13. However just which family actually dared to mess with Swallow mound’s 13 axe? What was it based on? Within these 13 axes, there were 3 cloud levels! And 10 pinnacle sky levels!

Domain level (Domain lord), that was the dominating strength in

the entire swallow territory! Controlling the entire territory.

Cloud level (Universe level), these were considered the pinnacle fighting strength within the territory, as they were very powerful.

“What do we do?”

“What do we do?”

“We cannot lose these goods.”

The large Yu family was shocked.

“Lords of the 13 axe, whatever orders you have please speak.” The black bearded old man was apprehensive within. His appearance however was still strong and proud as he shouted.

“Yu Family?” A soft voice resounded from the 13 demons standing before them. The leader said, “Hand over the armor from the ancient ruins, we’ll spare your lives.”

The black bearded old man stared.

“Run!” The black bearded old man’s expression was struggling as he communicated to his team.

Rumble!

The entire team seemed like they were prepared, immediately the group of sky levels (Star level) madly rushed in all directions. Large amounts of the ground level swiftly flew and fled too, be it climbing the mountains or following along the path backwards. The skinny man Yu Yan Ta too followed the pack backwards.

“Yan Ta, quickly go to where that Na family punk is. If that domain level being is there, our Yu Family still has some hope!” The black bearded old man roared and communicated to them.

“Yes, uncle.” The skinny man replied.

Chapter 16 – Kill Them

When the hundred man team of the Yu Family madly fled, the leader of the 13 axe, his blood red eyes flashed with violence and he shouted, “Kill all of them, don’t spare even a single one!”

“Haha, understood!”

“They can’t get away!”

“9th and 13th brother, it’s up to you two.”

Including their leader, the 13 Axes swiftly became a blur and chased down the stronger fleeing members of the family. The two black armored men laughed manically as they extended their arms. Immediately, sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Blurry beams of light shot in all directions!

When Luo Feng was a student level 9, he could already control 10 flying blades. As for now, if he didn’t require strength, he could control thousands of little golden blades easily. Of course, if he required strength, he could only control about 10.

These 2 star level pinnacle warriors both immediately shot out 100 little thin flying axe like assassination weapons. Each of them were about half the size of a palm and 1mm in thickness.

A blur of flying axe assassination weapons covered the skies and shot in all directions.

“Ah! No! Quick!”

The large number of warriors fleeing all immediately went mad, as their surrounding comrades were being sliced through their heads by the flying axes. As they pierced right through, fresh blood spewed everywhere with brain matter and heads falling all over. In an instant, the entire canyon was stained red, almost like a nightmare scene. The large group of Ground level (star traveller) were simply massacred!

In a few seconds!

The entire Yu family in the canyon had less than 20 people left.

“My god!” The black bearded old man was paralyzed on the ground. His face was stained with the blood of others, and his eyes were staring wide eyed.

“Chi!”

A little flying axe weapon as thin as a cicada’s wing left a dazzling silhouette in mid air and later pierced through the old bearded man’s head, almost like slicing tofu.

“There’s nothing.”

“It isn’t here.”

“This old bastard’s has a space wristband. However, it doesn’t have the armor we want.” From the 13 axe, the two who controlled the attacks swiftly checked the important bodies. Among them, they found only 1 space item, however it didn’t have the item they wanted.

“The ones who fled are the most important, those 10 have fled from the canyon.”

“No worries, big brother is chasing them.”

“Hm, he’s caught up.”

Chi! Chi!

The two became a beam of light and swiftly caught up with crowd!

On the wide road, about 10 people were fleeing as hard as they could.

“Quickly!”

“Quickly!”

Their faces were filled with fear, especially the center tall and handsome young master Yu Fang. His face was ashen. He was

extremely nervous and communicated worriedly, “3rd uncle, 3rd uncle, carry me and flee, bring me along with you!” However the strongest among the group, 3rd uncle Yu Yan Ta had long fled far away, not caring about him.

“Haha, you think you can run!”

In the distance a gold armored demon god tore through the skies and caught up. His laughter resounded loudly within the ears of the 10 of them who were fleeing. Behind this gold armored silhouette there was one more who was swiftly flying over.

“Go and die!”

The gold armored demon god’s silhouette dived down and simultaneously the genetic energy of the cloud level (universe level) smashed into the ground fiercely. A ripple started to spread in all directions, exploding within the 100m area. A universe level’s genetic energy with its terrifying strength had reduced the surroundings to nothing but waste. Screams of pain and shrieks sounds could be heard in the air.

“No, no no!!!” Yu Fang howled in fear. However, his body seemed to be hit by countless assassination weapons, immediately becoming like a sieve. Even his head had rubble piercing through, after which it exploded and left nothing but a mess.

Young master Yu Fang...

Was dead!

“Na Ke!” Before dying, Yu Fang stared wide eyed. He had hoped so badly, that he would be able to reach Na Ke’s team. At least with that being there he stood a chance of survival. However it was a pity that his speed was too slow.

……

At this time, there was only 1 person left in the fleeing Yu Fang Family. It was one of the 3 strongest in the family, reaching the pinnacle of sky level… Dripping blood Yu Yan Ta. Even within the 13 axe, he would be ranked about 4th or 5th in strength. He had fled along the road from the beginning with the highest speed he could muster!

He didn’t care about Yu Fang.

Because he knew…if he lost that armor, the Yu Family in the city would be done for too.

“Back then I shouldn’t have agreed, the treasure within the ancient god ruins isn’t something our Yu Family can take. I hate the fact that we were too greedy, simply too greedy!” While flying as fast as he could he cursed within. Back then, when the Yu Family saw the benefits from success, their greed exceeded their fear. Hence, they decided to gamble this time!

Yes, this was a gamble.

“Haha, Dripping blood, you still wish to flee?” A voice immediately reached Yu Yan Ta’s ears.

Yu Yan Ta looked back. In the distance a gold silhouette was rushing over, causing Yu Yan Ta’s expression to grow even uglier. Amongst the 13 axe, the head, number 3 and 7 were the three he least wanted to meet. This was because these 3 were cloud level (Universe level), the other 7 he still had enough confidence he could beat.

“Na Ke!”

“Na Ke!” Yu Yan Ta fought hard to increase his speed, staring into the distance. Suddenly there stood a 10 man team, of which there was the familiar silver armored youth Na Ke. This caused Yu Yan Ta’s eyes to immediately glow with hope. As his face flushed red, he roared loudly, “Young Master Na Ke, save me!”

Luo Feng and that team had distanced themselves close to 200km from the Yu Fang family team, and Yu Yan Ta was after all just a pinnacle star level. Even though Blood river world’s gravity was so strong that a star traveller couldn’t fly, however Yu Yan Ta’s speed could still reach up to 8km a second. If it were in space without gravity, a star level pinnacle could reach up to 150km per second.

The gravity of blood river world was shocking, and because of that Yu Yan Ta’s speed could only reach 8km per second.

Close to 200km in distance, he had flown for 10 seconds.

In just 10 seconds...

The large Yu Family team was decimated.

“Young Master Na Ke, save me!” A roar filled with genetic energy immediately resounded in the surrounding land and skies, causing the team that was rushing back, Luo Feng and Na Ke and his group to be stunned. They turned their head to look over.

In the distance, two silhouettes were approaching.

One ahead of the other, they were swiftly heading towards their team. Especially the golden silhouette behind, had long released his large aura all about.

“It’s Yu Yan Ta, and behind him is the leader of the 13 axe.” The tall and sturdy Thunder uncle deduced from a look. Revealing fear, he communicated, “Everybody listen up, do not ever mess with the leader of the 13 axe. Young Master Na Ke, don’t ever go help Yu Yan Ta. We cannot help him. Rather, it would be suicide to help him at this point!”

“Hm.” Na Ke’s face too was pale.

Leader of the 13 axe? Within Swallow mound’s 10 million km area, this was definitely a person that was highly reputable and deserving of respect.

……

“Save me!” The skinny man Yu Yan Ta’s face was filled with fear as he rushed towards Na Ke’s team. However Na Ke’s team stood there not even moving. Obviously they didn’t wish to intervene.

“Rumble!” From behind a terrifying energy wave ripple over.

“Not good.”

Yu Yan Ta looked behind, that gold armored demon god wielding an axe had already waved it and was slashing towards him. The huge axe swing had formed a high pressure ripple, a slash ripple visible to the naked eye was rushing towards him, causing Yu Yan Ta’s eyes to flush red as he waved his blade hard to stop it.

“Dang!” Yu Yan Ta was knocked onto the ground from the ripple. His entire body was shaken so hard his bones were broken.

“I, i…” Yu Yan Ta’s stared wide eyed, blood leaking from his mouth, following which his head fell and there was no more sense of life.

Rumble! Rumble!

In the distance two silhouettes landed.

“Big brother, did you find the item?” The two tall and sturdy

man shouted.

"It should be on him." The leader looked at Yu Yan Ta's corpse on the ground, and immediately grabbed his arm. He turned back to look at his brothers, "3rd and 7th brother, it's a space wristband." The two who had just massacred everybody else looked, as their eyes gleamed.

Luo Feng and Na Ke's little team stood there, not daring to move or flee.

"It's exactly like what the information depicted. Blood river world favors the strong. Massacres can be seen everywhere, even punks with high statuses are killed just like that." Luo Feng glanced at the distant Yu Yan Ta's corpse, shaking his head quietly.

At this time, silhouettes continued to appear from mid air.

"The 13 axe have arrived." The tall and sturdy Thunder uncle's eyes were filled with shock.

"13 axe, the legendary 13 axe." The silver armored Na Ke's eyes had a sense of both excitement and nervousness. These were legendary figures, killing the powerful team from the Yu Fang Family was simply like killing chicken. These were the true strong warriors! Absolute warriors!

The not too distant leader of the 13 axe frowned, "Why isn't it here?"

“What, it’s not there?”

“Big brother, the space wrist band doesn’t have the armor?”

“Have you all checked everybody else?” The leader looked at his brothers. The other 12 all replied, “They don’t have it, we’ve all checked. Only 1 person had a space item and it didn’t have the armor we want.”

“Just now that dripping blood was calling for them to save him.” The leader in the gold armor said as his blood red eyes looked at the distant group, causing Na Ke and his group to immediately feel fear. The leader frowned, “They may be the same group with the Yu Family, only separated into the early and later groups.”

“Big Brother, we’ll kill and then look! Why think so much about it.”

“Hm!”

The leader nodded, “Kill them!”

To the 13 axe, killing a bunch of rich family teams in Swallow mound was simply like stepping on ants, that simple. In the continent of blood river…it didn’t matter where you stood or what you had, if one had a big fist, that was the law!

“We have no relationship with the Yu Family, don’t kill us.”

“Spare us.”

Including that tall and sturdy thunder uncle, the group of guards all looked fearful. Even the simple and full of fighting spirit youth Na Ke looked fearful and shocked.

“So troublesome.” Luo Feng shook his head. “There’s 3 universe levels in this group, I cannot simply just pressure them with consciousness. I will have to personally make a move. The information was right, there are many times in blood river world where one cannot help but have to kill others.”

Rumble!

The 13 axe group were initially just staring coldly at Na Ke’s group. However one of them was just about to unleash his assassination weapons. When all of a sudden, the 13 of them revealed a look of fear, because in an instant, before the 13 of them, 1 silhouette appeared…a black haired youth in black armor!

13 images simultaneously appeared before the 13 of them!

Chapter 17 – Blood Warrior

“How’s that possible?” Including the powerful leader of the 13 axe, the 13 of them stared with fear, because the opponent’s appearance was simply too strange. It was fast to the point of teleportation! However even in fear, they all struggled hard to use their weapons!

13 images, 13 Luo Feng.

Luo Feng’s eyes grew cold, his gaze was like a blade, 13 images all looking at the 13 members.

His blade flashed! 13 extremely beautiful flashes, infused with immense hatred. Na Ke and his group who were witnessing this scene, including the 13 axe who were being attacked, couldn’t help but get affected by the blade work. Their consciousness was getting enticed into the bladework itself!

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi!

13 flashes of the blade like surgical blades followed the outline of their helmets immediately entering within and retracting. The continuous floating 13 flashes flashed and vanished. The images vanished too and Luo Feng placed his blood red illusionary blade back in its sheath which was on his back.

Silence!

The 13 warriors stood there, motionless.

The pure and innocent Na Ke, Thunder Uncle, along with the group of guards were all still immersed within the blade work. Luo Feng couldn't help but shoot them a glance with a slight pressure from his consciousness, causing the completely immersed punks to awaken from the shock. All of them took a while to comprehend what just happened.

"Why are the 13 axe all standing there motionless? My eyes weren't deceiving me before right, I saw..."A Guard said, clearly still stunned.

"Shut up." The tall and sturdy thunder uncle communicated angrily.

The guard immediately awoken.

"Dead, the 13 axe are dead." The tall and sturdy thunder uncle communicated. "Can't you see from the 13 armors and helmets traces of blood dripping down? Since you all still have some bit of strength, can't you sense that there's no energy coming from them at all?"

"It's true, there are blood stains."

"No energy at all."

"My god, I, didn't see wrongly did I?. That stupid one called

Feng...no that powerful black armored guy casually made a move and simultaneously killed 13 people, and the 13 axe actually couldn't even retaliate?"

"I just saw 13 black armored warriors simultaneously slashing, the blade work was simply captivating."

The group of guards were completely subdued.

Blood river world favored strength! And the blade work that captivated them made them tremor within!

"I was really stupid, so stupid!" The tall and sturdy thunder uncle's body was trembling slightly. "The 1st time I saw this absolute warrior, he wasn't standing there stupidly looking at the Mangu beast. He didn't even think of the beast as an opponent. Even the 13 axe with 3 cloud levels, they couldn't even retaliate and were all killed! Much less the Mangu beast? That group of bastards still said he was stupid...obviously it's purely us who are stupid! Right, before when the Yu Family and troops wanted to humiliate our young master, they were all scared away. It was definitely him who helped us. Without revealing a trace, he scared away people like Dripping blood until they all fled. That's a true warrior, absolute warrior!"

The silver armored Na Ke's gaze at Luo Feng was filled with burning madness.

"Absolute warrior! A true warrior! Absolute warrior!" Na Ke muttered. " The 13 axe easily killed someone like Yu Yan Ta. And

he was a legendary warrior...however big brother Feng actually killed the 13 axe with them unable to even make a move. And they are still standing there motionless, like they didn't even do anything. This, what kind of strength is this?"

"Young master, this is a true absolute warrior. The training hermit!" Thunder uncle's face was excited, communicating, "His impression is not bad. You go hurry and get close to him, to be on good terms with such an absolute warrior, is most important for our Na Family."

"Don't bother me." Na Ke didn't care about anything about the Na Family at the moment. All he felt at this time was excitement!

The excitement from meeting a legendary idol!

Na Ke was nervous within, however he grit his teeth and walked towards Luo Feng.

.....

After killing the 13 axe, Luo feng couldn't be bothered with the stunned guards. He was using his spirit energy to scan over the bodies of the 13 axe along with Yu Yan Ta.

"These 13 axe are wealthy, everyone of them has a space item." Luo Feng's scan had confirmed. Controlling his spirit energy be it space bracelets to wrist bands, arm guards, space belts, he took all the items from their bodies and kept them within his space ring.

“Let’s see what’s in them.”

Luo Feng flipped his hand and retrieved a bracelet, using his spirit energy to pry it and check.

“Feng, big brother Feng.” An excited and nervous voice resounded.

Luo Feng turned, looking at the flushed red faced nervous and excited silver armored youth Na Ke. At this time the youth took a deep breath, his eyes barely containing his excitement and worship, “Big brother Feng, are you the legendary warrior who remains low profile and constantly roaming about the continent, hermit?”

“Hermit?” Luo Feng was stunned, following which he nodded and smiled, “I guess so.”

“Ah!”

Na Ke was extremely excited, “I heard that the hermits are low profile and powerful. They travel from world to world, constantly roaming, and their sights are extremely broad, having been to many mysterious places. Like the Blood demon ocean, Forbidden mountains, Ancient god ruins etc, have you been there?”

Luo Feng realized.

The youth before him was worshipping him, asking if he had been to these places. However...

Just what were these places he was speaking of.

He's been to the dark universe, primal universe primal chaos city, world within a world, absolute beginning secret region, and even to the Virtual Universe Company's headquarters. However! The Blood demon ocean, Forbidden mountains, Ancient god ruins within Blood river world, he had never even heard of them.

"I haven't been there." Luo Feng smiled and shook his head. "Maybe there'll be a chance in the future."

"Hm." Na Ke was extremely excited. "I heard that the Blood demon ocean is 800 worlds away from us! Even the leader of a world city would take very long to get there."

Luo Feng was shocked within.

The distance wasn't far, however there was no flying ship technology in Blood river world. One could only fly himself. With the high gravity, how long would it take to fly 800 worlds away?

The world distance of the aboriginals of blood river continent, referred to the area territory of a world. Every world territory had a diameter of hundreds of millions of km up to billions of km! With such an area, even if one travelled 100,000km a day, it would still take 10,000 days to pass through 1 world.

800 worlds...

How many years would that take?

Luo Feng and Na Ke's team walked towards the distant and vast swallow mound city. He walked while checking the items left behind by the 13 axe.

From the check, Luo Feng had some unexpected surprises.

"There's actually so much currency, the 13 axe are indeed wealthy. Hm, with these, it will be much more convenient." Luo Feng wasn't too excited about the money. What he was truly excited for was, "There's actually so many books. Most of them were training methods and so on, but there was a large amount of books with common knowledge and information about exploring the continent, similar to encyclopedias."

The techniques and skills, Luo Feng couldn't even be bothered with.

Having seen the Time space scribbles' thousands of techniques, Luo Feng could easily create skills that were better than these.

It couldn't even compare!

The training of Blood river world, couldn't even compare in any

way with humanity's sacred training land primal chaos city.

"Common knowledge, encyclopedias." Luo Feng randomly picked one and this book used a soft but sturdy material. On it were 3 words... "Blood river crystal."

"Before, I was still worried about not knowing any information on the crystals. Yet, right now I have a book that explains in detail." Luo Feng was very happy. The money didn't mean much to him, he walked while using his spirit energy to scan the book and swiftly read through it and understanding the detailed information on the crystals.

Blood river crystals, the gems of the entire continent.

It had incomparable mysterious energy.

It was a treasure given to the continent by gods.

Only the high and mighty undying shrines would occasionally give the world's a blood river crystal. Other than these shrines! No other power or person could create the crystals, even to the point of where they came from or how they are created.

Blood river crystals can be absorbed into the body, producing an incomparably mysterious effect! (As to its mystery? These books could only guess, not publicly explaining its effects.)

However not everyone could absorb the crystals into their

bodies, as it had high requirements on the warrior. Under normal circumstances, warriors who had massacred more would find it easier to absorb one crystal.

The blood river crystal was something every warrior from the vast continent seeked.

However...

It was simply too valuable and rarely seen!

In the vast continent, the undying shrines had set a rule: Domain level (Domain lord) warriors, only after absorbing one blood river crystal will he have the right to dominate a territory. Normal Domain level's have no right to become city leader.

World level (Sector lord) Warriors, they too have to absorb one crystal to have the right to dominate a world city!

.....

Blood river crystals were rare and valuable! And absorbing them was even harder.

Just one alone was difficult, absorbing two would have 10 times the requirements on the body, 3 crystals would have a 1,000 times the requirements! The further one goes, the harsher the requirements!

There was a saying on the continent...

A warrior who has absorbed 3 blood river crystals would have incomparable mysterious powers. Such a warrior would be named a blood warrior. And the blood warrior can go acquire the Blood river medal from the world city, they were the pride of the continent.

A warrior who has absorbed 10 blood river crystals would be called a Black warrior. He can go to the undying shrine to acquire the valuable black river medal.

The legendary blood warrior, it took countless years to produce one.

Black warrior?

It was purely a saying. No one even knew if there ever was a black warrior. In the last trillion years, maybe there wasn't even one.

"So it's like that." Luo Feng closed the book and filled with glee within. "No wonder acquiring the blood warrior title gives 100,000 points. And acquiring one blood river crystal alone only gives 10,000 points. These two are obviously different in difficulty."

He looked up.

Ahead was the entrance of the ancient city that was 100 zhang tall.

He had finally arrived at Swallow Mound city!

Chapter 18 – Pure Feather Family

As the center of a ten million km area, Swallow mound city's walls were about 300m high. It was so long, that one couldn't even see the end in sight. It was almost like an endless black mountain range. And the door of the city was close to 100m wide and 200m tall. A group of scaled armored fierce looking soldiers stood there to collecting the entrance fee.

"Quick, pay up."

"You wish to enter without money? You must be looking to die!" The group of intimidating soldiers carried either a large blade each, or huge axe, were yelling and shouting occasionally.

With a glance, Luo Feng was able to determine that the aboriginals of Blood river world were indeed very strong. Even these soldiers were all star traveller 5 and up. If they were placed on earth, any one of them would be considered to have a presence of a demon god. Of course, on blood river world, they were only normal soldiers.

"Young master Na Ke is here."

"Hurry and make way, let Master Na Ke enter the city." The intrepid soldiers were incredibly passionate, not even collecting the entrance fee from Na Ke and his team. However, that thunder uncle still smiled happily and brandished a black currency, "For you and the brothers to have a drink." The leading soldier took it normally, becoming extra friendly.

Wine, whether it was made through fruits or grains, consisted of millions of different types of drinks, all under the same name.

“I wonder what the wine of blood river world tastes like.” Luo Feng revealed a smile.

After entering the city.

Na Ke said passionately, “Big brother Feng, I’m very familiar with this city. Why not stay at my house for a bit? After a bit of rest, I’ll bring you around the city to take a look. Even though this city is huge, there isn’t a place I don’t know.”

“Yes, Lord Feng.” Beside, Thunder uncle too was all smiles, and behind him the guards all looked on at Luo Feng, not making a sound.

To be able to instantly kill the 13 axe…

What kind of person was he?

In Swallow mound, there were indeed quite a few powers capable of such a feat. However, for one to single handedly kill all them, such an absolute warrior was countable by one hand.

“No need, we’ll part here.” Luo Feng said.

He had already finished reading the details of the blood river crystal.

Hence, he had already formulated a plan on how to complete the mission. At the same time, Luo Feng didn't want to get too close to the Na Family. Afterall, if he ended up staying with them...there would be trouble after.

"Part?" Na Ke was stunned. Thunder uncle's expression too was nervous, thinking, "This absolute warrior is just leaving?"

Na Ke nodded, looking at Luo Feng, "Big brother Feng, if I wish to see you in the city, will I be able to?"

Luo Feng looked at the silver armored youth before him, smiling, "Where's the best hotel in swallow mound?"

"Flying cloud pavilion." The silver armored youth said.

"Hm, if you wish to find me, then go there." Luo Feng smiled.

"Hm." Na Ke nodded.

Following which Luo Feng turned and walked into the long path that seemed to stretch on forever, his silhouette became a blur and in an instant he had gone far away. Na Ke, thunder uncle and the guards all watched the distant black armored mysterious warrior who was carrying a blade and shield. Thunder uncle said excitedly, " In my entire lifetime, this was probably the strongest warrior

I've ever gotten close to."

"Hm." Na Ke nodded.

"Let's go young master, we'll go home." The tall and sturdy thunder uncle said. "The matters of this Lord Feng, it's best that we tell the old master. Especially about the Yu Family matters, we have to tell him too. I feel that it's probably no small matter."

"Go, return home."

Na Ke brought his guards and swiftly rushed home. Swallow mound was simply too huge, a city with an area of 1,000km. Na Ke and his group took close to an hour to get home.

Na Family, they were considered one of the higher merchant families in Swallow mound. As Swallow mound territory expanded over 10 million km in area, compared to the diameter of earth which was only about 10,000km. Such a huge city, naturally resulted in the population being huge as well. Also, the number of family powers too was vast like the fish and shrimp in the ocean.

Na Family, Yu Family, they were considered the middle level families. Organizations like the 13 axe were the upper powers.

Na Family mansion.

Dressed in a beautiful black robe, the silver haired man's expression was stunned. He was shocked as he listened to his son

Na Ke and thunder uncle's story.

"Extremely powerful, dad. You didn't see...the leader of the 13 axe killed that Yu Yan Ta like killing livestock, just one axe strike and he died. However the 13 axe against Big brother Feng, didn't even have any resistance. I only saw 13 silhouettes and 13 blade flashes, the 13 axe couldn't even react before they died."

"Yes old master, young master is speaking the truth."

"How, how can that be?"

The silver haired middle aged man Nabu calmed down after a while.

To accomplish so much for the Na Family business, he was careful and meticulous.

"This warrior, absolute warrior." Nabu looked on at his own son, "Where is he?"

"We split after we entered the city. I invited him to stay here with us but he didn't accept it. However, he said if we wished to see him we can go to Flying cloud pavilion." Na Ke said, his eyes gleamed, "Dad, let's go there now."

"No!"

Nabu frowned and said softly, “This absolute warrior chose to separated after entering the city. Obviously he doesn’t want to get too close to us! You…you tell me the entire story of how you met him in detail again once more to me.”

“Yes.” Na Ke immediately began his story.

The more he listened, the more Nabu’s expression relaxed, finally he smiled.

“Father?” Na Ke looked at his father.

“Haha, keke, you are lucky.” Nabu smiled. “From what you’ve said, it seems this mysterious warrior Feng doesn’t like to slaughter. If he can avoid it, he wouldn’t kill others. And he doesn’t like to get too close to anyone, however he has a good impression of you. Otherwise he wouldn’t agree to let you go see him.”

Na Ke replied excitedly, “Then we should go now…”

“No.” Nabu shook his head, “You just split and now you want to rush over already? If you meet him right away, he wouldn’t appreciate it. No rush, we’ll wait till tomorrow. Tomorrow we’ll pay a visit to the warrior Feng. Alright, Lei Dong, accompany the young master back.”

“Yes.”

The tall and sturdy thunder uncle brought Na Ke and left, leaving only Nabu in the room. The silver haired Nabu's eyes gleamed like that of an old fox. He said softly, "Feng? Yu Family? What exactly did the Yu Family do to even arouse the 13 axe to rob and kill them..."

******

Swallow mound city.

Luo Feng wasn't in a rush to head to the hotel. He first took a good walk about the city, finding a random place to eat and drink, and to listen to the customers and their conversations. This way, he was able to understand more about the affairs within the city.

Blood river continent didn't have a sun or moon.

However because of the movement of the 18 levels of clouds above, it made the continent shine and dim at different times, that became their day. One day on blood river continent was about earth's 7 days.

.....

In Swallow mound city, Flying cloud pavilion was the most luxurious hotel. It had a diameter of 10km. This was bigger than some of earth's county cities. Its interior was beautiful, and it could hold up to 500,000 guests. The crowd flowed in and out daily. With a large amount of people entering and leaving the

country everyday, the business here was very good.

In the lobby of flying cloud pavilion, there were 100 staff members stationed.

“Room.” Luo Feng looked at the little young lady dressed in a black fur dress.

“We have the ground level, Sky level, cloud level, which do you wish to stay in? As for price, the wall there shows it all.” The lady smiled and replied.

“Cloud level.” Luo Feng muttered.

“Cloud level room 2, daily rate of 3 large currency.” The lady within smiled.

Luo Feng reached and took out a purple currency and threw it on the table, the lady immediately grabbed it and began to work on Luo feng’s reservation. The currency of Blood river world was shaped like little blades. The currency denominations were split into little blade (Red, called little currency), middle blade (Black, middle currency), large blade (Green, large currency), and above that the most expensive purple blade (Called treasure currency).

1 middle currency was worth 1,000 little currency.

1 large currency was worth 1,000 middle currency.

1 treasure currency was worth 1,000 large currency.

In the luxurious flying cloud pavilion, the most luxurious room was the cloud level, it required 3 large currencies a night, akin to 3 million little currencies. This was not a place normal people could live in. And Luo Feng, having killed the 13 axe...had acquired all of their wealth. This amount of wealth was much more than the Na family's and Yu Family's fortune combined. This little bit of money didn't bother him at all.

"Lord, this way."

A handsome youth dressed in staff attire respectfully led the way. Located in front of Luo Feng was a 3 storey building with a flower garden and pond, outside its yard were the words cloud level.

"Not bad." Luo Feng looked through it properly. After a satisfying nod, he sat in the living room chair and looked at the waiter before him.

"Whatever orders Lord has and whenever you wish to order them, please go ahead and call us. I'll be serving you for the days you stay in our flying cloud pavilion." The young waiter said respectfully.

"This is the first time I'm entering Swallow mound city. I want you to tell me which places here are special, what big figures and powers there are." Luo Feng took out a jade green crystal blade currency. "The more detailed your information is, and if I'm

satisfied, the better your reward will be.”

The waiter looked at the jade green currency and his eyes gleamed, saying, “I’ve lived in Swallow mound city for over 200 years, and stayed in flying cloud pavilion close to 100 years. I have heard much.” The waiter immediately began to tell an endless depiction of everything. He was extremely excited, revealing all the big figures and important people there are in the city.

He spoke for two whole hours before ending. He did not even take a breath in between.

“Hm.” Luo Feng listened and nodded.

“Very well, you’ve spoken well.” Luo Feng’s voice seemed to have some magic, causing the waiter’s eyes to seem lifeless and dazed. “Here’s some reward for you, leave now.”

The jade green currency landed in his hand. Only at this point did he awake from the daze. In his mind however, he couldn’t remember anything about Luo Feng’s questioning from before. One had to know, Luo Feng could already use the slave imprint skill. Hence, against this star traveller punk, it was as easy as sleeping.

“Thank you lord, thank you lord.” The waiter grabbed the currency excitedly and left.

“Hm.”

Luo Feng closed his eyes. In his mind everything the waiter had said before flashed through. His understanding of Swallow mound city was much clearer now.

Pure Feather family? Looks like...if anything, this pure feather family would have the highest possibility of having a blood river crystal." Luo Feng muttered.

Chapter 19 – Ancient God Ruins

The waiter's explanation was very detailed about the many families within Swallow mound territory, the various organizations, sects and so on. These powers were split into different levels, Super, High, Mid, lower etc.

Na Family and Yu Family, these were mid level powers. The 13 axe was considered a High level power.

In the entire Swallow mound territory, there were three super powers!

They were the Rockwind family, the Pure feather family and the Hulei family.

The Hulei family was a certain savage group, the Rockwind family was the city leader's family and the Pure feather family was the number 1 business family.

"Blood river crystals, they are extremely valuable. These three super powers have the highest possibility of having them." Luo Feng sat there, tapping on the armrest. "As for the highest possibility among these three, that would undoubtedly be the Rockwind family. The 2nd would be the Pure feather family. As for the Hulei family, they are simply too far away, there's no need to go there."

A Domain level (domain lord), needed to fuse with 1 blood river crystal to acquire the recognition of the undying shrine, gaining

the right to become a city leader.

Hence...

The city leader would definitely have already fused with 1 crystal. And as the most powerful in the territory, he'd have the highest possibility of having another. If one was the city leader, having already fused with 1 crystal, one would definitely try and get another crystal to fuse with once again.

"However, he is a domain lord!"

"And I'm only universe level 9. Of course...my domain is itself at level 9 and I am proficient in space and gold origin laws. I have confidence in killing a normal domain lord at level 2 or 3.. What I'm afraid of is that he's domain lord level 7 or 8." Luo Feng shook his head. Before finding out the exact details of his enemy, he thought it best not to mess with the city leader first.

To be able to control Swallow mound territory, that city leader wasn't good to mess with.

"The target then should be Pure feather family leader!" Luo Feng squinted his eyes, gleaming coldly.

Although the plan has been set, the Pure feather family was still one of the strongest families in the Swallow mound territory. Within this family, there were many cloud levels (Universe level), and even one Domain level (domain lord) old man training.

However, that was only from what the waiter had heard, whether it was true was still unknown.

……

The 2nd day, early in the morning.

Luo Feng's spirit energy spread out through the space ripples. Through these ripples, he could feel the energy levels within 10km.

"Hm? Na Ke is here?" Luo Feng opened his eyes.

"Na Ke, cloud level room 2." Luo Feng communicated.

……

The Na father and son, after arriving at flying cloud pavilion were prepared to ask around as to where that mysterious Lord Feng was staying. Within Na Ke's mind, a voice resounded, "Na Ke, cloud level room 2."

"Father, Cloud level room 2." Na Ke said softly.

"How do you know?" Nabu looked shocked at his son.

"Big brother Feng sent the message to me mentally." Na Ke said. Nabu, who listened to this was utterly shocked. This mysterious

Lord Feng was terrifying. Even without meeting them personally and from such a distance, he already came to know that they were there.

“Let’s go!”

Nabu and Na Ke entered the flying cloud pavilion. Even though the cloud level forbid others from entering, the Na family was a regional tyrant family, others would easily help them. When the two of them arrived at Luo Feng’s room, they saw the black armored man standing in the yard.

“Big brother Feng.” Na Ke shouted.

“Nabu greets Lord Feng. Thank you for saving my son’s life.” A silver haired Nabu bowed respectfully.

“Come in.” Luo Feng smiled.

In the living room.

Luo Feng and Nabu both sat, Na Ke stood by his father’s side.

“Lord Feng, if it weren’t for you yesterday, my son would have lost his life.” Nabu exclaimed. “Last night, the entire Yu family was uprooted. Yu family, they too are a family that’s deeply rooted here, yet because of that one mistake their entire family business was destroyed. Yesterday, my son was almost dragged into it. Just thinking about it makes me afraid.”

“Uprooted?” Luo Feng frowned.

“Hm, I just got the most accurate news.” Nabu exclaimed and shook his head. “The Yu family actually had borrowed a huge sum of money, to get a set of armor from an ancient god ruin. They found the information about this by means of a secret channel.. However, It was a pity that their team was destroyed yesterday. According to them, the armor was taken away too. The Yu family has no way to return such a huge sum, much less the interest. Hence...those that lent the money raged and killed the family and stole all their fortune. Even then, they were not satisfied.”

“The ancient god ruins, what kind of place is that? Also, is a piece of armor that important?” Luo Feng asked.

“Lord Feng doesn’t know?” Nabu was surprised.

“Big brother Feng, even I’ve heard of the ancient god ruins.” Na Ke smiled.

“I only know that’s an ancient battlefield, a vast and huge battlefield.” Luo Feng said, “I’m only curious as to why an armor from that battlefield is so valuable.”

From the common knowledge books from the 13 axe space rings, Luo Feng came to understand several special places within blood river world.

One of which was the ancient god ruins, it however had very little information.

Ancient god ruins: Diameter 100 billion km, vast and endless, ancient battlefield.

The book didn't explain more.

Nabu smiled, "The ancient god ruins, most people only know that it's an ancient battlefield. However, me being a business man, through my special channels, I have come to know of several secret pieces of information. I believe that Lord Feng knows about the Outsiders?"

"I do." Luo Feng nodded.

"The outsiders are extremely strong and powerful." Nabu exclaimed. " In theory, any cloud level warrior can fly out of the 18 levels of clouds, to outer space. However, any warrior that flies out through space would be killed by the outsiders living in the space!"

"We have no way to enter space. However that's good too, as the outsiders find it hard to descend." Nabu smiled. "I heard that every time they descend, they have to pay a huge price too."

Luo Feng was shocked.

A huge price?

“This happened very very long ago, in an ancient period.” Nabu exclaimed, “At that time, the strong in Blood river continent were like the clouds, much more than now! And at the time…the outsiders descended. The powerful warriors from the outsiders clashed with the undying army from our side and the gods battled there!”

“God battle?” Luo Feng blinked.

“Our blood river continent had heavy losses, as the ancient undyings all fell. However, even though the sacrifice was huge, we managed to chase the outsiders out!” Nabu’s eyes gleamed. “After that battle, the outsiders never launched another huge invasion like before. And that huge battleground for the undyings back then…became known as the ancient god ruins. Although it’s extremely vast, it was indeed a broken piece of ruins.”

The youth Na ke beside stood, his eyes gleaming. “Large amounts of undyings forming an army, and god armies fighting each other. This is incredibly shocking.”

Luo Feng smiled.

Ancient god ruins?

Maybe large amounts of undyings had indeed battled there. However, to say that the outsiders were defeated, that was a joke. Not including the other powers…just the Virtual Universe Company’s knights or universe country leaders, any one of them

would be able to easily destroy the entire blood river world.

“The ancient god ruins have a large amount of the special weapons and armors from the outsiders. Also, some of the armors from the fallen undyings, even if broken, are still very valuable.” Nabu said. “And the Killing aura in the ruins is extremely heavy. A few warriors who have weaker consciousness that entered would get taken over by the killing aura, and be driven completely mad.”

“However, there are still many that enter the ancient god ruins looking for the treasures left behind by the undying.”

“Also, people with strong killing auras absorb the blood river crystals easier. Hence, a lot of warriors do not care about the dangers within the ruins.” Nabu exclaimed, “Anyway, the ancient god ruins is a terrifying place. It’s a the place that entices the most, and a lot of the strong warriors from our continent flock there.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng frowned.

Killing aura?

Blood river crystal?

From the book he read before, the more one slaughtered, the easier it was to absorb the crystals. And Nabu said so too, the stronger one’s killing aura was, the easier it was to absorb the crystals. Hence, countless warriors flock there.

“So, slaughtering is to raise one’s killing aura.” Luo Feng thought. “This blood river crystal, just what kind of treasure is it? Why is it so that the strong one’s killing aura is, the easier it is to absorb?”

“Ancient god ruins!”

“If I acquire a few crystals and I am not able to absorb them, I can go there to try it out.” Luo Feng thought.

******

The Na father and son’s arrival made Luo Feng happy, because he came to know more information about the ancient god ruins. This was linked to whether or not he could become a blood warrior.

……

Flying cloud pavilion, Luo Feng’s place.

Luo Feng entered the virtual universe. Even though he was currently on a mission, the training mission didn’t conflict with his own study of the laws.

……

Yu Xiang Mountain, Absolute beginning region, Wuka’s villa.

“Rong Jun, Luo Feng, I heard that you two have begun the training missions.” Wuka looked at Luo Feng and Rong Jun. “What level did you two choose?”

“Difficult.” Rong Jun said.

“Luo Feng you?” Wuka looked at him, Rong Jun too looked over.

“Dangerous level.” Luo Feng said.

At that moment, both of them were shocked. Wuka stared wide eyed: “Luo Feng, it’s your first mission and you chose dangerous? That’s too risky!”

“It is dangerous indeed. In fact, I have a small problem right now.” Luo Feng was helpless.

“Although I’m doing the difficult level, I don’t even dare to be careless. Madman, you really are crazy.” Rong Jun smiled and shook his head.

Even though a thread of his consciousness was in the virtual universe network, his actual self was in blood river world’s Swallow mound city planning his mission against the Pure feather family. Firstly, he had to know what the leader looked like. This way, he can confirm his target. Next, he had to be clear about the mansion in which they stayed in.

“No problem.” Luo Feng shook his head. “Hm, I have to go. I’m

doing something big today, I cannot be distracted."

"Good luck." Wuka said.

"Don't go losing your life to the mission." Rong Jun warned.

"Relax." Luo Feng shook his head and smiled, following which he vanished and left the virtual universe network.

Blood river world, Swallow mound city, night.

After 6 days of serious study and preparation, Luo Feng became a gust of wind and without a sound or trace left flying cloud pavilion. In an instant, he arrived at a luxurious mansion that took up 10km in area. This was a mansion which was second only to the city leader's.

"Pure feather family!"

The air shook, a silhouette appeared in mid air outside the walls of the mansion. Of course it was Luo Feng.

Chapter 20 – Late Night Carnage

Luo Feng didn't wear his black armor today. Instead, he was dressed in a long black robe and stood empty handed by the wall.

"Pure feather family?" Luo Feng smiled. Hu! His entire being vanished into the wind, without a trace or sound, entering deep into the luxurious mansion.

……

Pure Feather mansion took up 10km in area. It was split into the outer mansion and inner mansion. The outer mansion were for lower or more ordinary members of the family, hence the security around there was more lax. However, it was obvious that the security around the inner mansion was tighter.

Shua!

Shua!

Shua!

A black robed man took 3 simple steps, within the dark vegetation, walls, walkways 3 images appeared, and he had already reached near the inner mansion.

"The blood river crystal mission is one of the dangerous

missions. It won't be that easy to acquire it." Luo Feng half squatted below a huge rock. His gaze swept the area and his spirit energy connected with the universe space, feeling the surrounding life energies. "The energies within the inner mansion is obviously much stronger. Just the universe levels alone, there are quite a few!"

To wander in casually was impossible.

Sou! Luo Feng was incomparably serious. As he unleashed his illusionary movement, his entire being became a silhouette in the dark night, almost like a tiger with wings, and he swiftly entered the inner mansion.

"Be serious, don't look like you are falling asleep."

"Captain, who would dare invade the Pure feather family mansion? There's no need to be that serious."

"Not being serious is fine, however you still have to at least put up an act. Otherwise it'll be bad if you are discovered. I am saying this for your own good."

A guard team was patrolling the inner mansion, the guards were walking and communicating.

Hu!

From behind them, a blurry silhouette swiftly flashed past them,

reaching deeper into the inner mansion. When Luo Feng used the Illusionary movement, he was even harder to detect. Plus, he was following the flow of the universe space and dodged all the dark sentries. However, this had shocked Luo Feng, as the security was extremely tight. The 2nd most powerful family next to the city leader's family, was definitely no joke.

"Ahead is that useless advisor's living quarters." Luo Feng stuck to the stone pillar in the walkway. Almost like a shadow, his eyes were gazing coldly at the distant quiet quarters.

Shua!

Luo Feng resonated with the ripples of the universe space, forming 3 peculiar arcs and entered the quiet pavilion.

Pavilion 2nd level.

Dressed in a white robe, a pale skinny man sat at his study desk, thinking about something.

There was definitely a large group of tacticians in these large families, as such business families favored these tacticians more. As for this white robed man, he was the Pure feather family's highest ranking tactician, the most favored Yu Ke Qi. He held an extremely high position in the family.

Just from his quarters being in the inner mansion and having such a big and quiet pavilion, one could see his status.

“Yu Ke Qi.” A voice resounded.

“Hm?” The white robed man trembled. He turned to look behind him, where stood a black robed black haired man.

“Master!”

The white robed man bowed respectfully, his eyes filled with a burning loyalty.

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded. These past 6 days, in order to get every detail on the Pure feather family, he planned carefully and studied from many angles, and did not just rely on the general information he got from the city’s systems. He had also used soul control techniques on a few important people within the family to do a proper check.

As for these soul techniques, his teacher, the master of the Yun Mo Planet Hu Yan Bo who specialized in the soul aspect, had great accomplishments in them. He could even do slave imprints, naturally there were many other lesser techniques. And the Time Space scribbles 1st book too had many soul techniques.

Against this white robed man, he had only used a technique akin to hypnosis.

“I want to see your family leader now, are you ready?” Luo Feng asked.

“Please relax master, I am the trusted aide of the family leader, he has complete trust in me. Even if I wanted to see him late at night, it won’t be a problem.” The white robed Yu Ke Qi was extremely confident.

“You lead the way.” Luo Feng said.

“Yes.”

The white robed Yu Ke Qi said respectfully, “Master only has to follow behind me.” Following which, he immediately went downstairs with Luo Feng following him.

“Creak!” After opening the door, Yu Ke Qi brought Luo Feng about publicly.

Walking along the walkways, they were extremely silent.

“Hm?” Luo Feng could see a guard team in the distance walking over. The leader of the team looked at the white robed man and smiled, “Mr Yu.”

“Hm.” Yu Ke Qi nodded indifferently.

The guard team didn’t even question who was the black robed man and left. Yu Ke Qi communicated mentally, “Master please relax, because of the occasional important matters, I would have

talks with the family leader late at night. I would also occasionally bring people to meet him. Even though I am usually instructed to bring these people, the guards don't know anything. Hence, there's absolutely no problem in me bringing someone along."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

They continued.

1 level after another.

Luo Feng simply walked about openly from sentry to sentry. They didn't even have any reaction. No matter what, the two of them continued deeper into the mansion.

"The deeper we go, the tighter the security is. Even if I wish to enter here without anyone noticing me, it would be impossible." Luo Feng looked ahead at the vast surroundings. With just a glance, he was able to determine that there were at least 1,000 people patrolling. Obviously, they had already reached the family's core.

"Open the door!" Yu Ke Qi shouted.

"Yes Mr Yu, please wait a moment." Immediately the guards opened the door.

Under the surveillance of 1,000 guards, Yu Ke Qi brought Luo Feng into the core of the mansion.

“Master, this is already the core area of the family. The family leader, the important disciples and a few absolute powers, treasure troves, dojo etc are all here.” Yu Ke Qi communicated. “The family leader’s living quarters isn’t far from here. Hm, at last, we’ve arrived to the front of the palace.”

Luo Feng carefully examined it.

Ahead was a 500m long and wide ancient wall, and within it was a 9 storey high palace. Outside the palace, stood two guards.

“Open the door.” Yu Ke Qi said.

“Who is he?” Of the two guards, the one on the left frowned and pointed at Luo Feng.

“He’s someone the leader wants to meet.” Yu Ke Qi frowned. “Hurry and open the door.”

“The leader didn’t inform us of meeting anyone late at night today.” The left guard continued to carefully analyze Luo Feng. He coldly said “And at this time, the leader has already begun to rest.”

“The leader has long wanted to meet him, however there hasn’t been a chance. Today I’ve managed to bring this lord over, of course I brought him here immediately.” The white robed Yu Ke Qi’s expression was serious, ordering, “Are you willing to bear the consequences? Hurry and open the door!”

Luo Feng frowned, communicated, “What’s the matter?”

“Master, normally these two don’t even bother to stop me. However, they are acting a bit strange today.” Yu Ke Qi replied mentally, he was suspicious too.

“Why aren’t you opening the door?” Yu Ke Qi’s expression was ugly Roaring, “What’s up with you two?”

The two guards’ expressions changed.

One of them smiled embarrassedly and said, “Mr Yu, we two brothers don’t actually wish to stop you. Only today, the leader just got his hands on…anyway, it’s not convenient for guests. If he was disturbed, he would very unhappy. If he really wishes to meet this man…we brothers will pass the message?”

“Ah.” The white robed Yu Ke Qi frowned and communicated to Luo Feng, “Master, the leader is currently with a woman, what do we do?”

“Enter!” Luo Feng communicated.

Under the effects of the soul technique, Yu Ke Qi couldn’t reject Luo Feng’s order. Looking at the guard, “Go pass the word! The leader meeting this lord is more important than screwing some woman.”

“Ok.” The two guards immediately opened the door and one of them headed in.

……

Luo Feng stood outside and was looking through the open door.

“Leader, leader.” The guard that went in shouted seriously within the palace.

“What’s the matter?” An enraged voice resounded.

“What’s the matter.” A sweet voice resounded.

“Family leader, Mr Yu has brought someone over. He’s saying that he’s someone you’ve been wanting to meet. Leader, will you meet him?” The guard asked.

“Mr Yu has brought someone?” Suddenly the large door on the 1st level of the palace rumbled open. A casually dressed bare footed tall and sturdy man in a luxurious night gown looked out, his gaze landing on the black robed Luo Feng. He immediately began to grow suspicious.

“Anymore and the plot will be revealed.” Luo Feng became a blur and rushed into the yard.

Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua! Shua!

9 black silhouettes immediately rushed down from the upper levels of the palace. Simultaneously, silhouettes covered the skies and lands, rushing from all sides of the yard inwards.

The Pure feather family leader, his position was incredibly high and mighty. How could he not have personal bodyguards?

300 bodyguards!

9 great shadow guards!

“There’s actually 9 universe levels, a super power is indeed a super power.” A black robed Luo Feng had a cold expression on. His eyes were ice cold as his arms extended.

The 300 guards and 9 shadow guards that rushed out, were all originally holding battle blades or knives, or their own personal weapons, and were prepared to control them to assassinate Luo Feng. However, under Luo Feng’s powerful spirit energy control, the 300 guards used their own weapons to pierce their own heads!

“No!” The 300 guards and 9 shadow guards, along with the 2 guards at the door stared with fear. However, their strengths weren’t enough to control their own weapons!

Shua!

With flashes of blades, knives, weapons!

311 heads were sliced off. Fresh blood floated in the darkness of the night. Only 3 people remained alive in the yard.

The white robed Yu Ke Qi stood there stupidly and the family leader of the Pure feather family had fear in his eyes. Only Luo Feng's black robe swished, expressionless.

Shua!

In one step, Luo Feng had already reached beside the leader and grabbed him by the neck, like grabbing a little chicken. Following that, with just one step, his entire being vanished.

Chapter 21 – Pure Feather Tao

Pure Feather family was far more ancient that the recent Rock Wind family. The strongest warrior in Swallow mound territory was coincidentally from the Pure feather family!

Pure feather Tao!

Domain lord level 6, he was the oldest in the family currently. He was also the strongest and the true person controlling the family from the shadows. He was the true man with power! Just like how the Black Dragon Mountain empire had an emperor, with many generations of successive emperors. In truth however, the person with the true power was the god leader of the Sacred land Black Dragon Mountain.

Pure feather Tao was the man that was truly in control!

……

A Pavilion that was completely purple with 3 levels, and the entire staircase was built with wood that was dyed purple. Just the cost of this construct alone was more expensive than the entire Pure feather family's other territories.

3rd level.

A black bearded middle aged man dressed in a loose robe sat quietly on his bed with his eyes shut. Suddenly, a powerful energy

ripple rushed from the north east direction (Blood river world had other directions. East, south, west, and north were uniform. However, the absolute directions were different from earth's.)

"Hm?" Pure feather Tao's expression grew serious, immediately spreading out his spirit energy to sweep the area.

Because he was a fighter, when compared to a spirit reader, his spirit energy was much weaker. However, when one reaches the domain lord level, sweeping with spirit energy was still an easy thing to do.

Rumble!

With the pavilion as the center, the torrent of spirit energy rippled in all directions, immediately sweeping the entire mansion and that particular palace. As he checked, his expression changed immediately. Sou, he rushed out from the bed and vanished.

Within the palace that the family leader resided in, the smell of blood filled the air, as over 300 bodies were on the ground. Red and white stains the ground, it was disgusting to look at. And about the same time these 300 over people just fell, a bearded middle aged man in a loose grey robe floated in the air above the palace. His eyes were raging as he looked down below.

The palace's 2nd level window was open and through it a beautiful woman was peaking through. "Ah!" After spotting the blood that flowed like a river, the scene caused her to shriek.

“Hmph!”

In mid air Pure feather Tao’s expression changed.

Rumble!

Mud yellow energy waves immediately engulfed the palace. Simultaneously, the waves wrapped itself around the white robed Yu Ke Qi and the lady that was hiding in the palace, dragging them into mid air.

“Speak, what happened?” Pure feather Tao looked at the two, filled with rage.

“This, this, this…”That beautiful lady’s face was pale. However, Yu Ke Qi only shook his head. “I don’t know. I just know that a black silhouette appeared suddenly, and after that I saw these over 300 people use their own weapons to kill themselves. And the family leader was taken away.”

Pure Feather Tao looked at the lady.

“Yes, yes, it was Yu Ke Qi. He brought someone to meet the leader, the leader only went out because of that. I don’t know anything else.” The beautiful lady shook her head.

“Hm?”Pure feather Tao looked at Yu Ke Qi. Yu Ke Qi however had a peculiar smile.

Peng!

His body violently exploded, the bones and other stuff that flew from the explosion pierced through the lady beside him. She stared wide eyed at the three large holes in her chest. Shouting, “Save me!” Almost all people on Blood river world were at least star traveller level, this woman too, hence even with holes in her chest, she hadn’t died yet.

Sou! Sou! Sou!...

From the distance, many silhouettes floated over. It was the family’s strongest warriors and important figures.

“Elder.”

“Elder, what’s going on?”

“Grandfather, what, what is this?” The nurtured upper echelon of the family were all stunned as they looked at the large group of bodies in the palace. My god, amongst them there were the 9 shadow guards...those were the 9 great shadow guards, a formidable force in the Pure feather family. 9 cloud levels!

“Go and look, look for me and bring back the family leader!” Pure feather Tao raged. Simultaneously, his energy waved exploded about, almost like a formless blade piercing straight through that lady, leaving nothing but a mess.

“Yes!”

“Yes!”

The group complied. Actually from seeing the over 300 guards who were all dead, they had already guessed that the outcome of the family leader was not good. From hearing the story...he should have been taken away.

“Bastard!” With mud yellow energy waves surrounding him, like a god in the knight floating in mid air, Pure feather Tao was madly scanning the area with his spirit energy. He was a fighter, hence his spirit energy was more condensed and gentle. Its control and magnitude paled far in comparison to that of a spirit reader.

However!

To simply scan was not a problem at all. As the gravity of blood river world was extremely huge, Pure feather tao’s scan could only be spread up to about 80km.

Where?”

“Where is he?”

Wrapped in the energy, he flew over for around 100km. In the dark night above Swallow mound city, a mud yellow light was

swiftly flashing about, suddenly flashing to another region here and there, obviously searching the entire swallow mound city!

……

Swallow mound city, city leader's mansion.

A tall and sturdy middle aged man with a dark green engraving on his forehead walked along the palace's railings. He was dressed in a blood red scaled armor. With his cold eyes, he was looking up at the sky, at Pure Feather Tao who was searching all over swallow mound city, as he said softly, "This old punk, what is he raging about?"

"Hmph."

"To enrage this old punk this much, the Pure feather family must have suffered a huge loss." His lips curled into a cold smile.

He was the one with the most authority within Swallow mound city, the city leader…Rock Wind Xiong!

However in terms of power, he was still slightly weaker than Pure feather Tao. As for why he was able to become the city leader of swallow mound city, there were two reasons. One of them was because he had absorbed a blood river crystal. The second reason was, because he had special connections with the world city leader in that territory.

Pure feather tao however, even though he was stronger, he couldn't absorb the blood river crystal. Hence, he didn't have the right to become leader.

"Go crazy until you die. That would be the best." Rock wind laughed coldly, following which he gave an order to his underlings, "Go and check to see what exactly happened with the Pure feather family."

"Yes!"

A soft voice resounded.

The Pure feather family had roots that extended extremely deep into the city. As for this massacre and abduction of their family leader, what level of stupidity was this? To enrage the elder Pure feather tao to such a state that he was searching the whole city personally, and also to activate the entire family and all its departments to madly search about.

At the same time, the city leader's Rock wind family, along with some other powers, all began to join in. The entire swallow mound city's undercurrent began to flow.

.....

The Yu Family's Yu Yan Ta was a star level 9, his fleeing max speed had reached 8km per second.

And Luo Feng, who was a universe level 9, with domain level 9, along with high comprehensions of the space origin law could instantly accelerate and reach top speed. His instantaneous acceleration, even with the gravity of blood river world, could reach up to 300km per second.

When Luo Feng had grabbed the family leader back then, he wrapped him in spirit energy and immediately rushed into the skies, flying straight into the cloud levels.

……

In the 15th level 30,000km away from Swallow mound city.

Luo Feng grabbed the family leader and finally stopped.

“What do you want?” Pure feather Chong’s expression was pale. Having had his Dantian destroyed the moment he was grabbed, his soul was now under heavy pressure from Luo Feng’s powerful spirit energy.

“Why are you asking me?” Luo Feng immediately grabbed the space bracelet from Pure feather Chong. Naturally that space bracelet had his spirit imprint. However, Luo Feng’s spirit energy became like a long pike and forcefully broke through the spirit imprint seal, causing Pure feather Chong’s face to go even more pale.

“Quite wealthy.” Luo Feng held onto the bracelet, carefully

examining the items within.

“You want money? No problem. However much you want, you will get. Just don’t kill me.” Pure feather chong said. “You are a spirit reader, you can make me forget everything here and I won’t even remember your appearance.”

Luo Feng frowned.

Within the space bracelet…there were no blood river crystals!

“Pure feather Chong.” Luo Feng looked at him.

“Hm?” The family leader Pure feather chong at that point didn’t even behave at all like the Na Family leader. He suddenly felt enticed and hypnotized by the gaze of that black robed youth before him. One second later, his gaze grew dark, and he looked at Luo Feng with passionate respect, “Master!”

“Hm.” Luo Feng stood in the clouds. Looking at Pure feather Chong before him, he said “Let me ask you, do you know who has blood river crystals? Does your Pure feather family have any?”

“Yes!” Pure feather chong said without hesitation.

“Where are they?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

“With my family’s elder.” Pure feather chong replied

respectfully.

"Elder?" Luo Feng frowned. He had heard of a powerful domain lord within the family, however he hadn't really confirmed that before.

"Yes, the strongest in the Pure feather family, also the strongest in Swallow mound city." Pure feather chong said, "The blood river crystal is with him. However, even though he acquired that one, no matter how he tried, he couldn't absorb it. Hence the city leader position landed in the Rock Wind family's hands instead."

"Your family elder is stronger than the city leader?" Luo Feng had heard from him.

"Yes." Pure feather Chong said respectfully. "The city leader just became a domain level over a hundred years ago. According to the elder, he can only be considered to be within the early stages of the domain level! However my family elder is in the later stages already."

Luo Feng's heart skipped a beat.

From the looks of it, the city leader was about domain lord level 2 or 3. Afterall, he had only broken through over a hundred years ago. Normal people breaking through required them to slowly absorb the energy. To go from level 1 to 9 required a very long time. Even in the universe, only the most elite of geniuses could receive nurture like Luo Feng's, as there was no need to waste time in such quantity related training.

“Other than your family’s elder, who else has the crystals?” Luo Feng asked.

“The ones I can confirm are the elder. Another is the general of the Swallow mound army Rock Wind Zan.” Pure feather chong said. “Rock wind Zan, he is the younger brother of city leader rock wind Xiong, he’s on good terms with me. Back then he even took out a crystal to show off to me, saying it was something his older brother gave him to absorb.”

“Ah? One is with your family elder, another is with Rock wind Zan?” Luo Feng smiled and nodded.

Chapter 22 – Investigation

Under the influence of the soul technique, the Pure Feather family leader answered everything honestly, there wasn't any hint of concealing anything.

"Very good." Luo Feng stood within the clouds and asked, "Do you know if anyone else has the crystals?"

The process of becoming a blood warrior, required one to first acquire 3 blood river crystals and absorb them successful. Only then would they truly be considered to have become a blood warrior! Once Luo Feng knew of the blood warrior and even the legendary black warrior, he naturally had some anticipation within. He wanted to first become a blood warrior and maybe later a black warrior.

Even though in blood river world, the black warrior was but a legend, since such a legend existed, there was a possibility of it happening.

And obviously, with Luo Feng's personality, he wouldn't give up without trying.

Everyone all regarded themselves as special and different! Luo Feng was the same, only that he knew himself better than anyone!

"Master, I can confirm that the family elder and the general of the Rock Wind army have the crystals. The rest, I'm unable to guarantee. Although, there are some rumors." Pure Feather Chong

replied respectfully.

“Rumors?” Luo Feng frowned.

“Yes, It is about our city leader Rock wind Xiong. Even though I am unable to confirm if he has the crystals and how many he might have.” Pure feather Chong said, “I can say with high possibility…that the city leader Rock wind Xiong definitely has at least 1 that he hasn’t absorbed.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng looked at Pure feather Chong.

“Rock wind Xiong has an illustrious background, his teacher is the world city leader of this side of the world.” Pure feather Chong explained. “He succeeded in absorbing one crystal a long time ago. He had to wait till he broke through to domain level, after which he quickly became the city leader. And after that, he secretly gave his younger brother 1 crystal.”

“To warriors, having more crystals is a good thing. After absorbing one, they would want to absorb another!”

“Since he could give his younger brother 1 crystal, that means that it wasn’t too hard for him to acquire more, at least there’s a way for him.” Pure feather Chong said confidently, “And with Rock Wind Xiong’s selfish personality, to be able to give his younger brother just one means he would at least have 1 more prepared for himself. I suspect he probably even has more!”

Luo Feng nodded.

It made sense.

……

After which, Luo Feng immediately killed Pure feather Chong and took care of his body. In the dark night, he returned to Swallow mound city's flying cloud pavilion.

Pure feather family was deeply rooted within Swallow mound city. It's roots went far deeper than the Rock wind family. If they were to be angered, the entire Swallow mound city would definitely feel their wrath.

Pure feather family mansion, in the 1st level of that 3 level purple wood pavilion, Pure feather elder Tao squinted his eyes in his seat. The rest of the upper echelon of the family along with his grandchildren stood obediently at his sides. Within the large hall knelt 10 people, and outside of the hall knelt a 100.

"Grandfather, these are all the sentries and guard leaders from Yu Ke Qi's mansion. They all personally saw Yu Ke Qi bring a black robed man." An old man with white hair, one that looked even older than Pure Feather Tao said respectfully.

"Speak, what did that black robed man look like?" Pure feather Tao closed his eyes and said indifferently.

“No idea.” The old man shook his head.

“Hm?” Pure feather tao revealed a look of rage. He stared hard, his gaze was shooting out visible light beams at the old man.

“They, the 100 of them all saw the black robed man, however none of them can recall his appearance.” The old man continued, “Back then, they didn’t feel anything special about it. Just that this black robed man was very normal and there was nothing special about him. However now when they try and recall, his face appears blurred out in their memories, other than him wearing a black robe, they can’t recall anything else.”

Pure feather Tao turned to look at the group kneeling.

“Elder, we cannot recall, we really cannot recall.”

“We truly saw his face back then, however now no matter how hard we try, we cannot recall.”

“I even stared hard at him then, however now…”

……

The group of sentries all said fearfully.

Pure feather Tao was shocked.

These sentries and guard leaders were all pinnacle sky levels, (Star level 9). To be unknowingly influenced by a warrior, even a universe level spirit level would find it hard to do. One had to have a much stronger spirit energy and consciousness level and control, to reach such a level.

“When did such a warrior appear in Swallow mound city?” Pure feather Tao pondered. “However the fact that he was so careful in entering here means he isn’t a match for me. If he was stronger than me, he wouldn’t have needed to be so careful. Just barging in would have done it.”

“Listen well!”

Pure Feather tao looked coldly at the family’s upper echelon in the hall, “Our Pure feather family’s family leader has been taken away under our surveillance and from under our noses. We don’t even know if he’s alive or dead. This is a humiliation to our family! We have to find this person, otherwise our Pure feather family will be mocked at by countless people in Swallow mound city!”

“Go look!”

“Check every suspicious person properly. The culprit’s strength is at least at pinnacle cloud level, it might very likely be in the domain level! Check from all pathways, see which mysterious warriors have appeared! Remember, even if you’ve found him, don’t make a move. Immediately come inform me instead.” Pure feather Tao looked at the group. “Even if Chong hasn’t been killed, he’s not fit to be the leader anymore. This search for the culprit...is the test I am giving you all. Once this matter is concluded, I will

pick the new family leader, go now."

"Yes!"

The group of upper echelons' eyes gleamed brightly, they all replied simultaneously and swiftly left.

Time to do their best.

To become the new family leader, these upper echelons would all unleash all their hidden strengths to quickly check all the secret information about the mysterious warriors, or suspected mysterious beings. This way, all the information and news was quickly being gathered.

2nd day, daybreak.

Rumble...10,000 black scaled armored soldiers rose to the sky. It was almost like a black cloud flying over, with a huge tall and sturdy dark red scaled armored leader. His appearance was very similar to the city leader Rock wind Xiong, only with more madness and violence in his aura, his entire being seemed wild and savage.

"Pui!" Rock wind Zhan sat on a Green armored snake, spitting unhappily to the side, "That no good Pure feather Chong, getting abducted away and still asking us for help. Big brother is too much too, asking me to help out!"

“Hehe, however that Pure feather Chong. I wonder who he actually messed with, to actually get taken away from his own mansion. Hearing this makes me happy.” Rock Wind Zhan mocked softly. The two deputy generals beside twitched their faces as they heard this. This general of theirs controlled the Swallow mound army, yet he did whatever he pleased. Him and that Pure feather Chong were good friends, at the same time, they were a couple of scoundrels who wreaked havoc as they pleased.

Scoundrels indeed, Pure feather chong’s death made this Rock wind Zhan happy instead.

And he wasn’t rushed or slow, as he waited for day break to bring the army in to search.

“General, ahead is flying cloud pavilion.” One of the deputy generals said respectfully.

“Hm.”

Rock wind zhan glanced and said indifferently, “Flying cloud pavilion is the best hotel in Swallow mound city. With the culprit’s level of strength and status, there’s a high possibility he would stay there.”

“General, if that person truly wanted to make a move on Pure feather Chong, he probably wouldn’t stay in such a place, but rather somewhere more secure and secluded.” The other deputy general said softly.

“PA!”

Rock wind Zhan slapped the face of that deputy general, causing fresh blood to fly. His entire body and the wild beast below him were both shocked.

“Idiot.” Rock wind Zhan glanced coldly at him, “If I say Flying cloud pavilion, then it is flying cloud pavilion. Don’t you know how to put on a show, do you think we’ll really find the culprit for the Pure feather family?”

That deputy general nodded, not daring to make a sound.

“What an idiot, if you say such stupid things again, I’ll have to change my deputies. Usually you seem pretty smart, has your brain knocked into a wall today?” Rock wind rubbed his chin and looked up. Looking at the distant flying cloud pavilion, “Go, I’ll give you a chance to redeem yourself. Get all of the cloud level guests and the warriors you think are strong within to all come out. I want to take a look at all of them.”

“Yes!” That deputy general who was slapped complied loudly.

……

Immediately, he brought his underlings, a 10,000 strong army to rush into flying cloud pavilion. Flying cloud pavilion’s area had a diameter of 10km, the sudden entrance of such a big army caused a huge ruckus.

“Owner, it’s not that I’m not giving you any face, but you too should know what happened! The general has given the order to get all of your cloud level guests and any guest you think may be powerful warriors to all come out.” That deputy general sat high above on the wild beast and said, the large group soldiers stood behind him.

“Understood.”

“We’ll comply.” That fat small eyed owner gave the order and his large group of helpers led the way.

Cloud level room 2, in a quiet pavilion.

Luo Feng was dressed in a simple robe and was reading a book. It had been half a night since the incident, but according to earth’s time, it had been 2 to 3 days.

“That Pure feather Chong was just killed by me. Right now the entire city is in an uproar, however, it doesn’t affect me. I’ll wait till tonight to make a move on Rock wind Zhan.” Luo Feng made his plans while reading the book, multitasking was very simple for him. Suddenly noise resounded from outside, roars and shouts.

“Quickly!”

“Come out!”

“Lord, its an order by the Rock wind general. Lord, please do me a favor and come out.”

“Quickly.”

“That way, quickly.”

The outside was getting noisier.

Luo Feng frowned when he heard this. He had long guessed that Pure feather Chong’s death would stir a huge commotion, however he didn’t expect them to come to flying cloud pavilion so early in the morning.

The footsteps outside swiftly got louder and louder. Suddenly the yard door was heavily pushed open and 10 soldiers immediately rushed in. Led by a waiter, they walked into the pavilion, the waiter saw Luo Feng within and said apologetically, “Lord, the Rock wind general has given the order to look for the culprit. Lord you should help out.”

“Quickly, come out.”

“Quickly.” The group of soldiers rushed straight in, shouting at Luo Feng.

Chapter 23 – Night Investigation

Close to a 1,000 people with various attributes such as people with expensive clothes, or strong auras, or those who were cold and proud, and the cloud level guests of the flying cloud pavilion along with those suspected of being a mysterious powerful warrior were present there.

Luo Feng looked far ahead amongst the crowd.

The flying cloud pavilion owner was at the side discussing with a tall and sturdy intrepid looking general by the side. Luo Feng could feel from his aura that the general should be a universe level 9.

“Rock wind general, they are all here.” The owner said.

“Hm.” Rock Wind Zhan snorted through his nose, following which he gazed coldly at the crowd.

“Rock wind Zhan?” Amongst the crowd, Luo Feng was happy after he heard it. He was still prepared to figure out how this Rock wind Zhan looked like, so as not to attack the wrong person. And now, he could see him clearly.

“Last night, which one of you broke into the Pure feather family mansion?” Rock wind Zhan shouted coldly.

The group of close to 1,000 unknown people remained silent, not making any sound at all.

And Rock wind Zhan, who sat high above on his green armored snake gazed at everyone below. Suddenly he pointed at a black robed cold looking man in the distance, shouting, “That black robed bastard, bring him along later.”

“Yes!” the two deputy generals at the side complied.

“General!” The black robed cold looking man’s expression grew ugly, shouting, “General, I’m from the Luan Yang area…”

“Don’t give me rubbish.” Rock wind Zhan laughed coldly. “With your strength and your dressing, I have no choice but to suspect that you were the culprit who broke into the Pure feather family mansion. Hm…that tall punk with messy hair, bring him too, that skinny punk hiding at the side too.”

“You!”

“Him!”

“The one in the white robe.”

“That blue haired one.”

Rock wind Zhan continuously chose 10 people. These 10 were all very strong, as most of them were in the pinnacle sky level. There were even two universe levels.

“And that black haired youth, his strength is strong enough too. Bring him.” Rock wind Zhan pointed at Luo Feng. Luo Feng frowned, as there were no scanning devices in blood river world, they based their deductions purely on energies and auras. As for Luo Feng, he used his willpower and consciousness strength to control and hide his strength, deliberately releasing one that of a pinnacle star level.

He didn’t expect to still get chosen.

“Alright. A total of 58 have been chosen. The culprit might very likely be within these 58. Take them all away back to the prison!” Rock wind Zhan waved his hand.

……

Luo Feng didn’t resist and followed the other 57 with the army. In terms of strength, Luo Feng knew that he could easily wipe out Rock wind Zhan and the others. Because of his confidence and this guarantee, he was very relaxed. Until the critical moment, there was no need to massacre so many of them publicly.

“What’s up with this general Rock wind, is this how they catch a killer? Coming over to our flying cloud pavilion to find a group of guests and randomly picking from a crowd, that’s called finding a killer?”

“You idiot, Rock wind general is from the Rock wind family. The Pure feather family was humiliated, hence the Rock wind family

are all extremely happy. Why would they seriously look for the culprit? If they really wanted to look for him, they would have begun their search last night, why would they wait till now. It's purely just for show, just an act. However, the 58 sure are unlucky."

Within flying cloud pavilion, many were discussing.

Swallow mound city, General's prison.

Luo Feng and the others were forced into groups of 5 or 6, and were separately crammed into cells. These cells were built by special stones from blood river world, and were able to exist under the universe energy flows and strong gravity here. Hence, these too were more sturdy than other stones. They were strong enough to block attacks from even a sky level (Star level) warrior.

"We sure are unlucky, I have to go meet my family leader tomorrow, how can this be good?" Luo Feng's cell had a total of 6 people, of which a fat one dressed in expensive clothes sighed and shouted loudly. The others from different cells all heard him clearly.

"Big trouble, big trouble." The fatty didn't stop sighing.

"Shut up."

"Smelly fatty, lower you voice." The people from other cells all began to jeer and shout within.

The fatty looked outside at the soldiers approaching, raising his voice and sighing again, “If I don’t see the Wang Family leader, my business would be ruined. I would incur huge losses! So unlucky, purely a disaster from above.” After shouting a couple more times, under the jeers from others, he finally stopped.

Luo Feng stood silently within the cell, watching things unfold.

……

Several of the guards and soldiers within the prison began to mutter.

“Brothers, the general captured these 58 back for show. He didn’t even interrogate them. He even sent a bodyguard over to tell me, that after interrogating just a little, if there’s no problem, just let some of them go, and leave some in the prison. Everything is just for show!” A guard said softly, “Did you hear that fatty shouting. He seems to be some sort of businessman, and is in a rush to meet someone. We should get a hefty sum from him.”

“Hm, it’s an opportunity.”

“Afterall it’s all just for show, it’ll be fine with some of them gone.”

The group of guards watching the prison all began to laugh and mutter amongst themselves. After which they ordered, “Go and

grab that fierce and shouting fatty and bring him over. We'll interrogate him well."

"Yes, lord."

The group of soldiers immediately brought the fatty out.

……

Within the prison.

The fatty that was leaning against the door looking outside revealed a smile as he saw the group of soldiers running over. One of the soldiers ordered, "The lord has ordered for us to interrogate you well, grab him!" Following which they opened the door and grabbed the fatty.

The fatty turned back to the other 5 in the cell and said, "Sirs, I'll be leaving first, see you all!"

Following which, he followed the group of soldiers and left.

After a while.

A soldier ran over and shouted, "The lord has interrogated him and found him not suspicious at all, he's been released. The rest of you 57 better answer properly. Those that don't, be prepared to stay in this prison for awhile." Following which he turned and left.

“The fatty has gone!”

“Answer properly? What answer properly, isn’t it simply bribing them well?”

“I know, that fatty purposely shouted that way before!”

“You know this only now? Stupid.”

Discussions and noise resounded within the cells. The guards who were hiding in the distance heard the discussions and all of them began to smile. They then ordered, “Bring them one by one, we’ll interrogate them properly!”

……

Interrogate?

It was simply just forking over a sum of money, just seeing whether it was enough! When they interrogated Luo Feng, Luo Feng took out 1 purple blade currency, immediately making the guards’ eyes gleam. Their attitudes immediately became friendly, and quickly released Luo Feng.

Broad daylight, Luo Feng strolled out of the general’s prison carefree, and followed the pathways out of the mansion.

Evening, the sky had gone dark.

Luo Feng who was at a restaurant eating and drinking alone for a while, finally left and walked amongst a crowd in Swallow mound city's pathways.

"It's almost time!"

"Last night, I caught Pure feather Chong. Then tonight, I'll go catch Rock Wind zhan." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed. "I'm really looking forward... to the blood river crystal? Just what is it like? It is even mysterious enough to gain the attention of the Virtual Universe Company."

As he had been brought to the general's prison earlier in the day, Luo Feng was very familiar with the General's mansion.

It's no wonder the Rock wind family is considered a new upstart family. This general's mansion...in terms of security level, isn't even 1/10th of the Pure feather family's." Luo Feng walked within the mansion. Almost like walking in his own yard, his silhouette floated about, with a flash he went from side to side, shaking his head. "I can feel a total of 3 universe level warriors!"

With his familiarity of the universe space ripples, he could feel 3 strong auras.

And one of which Luo Feng was familiar with, because...he had met him during the day!

“It’s Rock wind Zhan.” Luo Feng smiled.

Shua!

His silhouette floated swiftly, as he passed the fake mountains and the walkways, finally landing within a 3 storey luxurious palace within the mansion.

“Breaking through to the domain level is so hard. I’ve done everything my big brother has told me to do in terms of training, and I’ve done them well. Why have I still not broken through. Hmph, big brother must definitely be afraid of me reaching the domain level, and turning into a threat for him.” Rock rind Zhan was topless. He was wearing an open long robe, while walking along the stairs, he had many thoughts on his mind.

When he reached the 3rd level.

He casually looked up and prepared to enter his study, however suddenly his body shook. His eyes were filled with a sense of disbelief. In front of him, stood a simply dressed black haired youth’s silhouette.

“You…” Rock wind Zhan immediately went into battle mode, simultaneously calling guards to help him. However, no matter how shocked he was, he was still confident. He thought that because he was a cloud level pinnacle (Universe level 9) warrior, the person before him couldn’t be much stronger than he was. Also, delaying a while would be enough for his big brother Rock

wind xiong to rush over!

Hua!

Luo Feng who was initially standing at the distant window immediately appeared before Rock Wind Zhan in what seemed like teleportation. This was extremely fast, far exceeding that of a regular universe level 9's max speed.

"Chi!" his hand formed a blade, fast as lightning.

"No." Rock wind Zhan's hands had brandished a huge blade. He was prepared to use it as a shield to block.

However Luo Feng's palm blade was almost like an illusion, swiftly stabbing through his stomach, after which he pulled it out. Only after this did the shield slowly come. Everything was mysterious and like an illusion, there was just a simple flash!

Illusionary 7 blades...Dutchman's pipe!

With Luo Feng's strength in his domain and origin law comprehension...against such weak techniques with domain only level 1 or 2, no comprehension of any origin laws and only at universe level 9, it was simply a massacre.

"I, i..." Rock wind Zhan held onto his stomach. There was a blade wound there, and fresh blood flowed out. It was purely from Luo Feng's palm blade.

“You, you…” Rock wind Zhan looked with fear at Luo Feng.

His Dantian was destroyed!

And his spirit was under the powerful pressure of Luo Feng’s spirit energy. Hence, he couldn’t even use any spirit energy now.

“How do you do, Rock Wind General.” Luo Feng smiled and looked at Rock wind Zhan.

Rock Wind Zhan’s mind flashed back, back at flying cloud pavilion. That scene, right, this black haired youth, wasn’t he from the 58 people he had picked?

Chapter 24 – Beautiful Blood River Crystal

“It’s you!” Rock Wind Zhan stared wide eyed. My god! he was only acting and pretending to catch a few punks to satisfy the Pure feather family. He didn’t expect to actually catch such a terrifying character.

Rock wind Zhan’s eyes gleamed, shouting, “Pure feather Chong, you abducted him too?”

“Right, he’s already dead.” Luo Feng smiled.

“Dead?”

Rock Wind Zhan’s expression was ugly. Pure feather Chong is already dead. This man before him would most likely kill him too. What to do, now that his dantian was destroyed, he had no energy within. And on top of that, his soul was being suppressed by the enemy’s powerful pressure. He wanted to resist and communicate with others to cry for help, but he had no way at all to do so, what could he do?

Rock Wind Zhan’s expression was ugly, he was in a mess.

“What can I do for him not to kill me?” Rock wind zhan looked at the black haired youth before him. “Speak, whatever you want, I’ll do it!”

“Give me 10 blood river crystals and I won’t kill you.” Luo Feng

stood there and smiled, “Can you do that?”

Rock wind Zhan couldn’t help but stare wide eyed. “10 crystals? Even my big brother cannot take out 10 crystals like that. However, I have 1 here, which I can give you. Please spare my life!” Even though his dantian was destroyed, he was still alive, since the most important part of a human was his soul.

As long as the soul was fine, the body could recover, and the lost energy could also be re-trained.

“No, 1 is not enough, it has to be 10 crystals.” Luo Feng shook his head.

“You are playing with me!” Rock Wind zhan was anxious and angry.

“Right, I’m just playing around with you!” Luo Feng said indifferently, “Go and die.”

Rock Wind Zhan immediately roared madly. “Save me!!!” His powerful body made his roar thunderous and booming. The sound waves rippled in all directions, however they were all blocked by a formless powerful spirit energy barrier. This spirit energy blocked off everything, not even a whisper could escape.

“What’s the point of struggling.” Luo Feng slapped Rock Wind Zhan’s forehead. His genetic energy pierced into his head, causing his brain to become nothing but a mess.

Rock Wind Zhan was dead!

……

“Just what is the blood river crystal like.” Luo Feng scanned through his body, and immediately found the space item. With no banks on blood river continent, all of the warriors here mostly stored large amounts of their treasures in their space items and carried them on their bodies.

This was because it was safest there.

As long as they don’t die, they wouldn’t lose their treasures.

And if they did die, the treasures wouldn’t mean anything to them!

“This space ring isn’t bad.” Luo Feng grabbed the space ring and his spirit energy immediately rushed in, prying it open and checking the contents inside.

“So wealthy.”

“He had about 10 times more than the 13 axe.” Luo Feng was still smiling initially. However the more he searched, the more he began to frown. There were large amounts of currency within, along with some valuable weapons and treasures in many boxes.

However, his initial scan didn't pick up any blood river crystal.

The appearance of the crystal was something he had seen before in the common knowledge books.

"There's no way he doesn't have it. What if it's not on his body, no way." Luo Feng searched again carefully, especially within a box of gems, there were many crystals within. Luo Feng split his spirit energy into 1,000 threads and individually inspected each of them. Immediately, a smile appeared on his face.

With a flip of his hand!

A round black crystal appeared in his palm. Looking at this crystal before him, Luo Feng shook his head, "This Rock wind zhan, he even disguised the blood river crystal and threw it in with the rest of the gems. Anyone who doesn't search properly with spirit energy would have missed it."

"Chi chi..." The black round crystal in his palm was attacked by needle like spirit energy. It immediately began to split open. Very quickly, the layer of black broke and it finally revealed the blood river crystal within!

Blood red!

Blood red in color, the color of life.

It was a long triangular crystal, transparent and blood red,

glowing slightly, with a formless ripple about it, it gave off a faint feeling of a heart beating, ripples that beat after another.

“Blood river crystal!” Luo Feng looked at the triangular transparent crystal in his palm. He couldn’t help but exclaim, “Beautiful!”

Hu!

He waved his hand and Rock wind zhan’s body on the floor vanished, followed by the blood stains and smell of blood in the air all vanished as well.

“Very good, within a short time, no one will ever know that Rock Wind zhan is already dead.” Luo Feng smiled, “I think that they would have thought Rock wind zhan must have headed to somewhere else.” Warriors secluding themselves or disappearing for 1 or 2 years was a very normal thing. Even though he was a general, disappearing for 3 to 5 days wasn’t a thing to be suspicious of.

Sou!

Luo Feng became a blur and rushed out from the window, disappearing hundreds of km away in an instant.

The entire palace was silent.

The large amounts of soldiers, staff and guards within the

general's mansion all didn't know that their general was already dead.

At the same time that Luo Feng had killed Rock wind Zhan and acquired the blood river crystal.

Within Swallow mound city leader's mansion.

"Come, drink!"

"Haha, Rock wind junior. We haven't seen each other in so long, and you've already become a city leader. Your seniors are really happy, drink, drink." Within the living room, a group of beautiful women were dancing. Three men were laughing loudly and drinking their wine, one of which was Swallow mound city's person with the most authority, city leader Rock Wind Xiong.

The other two were dressed in grey standard armor.

"Senior, I've only become a city leader. How can I compare to you? You've become a special envoy of the undying shrine. No matter where in our continent, who would dare disrespect you?" Rock Wind Zhan laughed loudly.

"It's nothing." The handsome middle aged man laughed.

"Senior, you and Special Envoy Mo, for what reason have you two rushed over from the undying shrine for?" Rock Wind Zhan asked curiously.

The handsome middle aged man and special envoy Mo beside glanced at each other. Envoy Mo spoke, “Brother Rock Wind, it’s not that we don’t want to tell you, it’s just the undying shrine’s rules. Hence, we cannot disobey. Actually we rushed over this time is mainly because of your master, also the leader of the world city. We cannot say anything else.”

“As it is something regarding your master, I arranged for old Mo to come along as well. Since we passed by your place, naturally we had to come pay you a visit.” The handsome middle aged man smiled.

“I’ve missed you too.” Rock Wind Zhan exclaimed, “Speaking of which…”

……

When Rock Wind Zhan was accompanying his 2 friends and chatting, he didn’t even know that his younger brother had already died.

……

300,000 km away from Swallow mound city, in the wilderness, Luo Feng sat.

“1 blood river crystal!”

Luo Feng grabbed the blood river crystal and stared at the incomparably mysterious crystal. “One of the dangerous level missions was to acquire this 1 crystal to get 10,000 points. I can use it to exchange for points or I can absorb it.”

“What should I do?”

“Without a doubt!” Luo Feng began to grin as his finger became like a blade, slicing his left palm.

Chi!

A slash wound opened and fresh blood flowed out. Luo Feng took a deep breath and placed this triangular blood river crystal within that wound. This was the absorption technique from the books he had read, and during his time in the city he had heard others discuss. Almost everyone in the entire blood river continent knew this.

Although the method was simple, doing it was hard!

”Is it going to be difficult?” Luo Feng looked at his palm.

The beautiful and glaring crystal touched and began to fuse with the wound. Especially when it first touched the wound, immediately a formless peculiar energy burst forth from the crystal. Almost like a wild beast that had been suppressed for too long raging and rushing into Luo Feng’s body. The originally confident Luo Feng’s expression changed, he began to struggle.

“Damn!” Luo Feng grit his teeth.

“Rumble!”

A formless incredibly brutal and powerful willpower descended on him, fusing with his consciousness.

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

An endless stream of wild shouts to kill roared within his mind. That formless brutal and powerful willpower was clashing time and again with his own. It was purely a test of willpower. Willpower differed from each other. Consciousness was something that was linked to the strength of one’s spirit energy, willpower however was reliant completely on one’s belief and strength.

A student level’s willpower could potentially be as terrifying as that of a sector lord!

“Just this level of willpower and you want to attack me?” Within his mind Luo Feng thought, “Return to ashes!”

Rumble!

Luo Feng’s incredibly strong willpower was like a huge

mountain, immediately smashing down on the roaring outside willpower influence. At the same time, Luo Feng thought curiously, “Consciousness pressure, consciousness pressure...use consciousness to attack. How can pure willpower invade my body like that? How strange? Ah, not good!”

“Rumble...” As its willpower was smashed by Luo Feng’s, the blood river crystal’s true peculiar energy was unleashed. That red crystal’s threads began to madly invade Luo Feng.

Luo Feng’s body couldn’t help but begin to shake and tremble.

Luo Feng’s facial muscles were spasming uncontrollably. The layers of skin contracted and condensed at times while splitting open and bleeding at another. His arms expanded even more violently, and his veins were more visible than ever. It looked almost like transparent crystal pathways, and occasionally purely gold, his muscles kept changing.

Pain!

Extreme pain!

“What’s going on, just what is this blood river crystal doing?” Luo Feng roared within. He could feel the temperature in his body reach unbelievable heights, almost like it was about to be burnt to ashes. However, in an instant it would drop to shocking lows. It became so cold, that he couldn’t even feel his body.

Chi chi...Luo Feng's 10 fingernails extended, almost like metal fingernail blades! After which it swiftly retracted back and his 10 fingers began to change. Even the bones were changing within. His entire hand began to resemble claws, and fur started sprouting out around them.

Not just his fingers, even on his arms, legs, feet, and face, the black fur grew all over. At that moment, Luo Feng looked like a sasquatch.

However a few minutes later the fur quickly retracted and vanished.

Chi chi...

Black scales began to pop out from his arms, fingers, legs, feet and even his face, his entire body became huge and powerful.

"Just what is this blood river crystal? My god!" No matter how strong his imagination was, Luo Feng would never have expected anything like this to happen. And the process of absorption was still going on...

Chapter 25 – The Mystery of the Blood River Crystal

Night time, the wind was like blades blowing strong in the vast wilderness, and hiding in the wild grass was a faint silhouette.

The robes on his body were already torn into shreds, however below the shreds was a strong body with skin that was emitting white energy. “Inhale!” Luo Feng took a deep breath while sitting crossed legged. His chest sank in and the stomach expanded, almost as though there was a large balloon within his stomach. This balloon then shifted upwards and his stomach contracted and his chest expanded.

After which, the huge bulge separated into 4 portions, heading towards Luo Feng’s two arms and two legs.

Bulges appeared through his skin, it was incredibly peculiar!

“Exhale!” Luo Feng let out a long breath before opening his eyes.

“I’ve finally made it through.” Luo Feng was shocked within.

Pain?

Under immense pain, Luo Feng could endure almost anything easily. However the absorption feeling earlier…it was something he really didn’t like! Because, besides the extreme pain, the most

uncomfortable thing was that Luo Feng's own soul and consciousness couldn't control his own body!

Losing the ability to control his body, this was a feeling he had never felt before.

"No matter what, this type of feeling is finally over." Luo Feng tore off the shredded clothes and carefully examined his body. No matter what angle he looked at, at least from the exterior, there didn't seem to be any difference at all, compared to before the absorption of the crystal. During the absorption itself, his body constantly morphed into things he had never seen before.

"It shouldn't be." Luo Feng frowned.

"I'll test it!"

Luo Feng gazed into the distance, "Spirit energy!"

Rumble...the distant wilderness' big piece of land that was at least 10 million tons immediately floated up. Also, with the spirit energy wrapped about the entire piece, there was no leakage at all. Under Luo Feng's control, this mountain of mud flew in mid air and in a round arc about.

"No difference."

"When it come to invasiveness, emptiness, flexibility, toughness, my spirit energy has no difference from before, my consciousness

and willpower has no difference either." Luo Feng shook his head. The piece of land revolving in the dead of night immediately fell from the air and smashed back into the crater from before.

"My soul wasn't affected, how about the body?" Luo Feng frowned, suddenly throwing out a punch.

Rumble! With that punch, a high pressured shockwave was formed, causing an explosion in air. The terrifying ripple cut through the grass, completely clearing out a few km in area around him.

"No difference?" Luo Feng squinted his eyes. Ripples of energy vibrated all over his skin, all the strength in his muscles was immediately sent to his right hand which was formed into a fist! Luo Feng had transferred all his strength into that instantaneous explosion, resulting in that ear piercing explosion as he punched!

"I felt it, I felt it!"

"Within the depths of my cells, there's a change!" Luo Feng's eyes were filled with a sense of glee, "This, this is an evolution of life?"

Every time a flesh and blood life form breaks through, there would be an evolution.

Breaking through to star traveller, to star level, to universe level...the rest of the leveling was simply quantity based training.

“My body is still universe level 9! I haven’t broken through. However, my bones, muscles, and every cell within has had some change.” Luo Feng was excited and anxious within, because every evolution from each breakthrough from star traveller to sector lord level, none of the 5 breakthroughs were normal.

The books had said the evolution was mysterious, and this wasn’t exaggerated at all.

However...

The changes deep within his cells, even with Luo Feng’s spirit energy, he couldn’t fully deduce them clearly.

“There’s no other way, I can only gradually get used to it. I will have to learn to feel it, and slowly understand its changes.” Luo Feng thought, following which he looked at the night sky. Sou! He rushed up and immediately broke through the cloud levels until the 12th level.

“I’ll investigate the mysteries of my body’s changes here in the clouds.

Luo Feng brandished a blood shadow blade and practiced in the clouds.

Swallow mound flying cloud pavilion, Luo Feng’s quarters.

Even though he had continuously killed 2 prominent figures in Swallow mound city, Lou Feng was still carefree and training in his quarters. As he was worried he might destroy the pavilion, hence he purposely used spirit energy to create a barrier around, and he trained within. Any ripples his fists caused were completely blocked by this barrier. He could train both his spirit energy and train recklessly within.

“Mysterious.”

“Mysterious indeed.” He could already feel the initial changes of the blood river crystal’s mysteries. He was very excited.

Suddenly, he stopped and looked through the window outside. There were two people walking over, Nabu and Na Ke, father and son duo.

“I’ll take a break now.”

The gleeful Luo Feng walked to the 1st level. At the same time, Nabu and Na Ke had just walked into the yard, “Lord Feng.”

“Come in.” Luo Feng smiled and sat down. He lifted a wine glass and poured a glass of blood river world’s wine for himself and was sipping. A chill permeated through his entire body, he smiled comfortably, “Why have you rushed over here so early?”

“We heard that Lord Feng was taken into General Rock wind’s prison. This kid was so nervous that he jumped up and down after.

So I accompanied him to visit you in the prison, only to find out that you had already left." The silver haired Nabu smiled, "Hence, today we thought we'd come pay you a visit early. Lord Feng, if you have any troubles or matters in the future, please call us. Even though I may not be able to solve some big issues, however, when it comes to most trivial matters in Swallow mound city, I'm able to help you settle them."

"Thanks."

Luo Feng smiled, "However there's nothing much now. Ah? Na Ke."

"Hm." Na Ke replied, his expression wasn't too happy.

"What's the matter?" Luo Feng smiled.

Nabu could see this mysterious warrior was in a good mood today, he smiled and explained, "This kid, he's having some trouble in the relationship department, hence he's sulking today."

"Relationship troubles?" Luo Feng laughed loudly, "Na Ke, you've fallen out of love?"

"What's falling out of love?" Na Ke looked up at Luo Feng.

"It means you like someone but she doesn't like you back." Luo Feng lifted the glass and sipped happily.

“Right.” Nabu smiled beside, rubbing his son’s head. His son however dodged unhappily. Nabu laughed, “The other party doesn’t like him. Actually speaking of which, Na Ke did give a new lease of life to that girl…just thinking about the matter makes me want to laugh.”

New lease of life?” Luo Feng was shocked.

“Father!” Na Ke was unhappy.

Nabu just smiled and explained, “My son has had a kind heart from young. He likes to bring his guards to bars and other places, to listen to stories of other strong warriors. He worships these heroes, hence he acts like these heroes sometimes. Almost like robbing the rich for the poor, he would give his family’s money secretly to the poor. One of the poor families only has a mother and a daughter. My son has been secretly helping them since she was young. After that, she grew up and got older. I don’t know how…but my son actually fell for that poor family’s daughter.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng starred.

Helping the poor, helping till he actually falls for the poor family’s girl.

Na Ke was blushing.

“Not just that! My son has always been secretly giving money to

the mother of that girl. Funding the girl…" Nabu shook his head, "When that girl actually tried to enter one of the sects in our city, my son immediately gave a large amount of money secretly to that mother. And just like that…that poor family's daughter, from a poor little girl, she became a genius warrior of that sect! Secretly, my son had been supporting her for 12 years!"

"What happened after that?" Luo Feng was curious.

"My son secretly liked that girl, hence he too joined that sect." Nabu shook his head, "It's a pity, just yesterday, he went to confess and was rejected."

"Ah?" Luo Feng laughed happily.

Na Ke looked angrily at his father.

"Your father cannot speak a few words with Lord Feng?" Nabu stared at his son.

Na Ke could only look down, his ears all red.

"And not just that!" Nabu said, "If things still aren't interesting enough, just as my son got rejected and walked towards the exit, his spirit dejected. That girl's mother actually came to the sect to visit her daughter, seeing my son…this gets exciting, that mother actually hugged my son and expressed her gratitude."

"Ah?" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

“That girl ran over. Seeing the situation, she was extremely curious and asked her mother about this benefactor. Her mother told her the truth, saying how my son had been helping them all this while.” Nabu laughed loudly, “At this, the girl was stunned, and she couldn’t even believe it initially, saying Na Ke wasn’t even 20 years old, and it doesn’t make sense, because the support started over 10 years ago.”

“Her mother said, back then, a little rich kid under the protection of guards secretly gave them money, and she had watched as the little rich kid slowly grew up.” Nabu exclaimed, “Who would’ve thought a little kid’s playful attitude actually produced such a scene.”

“What happened after?” Luo Feng laughed and asked curiously, “How did that girl react to Na Ke?”

“That girl had backbone, she was very grateful.” Nabu said, “She told my son directly…I’m willing to repay my debt to you for my family as your slave, even if you wish, I’ll marry you.”

“Ah? That’s a pleasant surprise.” Luo Feng laughed.

“It’s not over.”

Nabu laughed loudly, “My son asked her modestly, do you like me?”

“That girl said, my mind is set on the martial arts, and there’s no one I fancy. However, the debt I owe to you, I have no other way to repay.” Naby said, “After the girl finished, my son said directly…I, Na Ke, will never force anyone. If you don’t like me, then I won’t force you. After which, this son of mine, he turned and brought his guards away with him. Haha…” As Nabu finished, he couldn’t help but laugh loudly once again.

“Interesting, interesting.” Luo Feng laughed too.

“Father!” The youth Na Ke was blushing red, angry and embarrassed.

“Not bad, Na Ke, not bad.” Luo Feng laughed and complimented.

Na Ke gripped his fists and said seriously, “I won’t force anyone. However, there will come a day that I will make her like me!” He said that as he looked up, filled with resolve.

“Good resolve!” Luo Feng couldn’t hold back his laughter anymore, and laughed with Nabu once again.

Chapter 26 – Longing for Blood River Crystal

Luo Feng continuously studied the effects of the absorption of the blood river crystal for half a month, (only 2 days had passed on blood river continent) before finally getting a good grasp on its overall benefits.

It's mysterious energy permeated deep into one's cells, creating a change that occurred from the very essence within to trigger evolution. It caused every cell to be infused with a mysterious special energy, this wasn't genetic energy, wasn't spirit energy, it was something unknown.

He only needed to drive this energy…

"Hmph!" Standing topless in his pavilion's 2nd floor, with a snort, he controlled his body's every cell. As he did that, the countless connections from before, immediately triggered that unknown energy.

Suddenly!

A blood red engraving that seemed simple yet incomparably magical appeared on his chest, when it appeared on his skin, Luo Feng's perception of the world was completely different from before.

"How wonderful!" Luo Feng closed his eyes.

Gold, wood, water, fire, ground, wind, thunder, light, time, space...

Before his absorption of the crystal, many of the universe origin laws, along with the 2 laws space and gold with which he had some achievements in still felt like a blur. This was completely unlike the golden horned beast or the Mosha clan body whose comprehension was still higher. However...when he triggered the unknown energy and the engraving appeared on his chest, everything cleared up!

Even his control of the laws became somewhat easier.

Nightmare, Luo Feng waved his blade, chilly flash of the blade made hearts tremble.

World's end, countless and endless flashes, it could stop 10 million enemies.

Hatred, a brutal and incredibly savage flash, it could cut through anything obstructing it.

Illusion, almost like a drunken warrior randomly waving his blade, yet it also resembled countless blades waving about.

Pensive, a blur silhouette accompanied the blurry flashes of the blade.

Burial, the final and most savage attack, it made hearts tremble in fear!

Dutchman's pipe, a dance in the face of life and death, hoping it to bloom before death.

Luo Feng didn't use his genetic energy, to unleash his bladework in the pavilion. His spirit energy formed a protective barrier, at least it guaranteed that his attacks wouldn't damage the construct.

"This wonderful feeling." Luo Feng opened his eyes, "Blood river crystal, it's heavenly."

The blood river crystal's uses were similar to the Mosha body.

Even if the Mosha body's comprehension was lower, it could still unleash a shocking amount of power! Also...it made his comprehension of the space laws easier.

After absorbing the blood river crystal, it wasn't just space laws, his feeling for the laws of the gold, wood, water, fire, ground, wind, thunder, light, space and time all felt quite a bit clearer, or it could also be said that after the absorption, his relationship with the universe laws was much closer, and easier to feel.

Since it was easier to feel, it resulted in the earth body's comprehension speed to rise!

As his relationship with the laws gets closer, when he unleashes

an attack, the power would be amplified one fold! (If the earth human body can only use the 100 thread movement, with the same amount of comprehension, the mosha clan could unleash the 10,000 thread movement.)

"It's a pity!"

"The Mosha clan unleashing space techniques has ten times the power! However with the absorption of the crystal...it only increased by 20 to 30%." Luo Feng laughed, "I can't be too greedy. The Mosha Clansman is afterall the strongest assassins in the universe, they couldn't be joking about that?"

As heavenly as the blood river crystal was, it raised his comprehension for all the laws! And when unleashing these laws, his powers all rose greatly as well!

By absorbing one blood river crystal, his power grew by 20-30%.

"Blood warrior? Black warrior?" Luo Feng pondered. "Since there's such a saying of the blood warrior and black warriors. I think, after absorbing three crystals, there'll be a special change. Absorbing 10 will have an even more shocking change!"

"Hm!"

"Blood river crystals. I have to acquire them now, the more the better!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed. The Mosha clansman's were born with certain skills, and absorbing more blood river crystals

could help him get to a point like a Mosha clansman being. Of course, the more blood river crystals he absorbed, the harder it got. Otherwise, the black warrior saying wouldn't just be a saying anymore.

"Tonight!"

"I'll go take care of the city leader." Luo Feng's eyes were cold. "He's the one in Swallow mound city with the most crystals."

Swallow mound city, General's mansion.

City leader Rock Wind Xiong, stood looking gloomy on his balcony. Behind him were 8 high level officers.

"Speak, where's the general?" Rock wind Xiong said softly. "I've ordered for him, yet he didn't even reply? I've even come looking for him and he's not here, just where did he go? His scoundrel friend Pure feather Chong is already dead, where is he?" Back then, Rock wind Zhan and Pure feather Chong were indeed the two that played about madly.

They did all sorts of crooked activities, they were too numerous to count. Among the two, one was the Pure feather family leader while the other was Swallow mound city's general, who in Swallow mound city would dare mess with them?

"City leader, we don't know either."

“When it comes to the general’s disappearance, we all don’t know.”

“Right, I think the general snuck out to play, hence he didn’t tell us.” The 8 high ranking officers all replied.

“That bastard!”

Rock wind Xiong was enraged. “Give the order. The moment anyone finds the general, tell him to get over here to me!”

“Yes!”

The 8 officers replied respectfully, after which Rock wind xiong vanished. Only at this time did the 8 relax. Muttering and discussing amongst themselves, “What’s going on? Previously, when the general went out to play, I’ve never seen the city leader that furious before. It’s only been 2 to 3 days so far, he’s even disappeared for half a month before, and that’s considered normal.”

“No idea. However, from the looks of it, the city leader is extremely angry. The general is in trouble this time.”

……

The general was in tragic trouble indeed, because he was already dead.

……

Late night.

Luo Feng stood in his own study of the pavilion. He was dressed in black armor and boots, even bringing a helmet and mask! He carried behind him a shield and blood red blade.

“City leader Rock wind Xiong, he is close to domain lord level 2, and someone who has absorbed a crystal before.” Luo Feng thought. “Even though in domain and origin laws, I far exceed him, he is still after all a domain lord. I cannot be careless.” Against Pure feather Chong, Luo Feng wore only a black robe. Against Rock wind general, he wore a simple normal robe and was very casual.

Only this time!

He was fully prepared. He even donned a mask!

Because Luo Feng was very clear that unless he used the Mosha clan, by simply relying on his human body alone, this would be a tough battle.

“There’s no meaning if the battle isn’t tough. The more I fight higher levels, the more interesting it will be.” Luo Feng smiled. With a flash, he vanished without a trace from the pavilion.

Swallow mound city leader's mansion, the security was tight.

A blurry silhouette was moving through and it was very hard to detect. Swiftly heading towards the city leader Rock wind Xiong's mansion. Considering that Rock Wind Xiong was the strongest within the city leader's mansion, naturally he didn't use cloud levels (Universe level) and sky level (star levels) as bodyguards.

"Illusionary manual, it's more proficient in assassinations!"

"And I'm afterall only a universe level 9. if I use force against him, I will be at a disadvantage. If I can assassinate him, it would be beautiful." Luo Feng gazed at the distant palace. Through the universe space, he could feel that there was a familiar energy within. It was Rock Wind Xiong's energy.

Sou!

Luo Feng wielded the blood shadow blade and instantly vanished.

.....

Within the palace.

The tall and sturdy Rock wind Xiong sat in his study desk, and on it were many reports.

"Hmph!" He couldn't help but smack the table and stand up. He

was walking about in the study, frowning, “My senior and envoy Mo, it’s rare that they pay me a visit. I originally wanted to introduce them to my little brother. I didn’t expect this bastard to disappear, and I can’t even find him. My senior and Mo have been here for three days and are about to leave. If I can’t find him soon, the next time my brother gets to meet envoys from the Undying shrine would be a very long time from now!”

“Bastard, what a bastard!” Rock wind Xiong got angrier as he thought about it.

Entertaining the envoys for the past few days, has it been easy?

Everything was top notch and best.

“Hm?” Rock wind Xiong’s feelings for the skies and ground were very sensitive. He was able to feel an energy about, immediately roaring, “Who is it!!!”

Rumble!

With Rock Wind Xiong as the center, countless lightning bolts shot in all directions. It strangely shot through the palace without any hint of harming anything within, forming a huge spherical shaped lightning barrier around a 1km area. A few soldiers and staff were all extremely afraid, however after discovering the lightning ball didn’t harm them, they still ran out with fear out of the area.

“Xiu!”

A flash of a blade immediately lit up within the palace, almost like a huge sickle slicing straight at Rock wind Xiong. Only at this time could he barely make out a warrior dancing with his blades, completely covered in black armor.

“Get lost!” Rock wind xiong roared. A large purple sledge hammer appeared in his hand, it rumbled as he swung it.

Pa!

The attack infused with lightning and thunder swung forward, causing the black armored person to dodge it. This mad energy was like countless arrows shooting in all directions, causing rumbles and explosions to erupt all about the palace. At this time Rock Wind xiong’s eyes were gleaming with lightning. Holding a huge sledge hammer in each hand, he rushed forward within the palace!

“Indeed a domain lord level 2, with a level 9 domain and one who has entered the gateway of the thunder laws.” Luo Feng spit out some blood as he dodged. However, in the blink of an eye his body recovered, his gaze fixed and was once again as cold and collected as before.

“I’ll use speed! Kill him!”

Shua!

A roar had just erupted from Rock Wind Xiong's mouth: "You..."

However in an instant, a incredibly condensed golden domain was unleashed. Space and gold laws combined, melding with the terrifying domain formed in the universe space. This gold domain was a golden wave with gold properties, which fused with the universe space and immediately pressuring and destroying that thunder domain.

Simultaneously around Rock wind Xiong's body, 100 black armored warriors appeared. Every one of them wielded a 6 edged shield and blood shadow blade.

"Absolute domain, Time Space scribbles number 2891 technique...Messy Void kill!" Luo Feng roared within.

"Space origin laws!" Wielding the two purple sledgehammers, Rock wind Xiong was shocked at the scene.

Chapter 27 – Dishonorable

Rock Wind Xiong, his teacher was a world level (Sector lord) who controlled the surrounding 1 billion km area, Si Yong.

Even though the strong were like the clouds here in blood river world, a sector lord was still a very terrifying existence. Rock Wind Xiong being under Si Yong, had very high perspectives and vision. With just one look, he understood that this mysterious warrior was a genius person with high achievements in space origin laws, able to produce up to 100 images!

“Just a universe level 9 and so powerful. It’s simply too...”Rock wind Xiong understood that if such a genius were to be discovered by the undying shrine, he would definitely be treated as an absolute elite and nurtured.

“It’s a pity that he’s the enemy!”

“The more terrifying the enemy, the better it is to eliminate him earlier.” Rock wind Xiong stood on the ground with the sledgehammers in his hand motionless.

And Luo Feng who had unleashed his close combat Messy Void technique was suspicious, “He is afterall a domain lord 2. Just based on his pure genetic energy and explosive speed, he could very likely survive my attack, why isn’t he moving?” While suspicious, Luo Feng began to grow wary within.

Hua! Hua! Hua! Hua! Hua! Hua!

Over a hundred peculiar blade techniques melded with the spread out gold domain, causing the space around to follow the blade work. In an instant, there was nothing but flashes of blades, almost like the entire space was a dance floor. It was completely pressuring that Rock Wind Xiong. While pressuring him, it shrank more, the blade work condensed on him too.

Rock Wind Xiong was trapped within!

It was almost like he was trapped in a little house, and was being slashed at by large amounts of blade flashes!

This technique from Time scribbles didn't have a name, Messy Void was a name he gave it himself.

"Hahaha..."A loud laugh resounded. Rock Wind Xiong stood his ground, almost as though he was admiring Luo Feng's performance.

"Rise!"

Rock Wind Xiong's lips curled into a smile, simultaneously assassination weapons rose from all around him. At least 1,000 of them completely covering Rock Wind Xiong. Every one of them under the flashes of lightning gleamed like dazzling metals, the arc blade edge was terrifying.

"What!" Luo Feng's expression changed greatly. He had initially

wanted to rely on speed to kill him, however how could he compete with the speed of spirit weapons? That was suicide!

"Go!"

Rock Wind Xiong waved, immediately the blur of countless weapons covered the skies and shot in all directions. Even though the hundred thread movement was very shocking, making one unable to accurately deduce the person's position, however with countless weapons shooting in all directions, it definitely spelled trouble. Although, using such quantity would diminish the power.

However, the enemy was domain lord level 2. Any one of those weapons could easily kill a normal universe level 9.

"Dang! Dang!" Luo Feng's movement was unpredictable, however the number of weapons shot at him was simply too many. Wielding the 6 edged shield, he continuously blocked 10 of them. Even though he managed to deflect them away, they still affected his movement.

"Haha..." Rock Wind Xiong's laugh continued. The rest of his dancing weapons all curved and simultaneously headed towards Luo Feng. The air trembled and split apart, as up to a 1,000 assassination weapons shot at him. Luo Feng's expression grew heavy, his eyes were staring coldly at Rock Wind Xiong!

A formless consciousness pressure fiercely smashed into Rock wind Xiong's consciousness.

“Hm?” Rock Wind Xiong felt a pain in his head. The 1,000 assassination weapons controlled by his consciousness were immediately affected. Without the help of his spirit energy, the weapons swiftly slowed down due to the high air resistance and gravity. They still followed their course and shot towards Luo Feng, he however easily dodged them.

Weapons capable of twisting and turning, compared to dumb straight shooting weapons, naturally were much easier to dodge!

Shua! Luo Feng dodged the weapons.

Shua! Luo Feng rushed at Rock Wind Xiong.

“Go and die!” Luo Feng had already reached him. The blood shadow blade in his hand had already become an incomparably resplendent flash, cutting straight at Rock Wind Xiong’s chest.

Killing a universe level and killing a domain lord were two completely different things.

From student level to universe level, the soul was definitely within the consciousness. Hence the control chip could at most control up to a universe level. The highest slaves a slave trader could sell was a universe level.

When it came to domain lord however, the soul was in the Qi Dian, this was also named the life core!

Like Luo Feng, his Qi Dian and Internal core had fused into one. Hence, his core was incredibly sturdy This also meant that eventually breaking through from this internal core would thus be very hard!

To kill a domain lord, one had to destroy the life core. However, this life core could be stored in any part of the body, it could be within the head area, consciousness, at the Dantian, or even in the arms, chest etc anywhere. Hence, to kill a domain lord...the first thing was to determine where the life core was located!

Due to the consciousness attack earlier, Luo Feng had determined the position already.

“Dang!” a gold light hit Luo Feng’s blade.

“Trouble.” Luo Feng’s expression changed, he could see the gloomy and mad Rock Wind Xiong. Luo Feng’s consciousness was considered domain lord pinnacle, and Rock Wind Xiong too was domain lord level. Even though it was weaker than his own, it was still at domain lord level. That one attack only managed to shock him temporarily.

Consciousness pressure, only when the level difference was huge, would the effect be obvious.

“Hmph!” Rock wind Xiong looked angrily at Luo Feng. Simultaneously around him were 3 gold lights that surrounded his body and then shot at Luo Feng together.

“So troublesome. A fighter against a spirit reader would naturally be at a disadvantage. But to meet a spirit reader a few levels above me.” Luo Feng knew that he couldn’t win anymore. No matter how strong his comprehension of the origin laws were, and how powerful his movement was, as long as there was an army of different types of spirit weapons that attacked, there may still be a chance.

However if the opponent was a few levels above, how could he battle?

Even the golden horned beast, before training techniques like Deities of the World, just using it’s natural talents, it could at most fight it out with an opponent 3 levels higher, and destroy humans that were 2 level higher than itself.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

3 golden lights as fast as lightning were shot out. Luo Feng’s speed, no matter how fast it was, he still couldn’t dodge them in time. One beam shot through Luo Feng’s throat, piercing right through and simultaneously the pressure from the shot caused his head to become a mess.

Pu Tong!

Luo Feng fell.

“What terrifying consciousness, just who is he. His consciousness

is even stronger than mine, and his comprehension of the laws are so high." Rock Wind xiong walked towards the body. He looked at it and was shocked. "What a pity, a universe level 9 actually dared to come assassinate me. Such an attempt is just suicide. Let me see just who it is!"

With a thought, he ripped apart the mask and lifted the mask to reveal the youth's face.

"How are you!" The youth suddenly opened his eyes, his gaze somewhat apologetic.

"Eh!"

Rock wind Xiong's eyes looked down. His chest had already been stabbed by a blade. It had pierced straight into his life core, it was a pity that his life core was but a normal human race's core and was no where as perverted as that of a golden horned beast. Actually countless human races' cores were weak and fragile. How could they possibly compare to the golden horned beast which was born with an internal world.

When the golden horned beast reaches domain lord level, its internal world spanned over 100,000 km in area! This was much larger than earth.

And a normal human domain lord had just begun to nurture an internal world. To truly expand the world, one had to wait untill sector lord level.

To be able to support such a vast internal world, how could the internal core not be sturdy?

A domain lord level 6 golden horned beast, even a powerful domain lord level 6 would have trouble breaking it's core! Just like back then when Hong and thunder god entered the golden horned beast's body, immolating their souls using the pike and blade to attack its core, yet they couldn't break it.

A pinnacle sector lord golden horned beast was invincible amongst the sector lords. Afterall, it had 3 powerful natural abilities, along with its inherited memories. However, even with all these heaven sent benefits, there would be a downside. This is also why many generations of golden horned beasts were all getting stuck at the pinnacle of sector lords, unable to break through.

"You..." Rock Wind Xiong stared wide eyed. At the same time, his body knelt down as fresh blood was flowing from his chest.

"You stand right in front of me without the slightest amount of vigilance. The moment i attacked you, you couldn't even react." Luo Feng stood up. His throat was already without a trace of the previous injury. He placed his mask back on, as revealing his identity may affect Nabu and his son Na Ke. Through his revealed eyes, he looked at Rock Wind xiong's body. "I don't blame you, I don't think many people would have thought that a universe level, even with his consciousness destroyed completely, would still be alive!"

Luo Feng looked at the body before him, shaking his head.

At first, he didn't want to use special abilities to kill his opponent, and wanted to rely only on his universe level 9 abilities to fight it out. However, he didn't expect Rock Wind Xiong to be a spirit reader, his final assassination felt a little dishonorable.

"It's a pity that I didn't bring the Nan Shen Armament!"

"If I had the Nan Shen Armament, my strength would have been multiplied, and I would have a guarantee in killing him." Luo Feng shook his head. "My earth body really isn't suited for close combat!"

Following which Luo Feng swiftly scanned the body and found his target, the space item.

"That's it!"

Luo Feng quickly discovered an inlaid decorative plate on his waist, and immediately took it down. This metal plate...was the storage item.

"I hope there's blood river crystals in here. The more the merrier!" Luo Feng immediately used his spirit energy to pierce into it and began searching.

At this time...

1 km area around the palace was in a complete mess. The palace was destroyed, the balcony was broken, stairways were reduced to nothing, especially in the most center...there was even Rock Wind Xiong's body, along with the black armored warrior standing there coldly with the plate in his hand!

"Not bad." Luo Feng revealed a smile, "There's 2 crystals!"

Rock wind Xiong had previously absorbed 1 crystal. Through various methods, he had acquired 2 more to probably increase his chance of becoming a blood warrior someday. Later he got one more, and gave that one to his little brother Rock Wind Zhan.

"Killing and robbing, vicious indeed!"

A cold voice resounded around the space.

Luo Feng turned to look.

In mid air...there stood 2 grey armored silhouettes and their expressions were ugly.

Chapter 28 – Envoys of the Undying Shrine

Late night, within the purple 3 story pavilion of the Pure feather family.

Pure feather Tao was sitting crossed legged with his eyelids drooping. However, he was pondering, “My information cannot be wrong. Two special envoys from the undying shrine are in Swallow mound city. However Rock Wind Xiong, that bastard definitely wouldn’t let me meet them…hm. This is troublesome, how can I contact the envoys…”

Rumble!

A mad energy wave fiercely travelled from the North East, causing Pure feather Tao to immediately raise his head. His eyes were peering in the north east direction, his gaze becoming two beams of light that shot through the pavilions’ closed windows destroying them in the process, revealing the beautiful scenery outside towards the east.

A 1km tall thunder ball was floating within the city leader’s mansion. Lightning flashed about and lightning snakes danced about, this scene caused Pure feather tao to be in shock.

It wasn’t just Pure feather Tao…

Everyone in swallow mound city was stunned, as there wasn’t any construct 1km tall in the entire city. Hence when the thunder ball appeared…especially in the dark night, it was extremely

visible. Without any obstruction in the 100km area, almost everyone could see it.

"What's going on, for that bastard Rock Wind Xiong to unleash his domain? Did he meet a powerful warrior?" Pure feather Tao was shocked, and fiercely rushed out of the house.

Standing in mid air and looking at the North East direction, his expression changed constantly. "Just who in Swallow mound could make Rock Wind Xiong go all out like this? There are no other domain level warriors, and with the presence of the two envoys from the undying shrine, who would be so deranged as to attack at this time. Don't tell me...he's even battling the envoys?"

As for the strength of the envoys, even Pure feather tao didn't know much about it.

To become an envoy of the undying shrine, one had to at least be a domain level. As for if they were at domain level early stage? Mid Stage? Late Stage? Or at the pinnacle? He wasn't clear.

"Better be careful, I don't want to be dragged in." Pure feather Tao carefully flew over, not daring to release any energy or aura, in case the enemy detected him and thought of him as an enemy too.

He had to be careful!

As Pure Feather Tao didn't have a backing, the moment he died,

the Pure feather family would be finished.

Being old and not dying was important, and Pure feather Tao was very clear on the importance of him being alive.

Actually, the battle between Luo Feng and Rock Wind Xiong, at their level, it was usually settled within 1 or 2 seconds with tens of exchanges. During the entire battle including Luo Feng's final stabbing, the thing that took the longest was his final blade attack, because he needed to wait for Rock Wind Xiong to walk over...

The entire battle only took about 10 seconds.

.....

The air split, lightning shot in all directions, energies flew madly, golden energy waves glaring.

The luxurious pavilions, flowerbeds, etc were all immediately destroyed and scattered all over. The entire city leader's mansion was thrown into madness and fear. Pure Feather Tao however sneakily approached, as he wanted to be cautious. When he hid behind the collapsed palace and watched from far, Luo Feng had just taken the storage item.

"Storage item?" Pure feather tao's eyes immediately went red. "Rock Wind xiong's countless treasures are within. Since he is the favorite disciple of that world city leader, he definitely had quite a bit when he became city leader. All his treasures are inside! And

that black armored man…his energy doesn't seem that strong."

"Do I kill him?" Pure feather Tao gritted his teeth, staring hard at the distant black armored man.

Hesitation!

Second guessing!

"I will kill!" Pure feather Tao's eyes were red. If he didn't make a move now, when would he do it?

"Hm?" Just as he was about to rush out…in mid air two grey silhouettes appeared. The grey armor they wore was the proof of their identity as special envoys of the undying shrine. Also, the energy they emitted was terrifying.

"How powerful! These two are definitely stronger than me!" Pure feather Tao's expression immediately changed. "These two are probably both at pinnacle domain level!"

His ambition and greed from before were immediately reduced to nothing.

"I'll keep watching and see if there's any chance to get anything." Pure feather Tao hid his aura and hid.

When one reached the domain level (Domain lord), and one's

core becomes that life core (Qi Dian), one could completely hide their aura within. The outside world couldn't detect it at all. Just like how several scanning devices could scan power levels, they could at most accurately detect from student to universe levels. As for domain lord and sector lord levels, they couldn't fully detect.

Unless the opponent releases his aura!

"How powerful." Pure feather Tao's eye muscles twitched.

……

Dressed in black armor and boots, along with a helmet and mask, Luo Feng was fully dressed!

"These two…" Luo Feng looked up at the two in grey armors floating in mid air. These two were obviously enraged, since they willingly released their terrifying auras. "At least domain lord level 7 or 8, or even a domain lord level 9. How troublesome."

Yes!

Simply just troublesome. Luo Feng had not wished to ever use the Mosha clansman, mostly as a means to train himself. However the moment his life was in danger, would he stupidly wait for his death? With the Mosha clansman's strength, especially with its ridiculous space law's strength unleashed…if he wanted to flee, these two had no way to stop him!

“Two sirs, must you make a move?” Luo Feng looked at the two in mid air.

“Haha, you’ve killed my junior. Are you implying I should simply let you go?” The handsome middle aged man roared angrily in the night.

……

The auras of the two special envoys from the undying shrine were terrifying.

“I didn’t expect this.” The other man communicated mentally. “Brother Yu, my apologies, I didn’t expect this to happen too.”

“Old Mo, it’s not your fault, I was careless.” The handsome man was bitter.

During these two or three days these two had been entertained extremely well by Rock Wind xiong. Especially tonight, because he had invited the legendary mermaid from the Demon Ocean to sing for them and entertain them. This mermaid…belonged to the highest of women in blood river continent. They could remove their tail and take on human form, the moment they touched water they could regain their tail again.

All of them could sing extremely well, it was the most absolute pleasure.

However these mermaids could only be found in the demon ocean. Demon ocean belonged to a terrifying region of blood river continent. To actually catch a mermaid alive was incredibly hard. Hence, one single mermaid in the continent alone would result in many powerful figures fighting and chasing after her.

They were envoys of the undying shrine, normally they wouldn't have much free time in their hands. Yet, this time they actually managed to see a mermaid, naturally they didn't mind getting comfortable.

When these two were extremely comfortable, they suddenly felt a large energy exploding in the distance. At that time, they were simply too lazy to move, because they believed that within this area, there wasn't anyone who would dare mess with the world city leader Si Yong's disciple Rock Wind Xiong. They believed that Rock Wind Xiong could settle it by himself.

Later they felt that the energies were too strong and overpowering. Due to the rumbles and explosions, the two of them left their beds unhappily to take a look.

By the time they reached their destination, Rock wind Xiong was already dead!

Within the city leader's mansion, the atmosphere immediately changed.

"You are not my targets. I'm too lazy to kill, so don't force me!" Luo feng looked at the two in mid air, and immediately rushed into

the sky.

"Trying to flee?"

In mid air, the handsome man roared. He simultaneously communicated to the envoy beside, "Old Mo, he killed my junior. So leave this matter to me. Help me by keeping any eye on him, I'm worried that this punk will suddenly find a way to flee. Please don't let him escape."

"Brother Yu, leave it to me. Relax." Envoy Mo nodded.

Having been treated well and entertained by Rock wind Xiong the past few days, now that he's dead, Envoy Mo definitely wanted to avenge him as well.

.....

Luo Feng rose into the skies, simultaneously the handsome man's killing intent rushed over. Luo Feng frowned. "You are really forcing me. Since you wish to die, then I'll send you to hell!"

The Mosha clansman within his internal world had already fully resembled Luo Feng. He was also wielding a blood shadow blade and dressed in black armor, shield. These were not considered high level weapons at all in the Virtual Universe Company, they were all custom made for his stay here in Blood river world.

As they were cheap, he had ordered 10 at the time. Should there

be any breakage or faults, he could use another.

"Switch!" Luo Feng thought.

Shua!

The earth body Luo Feng swapped instantly with the Mosha Clansman within. The earth body entered the internal world while the Mosha Clansman remained outside. During the switch...Luo Feng was flying swiftly. So, it was impossible to see clearly what had happened.

"Hm, he hid his energy?" Chasing him swiftly, Yu Envoy could feel the black armored warrior's aura go from a universe level 9 to suddenly nothing.

"I'm at a pinnacle domain level. Unless he is world level, he will die without a doubt!" A blade appeared suddenly in Envoy Yu's hands. He swiftly caught up with the black armored Luo Feng. He shouted with rage, "You sure got guts. In this side of the world, only me and my brothers kill others. There's never been a time where we've been bullied! Go and die!"

Rumble!

The Mosha Luo Feng's lips curled into a smile. That incredible feeling within the universe space, it was like a fish in water, an infant in a mother's embrace, it was very comfortable. That feeling of almost being one with space made Luo Feng clearly sense the

mad and powerful aura rushing from behind him.

“I guess he’s really domain level 9!” The Mosha Luo Feng smiled coldly. “Strongest assassins in the universe, along with my study of the 9 universe primal chaos tablet. I’ll let you see my power.”

Mosha Luo Feng closed his eyes.

That mad energy rushed straight at him, and just as it was about to reach him…

Shua!

The envoy’s eyes were filled with rage and killing intent. His lightning fast and powerful slash sliced the black warrior before him in half. However, after the slash, his expression changed greatly. “Something is not right!” There was no blood or any feeling at all from the black armored warrior he had just slashed. He simply dispersed.

“Where is he? Is he so fast that I can’t even feel him?” Envoy Yu was extremely terrified.

“Brother Yu, behind you!!!” A fearful voice entered into Envoy Yu’s mind.

Envoy Yu spun around quickly.

Behind him the black armored warrior was looking at him. Simultaneously, he saw the flash of a blade.

Chapter 29 – Mosha Clansman Takes Flight

Attacking in close range, with the Mosha clansman's speed, this special envoy had no way to defend at all.

"No!" Envoy Yu's handsome face was struggling. Simultaneously, his domain level 9 genetic energy was fiercely permeating through the grey uniform he wore. That extremely fast and sharp blood shadow blade slashed his body, but that grey uniform slightly shook and dispersed the attack throughout his body, leaving behind a slash mark on the uniform before quickly regenerating.

Sou!

Envoy Yu quickly retreated, beads of perspiration were dripping from his forehead, as he was terrified.

"Luckily, luckily I have this armor from the undying shrine." Envoy Yu felt as though he had just escaped death itself as he looked with disbelief and fear at the black armored warrior in the night sky. "How can he be that fast? He, his speed is impossible. I can't even feel it."

Yes, the Mosha clansman was indeed fast.

If measured against the Absolute Space level, it had reached the 2nd level's Countless Changes. According to that level, it was the highest level in 10,000 thread flow. Unleashing it fully could produce 10,000 images in space! And Luo Feng's earth body could only produce up to several 100, (As the 100 thread flow had a

special effect, hence he usually only used 100).

During battle, more images weren't necessarily better.

Like teleportation, once one reaches that level, there wouldn't be any images at all!

And Absolute Space 1st level Arc Light, 2nd level Countless Changes, even though it seemed like many images were formed when unleashed, the true goal was instantaneous explosive acceleration!

Right now, the Mosha clansman's instantaneous acceleration had already reached a terrifying level. Another level and it'd be teleportation! Of course this was the hardest step. One could only imagine, its current acceleration was already that terrifying, much less this Envoy Yu.

Even a sector lord warrior, his max speed could maybe exceed that of the Mosha Clansman! However that instantaneous explosion would still pale in comparison.

Unless that sector lord was close to the level of Countless Changes. Or he had reached a high level of comprehension in wind or light origin laws.

……

"Interesting." Mosha Luo Feng stood in mid air looking at the

distant envoy Yu and was staring at his grey armor. “That…is a genetic armor? Genetic armor from the universe?”

Yes!

It was Genetic armor!

“To actually be able to disperse my attack throughout his body, and after I slit it, it recovered immediately. And with that bastard pouring genetic energy in…it obviously has raised the armor’s defense.” Even though Luo Feng was an outsider, he was naturally clear on the armor’s properties. He had the cloud contact vine armor which was even better than the genetic armor!

Only thing was, he didn’t dare use it. Otherwise, he would be recognized as an outsider and ganged up on by everybody.

“Na Ke’s father was right. Those ancient god ruins really have items from when the Virtual Universe Company battled against the Blood river continent, having left its traces behind. And these should have been studied by the Undyings of Blood river continent, and they found out how to make a genetic armor. Obviously, their production amount is still very very low.” Luo Feng’s mind thought of many things in an instant.

……

As the thoughts crossed his mind, he immediately charged forward and once again reached that fleeing envoy Yu’s face.

“Too fast.” Envoy yu communicated to his partner and shouted, “Old Mo, Hurry and help me!”

“Understood!” From the distance, envoy Mo swiftly flew over.

However, Mosha Luo Feng had already begun his 2nd attack. This time it wasn’t casual like the first time. He was truly moving the universe space around the blade, hence on the edge of the blade the space even warped. Mosha Luo Feng stared coldly at envoy Yu who couldn’t defend in time and was relying solely on the genetic armor to defend.

“Stupid!” Luo Feng thought.

Pu chi!

Like a kitchen knife slicing open a fish, the blood shadow blade was incredibly sharp this time. It immediately sliced open envoy Yu’s chest and piercing in. The blood shadow blade released energy within in all directions and Luo Feng immediately discovered his life core within.

Chi!

The tip of the blade immediately pierced through the life core of the terrified and trying to flee envoy Yu. The moment it touched it, the core broke and envoy Yu stared wide eyed. His eyes were filled with fear and disbelief. He couldn’t believe that the man

before him was actually able to pierce through his armor and kill him, even more so that he'd actually dare to kill a special envoy of the undying shrine!

"This blade of mine has the feeling of slicing space." Mosha Luo Feng's eyes gleamed with satisfaction.

His earth body relied on the Nan Shen Armament, and was unable to pass the heavenly bridge's 6th level.

However if the Mosha clansman was the one doing it, it could easily unleash 10,000 thread flow. It's blade resonated with the universe space, this was enough to produce the Nan Shen Armament's 5th level Space Slicer effect. In fact, its power was even stronger. Passing the heavenly bridge's...6 and even 7 was fully guaranteed!

Afterall...

This was the strongest assassin race in the universe.

"What!" Envoy Yu who was flying over preparing to help his friend changed his expression. "How...how can he cut through that armor with just one blade?"

Flee!

Envoy Yu didn't even hesitate.

“How can that black armored warrior be that strong?” In the distant city Pure feather Tao hid himself and his aura. While looking up, his eyes were filled with fear. “The envoy he killed was pinnacle domain level. Even with the special envoy armor, he was still killed with just one slash.”

Pure feather Tao stared, “He’s caught up, the black armored warrior has caught up.”

……

Right, Envoy Mo was fleeing in the night, and Mosha Luo Feng who had just killed envoy Yu placed him in his space ring and simultaneously exploded towards the fleeing man…

“Trying to flee?” A voice entered envoy Mo’s ears.

“No, you cannot kill me. I’m a special envoy of the undying shrine. I’m a special envoy of the undying shrine!” Envoy Mo shouted back.

“Undying shrine envoy?” Mosha Luo Feng was shocked.

“Yes, I’m a special envoy of the undying shrine, you…” Envoy Mo stared wide eyed, because that terrifying slash appeared again. The edge of the blade that warped even space around it…almost as though before this blade, even space could be sliced through, immediately killing envoy Mo and breaking his life core!

Mosha Luo Feng waved his hand and placed his body in his storage ring, after which he looked down. Pure feather tao who was secretly watching this scene, was discovered by the black armored warrior. He was immediately shocked and terrified.

“How did he discover me, how?” Pure feather tao was absolutely terrified.

He didn’t know…

The Mosha clansman had no soul or spirit energy. Hence the way it sensed other’s energies and aura was different from flesh and blood life forms.

Normal flesh and blood life forms rely on spirit energy to sense things, according to how strong the energies were, they would determine the location.

The Mosha however was a favored child of space, it could meld with space itself….just like how a spider could feel even the tiniest vibration within its webs.

Mosha Luo Feng was just that!

Even though that Pure feather tao was a domain lord who was hiding his energy, theoretically speaking no one should be able to detect him. However, Luo Feng felt the ripples in space that Tao had made when he flew. Hence, he knew that the target had

hidden himself after flying fast for awhile.

"I have no ill intent." Pure feather Tao's face went pale.

"You should be the elder of the Pure feather family." Mosha Luo Feng smiled in mid air. "It's unfortunate, but I require blood river crystals now."

"No!" Pure feather Tao's expression changed. He immediately became a flash, his shocking speed even caused the air around to explode, the constructs about him crumbling.

Mosha Luo Feng shook his head.

Hua!

Immediately closing 10km in distance, leaving a trail of images behind and brandishing that blade, flashing once again! Just as pure feather Tao was trying to react fearfully, it had already pierced through his body and killed him. Following which he placed Pure feather Tao's body in his storage ring and with a step, immediately disappeared 1,000km away.

His earth body's speed in Blood river world's conditions could travel 3,000km in a second. The Mosha Luo Feng was more than 10 times faster.

The commotion that happened in Swallow mound city late at night was even noisier than broad daylight.

Especially as many people squeezed in the vast walkways outside the city leader's mansion, countless eyes were looking at the mansion, where the army stood surrounding it.

"What happened?

"Who knows, I even saw a tall and terrifying lightning ball before."

"I saw it too."

"Look, the originally tallest city leader palace has been reduced to waste. We can't even see it anymore."

A group of excited people in Swallow mound city were discussing.

They didn't even know...

Within that night, two special envoys from the undying shrine, Swallow mound's city leader, and the elder of the Pure feather family, were all dead! It could be said that there weren't anymore domain level warriors in Swallow mound city.

.....

Mosha Luo Feng tore through the air and pierced through the

cloud levels.

“Its wonderful, this feeling of melding with the universe space. When can my earth body reach such a level.” Luo Feng was addicted to this. This feeling, where the universe space felt extremely clear, to be able to move through the universe space ripples and feel the living beings all about.

Shua!

Mosha Luo Feng stopped. At this time he was already close to a million km away from Swallow mound city, with just that bit of work.

“Swap.” Even though he couldn’t bear to do it, using the Mosha body was after all a very dangerous thing to do, as there were large amounts of sector lords and undyings in this world! The moment he was too high profile and got noticed, everything would be over.

“It’s better to stay low profile, and use only my universe level strength.”

He swapped back to his human body.

Luo Feng suddenly smiled, “Time to see what those envoys from the undying shrine and even Pure feather Tao had on them, just what surprise can they give me.”

Chapter 30 – Unexpected Surprise

Within the clouds.

After swapping his bodies, he began to look through the four bodies in his space ring.

“Pure Feather Tao, Rock Wind Xiong, these two have the highest status in Swallow Mound city.” Luo Feng separately took out these two’s space items and examined them carefully. Unlike Rock Wind Zhan who purposely hid his, Pure Feather Tao and Rock Wind xiong’s storage items both had blood river crystals. He had actually examined Rock Wind Xiong’s earlier.

“1, 2!”

Luo Feng flipped his hand and there lay a triangular blood red crystal, the beauty was mesmerizing, it was the blood river crystal.

“I got three of them at one go!” Luo Feng smiled. “If I successfully absorb another 2, I will become a blood warrior immediately. And I’d still have one more, this will be just enough to complete the 1st mission.”

The dangerous level mission had a total of two missions.

1 was for 10,000 points and another was for 100,000 points.

From the looks of it, as long as everything went well and his absorption was successful, he would be able to get 110,000 at one go.

“The 1st thing is to absorb the crystals successfully.” Luo Feng recalled his 1st absorption, and was not fully confident.

Acquiring everything seemed pretty easy enough. However, for the virtual universe to deem them both as dangerous level missions...of course, these were aimed at the universe level core members. If Luo Feng was truly a universe level 9 without the Mosha clansman, then acquiring the crystals would have been extremely dangerous.

“Right.”

“I still have the two envoys from the undying shrine.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed. “I wonder if they have any blood river crystals, it’s hard to say!”

Luo Feng had already known earlier about Pure feather Tao and Rock Wind Xiong’s possession of the crystals.

As for the envoys, he had no clue.

“This space bracelet of Envoy Yu, it’s pretty big inside.” Luo Feng carefully examined it as he was filled with anticipation. He suddenly revealed a look of shock and disbelief. It seemed impossible, “No. It can’t be. Have I, really gotten so lucky?”

Shua!

Luo Feng flipped his hand, in it a black special wooden box appeared. Luo Feng held his breath and carefully opened it.

Pa, the box was opened.

Within it blood river crystals were carefully organized and placed neatly. The box was almost filled to brim with crystals. Luo Feng's eyes gleamed from the sight, carefully counting them,

"10?"

"10 blood river crystals?" Luo Feng couldn't believe it. "Even if this envoy wanted to absorb the crystals to become the legendary black warrior, he would only require 10. Also, people with such ambition couldn't have not attempted to absorb one yet, and he's already a domain lord level 9 warrior."

That envoy Yu had indeed absorbed a crystal before.

"He actually carries 10 crystals with him, what a fortune for me." Luo Feng suddenly thought, "My spirit energy scan earlier found a piece of paper at the bottom of the box below the crystals.

Within the box, beneath the neatly placed crystals, there was indeed a paper. The material was of dark gold in color.

On it were complex words. The words seemed complex, the details however were very simple...

“Si Yong, these are the 10 crystals you require. It’s enough for the short term, use it accordingly. Remember what you promised me, I believe you are a smart person and won’t deceive me.”

Just a short letter.

Immediately Luo Feng who was reading the letter realized and laughed, “So these 10 crystals weren’t the envoys. But this Si Yong’s. Si Yong, isn’t he the world city leader? With a sector lord status, acquiring these 10 crystals should be an extremely easy thing to do.”

Even the domain lords could get their hands on a few crystals. Hence, for a sector lord to get 10 at one go, that seemed normal.

“Si Yong, Si Yong, your blood river crystals belong to me now.” With a thought, Luo Feng kept the crystals into his ring.

“I already have 13 now. I wonder if the other envoy will give me another surprise.” Luo Feng flipped his hand, a translucent ring appeared in his hand. This was Envoy Mo’s storage item. Immediately, his spirit energy pierced in and began searching.

With this search!

“My god!” Luo Feng was startled.

“It can’t be! It’s like seeing a ghost!” Luo Feng was shocked.

“Babata, Babata!” Luo Feng’s thought went into his storage ring to contact Babata.

Babata asked lazily, “What’s going on Luo Feng. In this blood river world without any technology, what do you need me for?”

“Wait a moment!” Luo Feng thought, immediately taking out that unbelievable item from Envoy Mo’s space ring. Hu, a 100m diameter large item appeared within the clouds...a dark grey universe ship!

Yes, universe ship!

“Babata, keep this ship within your storage space and study it for me. Just how long has this ship existed.” Luo Feng asked.

“Universe ship?” Babata was shocked too and kept the ship within his space, “Wait a moment, I’ll scan it.”

Night.

Luo Feng stood along in the clouds, still very shocked.

As the details from the Virtual Universe Company had stated very clearly to never ever take out any technological items. The moment one is discovered, it would mean certain death. However having discovered a universe ship from an envoy from the undying shrine's space ring, this was too...

The ancient god ruins, that was from how many trillions of years ago. A universe ship from back then couldn't be undamaged for that long, unless it was an E or F grade ship. However, that level of ship wouldn't land in a domain lord envoy's hands, and Luo Feng felt that this ship was very normal.

"Luo Feng, I've scanned it." Babata shouted.

Luo Feng maintained his mental connection with Babata and asked, "What're the result?"

"I can confirm that this Blood river continent has had some advancement in the technological side. This universe ship should have been built less than 500,000 years ago, and it's very lousy. When it's compared to other ships in the universe, it would be considered an A grade. It would take extremely long to accelerate to light speed." Babata explained.

"Ah?" Luo Feng frowned.

"Where did you discover it?" Babata asked.

"Within an envoy's space ring." Luo Feng said. Right, the armor

that the envoys wore...they are genetic armor."

"Envoys of the undying shrine? Seems right, Luo Feng...you should know then when a sector lord breaks through to undying, their soul will evolve. An undying soul's brain and mental calculation speed doesn't lose to a quantum computer! The aboriginal undyings of Blood river continent, if they acquire any remains from the warriors of the Virtual Universe Company, like some quantum computers, universe ships, or others etc...they could very well study them." Babata explained.

Luo Feng was shocked.

Right, his own consciousness calculations was terrifying already. Hence, an undying soul's calculations would definitely not be below a quantum computer. Maybe because of a lack of many materials on Blood river world, they are unable to make special machinery. Otherwise, these Undyings, with their analytical prowess, wouldn't find it hard to create and revolutionize the technology here.

Or maybe, the Undying Shrine didn't wish for the continent's masses to get in on the technology.

Or maybe, the Virtual Universe Company was intercepting them secretly.

Anyway, Luo Feng was too lazy to figure out everything.

“I’ve earned a fortune this time.” Luo Feng immediately left the four bodies for Babata to dispose of and handed the 4 storage items to Babata. “Babata, there’s a whole mess of treasures and items in their storage items. I have no comprehension of the treasures of Blood river continent. Help me sort them and see if there’s any other surprise.”

“No problem, leave it to me.”

Babata was a living AI, his calculation speed far exceeded a normal AI. Even the undying beings….they didn’t necessarily compare to his problem solving speed.

“Thanks. In a moment I will contact you. How long do you think you will need to organize everything?” Luo Feng asked.

“5 minutes is enough.” Babata answered.

“Very well.” Luo Feng immediately rushed down from mid air.

Late night, within the vast wilderness, Luo Feng was within it practicing, simultaneously feeling the effects of the Blood river crystal.

Back when he had absorbed the 1st one, it was indeed very shocking. The mysteries of the crystal…especially its fusion with the universe energies, along with its increase in power with origin infused attacks were very enticing. Also the moment it’s used, a blood red engraving would appear on one’s chest, similar to the

one of the golden horned beast's scales.

Only, this was simpler and weaker.

"Why do I feel that the mystery of the blood river crystal doesn't stop at just melding better with the universe energies?"

The blood river crystal should still have one more point!

That was...

Physical change!

"When I was absorbing it, I became an apeman, then a scaled beast, and even like a robot after. The changes were violent, yet, when they ended...I couldn't do it anymore." Luo Feng frowned. "However I still feel that the crystal should still have more special properties."

"Hm, I'll probably know after absorbing the 2nd and 3rd crystal." Luo Feng connected mentally to Babata, ready to absorb the next crystal after communicating.

"Babata, how's the sorting of the items from the four storage items. Were there any treasures?" Luo Feng communicated mentally.

"No treasures. However, there's something you should see."

Babata emphasized.

“What item?” Luo Feng was curious.

Pa!

Babata threw out an item, it was a gem like item.

“This is a simple quantum computer communication tool.” Babata said, “Just like the wrist communicator you use on earth.”

“Communicator? On a large continent like Blood river continent, even if the signal travels at light speed, which was 300,000km per second, from one end to the other side of the world alone is a trillion km, how will it reach the other place instantly?” Luo Feng shook his head, “They don’t have the virtual universe network.”

This communication tool isn’t an instant messenger, but made for distance communication. Even if the speed is slow, it’s still faster than a person flying.” Babata said, “And the tragic thing is… Luo Feng, when you killed that handsome envoy earlier, the other envoy had recorded it and sent it to a person called Si Yong.”

Luo Feng’s expression changed greatly.

Damn!

This was the disadvantage of technology.

Chapter 31 – Decision

Si Yong was the world city leader of this side of the world. According to the universe levels, he was a sector lord!

The golden horned beast and Mosha clansman were only at domain lord level 6, and the domain lord and sector lord's biggest difference was the ability to unleash the strength of a world. They were able to control the world within them to allow their strengths to reach a shocking level...making the difference between a domain lord level 1 and sector lord level 1 extremely huge.

"Meeting Si Yong right now would really be suicide." Luo Feng understood. Communicating to Babata, "Babata, that Si Yong is the world city leader of this side, what do you think I should do next?"

Even though he had a plan already, asking Babata was still good.

After all Babatas experience in solving problems was much more vast!

"Flee, hurry and flee, the further the better." Babata said. "Since he's the world city leader of this side, then the distance from the World city to Swallow mound city should be about a hundred million km. At light speed, 300,000km per second, the message would have taken about half an hour for him to receive. However if he uses his top speed to rush over!"

"Top speed?" Luo Feng frowned.

1 hundred million km would still take a sector lord pretty long.

“Even the 2 domain lords had a ship, that sector lord would most definitely have 1 too. A universe ship barely reaching light speed in Blood river continent would allow him 3 hours to reach here!” Babata said.

“However when I killed the envoy, I was always wearing a mask.” Luo Feng said.

“Don’t rely on luck. Swallow mound is after all only that big. How would you know if within this time someone else has already noticed you? Remember, as long as there’s a hint of danger, do not risk it. Also, don’t look down on any sector lords.” Babata said. “I have said what I needed to say, you can decide for yourself.”

“You are saying that I may have been exposed?” Luo Feng frowned.

Leave?

After finding out about envoy Mo sending the footage of him killing the other envoy to Si Yong, Luo Feng immediately decided to leave! If he flew out of the 18 levels of clouds and sat in his automaton ship, who would be able to find him?

Only thing was...

Even though he was safe himself, what about Nabu and Na Ke? If he was truly exposed, then these two would definitely be affected. The small Na Family…against a raging sector lord, would instantly be razed into the ground.

“What about the Na family?” Luo Feng asked.

“What Na family?” Babata asked curiously.

Luo Feng swiftly gave a brief summary of what happened earlier.

“Hm, that is troublesome indeed. The Na family’s relationship with you, even though very few people know about it and it isn’t noticeable, with the sector lord’s ability, and this being his territory, checking and finding out wouldn’t be hard. How about this way, Luo Feng, you can rush over to Swallow mound city now and meet the father of the Na family! Let them decide for themselves if they want to leave with you or remain in Swallow mound city. If they come with you…you can bring them both to a different side of the world! This continent’s different sides of the world are just like your countries. They are competitive and at war. If they flee to another side, even Si Yong would not be able to find them in the vast sea of people.”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded, “Then let’s do that.”

He couldn’t care about absorbing the blood river crystal at the moment. Taking care of it after the matters were resolved wouldn’t be too late.

Sou!

Luo Feng tore through the skies into the clouds, swiftly reaching Swallow mound city at a shocking speed.

Swallow mound city, the night was bustling with activity.

Na Mansion.

“What’s going these few days? First the elder of the Pure feather family was dead, now even the city leader’s mansion has become a battlefield.” Nabu stood against the railing in the 3rd storey of his mansion, leaning and gazing at the distant city leader’s mansion.

“Nabu, come in.” A voice suddenly resounded.

“Hm?” Nabu was shocked. Though he was shocked, he turned and walked in and saw a black armored black haired youth sitting there. Nabu was suspicious, “This late at night, just what has brought this mysterious warrior to my house?”

“Lord Feng.” Nabu bowed.

“Wait a moment.” Luo Feng sat there.

Ji Ya!

The door below creaked open and footsteps could be heard climbing the stairs. Very quickly, Nake appeared too and rushed into the house. Seeing Luo Feng, he said excitedly, “Big brother Feng, you’ve come. Why have you called me to come over.”

“Hm?” Nabu was even more suspicious, why has this mysterious warrior gathered them both.

“Time is of the essence now. I won’t go through formalities with you too, I’ll give you a quick summary of the situation.” Luo Feng emphasized.

Nabu was shocked, saying, “Lord Feng, please speak.”

Luo Feng swiftly explained to them about the situation. Nabu’s face grew paler as he listened, completely shocked, my god, the family leader of the Pure feather family, elder, Rockwind family’s general, city leader, even 2 special envoys, they were all killed by this mysterious warrior before them.

This, this, this...

Envoys of the undying shrine!

This mysterious warrior was too terrifying!

Nabu’s face was pale, and little Na Ke was completely stunned too...these were all legendary figures.

“That’s how things are, Na Ke, Nabu, you choose.” Luo Feng emphasized. “To remain in Swallow mound city or allow me to bring both of you away! If you stay here, there’s a high possibility of being exposed.”

Nabu frowned, within his mind he calculated.

Na Ke’s mind was in a mess too.

Luo Feng sat in the chair looking at the father and son, and felt rather guilty towards them. If it weren’t for him, these two would probably be able to lead a very normal life. However, because of his arrival, the Na family was thus dragged into danger itself.

“Hm.” Nabu gritted his teeth.

“Have you decided?” Luo Feng looked at Nabu.

“Right.” Nabu nodded. “I’m prepared to remain here in Swallow mound city, living my normal life. However, I wish for Lord Feng to take my son and leave swallow mound city!”

“Father!” Little Na Ke’s eyes were red. He shouted, “I don’t want to leave you!”

“Don’t make a fuss!” Nabu roared.

“Father!” Little Na Ke was about to cry.

Luo Feng quietly watched the scene, he could only remain silent.

“Lord Feng, it has to be this way. I believe it because my contact with you has been very minimal. Also, so what if we recognize each other, we’ve only met 2 or 3 times. It cannot be considered a deep relationship. That and the city world leader wouldn’t necessarily be able to find out who the killer is.” Nabu smiled, “The most important thing is…I can’t bear…”

Nabu’s eyes were filled with sorrow, “I can’t bear to leave my family business!”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded. “Nabu, for your safety, before I go, I will use my soul techniques to wipe your memory of tonight! Then even when others use soul techniques to interrogate you, they won’t be able to find anything.”

“That’s good, that’s good.” Nabu nodded, following which a look of longing appeared on his face. “Lord Feng, can you leave me and Ke Ke for awhile?”

“No problem.” Luo Feng walked out of the house to the study beside and waited patiently.

……

Luo Feng felt a bitter feeling within.

……

Within the house, Nabu and Na Ke were saying their goodbyes.

“Don’t cry.” Nabu smiled and looked at his son.

“Father, father.” Little Na Ke was crying madly. He had grown up being pampered by his father, however when it was really time to separate, he couldn’t bear to leave.

“We must always look at things from different perspectives.” Nabu looked seriously at his son. “Ke Ke, there’s always a good and bad side to everything. For us to meet Lord Feng this time…it may seem like a disaster since we have to separate, but you must understand, this Lord Feng could have easily left by himself. But he purposely came to look for us, what does it mean? It means he favors us, and he is apologetic about this.”

“Fortune and misfortune are linked!”

“This may be a disaster for the Na family, it is also a chance for our family to greatly rise up!”

Nabu’s eyes gleamed, “Blood river continent, everyday tens of millions of people die and countless more risk their lives just to simply find a strong teacher! This Lord Feng is an absolute warrior. Didn’t you hear, even the elder of the pure feather family, our city leader, and the 2 special envoys from the undying shrine

were all killed by him. What terrifying level of power is this?”

“On this continent, wealth is nothing. Only strength is real!” Nabu looked at Na Ke, “Ke Ke, you have hopes of becoming an absolute warrior of this large continent! In the future, you may even become the leader of an entire territory, controlling the lives of trillions of people.

Na Ke was shocked.

“Remember!”

“This is a great opportunity, grab it!” Nabu looked at his son. “After I die, I’ll have the face to meet our Na family ancestors! Understood?”

“Hm. Hm.” Na Ke’s eyes were watery, yet he nodded fiercely.

“Very good.” Nabu revealed a smile. He rubbed his son’s head and gently hugged him, saying softly, “Your father’s biggest worry is his son. Our Na family doesn’t have enough military strength. Just like the Yu Family, without any strength, they had to be uprooted within a night. I was worried about you. Your personality is different from mine, I was able to establish the business, but your personality…now it’s ok, I don’t need to worry anymore.”

Na Ke could only cry within his father’s embrace.

……

After a while.

Within the building Luo Feng stood before Nabu, emphasizing, “I will wipe your memory of this night. After which, you won’t even know where your son went.”

“Go ahead, if I don’t know…there’s no way for others to know.” Nabu smiled and nodded.

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

Immediately a thread of spirit energy invaded Nabu’s soul. Wanting to analyze and swallow one’s memory was difficult. Normal soul searching techniques was more troublesome, destroying however was easy. Simply wiping a part of a memory was extremely easy. This can even be achieved simply through hypnosis, that alone was enough to leave an imprint and seal the memory.

As the disciple of the Soul master Hu Yan Bo, this level of surgery didn’t have any difficulty for Luo Feng.

After a while.

“Hm, what’s going on?” Nabu’s head was in a blur. Looking around the empty house and finding himself sitting in his study, “Did I just fall asleep?”

Nabu had completely forgotten what happened before.

He didn’t even know that his son had already left Swallow mound city with Luo Feng.

Chapter 32 – Leaving

Night.

Luo Feng brought little Na Ke and rushed into the sky. Na Ke couldn't help but look back down at Swallow mound city, as tears were flowing from his eyes.

"Na Ke, sleep, sleep, once you awake it'll be ok." Luo Feng gently said. His voice had an unbelievable amount of power, Na Ke could only feel his entire being drift into a blur as his eyes closed and he fell asleep.

"Now that he's asleep, there's less trouble." Luo Feng rushed into the skies breaking through the many levels of clouds.

In one breath he rushed to the 18th level. Any higher and he would leave Blood river world.

With a thought, a silver pyramid appeared beside and Luo Feng carried little Na Ke into the universe ship.

Within the control room.

He placed Na Ke into a resting room for him to sleep in, Luo Feng then came to the control room.

"This is Blood river continent's map. Babata, help me take a look

and tell me where the coordinates of the ancient god ruins are." Luo Feng's consciousness connected to Babatas. Babata quickly calculated, returning to Luo Feng the area of coordinates, that territory belonged to the ancient god ruins region.

Even with any errors, it wouldn't be too far away.

"Let's head out towards the ancient god ruins! We'll proceed 16 billion km and stop." Luo Feng gave the order to the automaton ship. Actually the AI of the automaton ship...was a subsidiary AI that Babata had created. Under normal circumstances, it could perfectly control the ship.

However when it was times of crisis, Babata would take over and control the automaton ship with the optimum control.

"Yes, master." The ships AI responded.

Sou!

The ship soared through the clouds and swiftly flew in space.

"External simulation 100%." Luo Feng ordered.

Immediately before him a simulation of the space outside showed. One side was space while the other was the outermost layer of clouds from Blood river world.

“The vast blood river continent.” Luo Feng looked at the continent from space. “Yet no one dares to leave the cloud levels, the strength of the Virtual Universe Company is... too strong!”

“Babata, help me prepare a file for nurturing Na Ke. I cannot accompany him, I can only arrange for the best for him.” Luo Feng sighed. Babata’s voice resounded in the control room, “This little matter, you have quite a few treasures on you, plus the many others the dead domain lords gave you. Nurturing a little punk is very easy.”

After a while.

Luo Feng acquired a detailed nurturing plan for Na Ke.

As Luo Feng sat in the automaton ship, it was swiftly flying in the space above blood river world.

A silver black marked disc shaped universe ship with a diameter of 180 m appeared in the 16th cloud level above Swallow mound city.

Hua!

The leader of the group was dressed in black armor. His blue hair was floating about and his eyes seemed vast and boundless. Behind him were four purple armored men and women. They all hid their strength, revealing only domain lord level power. ”I wish to know, just who has such guts! To kill my disciple in my territory!” The

blue long haired black armored man's eyes were like lightning, shooting down below. Even the cloud layers below split apart from his gaze, allowing him to easily see the tiny Swallow mound city below.

"Let's go down!" The blue haired man said coldly.

"Yes." Behind him the four purple armored domain lords followed respectfully. These 5 shot down like lightning, and the floating universe ship behind them vanished.

……

After a short period of time.

Within the city leader's mansion, even though a part of it was already destroyed, the city leader's mansion was even larger than the Pure feather family mansion. Hence, a large portion of it was still perfectly undamaged. In one of the palaces…whether it was Swallow Mound's families, sect, army, information system and so on, all the department heads and brains had all arrived.

Silence!

The palace was completely silent. That formless pressure caused the group of prominent figures to perspire from their foreheads, and kneel respectfully on the ground, because they knew the man before them was…

The world city leader!

The leader of this side of the world!

“Your city leader Rock Wind Xiong is dead!” The blue haired black armored man sat above and said coldly. The group below him were stunned. “The two envoys from the undying shrine passing by Swallow mound city are dead too!”

The group below was even more shocked.

They really didn’t know!

“The murderer is him!” The blue haired man waved his hand and immediately a bunch of paper floated onto the ground. On every piece was a picture of a black fully armored silhouette with boots and helmet, that was using a 6 edged shield and blood shadow blade. Actually, this picture…was simply a screenshot from the footage that was sent.

“Murderer?” A group of people looked at the paper.

“The face has been blocked? Wearing black armor, everyone wears black armor around. How do we look for him?” The group were suspicious and helpless. “If he changes his look after killing them, how will we look for him?”

“We can confirm that he is a pinnacle domain level warrior.” The blue haired man said coldly. “Activate all your resources. Go look

and check if any suspicious domain level warrior appeared in Swallow mound city within this past period."

"Yes!"

The group knelt down.

"I want to get a report before daylight tomorrow."

"Yes."

The group left after. The blue haired man stood in the palace and was looking outside through the window as though he was looking at space. "To have the guts to kill my, Si Yong's disciple,and to steal my blood river crystals. Hmph!" A cold snort resounded within the silent palace.

The Automaton ship was flying in the space above Blood river world. It began to slow down after about 22 hours.

"Master, we've already reached 16 billion km away." The voice resounded within the control room.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

He went into the resting room and carried the sleeping Na Ke. He swiftly followed the pathway within to the cabin door of the ship. He then kept the ship and headed down towards through the blood

river atmosphere.

Rumble!

Rushing through the 18th, 17th, 16th levels...

“Na Ke.” Luo Feng shouted.

“Hm.” Only then did Na Ke wake up. He looked at where he was floating in mid air, as he was carried by a formless energy, and before him stood Luo Feng.

“Big brother feng.” He was fully awake only now.

“Follow me down.” Luo Feng brought Na Ke, swiftly breaking through the 1st level of clouds, causing Na Ke to be shocked as it was still late night. Blood river world’s night was 6 to 7 times longer than a night of earth, and the distance of 16 billion km, caused the region below to look close to the time they left Swallow mound city.

Luo Feng brought Na Ke into the closest city. This city was called Meng Na city. It had an area of 10 million km, the side of the world they were in was called Yu Rong World.

.....

“This Meng Na city is actually in Yu Rong world and is about 10

worlds apart from the Si Rong world before." Na Ke was very shocked. "Big brother Feng, how long have I been asleep?"

"Relax, not even 30 days." Luo Feng said.

Blood river world's 30 days was about half a year earth's time.

In truth, Na Ke had only slept for over 20 hours. However he would never know. With blood river continent's different world's attacking each other, plus it being simply too vast, there was no uniform timeline.

"Not even 30 days? That's good." Na Ke nodded. "I heard from many warriors that travelling 10 worlds would require a long amount of time."

.....

After settling down for a day in Meng Na city, Luo Feng placed Na Ke in that city's Rain Blade sect. The leader of the sect personally welcomed the both of them.

"This is the punk I told you about, I'm leaving him here in your sect. When I finish my training, I will return to take him. When that time comes, I will naturally thank you." Luo Feng looked at the Rain Blade sect leader before him. The leader nodded, "Relax, this little matter won't be a problem!"

The leader of the sect was a skinny yet intrepid old man. As a

cloud level (universe level) warrior, he was a prominent figure in Meng Na city.

However Luo Feng's arrival last night had indeed shocked this old man. "This black haired youth, his power is beyond my comprehension, and I have no resistance before him. He should be a domain level warrior, and he's really generous. To be on good terms with such an absolute warrior, that's extremely lucky!"

At this time.

Na Ke began to stay in the Yu Rong world's Meng Na city, Rain blade sect.

"Na Ke!"

"Your study of the bow and arrow before shows that your spirit energy is indeed strong. These are the spirit reader training techniques I have prepared for you." Luo Feng took out a thick book, it was something Babata had printed using this world's paper. Using this world's words, a training manual for a spirit reader, from basic to deep had been created.

Actually, this was something only the elite disciples of the Yun Mo Planet could study.

"This training manuals, as long as you can study it, you can use it until you become an undying spirit." Luo Feng said.

“Big brother Feng.” Na Ke looked surprised at the book before him. My god, the many worlds of Blood river continent were all fighting for valuable things. This manual that worked from star traveller level to undying, just how valuable was it.

“These are several suggestions I’ve prepared for you.” Luo Feng took out a thin book. “In it I’ve put down on how to use the treasures to enhance your training efficiency.”

“These are some treasures.” Luo Feng handed over a space ring.

“Using these treasures, as long as you train seriously, you can definitely become cloud level without any problem. As long as you work extra hard, you have the possibility of becoming domain level (domain lord). As for proceeding further, that’ll depend on yourself.” Luo Feng smiled at Na Ke.

Na Ke was shocked.

It was a gift from the heavens...

As long as he seriously trained, he could become cloud level (universe level)? Looking at the leader of the Rain blade sect, to be able to open a sect in a city, cloud level...this was definitely an absolute warrior in this city.

“Thanks, thanks.” Na Ke was so excited his eyes were red.

Luo Feng smiled.

What was this?

Back then, his teacher, the master of the Yun Mo Planet had prepared treasures for him to rush to the domain lord and even sector lord level! As long as he didn't worry about the price, he could completely nurture a universe, domain lord and sector lord. Of course the price worth was simply too low. For example, the cost of creating a universe level alone could actually be used to buy an army of slave universe levels!

This Na Ke, was an aboriginal of Blood river world. He was born as a star traveller, plus with this world's environment...his innate ability was much stronger than Luo Feng back then.

Luo Feng had only prepared some treasures enough to nurture him to cloud level!

"I know you really wish to return!"

"But remember!"

"Before cloud level, I definitely won't allow you to return." Luo Feng emphasized. "Travelling 10 worlds is simply too dangerous. Without the strength of a cloud level, that will simply be suicide."

"Hm!" Na Ke nodded.

Luo Feng smiled, “Alright, whatever I’ve given you, don’t tell another soul.”

“That I know.” Na Ke was from a business family. Naturally he knew the outcome of revealing the treasures.

“Haha, I’m leaving.”

Luo Feng smiled and turned, vanishing from sight, leaving only Na Ke there.

Na Ke grabbed the thick book in his hands, flipping it open, the words on every page were very small, and the amount of information within was shocking.

“Father, you were right, this opportunity is a big one!” Na Ke kept the book in his space ring and his eyes were filled with resolve. “I will definitely train until I get strong, definitely!”

Chapter 33 – Absorption

Luo Feng rushed into the sky. He passed through the many cloud layers straight to the 18th level and arrived in the space above blood river world.

"Little Na Ke." Luo Feng looked down through the vast clouds. "I've done what I could. As for what level you reach in the future, that'll depend on yourself. A true warrior will ultimately still rely on himself to train. I'm still training myself, only earlier than you by a little."

Shua!

Luo Feng flew into the automaton ship that appeared beside him and ordered, "Proceed towards the ancient god ruins!"

The automaton ship took on the appearance of a meteorite and swiftly proceeded in space.

As for the father of the Na family's fate...Luo Feng could only wish him the best. Afterall, he had his own path to walk!

"Useless!"

"A bunch of useless beings!" A black robed Si Yong, who was almost like an absolute beast standing above the palace, howled at the group of underlings kneeling below him. "Three whole days, it's been three whole days! This is the answer you are giving me?

There’s no use at all!”

The upper echelon of Swallow mound city were like weak little bunnies, as they were all trembling.

“How can he blame us. That picture shows a fully armored and masked warrior, and it’s the most common types. As for searching for information…there are many mysterious warriors, however they are all fake.” The underlings were all complaining within, however before the world city leader they didn’t dare make a sound.

“What a joke!”

“Do you all know that this is a big joke!” Si Yong’s expression was heavy, and he was raging, “The bastards from the worlds around us will take us to be a joke! And you all are simply useless!”

The group kneeling below all trembled hard, not daring to look up.

“Useless!”

“You are all useless. Go!” Si Yong roared, “Go and spread the news about the bounty on information around Swallow mound city. Let them know that the murderer has domain level pinnacle strength, wears black armor, and also uses a blade and shield. Also put a picture of the weapons up, go spread it!”

“As long as anyone can provide a bit of information, reward them 1 million treasure currency! If they can provide the location, and its true, reward them 1 hundred million treasure currency, and immediately give him a luxurious mansion within Swallow mound city, along with 8000 slaves and 8000 guards!” Si Yong said solemnly.

“Yes!”

The group glanced at each other, shocked at the amount of the rewards that were being handed out. They were all kneeling and complying.

“Why are you still here! Get out!” Si Yong howled, the group fled terrified.

Only Si Yong was left in the palace, along with the 4 underlings he had brought with him.

“Master, leave this matter to us. Relax...” A simple and honest looking middle aged man said. Si Yong shot him a look, saying coldly, “Just being the joke among the sector lords around isn’t enough for me to be so enraged. Do you know? The undying shrine is already asking me just why the two envoys died on my territory. That group of old punks...”

Si Yong’s expression was ashen, snorting coldly, “Hmph, the death of two envoys, this small matter isn’t enough for the high and mighty undying spirits to personally come out. Hence those old punks are using their power and authority to clamor about!

This makes me so mad. I really want to punch them and reduce them to nothing!”

The 4 underlines exchanged glances, realizing that it was the undying shrine giving him pressure.

……

Swallow mound city.

“Make way, make way!” A group of soldiers riding beasts shouted, chasing a large amount of people off to the side of the streets.

“Here, stick!”

The leader of the group of soldiers pointed at a large shiny wall at the side and ordered. Immediately, the soldiers jumped off their beasts and swiftly began sticking their pictures and posters of the mysterious murderer all over the wall. Very quickly, that incredibly clear picture’s shocking reward made every one who saw it dumbfounded.

This was considered a major road, with a high amount of traffic.

“As long as the news is a bit useful, the reward is 1 million… treasure currency? 1 million treasure currency? How much is that?”

“I haven’t personally seen treasure currency before.”

“1 treasure currency, that’s 1,000 big currency, 1 billion little currency. I only earn 10 little currency a day, how long would it take for me to earn that amount.”

“Look!”

“1 hundred million treasure currency? Luxurious mansion, 8,000 slaves and guards?”

“Madness, madness!”

“8,000 slaves and guards! To arrange for so many slaves and guards in a mansion, even in Swallow mound city, that would be considered top class. Even the general’s mansion and Pure feather family, only those mansions would be bigger than this one.”

“Bounty for murderer, domain level pinnacle?”

“I think I’ve seen this man before, similar to a guest in the flying cloud pavilion.”

“You must be dreaming, your flying cloud pavilion has 100,000 guests, and many of them look like that.”

……

Madness!

That huge bounty, even the cloud level (Universe level) warriors couldn't help but get enticed by it, much less the normal masses. The high and mighty city world leader casually threw out a bounty, causing the entire Swallow mound city to fall into an uproar unlike ever before, the investigation degree immediately soared!

Space.

While Swallow mound city began spreading its huge bounty all over, Luo Feng was in the automaton ship heading towards the ancient god ruins. He took out a blood river crystal.

Training room.

Luo Feng lay there, staring at the beautiful triangular blood red crystal. "Heading towards the ancient god ruins, there's still a distance of 1.2 trillion km. With the automaton ship's speed, it would still take over 2 months to get there." No matter which ship it was, the closer its speed got to light speed, the harder it got!

Just like a test, a perfect 100, the closer one got to 100 the harder it was to get one point more!

Similarly.

The closer a ship got to light speed, the harder it was to accelerate! The moment there was higher resistance, then it would be hard to reach light speed. It may be space, however it was still space within a secret region. Not even mentioning the space dust and fragments, just the material space energies forming mist, under shocking speed…even the mist would form resistance.

“If I can universe travel, travelling through and slowing down to return to the actual universe, I’d reach quickly. It’s a pity…I cannot.”

“Then…I’ll absorb the blood river crystal!”

Luo Feng adjusted himself, following which he used his right index to slash his left palm. Just like a blade slash, the wound appeared and fresh blood flowed out. Luo Feng placed the blood river crystal on the wound, that formless energy immediately rushed into Luo Feng’s body, simultaneously triggering the originally dormant cells within his body with mysterious energy.

A simple engraving line appeared on Luo Feng’s chest.

“Rumble!”

“Kill!”

“Kill!” Just like an endless gush of water flowing, that powerful determination filled with madness and killing intent clashed against Luo Feng’s willpower. Just in terms of willpower

sturdiness…many sector lords couldn't even compare to Luo Feng. Even the high and mighty undyings, those that didn't know about mental training, couldn't compare to Luo Feng's willpower.

Willpower!

Didn't have anything to do with training!

Heart like a mirror, seeing through what may seem terrifying and fierce, during times of chaos, it was incomparably steady and sturdy.

Heart like a blade, slashing through obstructions!

"This fierce willpower attack is about two times that of last time." Luo Feng was suspicious. "Since its the same crystal, the willpower within should be the same. How come the willpower attack from this 2nd crystal is 2 times that of the 1st? Could it be the remnant willpower hidden within from the 1st crystal?"

Before Luo Feng could understand it, that extreme pain that shook his soul permeated through his body.

The crystal in his hand flowed with threads of blood red energy, swiftly permeating his entire body, and as it went in, it made his body go through extreme changes.

Pitter patter…

Luo Feng's entire person swelled up, his bones and muscles grew thicker. Since these changes were happening within a short period of time, one could only imagine the extreme pain.

.....

All sorts of unimaginable changes were happening to his body.

"How painful, why is it so much worse than the 1st time." Luo Feng's eyes were cold. However, his muscles were twitching uncontrollably, his teeth too were growing sharp and long and turning into fangs. This pain had already extended from his body into his soul, Luo Feng's willpower and consciousness were however very strong.

He was forcefully bearing everything, and did not let himself get affected, at least he remained lucid.

"Chi!" Luo Feng's chest suddenly split opened and fresh blood spewed out.

"Pa!" The morphing leg suddenly broke.

Hua hua...suddenly, large amounts of blood red energy swiftly flowed backwards within his body, returning to the blood red crystal in his hand. In an instant, the almost fully transparent crystal returned to its original blood red color.

“It’s stopped?”

“What’s going on?” Luo Feng realized his body had return to its human form, the only change was the wound on his chest and his broken leg. With a thought, the pure energy from his internal world swiftly regenerated his body, and very quickly the wounds and broken bones returned to normal, perfectly undamaged.

……

Luo Feng quietly sat in the sofa, lifting a glass of wine in one hand and the blood river crystal in the other.

“No change, this blood river crystal didn’t change at all.” Luo Feng frowned, “And I can feel, my body hasn’t improved at all! The mysterious energy within my body and my comprehension of the origin laws are all still the same. This absorption was a complete failure!”

Yes, complete failure.

“How could it be?”

“My consciousness and willpower, I only failed after reaching the fantasy ocean’s 10th island. My body…human body, but its normal.” Luo Feng thought. His eyes gleamed, and in his mind a few words from the books flashed. The contents were about how valuable and rare the blood river crystal was! Absorption was very hard. Absorbing 1 alone was very hard, 2 would have ten times the

requirements on the body, absorbing 3 would have 100 times the requirements! The further one got, the harsher the requirements were!”

Remembering these words, Luo Feng realized.

“Right, body!”

“My earth body is considered normal. 1 was successful and the 2nd was a failure.”

“However, 10 times to requirements on the body? Which side of the body do the requirements fall on?” Luo Feng frowned, “Body strength, toughness, cell activity? Also...it says that slaughtering will aid in the absorption of the crystals. However, which part of the body does slaughtering help?”

Chapter 34 – Fate

“The killing aura of the ancient god ruins. The sayings states that going there to soak in the killing aura would help with the absorption of the blood river crystals.”

“They also state that slaughtering would help with the absorption too.”

“Also that the requirements for absorption are very harsh!”

Luo Feng nodded, understanding finally. “Obviously, mad slaughtering and soaking in the killing aura from the ancient god ruins would produce a special effect in the body. Raising that certain part of the body will allow one to be able to absorb the crystal!”

Slaughter?

His earth body could be said to have slaughtered a lot, compared to normal humans.

Yet it wasn’t that much either, his earth body’s slaughtering was indeed limited. However he did slaughter quite a bit in the virtual universe network. However, those were all simulated and it wouldn’t change his body at all.

“Haha…”

“The only reason I’m heading to the ancient god ruins is to become a blood warrior and potentially even a black warrior. However I didn’t even expect the 2nd crystal absorption to fail.” Luo feng shook his head. As he closed his eyes, his consciousness connected to the virtual universe network and entered the absolute beginning region to train.

In the pathway.

“My luck sure is bad, I lost again.” Yu Chun Yang cursed as he walked.

“Big brother, big brother.” A voice resounded.

“Hm?” Yu Chun Yang turned to look. An armored youth was running over, extremely excited as he smiled and said, “I say Ah Xiang, why do you look so happy? Has our young master Na Ke been found?”

“Nope! The old master has been looking all over for him. However he seemed to have vanished,but no one knows to where.” The armored Yu Xiang shook his head. “Swallow mound city is in such a mess. With the young master’s dumb temperament, who knows... he may have messed with the wrong people and gotten himself killed.”

“Damn, you dare curse the young master’s death?” Yu Chun Yang stared.

Yu Xiang rolled his eyes, dragging Yu Chun Yang to the side and communicated mentally, “Big brother, have you seen the bounty rewards around?”

“What bounty, I just came out of the casino. Why would I have looked at the bounties.” Yu Chun Yang shook his head.

“Come with me.” Yu Xiang dragged his older brother.

“To where?”

“Just follow me.”

The two brothers quickly arrived before the bounty posters in a walkway. The allure of the bounty was simply too huge after all. Even now, large amounts of people hung about looking at it, many muttering and dreaming about being the ones who gave the information or discovered the killer, receiving the bounty.

“1 million treasure currency? 1 hundred million treasure currency?” Yu Chun Yang stared wide eyed.

“Look carefully at the details of the bounty, that killer’s picture, the weapons and armor he uses.” Yu Xiang communicated within.

Yu Chun Yang looked, immediately his eyes stared wide, turning back to look at his bother, replying, “Ah Xiang, this, this is the absolute warrior we met when we accompanied the young master into the wilderness forest. Didn’t he use this shield and this type of

blade. And he instantly killed the 13 axe, they didn't even have time to react. The 13 axe has three cloud levels. That warrior... should be a domain level!"

"Right." Yu Xiang nodded, communicating, "Our Swallow mound city rarely ever sees a domain level warrior. The shield and weapons are the same, it wouldn't be that coincidental? This Lord Feng is really vicious. Even the envoys of the undying shrine were killed, too vicious."

"Should we?" Yu Chun Yang's eyes gleamed.

"Do we go or not?" Yu Xiang looked at his big brother.

"This..." Yu Chun Yang hesitated.

"If you are not going, I'm going." Yu Xiang communicated. "Don't regret it, even though the old master treats us not bad, however, didn't we enter the Na family for money?"

Yun Chun Yang grit his teeth, "Alright, let's go!"

Hence, the 2 swiftly headed to the city leader's mansion.

.....

City leader's mansion.

Si Yong sat in the throne of the palace. Gazing below, there were three people bowing respectfully.

"Have you found anything?" Si Yong's voice was solemn, yet filled with formless pressure. "After pasting the bounties, it's definitely been better. However of the three you all mentioned before, two of them were determined to be false. That last one...we are unable to confirm. Yet, you say there's a guarantee now?"

"World city leader!" A deputy general from the army was filled with glee, saying excitedly, "This time, the guarantee is much bigger than before! We've acquired three people's confessions... they all state the same person."

"Hm?" Above the palace, Si Yong looked up.

"He's called Feng! According to the confessions of the three people...not long ago, this Feng was in the wild beast forest outside. There he met Swallow mound city's Na Family's young master Na Ke and his guards. Along the way, they were attacked by the 13 axe, but that mysterious warrior simply attacked and formed 13 images. With 13 blades, he killed all of them, and apparently they didn't even have the chance to react!"

"13 axe, what organization is that?" Si Yong frowned.

"World city leader, they are a prominent organization within this Swallow mound territory. The 13 axe refer to 13 warriors, of which 3 are cloud level! And 10 of them at sky level pinnacle." The deputy general said respectfully, "As for the deaths of the 13 axe, we've

already confirmed that they were all done by that one person.”

“Ah?” Si Yong stood up violently.

This news was vicious!

Instantly producing 13 images and killing 13, and of which 3 were cloud levels...

“Space origin laws?” Si Yong’s eyes lit up, confirming within, “Right, the footage envoy Mo sent of the black warrior, he was using space laws, and his speed was extremely shocking.”

“Weapon?” Si Yong asked.

“Shield, blade, similar to the picture.” The deputy general said seriously.

“Very good!” Si Yong’s eyes gleamed, “Go, find out more news on this Feng!”

“Yes!”

.....

Back then he couldn’t bear to leave his business and chose to remain in Swallow mound city. As his memory had been wiped,

Nabu had been extremely anxious since he discovered his son was missing. He activated all his strength and resources to madly search for his son. So much so that he didn't even look at the bounty.

When he actually saw it, he was shocked.

He too had suspected that the killer could very likely be Lord Feng! Hence he immediately wanted to control that group of guards.

However, other than the 4 he managed to control, the others weren't around.

"Bring them away!"

"Bring them all away."

"Hurry and look, this the namelist of the guards from back then. Find all of them. Also...hurry and find the Na Family's young master Na Ke."

The group of soldiers rushed into the Na family, grabbing Nabu and Thunder uncle away.

A purple uniformed beautiful lady stood outside the torture chamber. Clang! After it opened, the deputy general walked out.

“Greetings Lord.” The general was shocked as he saw the lady, bowing respectfully. This beautiful lady before him was one of the 4 great underlings World city leader Si Yong had brought with him, a domain level warrior.

“Interrogate the Na Family leader, have you found anything on Feng?” The lady questioned.

“No, he said he didn’t know either.” The deputy general shook his head. “I’ve carefully interrogated him, however I’ve discovered that this Na Family leader barely knew this Feng and had just met him a couple of times. Their relationship wasn’t deep.”

“Useless!” The beautiful lady roared.

The deputy general’s face flushed red, wanting to reply but not daring to say anything.

“Get out, take all of your men and leave. Leave it to me.” The lady said.

“Yes!”

The deputy general immediately took all of the army within the torture chamber, leaving only Nabu and Thunder uncle.

……

Within the torture chamber.

Nabu and thunder uncle were both pale, with injuries all over, they had been subjected to physical torture.

“Old master, we thought that the meeting of Lord Feng was a good thing. Who’d have expect we’d end up like this. It’s truly, truly…” Thunder uncle sighed. Beside him Nabu sighed too. “Lei Dong, this time our Na Family has implicated you.”

“Old master…” Thunder uncle was just about to speak.

That purple clothed lady walked in. By simply walking there, it caused both thunder uncle and Nabu to lose control of themselves. As their gaze fell on her body, they gradually fell into a daze.

“That group of idiots, using torture while interrogating, idiots.” The purple lady’s expression grew heavy, beginning her questioning. “You speak first, tell me the whole story of the meeting, and tell it clearly to me. Also tell me some of your conjectures…tell them all to me.”

Thunder uncle told the entire story.

Nabu too spoke.

Both of them, under the soul technique’s control, both guessed… that the killer was very likely to be Feng.

This questioning too made the purple clothed lady's expression ugly.

The cold pierced through bones, a blurry long haired Si Yong stood in the pathway.

"Master." The purple haired lady walked over and bowed respectfully.

"From your footsteps, the results of the interrogation must not be very good." Si Yong looked in the distance, his back facing the lady.

She lowered her head and said, "Yes, I used soul techniques and confirmed that these two weren't lying. Their Na Family had indeed met with this Feng. However, this Feng seemed to have favored the young master Na Ke."

"Na Ke? Where is he?" Si Yong asked indifferently.

"Na Ke has vanished." The purple haired lady said softly. "And he vanished the night of the deaths of the envoys. Other than that, we cannot find any other information on this Feng. Also, Na Ke's disappearance...even his father doesn't know. Hence he's been anxiously looking for his son, not even noticing the bounty, all this was revealed by some of his guards."

"Na Ke's disappearance is too much of a coincidence. I can

guarantee that it has something to do with the killer!”

“Right now there are two possibilities.”

“One of them is that Na Ke knows detailed information on Feng. The killer was worried that his identity would be revealed. Hence, he killed him to silence him.”

“The second possibility is that Luo Feng knew it would be troublesome after killing the envoys, and that the trouble would befall the Na Family. Since he favored Na Ke, he took him away.” The purple haired lady said respectfully.

“What about Feng?” Si Yong’s voice was filled with a sense of rage. “I don’t want to know anything else about him. I just want to know…where this killer is. I want to catch him!”

“No idea, I cannot find anything.” The purple haired lady shook her head.

Rumble!

Si Yong waved his fist in rage. It hit the pillar on the side, immediately the mad explosive energy exploded, and terrifying shockwaves burst out from the pillar. It then fanned out and caused large amounts of constructs to be reduced to dust. Many waiters, soldiers and guards were immediately reduced to a mess, the lucky ones only had broken limbs.

In an instant, several km around the city leader's mansion was reduced to waste, there were cries of pain and rumbling.

"Bastard!!!" Si Yong violently turned. His expression struggling, his explosive aura causing the skies and land to tremble.

"Master, what do I do with the Na Family?" The purple clothed lady asked respectfully.

Chapter 35 – Ancient God Ruins

“Na Family” Si Yong’s killing aura was terrifying. He said solemnly, “Killing them won’t do us any good. And also, We can use Na Ke’s father as the bait!”

“Master, you mean?” The purple clothed lady’s eyes gleamed.

“Na Ke’s father, don’t kill him. Kill the rest of them.” Si Yong said indifferently, “Keep the father under our control. Who knows, Na Ke and the killer Feng may return.”

“Yes!” The purple clothed lady complied and left.

Si Yong’s gaze swept ahead at the few km of ruins before him, from where he could hear the screams of pain. However, he was expressionless.

He had indeed lost face this time, as he had lost two disciples and a special envoy, and on top of that, this was on his territory.

“Hmph!” Si Yong’s face was ashen. “Feng? If you are so strong, you cannot remain hidden forever. The moment you appear on any location within the Blood river continent, as long as I find out, I will make you understand the consequence of killing my, Si yong’s, disciples!”

In the space above Blood river continent, the automaton ship flew with shocking speed towards the ancient god ruins.

Along the way, during these past two months, Luo Feng was either in the absolute beginning region listening to classes by undyings or studying the 9 universe primal chaos tablet, floating blood and time space scribbles. Either that or he would return to the Black Dragon Mountain island to visit his wife and family. His days were fulfilling and carefree.

"Master, we've already arrived at the destination!"

Within the training room of the ship, a robotic voice resounded.

"Haha, we've finally arrived!" Luo Feng who was sitting crossed legged like a statue opened his eyes fiercely. Smiling, he became a blur as he rushed out.

"Ancient god ruins!"

"I've been waiting for this day for too long. If I don't enter the ancient god ruins, when will I be able to absorb the 2nd crystal?" Luo Feng wore silver white armor and boots, and flew out of the cabin door. He changed his armor mainly as a precaution. After the whole incident in Swallow mound city, a black armored warrior may be noticed by wary people.

Of course, the ancient god ruins were extremely far from Swallow mound city, and as it was a wasteland, he didn't need to be too worried.

Sou!

Luo Feng flew through the cloud layers from space and entered Blood river continent once again.

……

Sky Erosion Palace.

The huge palace floating in space was specially made to observe the activities on Blood river continent. In the 1st level's side hall chamber, there was a huge screen. On that screen, one could see the scene of Luo Feng entering Blood river continent.

"Haha…this majesty Luo Feng, he's heading to the ancient god ruins too."

"So gutsy!"

10 sector lords in charge of watching over Blood river continent were chatting and laughing.

"Everybody, be serious! once our majesty Luo Feng meets with any enemy and sits in his automaton ship and escapes to the cloud layers, if any aboriginals dare to chase him, we have to kill them in an instant!"

"Understood."

“Of course we know this. However, the ancient god ruins is the most important and also the most dangerous place in Blood river continent. Back then, many of our undyings from the Virtual Universe Company were said to have died there. Also, that place is very weird...the place majesty Luo Feng is heading to is very dangerous. The dangerous level mission he chose forced him to head there.”

“One’s path is chosen by himself! Our Virtual Universe Company never forces anyone to do anything they don’t want to do. However, no matter how much of a genius he is, since he’s chosen to enter the ancient god ruins, we must keep an eye on him! Riches and honor come with an element of danger. Even though it’s dangerous, if he makes any progress within the ancient god ruins, it wouldn’t be a small amount!”

“Hm!”

“Not only are the ancient god ruins mysterious, but the blood river crystals are very mysterious too.”

The group of sector lords were chatting, and the entire space above the cloud layers of Blood River continent was under their surveillance.

The clouds were thick and covered the land, almost like a fairyland.

Dressed in silver armor and boots, he descended through the

clouds...

"Hm?" Luo Feng's expression changed. It should have been the 15th cloud layer below, why are they blood red clouds!"

The endless clouds below were completely blood red, just like an endless blood ocean torrent. The terrifying formless killing aura here, made one's heart palpitate. He couldn't care less though, as he rushed downwards into that blood red cloud layer, he immediately felt a special energy affect him.

He suddenly felt restless!

His heart was in disarray, almost like he was wishing to slaughter.

"It actually fills one with the thoughts of slaughter. However, compared to the golden horned beast's natural bloodlust, it pales in comparison!" Luo Feng's heart was sturdy and immovable. He continued downwards, rushing past layer after layer of blood red clouds, finally reaching the 1st level.

He surveyed below!

An endless mountain range, wasteland, swamp, and other environments could be seen. However the ground itself was peculiar. As for the mountain ranges, it was almost as though an entire layer of it was sliced off, or cut off. The wastelands however had huge pits all over, and every one of them were a few hundred

km in diameter.

One large pit after another.

It was almost as though…it was some extremely huge beast's foot prints.

The most important thing was…the region below was filled with thick red mist, and because of the mist, it was hard to see far clearly.

"Ancient god ruins. Looking at this messy environment, it's indeed in ruins." Luo Feng swiftly gazed about.

……

The ancient god ruins had a diameter of a trillion km. This was a bandit and vagrant filled place. the earth in this vast ruins would be like a drop of water in the Yellow river!

On the shiny ground, there were several white bones.

Pa!

Luo Feng descended from the sky. As his silver boots landed on a damaged blade, he frowned heavily.

“This is the killing aura?” Luo Feng felt a formless energy continuously invade his mind and heart. Simultaneously, another energy permeated in through his skin, as for this peculiar energy, neither his genetic energy or spirit energy could stop it. It would permeate in and then exit his body again.

Almost as though his body was air, it passed right through.

And during this process, his body had some special changes.

“Killing aura? Not right, the killing aura of the universe is purely on the mental level. A person’s brutality and slaughter will cause his gaze to be filled with killing aura. However…this ‘killing aura’ isn’t just on the mental level, it even affects the physical body.” Luo Feng was extremely sure.

His body began to change gradually, changes that even he didn’t know about.

This was also why the aboriginals of Blood River continent thought that soaking in the killing aura would make the absorption of the crystals easier.

“At least I can confirm!”

“This change has benefits. Otherwise the dangerous level mission that the Virtual Universe Company gave us, wouldn’t give a reward of 100,000 points to become a blood warrior the 2nd mission. The company is obviously hoping I’d become a blood

warrior.” Luo Feng was confident that the changes were beneficial.

Shua!

Luo Feng strode forward and it was already 10km. In this vast ancient god ruins, Luo Feng began to move with shocking speed, as he was feeling the changes the ruins did to his body.

“The killing aura is thicker here, and it’s weaker here.”

“The thicker killing aura seems to have stronger effects on one’s mentality. At the same time, the improvements on the body are also faster.” Luo feng had already found that the killing aura was raising a special property within one’s cells. “The weaker the killing aura, the weaker the effect on my mentality, the body’s changes are also slower.”

“I need to save time!”

“Hence I have to find a place with thicker aura.” Luo Feng swiftly rose up and flew into the skies searching about.

Detecting the level of the aura was easy, he could easily see which regions had thick red mist or more diluted mists.

Most of the regions simply contained a lighter mist, and some had thicker red mist. Luo Feng searched for a good half an hour within an extremely large ancient mountain range.

“There!” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed. Within the distant forest in the mountain range, the red killing aura was obviously shockingly much thicker.

Sou!

Luo Feng carefully flew over, noticing that there wasn’t anybody else around.

The books had mentioned that there were many warriors that entered the ancient god ruins, yet he hadn’t seen even one so far. He thought that everybody would have the same thought of entering a spot where the killing aura was thicker, so that they can improve faster.

“Nobody?” Luo Feng entered the thicker aura region.

“Wa! This feeling…feels good!” Luo Feng felt as though countless water drops were seeping into his every cell. As the thick aura floated past his body, he felt a very obvious change. As it was very obvious, hence he felt extremely clear. In the depths of his cells, it could be said that a change was occurring at the very essence of his cells and body itself.

Almost like a caterpillar within a cocoon becoming a butterfly.

“Kill!!!” An endless amount of killing intent rushed into Luo Feng’s soul, and because of the changes in his body, it caused a

large amount of the slaughter thoughts to invade the deepest part of his body. As time passed, it would meld with his soul itself, those with weaker willpower will thus go crazy. Even the ones with strong willpower would become addicted to killing others.

“What shocking killing aura and willpower!” Luo Feng stood beside a thick tree, patiently standing.

That endless killing aura continued to invade his consciousness.

It was even stronger than the 1st blood river crystal. It was obvious that the thicker killing aura areas were something not everybody could endure.

“1st and 2nd brother had said before, any place with a strong sense of desire is a good place to train one’s mental strength and heart. This killing aura...will help train my heart further.” Luo Feng sat crossed legged under the tree.

Shua!

A ghostly figure flashed in the distance, after which it reached right before Luo Feng. A glaring flash of a blade pierced right at Luo Feng’s head.

Sou! Over a hundred images of Luo Feng appeared around.

Rumble!

The thick tree behind Luo Feng immediately exploded into countless chips and pieces flew all over. In an instant, the surrounding ancient trees were either falling or broken at certain parts, a huge explosion could be heard.

“You actually dare to ambush me, you must be looking for death!” Luo Feng’s eyes raged. With a howl, a blood shadow blade appeared in his hand and he immediately pierced at the ghostly silhouette that appeared before him.

Chapter 36 – Huge Pit

Sou!

That ghostly silhouette suddenly decided to flee without any hesitation, as the assassination failed.

“Trying to flee?” Luo Feng’s gaze was cold. Becoming a blur as he swiftly chased. After reaching universe level 9, his speed was simply too fast, crossing over 300km in a second. The two of them flashed for several hundred km about, eventually reaching above the canyon.

“His speed cannot be a match for mine, however he’s stepped through the entrance of the wind laws, hence his movement is peculiar. It’s a pity that his comprehension is very low.” Luo Feng’s eyes flashed with killing intent. During the instant he flew passed the canyon, his spirit energy connected with the universe space suddenly as he felt a ripple.

“Not good!” Luo Feng’s expression changed.

Below the canyon, a 3m tall armored warrior wielding two huge axes rushed from blow. His eyes were like copper as he roared, “Go and die!”

Rumble!

He swung his two huge axes!

“Haha, who’s afraid?” Luo Feng held his blood illusion blade, not even dodging. His gaze was cold and brutal, his entire being tilted downwards and swiftly rushed downwards. Simultaneously, he used the force of his descent, and accumulated all his strength into his right arm, as the blade began to meld with the universe space and gold laws.

The blade brought with it an absolute madness as it slashed downwards!

The warrior below too waved his axe fiercely, slashing over!

“Chi!” A needle like spirit energy pierced into Luo Feng’s consciousness, crashing into that extremely sturdy Void pagoda, causing it to slightly tremble. Obviously the attack was very strong, affecting Luo Feng’s consciousness.

“Rumble!”

The blade and the axes clashed, that brutal and wild warrior was naturally gifted with strength and power. And Luo Feng’s blade was Burial of the Illusionary 7 blades, it too was very powerful. Although it was infused with two origin laws, it was a pity at the critical time his consciousness was affected.

“Chi!” That warrior’s body shook from the impact, his face flushed red as he spit out blood, losing control of the huge axe in his hand as it flew out. The axe became like a shooting star, flying straight into the mountain beside. With a rumble, countless rubble

and stones fell.

He couldn't help as his body fell down, and his right hand was torn apart.

"You wish to flee?" Luo Feng wielded the blood shadow blades and madly descended chasing him.

"How can this be?" As he was descending, he looked back with fear at the silver armored warrior chasing after him. "He, he's also a universe level 9. In terms of speed he's even faster than Shadow. And he even met my attack head on, under Demon's spirit attack he actually even heavily injured me, is he a human or ghost?"

Luo Feng flew downwards. His gaze was as sharp as knives, as he was staring at the built huge axe warrior and waiting for a chance to kill him.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

From below the canyon, large amounts of gold light suddenly shot out brushing past the warrior and piercing towards Luo Feng.

"Spirit weapon?" Luo Feng's thoughts moved.

Immediately before him, 1,000 little knife blades appeared and the black blur of countless blades could be seen. This was after Luo Feng had almost lost to Rock Wind Xiong, he specially asked Babata to build a simple sharp knife blade. Even though these

blades weren't expensive or anything, and were just simple blades.

However, Luo Feng who had already glimpsed some of the essence of the universe space laws, even without any law engravings on the spirit weapons helping, could still use the space laws to move them.

The engravings on the spirit weapons were only there to assist, allowing others to use it more easily to attack.

However a true skilled warrior didn't need those.

With a thought, one would break through the space itself, and with another thought, one could even reverse time.

Luo Feng couldn't do that. However as he had already glimpsed the essence, even without the help, he could still use law infused attacks. Naturally...doing it this way was more taxing and the power was weaker.

"Absolute domain!" Luo Feng stared at the large amounts of golden light.

The countless blades before him formed 11 black blade dragons. Every one of the black dragons were formed from large amounts of blades...also, all of them were connected to the universe space. These 11 dragons were like 11 ropes, pulling the universe space, causing the space to pressure downwards.

Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!

Countless golden lights slowed down, dispersed by the black dragons, the 11 black dragons however continued to rush downwards at the built warrior.

“Mercy, I’m from the undying shrine!” A shocked voice resounded within Luo Feng’s ears.

……

Below the canyon, standing in the sky, a long blood red haired cool youth revealed a look of shock. “How can it be, he, he actually knocked away my spirit weapons. My spirit weapon was personally built by the undying spirits. He, his speed is faster than Shadow, he could even block Demon’s spirit attack, meeting that brutal punk head on, and even knocking away my spirit weapons!”

“Just who is he!” The cool youth was completely shocked. However, in spite of that, he still communicated to Luo Feng for him to show mercy.

……

“We are from the undying shrine.”

“Please let Wu Qi go!”

Two other silhouettes flew from the above the canyon, one was the shadow that tried to assassinate him before, and the other was covered in a black uniform wearing a mask.

“You all tried to kill me for no apparent reason just now, and you still wish for me to let you off?” Luo Feng used his spirit energy to control the 11 black blade dragons, immediately smashing into the built huge axe warrior who was trying to defend in a last ditch attempt, exploding his body, fresh blood flew everywhere.

Hu!

The 11 black blade dragons immediately rushed downwards towards the blood red long haired cool youth.

“Shua!”

That cool youth was shocked as a round disc appeared blow his feet, immediately becoming a beam of light and fleeing. As the two originally had quite a distance between them...and a spirit weapon control range had a limit, even though the 11 black blade dragons were extremely powerful, without the help of law engravings, it was taxing for Luo Feng to control them.

“Quickly flee!” Shadow from below along with the black uniformed youth quickly rushed into a universe ship that appeared before them and swiftly escaped.

“Damn!”

“Where did these people come from?” Luo Feng was shocked from the situation, floating in mid air in the canyon. “One of them has a spirit weapon and a flying spirit disc. Even in the universe, they would be considered truly exceptional spirit weapons. And they actually carry a universe ship, obviously even better than the ship of the envoys before. At least its speed is much faster.”

With a wave, the 11 black blade dragons swiftly disappeared.

Sou!

Luo Feng swiftly descended, landing on the ground of the canyon. There lay the remains of the built warrior.

“Space item.” Luo Feng found that warrior’s space bracelet and took it.

“Doesn’t seem right, these 4 universe level 9s were too strong. One of them was even extremely fast, even stepping through the entrance of the wind laws. Even among the universe, any universe level who steps through the law entrances would be considered an absolute genius. Just one spirit attack could actually shake my void pagoda! And that brute could take my slash head on and not die. And the last controller, the strength of his spirit weapon wasn’t weak at all.”

“Peculiar.”

“On blood river continent, this sort of place, where did so many geniuses pop out from?” I’ll leave here first and check it out slowly.” Luo Feng didn’t dare get careless. He immediately became a blur and flew swiftly towards the deeper regions of the ancient god ruins.

Anyway, the ancient god ruins was vast and endless, he could start anywhere.

In the cloud levels high above.

3 silhouettes gathered in mid air. It was the shadow, black uniformed man and the blood red long haired cool youth. However these three weren’t as arrogant as before, and all of them were extremely shocked.

“How, how can he be that strong?” Shadow’s voice was deeper, however it was clear she was a lady.

“We are all exceptional geniuses from the undying shrine in Blood River continent. We’ve all come to the ancient god ruins to experience life and death training. Without combined forces, against a similar universe level 9 youth, we actually, actually, couldn’t do anything against him, 4 against 1!” The cool youth shook his head. “Too vicious and too strong. He is absurdly strong. He has already stepped through the gold and space origin laws, also, his spirit weapons obviously didn’t have any law engravings and his power was still greater than mine.”

“Strong!”

“Very strong!” The black uniformed youth with a mask said solemnly. “My spirit attack didn’t even affect him, he still managed to slash and heavily injure Wu Qi, who was unable to do anything.”

The three of them were completely dazed.

They were all proud absolute geniuses, the exceptional geniuses of blood river continent. They had been heavily nurtured from the undying shrine. Even higher than the special envoys.

Proud geniuses or not, they too had to experience life and death trainings.

“There’s always a sky above ours, we cannot be proud. There are still many geniuses that haven’t been discovered here on Blood River continent. The one from today was very strong.”

“Hm.”

“We’ll continue our training.”

The undying shrine’s request for these geniuses was that they had to absorb 3 blood river crystals before they could return. Otherwise, they’ll just have to die at the ancient god ruins.

……

The four that fought against Luo Feng were the absolute geniuses of Blood River continent. As they didn't have the virtual universe network, in terms of information exchange and recruiting geniuses alone was very hard. Many absolute geniuses would be never found. By the time a true warrior is finally discovered by the strong, that would have been a waste of the the best nurturing period already.

Compared to those four!

Luo Feng was from the vast humanity of the universe. Through the mad search of the virtual universe network, competing time and again, selected through trillions of geniuses and proving himself through battles over and over.

Finally reaching the universe top 10!

And right now, he was regarded as this batch's absolute genius next to Bolan. However, after studying in primal chaos city for 30 years, how could those four compare.

Luo Feng didn't have an aim, walking and training within the endless and vast ancient god ruins was his goal.

There were many places with thick killing aura, there was no need to stay at one spot.

Half a month later.

“Hm?” Luo Feng stood above a 100,000m tall mountain. Looking into the distance, there was an extremely huge pit, “What a huge pit…I had seen many huge pits before with diameters several hundred km, they were quite orderly. Why then is this pit was absurdly bigger, its diameter is close to 10,000km.”

“I’ll go take a look.”

Luo Feng originally wanted to walk and train so as to explore the ancient god ruins more. At this time however, he couldn’t help but curiously head to the huge pit.

Chapter 37 – Ancient Picture

A huge pit with a diameter of close to 10,000km, just what was it?

Even if the moon was thrown in it, it would barely fill it up!

Luo Feng stood at the edge of the pit, feeling a weird energy emitting from within. This energy was vigorous, ancient, mad...

“What a thick killing aura.” Luo Feng gazed. He couldn’t see the end of this huge pit. Initially, even when he stood at the 10,000m tall mountain, he could barely see the edges of the huge pit. However, as he stood here now, no matter how he looked, he couldn’t see its end, almost as though it was vast and endless.

“This huge pit seems like a good place. It’s extremely deep and the killing aura is really thick!” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed. Revealing a smile, “I can build a living quarters here in the pit and train for a long time.”

For the past half a month, as he didn’t have a fixed goal, he had been wandering randomly. But the main reason was that half a month ago, he met the 4 universe level 9 geniuses.

After he killed one and acquired his space item, a good scan revealed something...

The dead warrior too had a universe ship, and communication device. Babata’s invasive scan of the communication device had

revealed a recorded message within it. From the details of the message, he could deduce...the dead warrior was called Wu Qi and he was an elite genius nurtured by the undying shrine.

"A genius nurtured by the undying shrine? I may have some trouble from some absolute warriors." Back then Luo Feng thought. As this blood river continent wasn't his home ground, he had rushed into the 18th cloud level and sat in his automaton ship, flying for 10 billion km before coming to a stop.

.....

"I need a safe spot to settle down for a long period of time to study my 9 universe tablet properly." Luo Feng jumped down from the edge of the pit and descended.

"The killing aura is really thick."

"Good spot, this is a good spot." Luo Feng's face was filled with glee He allowed the gravity to pull him down and eventually came to a stop after descending for 1,000 km.

Looking at the sides of the mountain, Luo Feng nodded. "Right here is a good spot. I'll dig a hole in the wall of the mountain and stay here."

As for the bottom of the pit?

Who knew just how deep this pit went for, only when he had the

time would he decide to go and check.

Luo Feng finally set his roots down in this huge pit. With his ability, he was easily able to dig a 100m wide, 100m long and 10m tall space for himself. He also renovated it by carving several stones into statues, along with carvings on the walls, making it feel like a normal home.

As for this living quarters, Luo Feng proudly named it Huge Pit quarters.

There was a pathway deep in the Huge pit quarters that linked to the side of the mountain wall.

.....

The silver armored Luo feng and Mosha Luo Feng simultaneously sat cross legged on a rock bed.

Yes.

His earth body and the Mosha clan were both in the external world together. Afterall, the Mosha clan body was very sensitive with the universe space. Thus, the moment any warrior drew close, he would be discovered...and, in times of crisis, the Mosha Luo Feng could become a bodyguard.

“This killing aura is unique to the ancient god ruins and its effects are really obvious on the body.” Luo feng suddenly stood

up. Mosha Luo Feng beside immediately vanished into the internal world. “The only thing is, my earth body and the Mosha body both have clear pathways to train, but what about the golden horned beast?”

Deities of the world and absolute void were definitely emphasized, however the golden horned beast still lacked a battle technique.

There were many techniques within its inherited memories. Long before blood river world, Luo Feng had thought about this problem. Even with Babata’s help, he only managed to narrow it down to 12 selected techniques for Luo Feng to pick. However the choice was simply too hard, and he only managed to pick 3 out of them.

They were, 8 Level Hunt, Tearing Sky and Land, Gold Horn.

These 3 techniques were all very powerful. Luo Feng’s thoughts were to let the golden horned beast try these 3 first and train in them. After observing the results, he would then pick the technique which he is most proficient in.

All of these 3 great techniques belonged to close combat.

8 level Hunt, focused on movement.

Tearing Sky and Lan, focused on close combat violence.

Gold Horn, focused on killing in 1 blow.

Even though they were all powerful, each of these three had their own specialty, be it movement, 1 hit kill or violence.

“This is really troublesome.”

“At times, with endless choices before you, it does bring about a headache.” Luo Feng sighed. After saying those words, he couldn’t help but laugh. Those words were indeed vexing. Even the absolute geniuses of the Virtual Universe Company had to use points to exchange for techniques.

This was totally unlike the golden horned beast, picking whichever techniques from the inherited memories.

“I cannot get too proud, if i do, I’ll be unlucky. I have to be humble, humble.” Feeling good, Luo Feng snorted and followed the pathway in his quarters to a point close to the edge of the hole.

He sat by the exit and looked at the endless depths of the huge pit below. Before him was the endless amounts of thick killing aura, he stopped thinking and relaxed.

“Hm.”

“Ah?” Luo Feng frowned as he looked in the distant killing aura.

The pit was shockingly huge. Naturally the aura would flow within the depth forming all sorts of illusionary pictures, occasionally forming very lifelike pictures. At this time, within his field of vision, a blurry 100km huge picture could be seen in the distance.

Faint and distant...

It was a picture of a type of huge lizard. The only difference from a real lizard was that it had a horn that pierced the skies! Also, it was more built and its claws were bigger.

Within that blurry picture...

A huge palm suddenly fell from the sky, and that 100km long beast actually looked up and rushed towards the sky. As it flew, its long lizard tail waved swiftly, and fiercely smashed into that huge palm.

Rumble!

The picture dispersed and the energies flowed out, no longer forming as realistic a picture as before.

“This, this, this...” Luo Feng stared wide eyed. The blurry scenes from before flashed in his mind. The movement of the beast before was mainly flying and waving its long tail. After which that tail whipped that heavenly palm, causing it to totally crumble.

Flight!

Tail wave!

The picture kept flashing in his mind while he was training the 3 techniques of 8 level Hunt, Tearing Sky and Land and Gold Horn. During this period, Luo Feng suddenly comprehended quite a bit. As his consciousness were linked, anything he understood and saw, the other 2 would naturally learn too. The golden horned beast's training naturally was his earth body's training.

"This, is definitely not a natural appearance. It cannot be that a simple formed picture would be infused with so much deep origin laws!"

Indeed!

Deep and profound!

Even the simple flight and wave of the tail replayed in his mind. For the tail to actually whip and crumble that palm, its power was unbelievable.

"This is not a natural occurrence." Luo Feng suddenly thought of how he gazed at the ancient god ruins from above, seeing the huge pits all over, almost like footprints of an absolute beast. This made Luo Feng's mind flash and his eyes gleamed. "Those huge pits, could be left behind by a beast from when the legendary battle between the Virtual Universe Company and the aboriginals of

blood river world clashed.

“Then!”

“That blurry image earlier, could it be a certain battle scene from back then?” Luo Feng was shocked within. In terms of perspective, his was indeed high.

He felt...

That quick battle scene from the picture before definitely exceeded the battle scene of undyings. Because, in primal chaos city, Luo Feng had personally witnessed two undyings battling, and has also seen his teacher True Yan demonstrate his prowess. The only thing was, from the feeling, it didn’t compare with that beast or the huge palm.

“Palm?” Luo Feng’s eyes stared wide.

“Huge palm?”

It was almost as though a clap of thunder resounded in his head!

Back then in primal chaos city, when the two undyings were battling, the universe space itself went silent and the laws stopped turning. A huge palm had reduced these two undyings to dust. Even though they regenerated back, they were heavily injured.

“The primal chaos city leader’s palm? Yes, that feeling.” Luo Feng nodded. “However, this one doesn’t seem as terrifying as the city leader’s.”

When the city leader made his move, it seemed as though everything within the universe space was subdued and controlled.

And this blurry image…Luo Feng only felt a bit of it.

“Flight and tail wave!”

“Exciting, this is so exciting.” Luo Feng didn’t think more of it, grabbing the chance to use his time to study and comprehend it. The more he did, the more thrilling it got.

Those two movements made Luo Feng’s comprehension of the Tearing Sky and land improve by leaps and bounds. This was a close combat violent technique, of which Tearing sky referred to claw attacks while tearing land referred to using its tail, naturally this was the most simple explanation.

However, looking at the ancient picture had caused Luo Feng to be filled with a confidence in training Tearing sky and land.

“That’s it, the golden horned beast’s battle technique will be tearing sky and land.” Luo Feng made the decision. His eyes gleaming, looking at the distant endless aura, anticipating, “Who knows if I’ll get to see another picture!”

At this time.

Even though Luo Feng was training within his quarters, the Mosha body had become a rock by the entrance of the cave, carefully examining the aura movement outside.

.....

1 day, 2 days...1 month, 2 months...1 year...

After staying there for 2 months, the Mosha body had discovered a total of 3 pictures including the 1st. From long periods of staying there, he would occasionally see these 3 repeat, not ever seeing another new one.

Among these three pictures, the 1st one was where only that huge palm descending from above, the beast waved its tail and flew while dispersing the palm.

The 2nd one was where the beast lowered its head, its gold horn aimed ahead, piercing forward as it flew, a simple charge scene.

The 3rd one was about the beast that violently waved its claws, slashing forward.

Chapter 38 – Two Years

“Haha. I’ve succeeded, I’ve succeeded.”

Virtual universe, Absolute beginning villa 1136. Luo Feng was in his own training grounds, as he was studying, using the floating blood and time space scribbles to work on the 9 universe tablet Drizzle picture. He was finally able to comprehend the 12th wonder.

The 1st to 9th, belonged to the most superficial, he had comprehended them back in primal chaos city.

As for the 10th and 11th, he had made some progress after studying the time space scribbles, along with some accumulated knowledge from what he saw in primal chaos city, it finally came to fruition. And then, he had been stumped for quite a while by the 12th wonder. After two years of training in this ancient huge pit, he finally comprehended it.

“It really is difficult. My consciousness’s calculation speed is comparable to a basic quantum computer, and my comprehension ability is high too. Yet, it actually took me this long to comprehend the 12th wonder.” Luo Feng sighed. “There are the 1st 9, the middle 27 and the final 72. From the middle 27, I’ve only comprehended 3 so far. When will I finish everything?”

He muttered, within however he was gleeful.

To dissect and study the essence of the universe space laws,

would it be that easy? Only those with exceptional comprehension, temperament and talent could do it. Even the genius Lian Luo only comprehended it after 3000 years in primal chaos city. Of course, the main usage of time was on the final and hardest 72.

"Hm!"

"Two years, I've been in this ancient pit training for two years, and my earth body has been evolving from the absorption of the killing aura everyday. Compared to before, my improvement should be quite huge. Three months ago I still failed at the absorption of the 2nd crystal, now that it's been three months...I may succeed!" Feeling especially good, Luo Feng decided...

Today, he would try and absorb the blood river crystal again!

Shua!

His consciousness vanished and returned to reality.

Blood river continent, within a huge pit of the ancient god ruins.

Within the Huge pit quarters.

The Mosha clansman was sitting crossed legged, his earth body was in the internal world, as he couldn't control his body during the absorption, it was best to do it in the internal world.

……

Internal world.

Luo Feng only had on his underpants, as he was lying at the bottom of a tall metal mountain, holding the blood river crystal in his right hand.

“Chi!” He used his right finger to slash his left palm, creating a wound, fresh blood flowed out.

“Begin!”

Luo Feng once again placed the crystal on the wound. This was already the 5th time he was trying to absorb the 2nd crystal. He had failed the previous 4 times. Following that mad killing intent that rushed in and attacked his soul, the familiar feeling once again settled in, his body’s every bone and cell all began to swiftly change.

“I have to bear with it!”

“I definitely have to bear with it, don’t collapse.” Luo Feng anticipated within. Even though the terrifying pain reached to the depths of his soul, he could bear with all these.

The blood red threads from the crystal continued to flow into Luo Feng’s body. Gradually, the crystal grew more and more transparent.

Luo Feng's weird body changes gradually grew more intense too.

"Chi!"

The entire crystal including the already transparent crystal body became a peculiar energy and rushed straight into Luo Feng's body. Suddenly, the originally simple blood red engraving on his chest had more marks added onto it, the entire engraving now wasn't as simple as before.

Hu!

His entire body returned back to normal as the blood red engraving vanished and that mysterious energy permeated into his body's every cell.

Sou! Luo Feng swiftly got up.

"I've succeeded, really succeeded." Luo Feng's eyes had a sense of mad glee. In the previous four attempts, every single time, it was incredibly painful. But the pain wasn't the problem, the main problem was that he had failed every time. He didn't expect that he would be able to succeed today.

"The feeling of absorbing two crystals."

With a thought, Luo Feng triggered the mysterious energy deep

within his body. Immediately the blood red engraving appeared on his chest, Luo Feng revealed a look of glee. “Feels different, obviously different. My feeling for the 9 great origin laws of the universe are much clearer now too.”

Hu!

His hand became a blade and he began to unleash the illusionary 7 blades. When he did this, he was even more pleasantly surprised.

“Melding with the universe energies, it’s caused the power to rise up quite a bit.” Luo Feng was surprised within. “Absorbing the 1st crystal raised my power by 20 30%. Right now it has been raised by another 20 30%. Which means…because of the two crystals, at the same level of comprehension, my power has been raised by 50%!”

In a life or death battle, with 50% more power, he would be able to completely determined his own fate. Also, as one grew closer to his limit, the harder it was to increase.

The golden horned beast’s natural ability to strengthen, could only at most double the power, and it was already godly.

The training for Deities of the world was extremely harsh only because the effects were godly.

“Let me try and see if I can absorb the 3rd crystal.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

Even though his hopes weren't up, he wanted to try.

As he tried to absorb the 3rd crystal, that killing intent from the crystal combined with the two years worth of killing intent stored in his body, formed a terrifying killing aura that attacked him. However, just from his willpower alone, Luo Feng could still take it! He was accustomed to it, as he had been living in a dense killing aura area for two years.

Always bearing with the effects of the killing intent, Luo feng's mental state was more sturdy and trained now.

The willpower attacks were easily blocked by Luo Feng. The 3rd crystal then began to extend its red threads into the wound, and started flowing into Luo Feng.

"Peng!" "Peng!" "Peng!"

12 different spots around Luo Feng's body exploded simultaneously, almost like a bamboo that had long reached its limit. Any extra pressure caused it to instantly tear open. One theory was that after absorbing the 2nd crystal, Luo Feng had already reached a limit, and now that he was trying the 3rd, his body couldn't take it anymore.

One had to know that the further it went, the harsher the requirements on the body would be. In fact, the harshness was 10 times more each time!

“Damn!” Looking at the recovered crystal in his palm, Luo Feng could only helplessly swiftly recover his body.

“It’s ok. I’m already very satisfied with absorbing the 2nd crystal. After I work hard in this place, I can absorb the crystals and train my willpower, I definitely have to stay on.” Luo Feng smiled. Normal dangerous level missions only gave 10k to 20k points, completing a few dangerous level missions would only gather so much.

As long as he became a blood warrior and acquire the blood river medal, he would receive 100k points.

What’s more, absorbing three crystals was good for his body too.

Absolute beginning region.

Wuka’s villa. Normally, Luo Feng, Wuka and Rong Jun would all meet here at wuka’s quarters.

“Wa, Luo Feng, you training madman. The moment I called you today you came. That’s shocking.” Wuka lay satisfied on his sofa, leg on the table before him.

“If the things a madman does don’t surprise you, then he wouldn’t be a madman anymore.” Luo Feng laughed and lied down on the sofa too. “Wuka, bring out your best wine. I rarely come, and since I am here, you have to show the demeanor of an owner.”

“The wine in the virtual universe still cost money!” Wuka stood up helplessly.

As the virtual universe was a business just like reality, hence the food and beverage dependant Ping Hai company could earn so much.

Beside, Rong Jun laughed too. “Money? Wuka, our great Manka prince, what is this little money to our dear majesty, does it even mean anything?”

“Damn, you two punks. Back then, one of you were a madman and another a savage. Only I was an innocent youth...who would’ve thought it’d take me so long to see through you two, that you are both vicious and cunning.” Wuka said. He took out a bright jade bottle that was placed beside him, and within it was a transparent glowing liquid that made one completely tremble at the flavor.

“Hehe.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

“Wa, Wuka is definitely a brother.” Rong Jun laughed too.

“Hmph, this is God Drunk, even though it’s within the virtual universe, when you drink it it’s completely similar to drinking in reality. However the God Drunk in reality, just 1 bottle costs 8000 mixed elements. And here, I only spent 8 mixed elements.” Wuka was obviously proud as he said this.

Luo Feng shouted, “To buy one life fruit two mixed elements is enough. This wine sure is so luxurious, stop showing off.”

“Hurry and bring it, I’m already drooling.” Rong Jun stood up to try and snatch it.

“Don’t rush, I’m coming.” Wuka sat down and poured for the wine for three of them.

Even though it was called God Drunk, it didn’t knock one out completely, but produced an incredibly feeling within one’s consciousness, one that worked completely on the spirit.

“Good wine.” Luo Feng closed his eyes.

“Nice.” Rong Jun opened his eyes after tasting and snatched the bottle. “I’ll pour.”

“When you get one in real life, be a little luxurious.” Wuka muttered.

“You Majesty is vicious.” Luo Feng laughed.

“We have no money.” Rong Jun said.

Wuka looked at Rong Jun, “Rong Jun, it’s been two years. You’ve done so many missions. Just from these missions alone, you should have tens of thousands of points! Tens of thousands...exchanging

for a real God Drunk in reality shouldn't be a problem. If you are willing, even the undyings would be willing to exchange with you."

"Right, Luo Feng." Wuka looked at him. "Are you still stuck in that mission? I don't mean to nag, but wasting time is wasting strength. who isn't grasping their time now and training hard. If you cannot complete it, just give up and take another mission."

"How can he give up? Every 100 years, you can only take 10 such missions. Hence, you cannot give up any one of them." Rong Jun emphasized.

"Every 100 years, you can only take 10 such missions?" Luo Feng looked at Rong Jun, "Where'd you get that from?"

"Hm, I just received my 5th mission and got the notice, telling me that every 100 years, we can only take 10 missions. It is to prevent the core members from trying too hard to get points and wasting time on the missions. Afterall, training and missions, along with studying and comprehension are all very important." Rong Jun explained.

Luo Feng nodded.

"No matter. Madman, being stuck in 1 mission isn't good." Wuka said.

"Hm, Wuka is right." Rong Jun nodded.

Luo Feng couldn't help but laugh. "You two punks. What, you think I'm wasting my time there? And my strength isn't improving enough. Haha...today I'll go attempt the heavenly bridge and let you see."

"Heavenly bridge?" Rong Jun and Wuka were both shocked as they looked at him. "6th level?"

Chapter 39 – Passing the Heavenly Bridge 6th level

Virtual universe, Heavenly bridge.

In the center of the beautiful island, the watchman Bevin was going through his list. Suddenly he spotted three silhouettes appearing simultaneously on the island.

“Luo Feng, Rong Jun and Wuka. The three of you have all come together? Hmm the 9 universe bridge is empty, however, Rong Jun and Wuka, you are both from the Huge axe sect. Only one can attempt at a time, you can pick who goes first.” Watchman Bevin smiled as he looked at these three.

Rong Jun and Wuka both shook their heads.

“Not us, we aren’t attempting the bridge. It’s Luo Feng, this madman” Wuka said.

“Right, it’s Luo Feng. He’s attempting the 6th level.” Rong Jun smiled. “Lord Bevin, there shouldn’t be any problem with us watching the live broadcast right?”

“What do you say Luo Feng?” Watchman Bevin looked at Luo Feng.

“Sure!” Luo Feng smiled and nodded.

Rong Jun and Wuka were the two in the same batch of geniuses that he was closest to. Hence, allowing them to watch the broadcast was nothing.

“Rong Jun and Wuka, you two watch.” Luo Feng smiled and became a blur, flying towards the 9 universe bridge.

9 universe bridge level 6.

Amidst the howling winds, Luo Feng stood on the bridge, squinting his eyes to see through the tornado ahead as best he could.

“Choose your opponent, fighter, controller, or hypnotist. Pick any one, defeat him and you can proceed to the 7th level.” The tornado’s voice resounded.

“Controller.” Luo Feng said without hesitation.

A silhouette immediately flew out of the tornado. It was the same silver armored man, stepping on a dark cloud shuttle and carrying a dark golden long rod on his back. He was staring coldly at Luo Feng through his mask, “Only universe level 9 and you wish to attempt the heavenly bridge level 6? You were defeated in one move previously, yet you seem quite confident considering the short amount of time passed.”

“Of course!” Luo Feng nodded.

Shua!

The dark golden long rod behind him immediately became like a sun. Large amounts of gold light shot out, covering the skies and land. Close to 3000 little golden blades immediately formed 36 golden blades that were 1 chi long in mid air These 36 blades floated before Luo Feng, immediately transforming and combining into 1!

Countless gold threads inter weaved to form a perfect combination.

An ancient looking dark golden long blade floated before Luo Feng.

Nan Shen Armament's 5 level...Space Slicer!

In truth, the reason behind his inability to unleash this 5th level earlier even though he had comprehended the 10th and 11th wonder was mainly due to his gold origin law comprehension lagging behind. And within these two years, the golden horned beast had been studying the battle technique Tear Skies and Land. Also, with the combination of the three ancient pictures, its improvement speed was shocking. Hence, there was already no difficulty in unleashing the 5th level!

"Very good, you can unleash the 5th level too? However, similar 5th levels will have different amounts of power." The silver armored man laughed loudly. Immediately, the dark golden long

rod behind him too shot out large amounts of gold light, swiftly forming into 1 dark golden long blade beside him.

The two of them faced off! Staring at each other!

“Absolute domain! Space slicer!” Luo Feng’s gaze was cold, simultaneously unleashing his strongest combo!

“Go!” The silver armored man pointed at Luo Feng.

Xiu!

Xiu!

Two dark golden beams of light tore through the space and pierced at each other. The silver armored man’s dark golden light was shockingly fast. Even now…in terms of speed, Luo Feng’s dark golden long blade was a little slower. Not just speed, it’s flight was extremely unpredictable as well.

Even though Nan Shen armament’s 5th level Space Slicer’s speed and power were extremely high, the silver armored man’s space slicer was the most perfect and orthodox way of unleashing it with extremely high power!

The silver armored man’s version was the orthodox method. However, Luo Feng’s way however was obviously special in a different way.

His dark golden long blade was infused with 12 of the wonders, triggering the pressure of the universe space around. Simultaneously, his study of the ancient pictures these two years, the gold origin law comprehension from studying Tearing Sky and Land, all these were melded into his blade, causing it to be filled with immense power!

One was speed and power!

One was space pressure and power!

“Chi! Chi! Chi! …” When the two blades were shot out and clashed, the silver armored man’s blade obviously fell in speed, almost as though it was affected by a formless pressure. Luo Feng’s blade however seemed to be assisted by the universe space itself and pierced forward.

Peng!

The dark golden long blade became a beam of light and as they clashed, pierced right through the enemy’s head!

The 6th level!

Success!

“Rigid, not flexible.” Luo Feng smiled, “These two years. I’ve

been studying the time space scribbles to comprehend the 9 universe tablet's drizzle picture. My comprehension can be considered at 80 points now. Your technique...should be considered completely reaching 100 points on the drizzle picture, hence the difference in power."

"It's a pity though, you still lost to me"

"Since primal chaos city, I've understood the raindrop picture and the drizzle picture to an incomparable perfection. Only because I was studying the essence and with that knowledge as the roots, connected with the universe space, that's the true path! From using space, affecting space, this is the improvement from the essence." Luo Feng smiled, flying straight ahead to the 7th level!

.....

At the bridge, center of the island.

Rong Jun and Wuka were both shocked by the scene that they just saw

"He succeeded?" Rong Jun's eyes were filled with shock.

"How, how can that be?" Wuka couldn't believe it either. "It's, it's only been two years! And it's two years outside, the training speed outside cannot compare to that in primal chaos city."

In theory.

Attempting the higher levels of the heavenly bridge required more time as it got higher! And the comprehension speed outside shouldn't compare to that in primal chaos city, they estimated that after 10 years outside, Luo Feng would only then be able to pass the 6th level. This made more sense in their minds.

Pity, only the illogical are truly geniuses! That's the true madman!

Time space scribbles, Tear Sky and Land and the three ancient pictures. Along with Luo Feng's later comprehension of the 9 universe tablet, they all resulted in his breakthrough in two short years!

Attempting the 7th level.

"Space!" Luo Feng flew to the 7th level. It was very mysterious, as before him no longer stood a tornado, but an endless space.

The 7th level of the heavenly bridge was actually the scene of space.

Luo Feng finally reached the end of the 7th level. There floated a little meteorite that had a diameter of a few km, a voice resounded from it. "Pick your opponent, fighter, controller, hypnotist, pick one and you can attempt the 7th level."

“Controller.” Luo Feng shouted, filled with anticipation within.

This 7th level opponent, just what attack would he unleash.

Would it still be the same dark golden long blade? Or even higher?

……

The meteorite before him suddenly broke off a small piece of rock. That piece rolled on the bridge and transformed into a blue armored mask wearing controller on a dark cloud shuttle and dark golden long rod on his back.

“Universe level 9 youth, to be able to reach this stage, congratulations. I hope you can pass this level.” The blue armored man was obviously much older.

“Hm.” Luo Feng didn’t hesitate, immediately forming the dark golden long blade that floated beside him.

“Not bad.” The blue armored man walked down from the dark cloud shuttle onto the bridge. Simultaneously, the dark golden long rod on his back immediately shot out seemingly endless amount of gold light. The entire sky changed color, the surround bridge, space, everything vanished, all that could be seen was the countless blade energy circling around him.

Luo Feng’s expression changed, “This is Blade world?”

Nan Shen Armament 6th level, Blade world!

According to the Nan Shen armament's power each level, jumping from level 5 to 6 was extremely difficult. It could be said, that from the 5th to 6th level, and the 8th to 9th level, these were the hardest levels to breakthrough altogether. Actually, just from the number of little golden blades used it be seen.

The 5th level's Space slicer used 2,916 little golden blades.

The 6th level Blade world, used 5,832 little golden blades. This was twice as much as the 5th.

One had to know, there were only a total of 10,081 little golden blades in the dark golden long rod, the later increases weren't as huge as this one.

Similarly…

The blade world's might was incredibly powerful!

World, why world?

Only sector lords could control a world, form a world and use that strength! However…the blade world move uses the strength of the origin laws, allowing one to use the strength of a world. However, the world strength of the blade world was slightly

weaker than the true strength of a world. Still, it was terrifying.

The 6th level, after completely comprehending it, any domain lord that could use the 6th level could almost be invincible in his level in the universe.

“You better go train more.” The blue armored man smiled.

Shua!

The entire world pressured down, far exceeding the amount of space pressure Luo Feng could affect, in an instant crushing down and piercing Luo Feng’s head.

Luo Feng, failure!

……

“Total defeat, it was too strong. The moment that move was unleashed, it completely controlled that side of the world.” Luo Feng sighed. “When will I be able to unleash the 6th level.”

Luo feng was very clear.

That from the 5th to 6th level, that was the Nan Shen Armament’s most extreme evolution of all 9 levels. It didn’t seem at all easier than the breaking through to the last level.

Rong Jun wasn't the sort to spread news. However, Wuka was the type who couldn't hold it in, the news quickly spread.

……

Primal region.

Bolan was in a white robe, flying in the air of the primal region. Suddenly a sturdy silhouette shot over.

"Bolan."

"Hm?" Bolan turned to look, it was Long Yun.

Bolan looked silently at Long Yun waiting for him to speak.

"Do you know? Luo Feng had just passed the heavenly bridge's 6th level today!" Long Yun said.

The initially calm and collected Bolan suddenly had a change in his expression. His eyes focused and he said softly, "I got it." After which he flew towards his living quarters.

……

After a while, in the center of the heavenly bridge island.

A white robed Bolan suddenly appeared.

“Bolan?” Watchman Bevin smiled and looked at him. “You really came.”

“I’m attempting the 7th level!” Bolan’s eyes gleamed with cold light.

“The breakthroughs are every three levels. From level 1 to 3, 4 to 6, 7 to 9. This level 7...is much harder than level 6.” Watchman Bevin looked at Bolan. “It’s only been two years since you passed level 6 and you wish to attempt the 7th level?”

“I want to try.” Bolan emphasized.

“Alright, go on, there’s no one in the Universe heavenly bridge.” Watchman Bevin smiled.

Shua!

The white robed Bolan flew straight at the Universe Heavenly Bridge.

Chapter 40 – Luo Feng and Bolan

Universe heavenly bridge 7th level.

The blue armored man carried a blood colored blade. Wearing a mask, he coldly gazed at the white clothed youth. “Young man, the Universe primal chaos tablet is the most profound and hardest to study of the 52 tablets. Studying both space and time and going through these tests, your achievements in space can even reach the 9th level! However, in time itself, you only have the skills of level 3 or 4. Let me advise you, go back and study more, raise your comprehension of time more before coming back!”

The white clothed youth was expressionless, his gaze cold.

Hua!

He brandished the blood blade from behind.

“Hm.” The blue armored man shook his head.

Weng!

The region about became a blur, as space and time were simultaneously affected. The white clothed youth continued to instantly produce over 10,000 images. However, his head was still pierced!

7th level, failure!

……

In the center of the island, the only one watching this scene was watchman Bevin. He shook his head and sighed, “Too proud, this Bolan is too proud! I estimate that he had been leading far ahead since he was young, stronger than everyone. Hence, he has an absolute heart of pride. With his comprehension of the space laws…back then during the genius battles, his space comprehension alone far exceeded many sector lords. Even comparable to a few undyings!”

“Such high comprehension of space laws!”

“With such talent, theoretically speaking, the best way is to focus on space itself and put all his attention and time and resources into the space origin laws. This way, he can get stronger than before! Amplifying his strengths! That way, he would still have a chance of becoming a space knight.”

“A pity!”

“He’s too proud!”

“Hence before the genius battles, he began to study the wind laws and use it as a stepping stone to studying time.”

“The most important choice in primal chaos city is the choosing

which of the 52 tablets to train in. Theoretically speaking, our Virtual Universe Company has always respected the choices of the geniuses. However, back then...we made an exception and discussed with him, advising him to spend his time and energy on space. Choosing a tablet that focused only on space. Like Luo Feng's choice, the 9 universe tablet was very suitable for Bolan, however..."

"He's too proud."

"Absolute confidence, he didn't even listen. Still choosing the hardest universe tablet." Watchman Bevin simply sighed.

How many people have regretted their choice.

Such terrifying level of talent?

After primal chaos city's training, Luo Feng's earth body could at most unleash a 100 images! However Bolan, from the genius battle period, he could already unleash 1,000 images! If he studied the 9 universe tablet, he would have completely comprehended the raindrop and drizzle picture in a short amount of time, going on to study the downpour picture.

In terms of space talent, he was far more terrifying than Lian Luo.

Pity.

The more talented one was, the more proud he would be too.

“He’s rushing, his pride...is making him rush. He’s finally been caught up by someone of the same generation.” Watchman Bevin watched the distant universe heavenly bridge from the distant space. Speaking softly, “He’s probably never ever tasted such a feeling before in his life. At the last period in primal chaos city when Luo Feng passed the 5th level, he rushed to attempt the 6th. Luckily he succeeded. He managed to keep his pride.”

“However now, in two short years, Luo Feng passed the 6th. And he rushed once again, without even any guarantee to attempt the 7th! Pity...”

“He wasn’t as lucky this time. He failed!”

“The 7th level compared to the 6th, is simply too much harder. He was defeated in one move.”

“Failure!”

“He’s finally been caught up. This...may be a good thing for him.” Watchman Bevin said softly. “It’s up to him whether he falls into depression! Or reflects on himself because of Luo Feng!”

Yu Xiang mountain was as peaceful as ever. Wuka, Rong Jun and Luo Feng didn’t even know of Bolan’s attempted failure of the 7th level.

While Bolan had received the huge setback and was bearing with it, Luo Feng's mood was extremely good.

"Absorbing the 2nd crystal was successful, I've comprehended the 12th wonder and now I've passed the 6th level. Luck is on my side." Luo feng had just had a huge party and eaten a huge feast with his parents, wife and children in the Black Dragon Mountain 9 star bay.

After which, he laughed as he arrived at the Fantasy ocean.

.....

Fantasy ocean, Luo Feng stood by the ocean.

Heart like a mirror, even if dust landed on the mirror, he would still see clearly. His boundaries and his perspective were all clear before him.

As all was clear and untarnished.

When it was time to laugh he would laugh, time to rage he would rage, time to kill, there wouldn't be any hesitation.

Heart like a blade, this made Luo Feng's actions all deliberate and to the point, there weren't any hesitation or procrastination.

"I've been in the huge pit for two years, absorbing the invasion of

the stronger and stronger killing aura. My willpower, in training under such conditions is getting more and more sturdy. My consciousness control is also getting stronger. I shall try...the 10th island of the fantasy ocean, let's see what happens." Luo Feng smiled, rushing into the sky and swiftly plunging deep into the ocean.

Fantasy ocean, it was currently where Luo Feng had acquired the most points.

Before, he had consecutively passed 9 levels, making him acquire a huge amount of points...51,100 points! Of which just the 9th level alone was 25,600 points, the 10th was 51,200.

As for the points from the heavenly bridge were pitiful, passing the 6th level was only 3,200 points! Afterall, he already didn't have the 10 times reward from primal chaos city. The moment one missed that, it was gone. This was also why...Luo Feng was approached by others during the classes to exchange for points.

Fantasy ocean, heavenly bridge, these were all hard to pass.

Only thing was Luo Feng's consciousness was powerful (Golden horned beast's consciousness), his willpower was even more terrifying (Personal training from his two brothers and natural talent), hence he could have such achievements in the fantasy ocean.

.....

Fantasy ocean island 10.

Sou!

Luo Feng descended and landed on a peak of a 100m mountain on the island.

“It’s come?” Luo Feng focused and looked up at the sky.

Finally that vast illusion followed with the terrifying pressure descended. This endless pressure was almost like a land and sky covering mountain smashing down. However, Luo Feng’s willpower caused his consciousness to focus and condense, constantly condensing into an iron rock, his consciousness and willpower was one, one state of mind.

Rumble!

The pressure of the mountain crashed down, clashing against that incredibly sturdy mental state, it held strong for a brief moment before finally crumbling and completely dispersing.

“The pressure of the 10th island is simply too strong!” I’ve had quite an improvement over these two years. However, this little improvement…against the pressure of the 10th island, it still crumbles into nothing, I have to work harder! This 10th island has over 50k points, it wouldn’t be so easy to acquire it.” Luo Feng didn’t seem affected by the failure at all.

Because...

He wasn't like Bolan, Bolan had always been number one.

Luo Feng however had never been number one before. On earth, he wasn't number one amongst the students. After becoming a warrior, the most outstanding at that time was Hong and Thunder God. Even after entering the elite training...he still wasn't number one. And whether it was the elimination, universe country matches and the final pinnacle fights, Luo Feng was never number one.

As he was never number one, failure to him was a chance to reflect on why he failed. It was a chance to learn and improve.

.....

One of them had always been number one, the universe genius competition's most outstanding genius.

While the other one had never been number one. Even Babata, who knew him well thought it would be hard for him to make it into the top 1,000 of the universe.

Now, he was neck and neck.

Blood river continent, the most mysterious and vast region, the ancient god ruins

Huge pit quarters.

“It’s been over two years since I begun training in this huge pit. My mind had been on training mode since then. When I first came, I was prepared to go deep into the huge pit to explore. However I haven’t done so these two years.” Luo Feng stood at the side of the pathway, gazing into the endless aura before him and surveying the endless depths below.

This was a terrifyingly huge pit.

If, just the outer layer had a diameter of close to 10k km, what about the depths? He didn’t even know.

“I’ll take a good look at what’s there.” Luo Feng’s thoughts moved and the normal black rock at the side of the cave immediately vanished into his internal world. This rock was actually the Mosha clan transformed.

The Mosha clansman, could transform into anything. It’s natural talent allowed his energy to morph into anything.

“Let’s go down!”

Luo Feng jumped and followed the terrifying gravity down, descending further and further.

……

These endless depths had a diameter that reached 10,000km, what about the depths then?

It’s already 5,000km.”

The mad winds howled in his ears as he continued to descend. He was shocked within, “I’ve already descended 5,000km, I still haven’t seen the bottom of the pit? The thickness of the aura is still the same.”

Hu! Hu!

The shocking speed of which Luo Feng descended at caused great resistance. The gravity and his resistance finally equaled and he descended at a stable speed.

“Ah, it’s changed? The thickness of the aura has changed?” Luo Feng was shocked as he descended. “This is about 9,000km in depth!”

“Kill! Kill kill!!!” The endless killing intent rushed into his consciousness. That powerful rush was twice what it was before. Not just the killing willpower, even the strength of the thickness was about twice.

Hu!

Luo Feng continued to descend.

“This huge pit, just how deep is it?” Luo Feng continued to descend right into the depths.

“The thickness of the aura is slowly increasing.” The more he descended, the more he felt the thickness increase. “Right now the thickness of the aura has already reached about three times of my huge pit quarters.”

He had already descended close to 15,000km.

“Not right! “Luo Feng’s expression changed.

Shua!

His entire being in the endless depths suddenly stopped from his terrifying speed before. His expression was heavy. Frowning heavily, “It’s weaker, the thickness of the aura…is weaker?”

Since starting his descent, from about 9,000km down it was two times stronger than before, and it increased more and more until it was 3 times, that was the peak. When he descended further, the aura started getting weaker.

“Hm?”

“The region with the strongest aura is actually the center of the pit, and not the bottom?” Luo Feng was curious, following which he flew upwards to look for the region with the thickest aura.

Chapter 41 – The Existence at the Bottom of the Pit

"Right here!" Luo Feng floated in mid air, feeling the thickness of aura about. "Any higher and the aura would decrease. Any lower and the thickness would diminish too."

In front of Luo Feng, the red killing aura floated about.

The depth that he was in was where the aura was thickest. However, the entire area was simply too vast, he was simply at the side of the mountain wall.

"I'm at the edge of the thickest area, what would the center of it be like?" Luo Feng carefully headed towards the center of the endless amount of killing aura. He travelled at 100km per second and got closer towards the center. "The thickness is rising, it's actually getting thicker here!"

3.5 times…4 times…4.5 times…5 times…6 times…

As he got closer to the center, the thickness grew even more shockingly. The killing willpower that invaded his consciousness was terrifying, almost like countless slaughter demons cheering within. The demon's voices were either forceful and strong or formless in their invasion, continuously messing with Luo Feng's willpower.

"It's too strong." Luo Feng stopped at the 7 times region. His face

was slightly pale, squinting, his gaze like a blade, sweat beading from his forehead.

"This killing aura is simply, simply too... terrifying."

The endless killing aura filled one's entire consciousness.

Compared to Luo Feng's willpower however, this willpower was much weaker, however it was solid and trained.

"Even though these killing auras are scattered and not organized, with countless amounts gathered together, it's still very strong. I can take it, however I have to be extremely cautious with it." Luo feng's expression was serious. During his stay at the huge pit quarters, he would receive killing aura invasions unexpectedly. However, the level of attack back then wasn't much, as he could completely focus on studying his origin laws.

However now!

At 7 times the thickness, he had to focus strongly on defending against the invasion of the killing aura.

"I'll go to my maximum and see where I can reach." Luo Feng gradually continued to fly.

He slowed down his speed, however the thickness rose even quicker. The closer he got to the center, the more shockingly it rose.

8 times!

“Hm?” Luo Feng suddenly stopped in mid air.

Hu Hu hu...

The aura before him was already as red as fresh blood. With what he could see with his naked eyes, the aura was like a whirlpool, swirling ahead.

“Whirlpool core!” Luo Feng could see with a gaze 10km ahead. The aura within the whirlpool core was extremely thick and terrifying like a red sun! Simultaneously the whirlpool emitted an ancient energy, with a formless enticement that permeated his soul.

“Come on!”

“Come on!”

“Come here!” That formless seduction entered Luo Feng’s consciousness.

“Get out!!!” Luo Feng’s consciousness let out a roar that shook his entire mind. Immediately that enticement that invaded his mind was smashed, crumbling into dust. “You actually dare to invade my mind!”

Luo Feng's gaze was piercing, staring at the whirlpool core.

"I cannot go closer."

"If I go any closer, I'm afraid that I won't be able to resist." Luo Feng's expression was serious. Even though he had detected the enticement in an instant, he had to admit that the allure of the whirlpool core was even more terrifying than the illusion of the Fantasy Ocean level 9. And that mad killing aura was close to his limit of bearing too!

7 times the thickness, he already felt a huge pressure.

8 times the aura, that was indeed close to his limit.

In terms of willpower.

Luo Feng's was a pure and genuine willpower, and the enemy was endless killing intent will power! Now that it was close to his limit, Luo Feng could indeed push it, just a little deeper.

However, he didn't dare take the risk!

The moment he failed, after successfully being invaded by the killing aura, he would become a bloodthirsty madman. A true madman without logic or reason. That was akin to death!

About 10km away from the whirlpool core, Luo Feng chose to retreat.

“From the looks of it, my willpower now still isn’t strong enough.” Luo Feng looked at the blood like whirlpool before him. “If 1st and 2nd brother were here, they should be able to go closer!”

“Right!”

“Whirlpool?”

“The whirlpool core is the deepest. The further I go the thinner it gets, the outermost spiral arm of the whirlpool, has a depth of 9,000km.” Luo Feng simulated the huge whirlpool in his mind. An aura of the whirlpool with a diameter of 1,000km, from which the 9,000km depth was the outermost region of the whirlpool.

Hence that area was two times the huge pit quarters.

Any further and the thickness would fall another time.

“This deep part has the thickest aura. So it’s actually a whirlpool core. Who knows, what’s within that red sun like core.” Luo Feng recalled the killing aura and formless enticement that invaded his mind. Feeling a tremble within, “I cannot go deeper! At least not yet!”

Sou!

Luo feng flew to the mountain wall close by, sticking to it and falling 100m downwards straight to the bottom.

“I want to see just how deep this huge pit is and see what’s at the bottom.” Luo Feng continued to descend.

15k km, 20k km.

The depth of the huge pit obviously exceeded its width, and there was hardly any difference of thickness in aura at the bottom from the huge pit quarters.

……

In the depths of the pit, there were protruding platforms at the sides of the mountains. On one of them, a bronze armored tall silhouette sat crossed legged. Suddenly he opened his eyes and gazed into the distance, simultaneously a thread of genetic energy permeated to the bottom. “Lord, someone’s here, pinnacle cloud level, how do we deal with him?”

……

Bottom of the huge pit.

The killing aura floated about. There, one can see wildgrass and plants growing about, and a blood red palace was erected at the

bottom.

“Leave it to me!” A voice rumbled, swiftly reaching the bronze armored warrior’s ears.

2nd level of the palace.

There were many cells there. Within each of them were all kinds of strange mad howls, and occasionally, clashing of metals could be heard. These cells...every one of them were about 10m high, 10m long and wide. It was almost like a sealed up square coffin. At this time, one of them began to move on its own. Within this cell... stood a 3m tall, bent bodied strong warrior, and on his back he carried 2 huge machetes.

However, his hair was messy and his eyes were blood red without any reason or intelligence in them.

“Aooooo, kill!” He let out a low howl, like a wild beast.

“Go, go kill the person who disturbs the aster’s training!” A voice resounded.

Sou!

The wild beast warrior became a beam of light and swiftly rushed out.

Luo Feng gently landed, as his boots hit the bottom

“Moss vegetation?” Luo Feng looked at the ground. Surveying his surroundings, he found the bottom was dead silent. Occasionally he would see the random stones about, obviously these had fallen from the mountains above.

“Is there no life at this bottom?”

Luo Feng began to scout about with curiosity, of course he was still cautious.

Every step he took he passed 10km, to scout about in this vast bottom area. Some places were uneven like canyons, while others were like mountains. In terms of surface...the surface of this bottom was closer to earth’s surface. Many 1,000m tall little mountains and canyons that went up to 10,000m could be seen everywhere.

“Looks like there’s nothing special here.”

“Just dead and empty.” Luo Feng turned to leave. Suddenly, with in his ears, he felt an energy swiftly approaching, instantly that energy became very clear.

“Hm?”

He turned fiercely, staring into the distance. “What a mad aura, he’s not trying to hide it at all. I’ve felt him at least 1,000km away.

From his energy...he shouldn't be too strong, cloud level 9? Or domain level 1 or 2?" Luo Feng placed his hand on his scabbard on his back, simultaneously feeling the energy swiftly approaching.

"Howl..." A silhouette swiftly appeared.

A bent messy haired wild beast like warrior appeared. His blood red eyes filled with madness and killing intent, as he brandished two machetes in his hands.

"He's fallen." Luo Feng swiftly deduced. "Under this killing aura environment he was invaded by the aura and finally lost to it, letting it take over his consciousness. He has gone completely mad, and his entire being only knows of killing"

"Kill, kill!" The demon wild person roared out with madness, simultaneously rushing at Luo Feng.

"Since you've fallen, poor person, I'll do you a favor and send you off." Luo Feng swiftly brandished his blood shadow blade!

Qiang!

As the blade left the scabbard, Luo Feng's entire being became a mirage. As that wild person's machete slashed at his image, rumble, .large amounts of lightning split apart and a 1,000m deep canyon was sliced open. That image simply vanished into nothing.

"Kill!" That mad person immediately turned and waved his

machete!

“Dang!”

It clashed with Luo feng’s blood shadow blade, causing Luo Feng to become a silver light and disappearing into the red killing aura.

“What a keen and nibble fellow, and his blade work had the feeling of the ground origin laws. The moment I get close, he can easily defend. This mad demon…before he fell, he should have been quite powerful.” After slightly retreating, Luo Feng became an image and vanished.

That wild demon however roared and madly rushed over again.

“Kill!”

Kill!”

Just the air pressure from the two huge machetes alone caused countless amounts of rubble to fall from the surrounding mountains. His blood red eyes swept the surroundings, simultaneously he unleashed a formless spirit energy to look for Luo Feng.

An incredibly beautiful flash of a blade!

So beautiful it made one’s heart tremble!

Even the space around at this time seemed to stop. This flash was silver in color, and when the flash finally ended, in that instant it even had hints of gold.

Chi!

The flash sliced right through the demon's neck, and the sharp flash extended to pierce into his body, immediately right into his life core, causing it to explode.

"Kill, kill kill..." The demon person's head fell on the floor. His mouth was slightly moving, still mindlessly muttering the words kill, even as his neck spurting out blood and crumbled on the floor.

Shua!

Luo Feng gathered himself and stood there. With a solemn expression, he looked at the corpse on the floor.

Chapter 42 – Death, or Submission!

Fresh blood flowed onto the moss, staining the ground red. The decapitated body of the wild man was still slightly twitching on the ground.

“This aura, is like a rose. Beautiful yet with thorns.” Luo Feng shook his head. “The moment one is unable to withstand the willpower, he would become a true mad demon, with no sense of logic. It’s no different from death.”

The books had long explained that the Ancient God ruins had attracted a large amount of warriors from Blood River Continent. At any given time, there were many who were unable to withstand the intense killing aura, in turn, losing all sense of reason and becoming demons who only knew how to kill. This was no different from wild and savage beasts. However, to become strong, countless people still headed here.

“That’s strange?” Luo Feng frowned. “This bottom area shouldn’t be too huge. I estimated it to have a diameter of only 10,000km!”

“And he’s a domain level 1 strength. His flying speed should be very fast. In theory, a demon with low intelligence has no difference from a savage beast. Hence, it is not possible for it to stay here at the bottom.” Luo Feng was suspicious. If one placed a cat in a house and didn’t lock it up, it couldn’t remain there forever.

One theory was that the huge pit, to a domain level 1 demon, wasn't huge at all.

"Did he just become a demon here? Is there such a coincidence. These two years I haven't entered the bottom. Yet, the moment I do, I meet a demon?" Luo Feng felt that things weren't quite right, frowning as he looked at the red aura before him.

……

Within the depths of the huge pit on a certain platform, the bronze armored silhouette sat crossed legged. He opened his eyes and surveyed below, simultaneously communicating, "Lord, the blood demon has been killed, let me settle this punk!"

"No need!"

A voice filled with thick killing aura resounded in his ears.

In the vast endless bottom, within that blood red palace, a terrifying energy suddenly exploded. At the same time an alluring blood red light rushed out of the palace.

……

The blood red aura revolved about. Even with Luo feng's amazing vision, he could only see 10km clearly, he could only see a blurry huge body.

“It’s strange. However, I have the mosha clansman. Hence, I have a guarantee of fleeing. If I’m careful, it shouldn’t be a problem! I want to see…just what is below here.” Luo Feng hesitated a little at first, after which he swiftly made a decision. However in the time he decided, a terrifying battle filled aura immediately descended on him!

“Rumble…”

Powerful pressure! Just like the some distant ancient demon god had appeared!

“Not good!” Luo Feng’s expression changed, immediately swiftly rushing into the sky!

Hu!

The surrounding 1,000km space immediately condensed, almost like a deep swamp. The entire space became an endless swamp. Luo Feng fought hard to fly up, however with the pressure from the condensed space, it made his speed lower by 1,000 times. The pressure was just unbelievable.

“Before me, you cannot flee.” A thick voice resounded in Luo Feng’s ears and mind.

“Hm?” Luo Feng’s expression changed and he looked upwards.

In mid air, he saw a majestic silhouette. This person was dressed in a blood red long robe, with long hair that reached his legs and had eyes that were a peculiar blood red. His presence there gave off the feeling of an endless blood ocean.

That blood thirsty aura, made even one's soul tremble.

"What a terrifying being." Luo Feng's gaze focused. Since his willpower was incredibly sturdy, he was able to defend against the enemy's energy pressure.

"Oh my!"

"Blood god Baqi." The tall and sturdy man in the blood red robe stood in mid air, saying slowly, his voice resounding continuously around the pit. "You are really not bad. You are only at cloud level pinnacle, yet you were actually able to kill a blood demon I tamed that just entered the domain level. Looks like you've already stepped through the gateway to the laws, and doing not bad at that!"

Luo Feng was shocked.

Tamed blood demon?

That warrior that had completely been taken over by the killing aura's willpower and had been reduced to a mad demon, was actually tamed? Right, after becoming a mad demon it didn't have any intelligence and had only the basic killing intent. His

intelligence as low as a wild beast. If one's power was very strong, like taming wild beast, there was definitely a way to control this mad demon.

However...

The mad demons normally could only slaughter.

"Cloud level pinnacle, having so many achievements in the laws. Breaking through cloud level, to achieve the domain level, there is a huge difference. Yet, you killed the blood demon. You...are very exceptional!" The blood red robed man in mid air said slowly. Even though he was complimenting, his voice was still cold, "I admire you!"

"You have two choices now!"

"One, submit to me, Blood god, and become one of my blood god guards. Henceforth, when I take over the world, you will be one of my loyal subjects. When I become the most exceptional and glaring being of Blood River continent, you too will receive eternal glory."

"Two, go against me, and that will lead you to your death!"

The blood red robed man looked down on Luo Feng, making him shudder within.

What was going on?

He had just killed a mad demon and a terrifying and powerful being, at least a sector lord level 1...otherwise he wouldn't be able to force himself to submit unable to resist! Right now this absolute being was pressuring him to submit?

He was a Virtual Universe Company core member. How can he possibly submit to a warrior of Blood River continent?

"Submit, or death!" The blood robed man gazed down at Luo Feng. "I'll give you 10 counts to decide!"

"10!"

The blood robed mans eyes which were completely red seemed to hold within them endless killing intent. That terrifying willpower pressure had completely descended on Luo Feng, and Luo Feng was like a solid rock trying his best to resist.

"9!"

"8!"

"7!"

.....

Like a god raging, the entire space trembled. Luo Feng felt the

pressure about get more shocking, and that blood robed man's killing intent grew heavier. Luo Feng didn't even suspect that if he didn't make a decision at the end, the enemy would just kill him. From the enemy's incomparably clear willpower, he could tell.

This was a warrior that had slaughtered countless. He was one with exceptional pride and confidence, and he didn't allow anyone to go against him.

"3!" The voice was cold, his eyes gleaming with chill.

"Right now I have two choices. One is to immediately transform to the mosha and instantly escape as far as possible. Simultaneously entering the automaton ship! Using the ship to accelerate and rush to the skies out of the 18 cloud levels! The automaton ship is an E grade ship and is the pinnacle of ships. It belonged to an automaton undying. This man before me...from what I can tell, shouldn't be undying. I have 99% confidence of fleeing."

"Second choice is to submit! Because he obviously regards me as a genius, hence at least my life won't be in danger."

"With the 1st way, the moment I escape, it would reveal my outsider identity. It would result in the entire continent's governing body wanting to kill me. Then I wouldn't be able to return, to the ancient god ruins, which has beneficial effects for my absorption of the blood river crystal. If I wanted to acquire more crystals...the moment I leave, I would lose all chances."

In an instant, many thoughts flashed in Luo feng's mind.

……

"2!" The blood robed man's aura began to change.

"Lord!"

Luo Feng knelt on one knee, with the most proper bow to a superior used in Blood River continent, he knelt and shouted.

Immediately, the blood robed man floating in mid air revealed a smile. He looked satisfied at Luo Feng. "Very well, your talent... should be amongst the top 3 of my blood god guards. I like high talents, and people who know how to make decisions. From now on, you'll be my blood god guard 97!"

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

Suddenly human silhouettes swiftly tore through the skies and appeared. Be it from a distance or descending from above, in a blink of an eye, a total of 96 bronze armored silhouettes stood on the ground. Every one of these bronze armored silhouettes had strong energies. The lowest was at least a domain level existence, with some even exceeding the domain level.

Uniformly, the 96 bronze armored silhouettes knelt on one knee, saying respectfully in unison, "Congratulations Lord, Congratulations!"

“haha, hahaha…” The blood robed man laughed loudly.

“Number one, you are in charge of teaching 97.” The blood robed man laughed loudly, following which he became a blood colored beam of light and swiftly vanished.

……

Luo Feng looked at the surrounding 96 bronze armored silhouettes and was filled with shock within. By using his strong consciousness and willpower to feel about…he could deduce that among the 96 before him, 94 of them should be domain lord level (domain level) and 2 were actually sector lord (world level).

“97!” A tall bronze armored warrior walked over, he smiled. “Congratulations on becoming one of our blood god guards! You are the only cloud level of the blood god guards!”

“Just what are the blood god guards, and…who’s the lord?” Luo Feng was curious, asking.

“Haha…”

The tall warrior and the other guards had a obvious difference, that was a blood red engraving on his armor. Among all the blood god guards, only two of them had this blood red engraving. The two were both at the sector lord level! This man before him, was one of the two sector lords.

“Our lord is an exceptionally rare genius, who could only be found one in a trillion years, from the undying shrine.” The tall warrior’s voice resounded loudly and was filled with pride. “And in the undying shrine, our lord’s status, isn’t lower than some of the undying spirits!”

The other group of bronze armored silhouettes, many were filled with excitement and worship.

“If the lord wishes, he could breakthrough to undying in a short time.” The tall warrior said proudly. “Only, he doesn’t want that little achievement. You must know…our lord has already absorbed 8 blood river crystals.”

“What, 8?” Luo Feng was startled.

My god.

After absorbing 10 blood river crystals, one could become the legendary black warrior. And it was supposed to only be a legend.

The tall warrior was satisfied at Luo Feng’s shock, nodding, “Right! Our lord’s aim is to become the legendary black warrior! For you to become one of the blood god guards, you should feel proud. Because, there are countless who wish to become one of us, yet they cannot receive the lord’s recognition.”

Chapter 43 – Savage Beast Qi Niu

“Isn’t becoming a black warrior extremely hard?” Luo Feng was curious, asking, “From the books I’ve read, becoming a black warrior is almost simply a legend. However, to become a blood warrior, people still have some hope.”

“But of course.” The tall blood god guard laughed loudly, “Black warrior, that is the pride of our Blood River continent. Only after an immeasurable amount of time will one be born. And it’s been very very long since we’ve had a black warrior. Afterall, absorbing the blood river crystals, every one would have an increased requirement of ten times from before, and every person’s body has a limit. After a certain extent….the killing aura of the Ancient God ruins won’t have any use on the body. At that time, then that’d be no hope.”

Luo Feng was shocked.

Limit?

Right, he had only absorbed 2 crystals currently, and the killing aura was still benefitting his body. However one’s body would have a limit afterall. When that is reached, even staying in the Ancient God ruins wouldn’t be effective at all.

“Let’s hope that my body can take more.” Luo Feng thought.

“Come, 97. Let me introduce you.” The tall blood god guard walked towards the others. “I am the captain of the guards,

number 1. You'll call me captain from now on. This is number 2, the vice captain."

"97."

"How do you do 97."

The many bronze armored warriors walked up to introduce themselves to Luo Feng, because they were all clear that the title of blood god guards were the closest guard team to the Blood God. They were like his right arms. In the future, their group would go through thick and thin together. Hence, they had to get close and be on good terms with each other. Afterall, they would become life and death brothers.

"97, you are the smallest."

"Small and young."

"Haha, 73, don't look down on 97. This 97 is the only cloud level that has been allowed in."

"You bunch of punks. 97, he even killed a blood demon. According to the levels of the outsiders, that is a domain lord level 1 blood demon." The blood god captain Number 1 laughed loudly. "Their levels are ten times different, and that blood demon has even stepped through the laws gateway. However, 97 still won so simply. In terms of origin law comprehension, most of us don't even compare to him."

Immediately the group of guards all looked shocked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng was shocked within.

One of the reason was because the captain knew of the term domain lord and the levels. The second reason was because he actually knew that Luo Feng had won easily against the blood demon, knowing that the demon had also stepped through the entrance of the origin laws.

And the lord before hadn't spoken much in detail before too.

"Looks like, my battle before had been completely monitored." Luo Feng thought. "Right, him and the vice captain, are the considered to be right hand and left hand of the blood god. Them and the blood god Baqi were all sector lord level. Sector lords could use their world energy...the wonder of the world energy. This was something his earth body had yet to discover, it was normal."

"97!"

The captain number 1 smiled at Luo Feng. "From now on, we are all life and death brothers, all blood god guards!"

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"Haha...come, follow me." The captain looked at the others. "All

of you return to your posts, go back to your training and whatever."

"Yes, captain."

"Understood, captain."

"Little thing, we'll chat next time."

A group of bronze silhouettes spoke and became beams of lights heading in all directions.

……

The captain brought Luo Feng. They were walking along the bottom of the huge pit and talking along the way, "The Ancient God ruins is the most ancient and mysterious place of our Blood River continent. Back then, our ancient warriors of the continent defended against the outsiders here. The outsiders were extremely strong, you cannot even begin to imagine."

"Ah?" Luo Feng was shocked. "Just how strong are the outsiders?"

"I don't know either." Number 1 shook his head. "Anyway they are just terrifying. Just imagine, back then many undying spirits fell in this Ancient God ruins. From this, you should already know how intense and tragic that battle was."

“Enough about the outsiders, I need to warn you of…the Ancient God ruins! Don’t wander about alone here.” Number 1 emphasized. “The lord is training in his palace here. The duty of us blood god guards is to protect him, killing enemies around. As he is training here, naturally we are all training here in the ruins too.”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

Training in the Ancient God ruins was a good thing.

“However here in the ruins, there are many dangerous places. This huge pit is one of them.” Number 1 pointed into the sky. “Above, is the killing aura whirlpool. The aura at the whirlpool core is terrifying. The aura there will make one unable to resist, it’s terrifying.”

“Whirlpool?” Luo Feng pretended to be curious. In truth, he had already seen it before.

“Hm, this bottom and the top part of the pit, the aura is already thick enough.” Number 1 said shocked. “However the closer you get to the whirlpool core, the thickness grows even more. I’ve heard that in the core center, the thickness reaches close to 10 times!”

“Close to 10 times?” Luo Feng was truly shocked now.

Before, he had made it to a region of 8 times, he could already see

with his naked eye the core center of the whirlpool, and did not dare to approach closer.

"Hm." Number 1 emphasized. "It's very dangerous there, even my willpower can at most take up to 5 times only. I've heard that our lord is able to reach a region of 7 times."

"7 times?" Luo Feng thought, just weaker than himself.

However to be able to reach 7 times, this blood god Baqi was already named a genius from a trillion years on Blood River continent. In terms of pure willpower...Luo feng was already much stronger than many sector lord pinnacles.

"Hence, you have to be careful." Number 1 emphasized. "The moment you rush in and get invaded by the killing aura willpower...you will become like the blood demon you defeated before."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded seriously.

This huge pit is one of the dangers of the Ancient God ruins. such a place, there are probably millions of these in the entire ruins. All are incomparably dangerous places where the aura gathers." Number 1 exclaimed. "There are also many other dangerous places that haven't been discovered over countless years. Anyway, recklessly wandering about will be tragic."

Luo Feng was shocked

Millions of such places?

“Follow me to the palace.” The captain became a beam of light.

Luo Feng followed.

Luo Feng looked ahead at this palace that was erected amidst the red aura. It was about 2 km in length and width, and was a total of 7 storeys tall.

“Come in.” The captain entered and Luo Feng followed.

Very quickly arriving at the 2nd level.

“Ah?” Luo Feng’s ears moved. Looking in the distant room, that door was open, from within it, weak howls resounded.

The captain looked at Luo Feng’s expression and explained. “That’s where we tame the blood demons.”

“Ah.” Luo Feng nodded.

Blood demons, also the mad warriors.

“Our blood god guard living quarters are on the 3rd level.” The captain arrived at the 3rd level and followed the pathway,

simultaneously pointing at a 1m wide walkway, “Beside every room is a number, from 1 to 200. Right now, 96 of them are taken, yours will be 97!”

3rd level of the palace, room 97, the door automatically opened.

“Di!”

A green light shined on Luo feng who had just entered.

“This is?” Luo feng was shocked.

“Don’t be shocked. This is a quantum computer that manages the entire palace.” The captain smiled. “These quantum computers were acquired from the outsiders back from the Ancient God battles. However, creating these quantum computers was extremely hard. Even among the undying shrines, only the upper levels have it.”

“Ah.” Luo Feng gave a look of envy.

Quantum computers? There was plenty in the universe, one could buy as much as he wanted. And he had a living AI that was much better.

Room 97, it was 20m tall and 30m long and wide room.

“This is your genetic armor.” The captain pointed at a bunch of

stuff neatly organized on the ground. “These genetic armors will defend you according to how strong your genetic energy is. Simultaneously, it will change according to your will and is able to seal up all vital areas. Even if broken, it can quickly regenerate. It’s a very advanced armor. Only very few in blood river continent have it.”

“Hm.” Luo feng stared at the bronze armor.

“This is a communication device!” The captain pointed at the bracelet beside. “Wear it, and through it, you can contact the other guards and the lord! Simultaneously…the lord will know where you are from it!”

Luo Feng hesitated a little.

Communication device?

Probably more of a surveillance device.

“The lord has ordered that no blood god guard, without the lord’s orders, can leave him more than 100k km. If one does so, he would be deemed a traitor and killed.” The captain stared at Luo Feng and emphasized. “You must always remember…the moment you betray the lord, with his future position in the undying shrine, there’s nowhere for you to run in the entire Blood River continent.”

“Understood.” Luo Feng nodded.

Boom!

Luo Feng felt the ground of the palace slightly tremble. Boom! Boom! Trembles resounded all over. It was a heavy sound, it almost felt like the footsteps of a giant that was nearby.

“Hm?” The captain was shocked too, quickly leaving the room.

Luo Feng followed out of the room into the walkway. With one look, he could see ahead of the 10m wide walkway, there was a 12m tall, 20m long 4 hooved beast. From its appearance, it was similar to the bull like animals of earth. The muscles on its body solid and wrapped all about. There were also two curved horns protruding from the top of its head.

Those hooves were as thick as water jars, sturdy and forceful.

Its entire body was bronze in color, and the eyes were blood red. The most peculiar thing was its horns, they were so sharp that it made hearts tremble. Just from its walking along the pathway alone, its horns seemed to tear through the air and shake the space.

“Lord Qi Niu.” Number 1 bowed.

“Hm!” That 4 storey tall beast Qi Niu gazed down at Luo Feng. A fierce energy emanated from him, “He’s the new 97?”

“Yes, Lord Qi Niu.” Number 1 said, simultaneously communicating to Luo Feng, “97, this beast Qi Niu…is even stronger than our lord. His position in the undying shrine is very high too. He’s like brothers with our lord.”

Luo Feng was stunned.

Chapter 44 – Ecstasy

Wild beast, their position in the Blood river continent was very low. There were those that were tamed and used as riding beasts, others were directly killed and their bodies were used for materials.

In all, the beasts had always been suppressed by humans.

“A wild beast Qi Niu was actually able to hold a high position within the undying shrine? Even if it was strong, it wasn’t an undying. Yet, for it to get a high position that is simply unbelievable! The undying shrine, that was the highest governing echelon of Blood River continent.” Luo feng was shocked, simultaneously bowing and looking at the wild beast ahead of him, “Lord Qi Niu!”

The wild beast Qi Niu stood in the walkway, lowering his gaze to look at the tiny dot.

“Hm!” A burning energy emitted from his nostrils, almost like two burning heatwaves, his red eyes stared hard at Luo Feng.

Rumble!

In an instant the world came crashing down. A formless pressure immediately acted on Luo Feng’s soul, almost like a heavy hammer smashing on his soul, causing him to snort involuntarily, as heavy sweat was beading from his forehead. However, he still stood his ground, posture upright, as he was obviously not submitting.

“Lord Qi Niu!” The captain number 1 shouted. “97 is still only cloud level.”

“Hm.”

A low sound resounded from his nostrils, following which the pressure vanished.

“This 97 is not bad!” Qi Niu’s voice rumbled. “I think he can take very strong killing aura as well. Here’s two blood river crystals! Take it as a gift from Lord Qi Niu and absorb it well. After you’ve absorbed these two, come and look for me for the 3rd one.”

Two prism shaped crystals suddenly appeared in mid air and floated towards Luo Feng.

While floating, the beauty of the blood red crystals made one’s heart tremble.

“Blood river crystal?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed and extended his hands to receive them.

“Quickly thank Lord Qi Niu.” The captain said.

“Thank you Lord Qi Niu.” Luo Feng bowed.

“Hm.”

Another two hot waves of heat burst from his nostrils and with a snort, he gradually walked away. Each step from his thick hooves, the moment one landed, he was already far away, finally he vanished.

“This wild beast Qi Niu has such strong pressure and strength. Back when the captain said he was stronger than blood god Baqi, that was definitely the truth” Luo Feng watched Qi Niu vanish. Feeling happy within, he gripped the two crystals gleefully. “hehe” These were the easiest crystals he had acquired.

Back in Swallow Mound city, he had acquired 14 crystals, (Rockwind brothers a total of 3, Pure Feather Tao 1, undying shrine envoys 10).

Later, in the Ancient God ruins, he encountered the 4 geniuses from the undying shrine. While ambushed, he killed 1 of them, and was able to acquire 1 more.

A total of 15 crystals! For every one of them, he had to kill to get them. Only these 2 in his hand...

“97, as long as you can absorb, Lord Qi Niu will supply you with blood river crystals.” The tall and sturdy bronze armored warrior number 1 laughed carefree. “Right now amongst our blood god guards, only 5 of them are able to absorb 3 crystals and successfully become blood warriors! I have high hopes for you.”

“Hm!” Luo Feng nodded, following which he asked curiously.

“This blood river crystal, I can ask for as many as I want?”

“Of course not.”

Captain number 1 smiled and shook his head. “The crystals are treasures of our Blood River continent! However, the number of crystals each person can absorb…is truly too little. Over countless years on this continent…it’s been a long time since anyone has absorbed 10 crystals and become a black warrior. The number of crystals Lord Qi Niu provides is sufficient.”

“Ah.” Luo feng nodded.

Sounds like…

Within this blood god Baqi’s place, the person in charge of giving crystals was actually Qi Niu.

“You should know everything now.” Number 1 nodded. “Right now you can train within the training grounds of the palace or look for an isolated spot outside! You are here as a guard and not a prisoner. However the single requirement, you should know right?”

“100k km, I have to be within a 100k km from the lord at all times.” Luo Feng smiled.

“Very good.”

Number 1 nodded and left.

******

Palace level 3, training room 97.

Luo Feng wore the bronze armor and wore the communication device. Shaking his head, “This communication device sure is simple, a simple and fixed system. In terms of technology, it’s about the same as earth’s communication watch back then.”

“Blood god BaQi, wild beast Qi Niu, 96 blood god guards.” Luo feng ‘s mind was swiftly filled with thoughts. “According to the gathered data, Blood god Baqi should be a sector lord pinnacle who had absorbed 8 crystals and was known as a 1 in a trillion years absolute genius in the undying shrine. This was definitely a high ranking.”

“Wild beast Qi Niu is stronger than BaQi. Like brothers with BaQi, he should be the 2nd most important figure in this power.”

“96 blood god guards all have high talents. They have 2 sector lords and 94 domain lords.”

“Right now in this Ancient God ruins...they are mainly here for blood god Baqi’s training.” Luo Feng instantly understood, why during his two years in his huge pit quarters, he never discovered any warriors below. This was because blood god Baqi was in

training, and the guards couldn't leave too far.

"From the looks of it."

"Even though I've become a guard, later on it should be more relaxed." Luo Feng wore the bronze armor, and boots and was just about to leave when 5 silhouettes entered.

"97!"

"97!"

These 5 were all dressed in the same bronze armor, their physiques however were completely different. They all smiled and waved.

"12, 19, 33, 78, 83." Luo Feng shouted familiarly.

"When we were in our training rooms earlier, we discovered Lord Qi Niu had arrived." Number 12, who looked almost like a skinny teenager smiled, "According to the old rules, Lord Qi Niu should have given you 2 crystals right?"

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"97, have you absorbed any crystals before?" Beside, the fat and bulky 19 asked.

“I’ve absorbed 1 before.” Luo Feng said.

The 5 guards and Luo feng thus began a casual chat. Luo Feng had already planned his background well, the group chatted for awhile and half an hour later, the 5 of them left. As they left, number 12 emphasized, “97, remember, whenever you meet Qi Niu, you have to respectfully call him Lord Qi Niu.”

“Right, you cannot disrespect him at all. Whoever does, he will get extremely angry.” The handsome 83 said.

“Ah?” Luo Feng was curious, “I actually don’t know his strength, how can he be even stronger than Lord blood god?”

“Haha…”

“Wild beasts are separated into 4 categories. Category 1 reaches the ground level at maturity, 2 reaches the sky level, 3 the cloud level, 4 the domain level.” 12 spoke cleanly and fast. “And the wild beast Qi Niu, is in the 4th category. He was born with a domain, a gold domain.”

“The higher the category, it represents the stronger bloodline and the more exceptional body.”

“You should know…”

“This blood river crystal can be used by any flesh and blood living creatures. Not just us humans, wild beasts…too can absorb

the crystals.” 12 smiled.

Luo Feng felt a clap of thunder in his mind.

Any flesh and blood living creatures can use?

“Haha, 97, you don’t seem to know?”

“97.” Blood god guard 83 exclaimed. “Compared to humans, the wild beasts’ bodies are stronger and more exceptional. They can normally absorb more than us humans. According to the experience of the undying shrine, beasts that are proficient in metal type normally absorb the crystals even better and gain more benefits.”

“Qi Niu, is a high level beast…category 4, who is also proficient in metals.”

“Hence, every wild beast Qi Niu, can at least absorb 3 crystals. And the exceptional ones among them can even absorb 10.” 83 exclaimed. “This Lord Qi Niu, has already absorbed 12 crystals. Plus, he’s a sector lord pinnacle, hence he is terrifyingly strong.

Luo Feng stood there stunned.

Silence.

“97?”

“What’s wrong 97?” The other 5 shouted.

“Ah…”

Luo Feng awoke, exclaiming, “I was too shocked. From the books I’ve read…it’s already been countless years since the appearance of a black warrior. It’s already become a legend. I didn’t expect Lord Qi Niu to have already absorbed 12 blood river crystals!”

“Humans and beasts are different.”

“No point in being jealous.”

“Luckily, category 4 beasts are very rare.” The 5 exclaimed.

“Hm, right.” Luo Feng followed suit beside.

Finally the 5 left.

******

When they left, with only Luo Feng remaining in the training room, he shut the door and revealed a look of ecstasy.

“My god!”

“My god!”

“I’m such an idiot, really an idiot. I actually didn’t even think of it!” Luo Feng’s look was that of pure ecstasy. His fists gripped tight and madness roared within, “Any blood and flesh living being can absorb the crystals. Blood and flesh…right, the blood river crystal is absorbed through the blood and it changes the body’s cell structure.”

“Humans are blood and flesh life forms.”

“So is the golden horned beast!”

Luo Feng was extremely excited. “It’s extremely taxing for my human body to absorb the crystals. However, what about the golden horned beast?”

“They had said earlier that the higher the level of the body, the easier it is to absorb. Especially those proficient in metal types…”

“Even though, I don’t know why one has to be proficient in metal types to have better benefits for the absorption!”

“However!”

“The golden horned beast, that is the most pinnacle bloodline in the entire universe, reaching sector lord at maturity! It is born with 3 great natural talents. It is proficient in metal types, is also a favored child of the universe gold laws.” Luo Feng was extremely

excited. “Compared to the golden horned beast, that wild beast Qi Niu is nothing!”

“If that wild beast Qi niu can absorb 12 blood river crystals!”

“Just how many can my golden horned beast absorb?”

“Haha...”

Luo Feng couldn’t suppress his ecstasy within. He had a feeling that the golden horned beast was originally his strongest trump card. And absorbing the blood river crystals, may give a new change to the already intrepid and powerful golden horned beast!

Chapter 45 – Golden Horned Beast's Change.

Palace level 3.

Luo Feng who was dressed in the bronze armor, swiftly left the training room and exited the palace entrance.

"To the Huge Pit quarters!" Luo Feng looked up in the sky at the red killing aura that was revolving and he rushed into the sky.

Sou!

The huge pit was very deep, Luo Feng continued to fly upwards.

"97."

"97." Two voices resounded in his mind, causing him to stop and float in mid air. To be able to detect him without him even knowing, other than Baqu within the palace and Qi Niu, only the two captains of the blood god guards would be able to do it.

Luo Feng looked around and floated there, replying respectfully. "Captain, vice captain."

"97, where are you heading to to train?" A thick voice resounded around him.

"Captains, for the past two years, I have been training in a cave

along the mountain wall above." Luo Feng explained. "Hence, I'm prepared to head there."

"97, this high altitude region is mine and number 2's jurisdiction." The voice continued. "You'll be safer training below! Of course...the lord has ordered that no one is to leave more than 100,000 km away. You can go to your cave quarters, however we cannot observe and guarantee your safety."

The two captains of the blood god guards were sector lords.

The two of them released their world energy around to scan. While training they naturally maintained their surveillance, however their range was limited.

"The moment there's danger, I will come down immediately." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"Hm, since you insist, then go on."

"Right."

Luo Feng bowed respectfully and immediately rushed into the sky.

.....

Deep in the huge pit, within the platforms of uneven walls on the

side of the mountains, there was a tall and sturdy bronze armored silhouette sat crossed legged. “This 97 is extremely gifted, and the lord favors him too. However...the most important thing to becoming a blood god guard is loyalty! Number 2, from what I see, this 97 hasn’t completely submitted to the lord yet.”

“Number 1!”

A noise resounded from 10,000km away on yet another platform. “Geniuses are all confident and proud. It won’t be easy to get him to submit completely. He also only submitted from being forced by the lord...let’s just see how it goes. The lord will be training for a while. In the meantime, we will observe him. If we find any other motives of his, it won’t be too late to kill him!”

“Hm, you are right. If and once we find enough evidence we’ll kill him.”

The two sector lords at a distance of 10,000km, communicated and made decisions.

.....

Even though the group of blood god guards treated him well, they were still ultimately most loyal to the blood god Ba Qi. Loyalty and strength couldn’t be lacking at all! And Luo Feng obviously hadn’t received the recognition of the group of guards yet, especially the two sector lords...who had special privileges.

They always observed the other guards, and had the right to punish them.

Ancient god ruins, huge pit, huge pit quarters.

A green light pierced through the cave, following which it condensed. It was the bronze armored Luo Feng. He sat on the stone chair excitedly.

“This purpose of this communication device is to keep track of me.” Luo Feng looked at his bracelet. “If I leave more than 100,000km away or destroy it, it would arouse the attention of the Blood God. However…since there’s no danger and instead, there are benefits, I have no need to leave. I’ll temporarily remain loyal here as a blood god guard.”

Luo Feng smiled, he flipped his hand.

In his palm a space ring and a black stone appeared. This black stone was the Mosha transformed body, the space ring held within it, the 15 blood river crystals!

He had acquired 14 in Swallow mound city, killing the undying shrine genius gave him one more and Qi Niu had given him another 2.

And his earth body had already absorbed 2, hence he had 15 left.

“Let’s begin!” Luo Feng muttered within.

Shua!

The black stone touched the space ring and immediately vanished into his palm, entering his internal world.

……

Internal world.

The skies were engulfed in endless gold mist. This vast continent was completely gold, and only the edges were black, and this continuous mountain range was at least 10km long.

Shua!

The black stone appeared beside this black mountain range, following which it transformed into a black clothed Luo Feng. In his palm was a space ring…the ring which held the 15 crystals. Right now, the internal world could take in foreign items that he brought in and not destroy them.

Other living things that tried to enter would all be destroyed!

Whether it was swallowing some life form or materials, all of them would be digested. If he over ate and couldn’t digest everything, it would bloat the internal world and it would implode!

“15 blood river crystals, mysterious crystals. It’s a pity that only flesh and blood life forms can absorb it.” The Mosha Luo feng held the space ring, “It’s too bad that the Mosha couldn’t absorb the crystals.”

Rumble!

The black mountain range beside suddenly began to move, completely standing upright. This was a beast whose body alone reached 60km. As for its 4 hoof claws..every one of them were thick. It’s thickest thigh portion was 6km thick, the thinnest parts were 3 to 4 km thick. It was simply like 4 heavenly pillars!

Any one claw alone was taller than the Himalayan mountains!

As for it’s cold dark golden eyes, every pupil was like a large lake, like two dark golden suns staring down.

“Terrifying.”

“Even looking at it myself, I find the golden horned beast terrifying.” Mosha Luo Feng looked up at the golden horned beast and muttered, “The universe has so many forms of life forms. Every one of them can be separated into countless divisions of races and clans. Of all the life forms, the golden horned beast stands above all.”

“Just its physical structure alone holds terrifying strength. This

pure brute force could easily kill human warriors 2 to 3 levels above it."

"Plus its natural talents!"

"Right now it is also training Deities of the World. Even if my mosha body meets the golden horned beast, it would have to flee too." Mosha Luo Feng muttered. Compared to the golden horned beast, maybe the mosha clan body was better at assassination. However, when facing one head on...it was much weaker. The golden horned beast was naturally intrepid with its natural abilities, making it incomparably powerful!

"Howl!"

The tall black mountain like beast raised its head and howled. The howl shook the land and skies, following which it extended its right claw and Mosha Luo Feng took one blood river crystal and placed it on it.

The golden horned beast's two sun like eyes gazed at the crystal on its claw following which its claw opened and grabbed. The sharp blade like claws slashed its palm and cut through the black scales and skin, fresh blood seeped out.

The golden horned beast carefully used its spirit energy to control the crystal.

The crystal was gently placed on the wound, the wound was at

least 10m long. The crystal simply dropped right in and a formless energy swiftly rushed through the golden horned beast's body.

"Rumble!"

"Kill!"

"Kill!"

The killing intent rushed into its body. The golden horned beast's willpower was Luo Feng's willpower, condensed and solid, like a blade, this little killing aura didn't even do anything.

"Chi chi..." Red threads of energy poured out from the crystal and followed the slash wound swiftly deep into the golden horned beast's bones and muscles. Immediately a special change began to occur in its right claw, the scales there and the claws began to change, the bones and muscles too began to change...

Everything was very familiar.

In an instant, it ended.

The absorption of the 1st crystal was a success!

"What's going on?"

“How can this be?” Using his spirit energy he scanned the golden horned beast’s every part. He was very shocked, “How can, how can it be that only this right claw changed?”

The golden horned beast lowered its head and its golden eyes carefully examined its right claw. It had just absorbed the 1st crystal, however it was completely different from his human body absorbing the crystal. Even though that blood river crystal held within it a mysterious energy, that energy however only produced a special change in its right claw.

As for the rest of the beast itself.

Like its trunk and body, wings, the other 3 claws, tail, head... there wasn’t any changes at all.

“Damn, it can’t be?”

“Don’t tell me...”

Standing beside the golden horned beast, Mosha Luo Feng looked at the huge mountain like golden horned beast. Immediately his eyes gleamed, “Is it because it’s body is too huge?”

“A tub of water is enough for one man to bathe.”

“However, it takes an entire river for the golden horned beast to shower.”

“I think it’s this theory.”

“The golden horned beast’s body is too huge. It’s bones, muscles and cells etc are too numerous. To be able to make everything change, the amount of blood river crystal energy needed must be much more. Hence…one blood river crystal can only cover this right claw. Even the elbow couldn’t be reached.” Luo Feng had guessed it.

……

Rumble!

The golden horned beast waved its right claw, triggering the blood river energy from within, a simple blood red engraving appeared on the surface, its control of the universe energy itself was clearer and cleaner.

“Chi!” It tore through the sky, causing a 10km long slash through the ground.

“It’s indeed easier.”

“Within this one claw, its power was raised by 20-30%.”

“Since that’s so, if I put the other crystals into the other claws, I am sure that the other claws and tail would only raise by 20-30%.

Since that's so...why not make the strong stronger!" Luo Feng immediately decided, "Hm, I'll continue with the 2nd crystal."

Make the strong stronger!

Let its strength get even more exceptional!

.....

The black clothed Luo Feng placed another crystal into the right palm of the beast. The golden horned beast's incomparably huge golden eyes stared at the pam, after which it sliced another wound through the scales.

Chi!

The scales split apart, fresh blood seeped out, once again touching the blood river crystal.

Everything was as Luo Feng had predicted. After defending against the rush of killing intent, the blood threads of mysterious energy entered its right claw. Immediately the bones, muscles and scales began to change from deep within...the range of its change, was exactly the same as the 1st crystal.

Just the right claw, not even reaching close to the elbow.

Once everything had finished, the golden horned beast once

again waved its right claw triggering the mysterious energy.

"Hm."

"This right claw, compared to before the absorption, its power has risen about 50%. It's exactly the same as the human body absorbing the crystals. The only difference is...the crystal completely engulfs the entire human body. As for the golden horned beast, it only changed the right claw."

"Continue!"

"On to the 3rd!" Absorbing 3 crystals would allow one to gain the title blood warrior, there should be something special." Luo Feng anticipated.

Chapter 46 – Change

The 3rd crystal lay in the palm on the scales of the right claw. With a quick slash from another claw, the scales were slit through and fresh blood seeped out. Once again, the absorption began...

The golden horned beast's huge head looked down at its right claw. While observing, a huge painful change began to occur in its right claw...With the special control abilities of the golden horned beast, it could completely control and limit the area of pain on its body. At this time, the 3rd crystal had completely vanished and was absorbed into the right claw.

"Trigger!"

The golden horned beast triggered the mysterious energy from within, immediately on the scales a blood red engraving appeared.

After absorbing the 1st crystal, this engraving was very simple and small.

After the 2nd, it got more complex, it had even doubled in size.

At this point after the 3rd, the engraving had gotten much more complex, almost as though they formed one full perfect body.

"Rumble!"

It waved its right claw, triggering the universe golden origin law energies. With one slash, a formless wave shook the air. A terrifying shockwave immediately exploded the mountain ranges ahead, and large amounts of metal scattered around.

“Compared to before, the strength has totally doubled! The melding level with the universe laws has also doubled.” The golden horned beast couldn’t help but raise its head and howl.

Mosha Luo Feng had high comprehension ability, when it unleashed its strength, it was extremely strong.

The golden horned beast however didn’t have such an ability. Its attack was powerful mainly because of its natural talents and body along with deities of the world etc. And while it had proficiency in law comprehension, in battle, it couldn’t unleash the full potential of the origin law strength.

But now!

With its comprehension to gold and the other laws doubled, even its battle powers had been doubled!

“Even though compared to the Mosha clan’s comprehension ability of 10 times, this is nothing. But, it’s still very impressive.”

“Comprehension had doubled, and strength had doubled as well.” Luo Feng was excited.

Absorbing 3 crystals meant one would become a blood warrior.

A blood warrior had double the normal comprehension and twice the power during battle.

“I’ll continue with the 4th.”

……

The blood river crystal’s abilities were simply too heavenly, raising both comprehension and power! Even though every one of them didn’t raise much by itself, however added together, it was still pretty impressive. One had to know that the Mosha Clansman and other special races in the universe were all races with special abilities.

The golden horned beast relied on brute force!

The mosha clans man was proficient in assassination!

And the blood river crystal…could raise one’s comprehension of all the laws, giving them the feeling of a fish in water.

……

“I really don’t know how these blood river crystals are produced.”

The golden horned beast continued to absorb the 4th crystal. Similarly in its right claw, and this time while the right claw triggered the mysterious energy...the blood red engraving grew even more. The overall growth however this time in comprehension and power seem to be just a little.

The raise itself wasn't obvious, far from the previous 3!

"On to the 5th!"

After the 5th, the moment it triggered the mysterious energy, the engraving got more and more complex. Its melding with the universe origin laws and unleashing all rose by a level as well.

The 6th!

7th!

8th!

.....

"Luckily I have enough blood river crystals. The undying shrine envoy gave me 10, otherwise there would no way the golden horned beast would have 10 to absorb." The black clothed Luo Feng stood at the side, looking at the incomparably huge being the golden horned beast as it began to absorb its 10th crystal.

If it were a human, absorbing the 10th would make him a black warrior.

The black warrior in blood river continent was a legend, belonging to the pinnacle of humans who had absorbed the crystals.

“Who knows what will happen to the golden horned beast after absorbing the 10th crystal.”

“Let’s begin!”

chi!

The golden horned beast used its sharp claw to slash its right palm, slicing through the scales. The 10th beautiful blood river crystal fell into its palm and immediately, the beast used its spirit energy to control it to land on its palm. As it made contact, the absorption began, an even madder killing intent was produced.

“The killing intent attack from this 10th crystal is still very normal, it cannot affect me. It pales in comparison to the core of the whirlpool.”

“The changes in the bones and muscles have already reached a very painful stage. However, I can still bear with it...ah!!!”

The golden horned beast let out an incomparably painful howl.

Howl!

Howl!

It shook the skies.

“Damn!” The pain made black clothed Luo feng kneel on one knee, and the earth body Luo Feng in the Huge pit quarters too grabbed the floor. The pain caused sweat to fall constantly from his forehead, yet he gritted his teeth hard.

“It’s too painful!”

“It’s simply, simply…”

The pain from the right claw directly affected its soul, the 3 bodies all shared one soul! As the golden horned beast howled in pain, the Mosha body and the earth body all were in extreme pain too. This pain far exceeded the physical level, even to the point where the soul’s will power couldn’t control it…

It entered deep into the soul.

“Howl!”

“Wail!!!” The golden horned beast, as the initial and direct point of pain had to endure the strongest pain. It couldn’t control its

body as it flew madly into the skies of the metal continent, crashing about, large amounts of golden mountains crumbling as it smashed into them, the ground had huge 10km deep craters.

As the golden horned beast was in excruciating pain, the right claw had become a pale gold color. The scales seemingly thinner, the tips of the claw too had become a pale gold, as though the tips of those blade like claws had countless little engravings.

Chi chi...

The scales returned to black and the claws returned to its original state, the pain slowly dissipated.

“Hu!” Black clothed Luo Feng stood up.

Luo Feng who was in the huge pit quarters too let out a sigh of relief.

The golden horned beast stood on the ground for awhile before stirring.

“I had known earlier that absorbing the 10th crystal would be special. However, I didn’t expect the pain to be like that.” Luo Feng was speechless. People with weak consciousness, just from the pain...their souls would have long crumbled and died.

“Howl!”

The golden horned beast rumbled and stood up, waving its heavenly pillar like right limb, simultaneously triggering the mysterious energy within. As it was triggered...the surface scales of its right claws had a huge change. The scales, bones, muscles, claws, and its innermost essence were swiftly changing as well.

This was a change that occurred at its very core and essence!

Such a change was obvious even on the outside. The right claw scales were thinner and were a pale gold in color. The muscles seemed to have doubled in thickness, the veins and vessels within had all become a pale gold in color, and the tip of the claw itself... had become a pale gold blade like claw. It seemed like there were countless engravings that were impossible to see with the naked eye.

Simultaneously!

The entire right claw had an incomparably complex and perfect blood red engraving, it had formed one full body!

“This, this...”

Black clothed Luo feng and the earth body were both completely shocked.

The golden horned beast looked at its right claw, seeing clearly the unbelievable power coursing through it, it waved fiercely...

“The comprehension and unleashing of the origin laws is 3 times from before absorption of any crystals!” Luo Feng’s consciousness could clearly feel the right claws huge change. “This, this was still within my calculations. However right now the right claw itself…it actually, had a change in its very core!”

Normal carbon was formed from carbon atoms.

Iron ore too was formed from carbon atoms.

A change in its essence, its physical appearance and strength too would go through change. And after absorbing the 10th crystal, that mysterious energy seemed to change the body itself, infusing a special effect, and actually directly changing the essence of the right claw. Not just its interior, but also the scales outside were changed to a pale gold in color.

“What power.”

“The strength of this right claw can match up to the entire strength of its whole body from before.” The golden horned beast gently waved its right claw, creating shockwaves every time.

Just how huge was its body?

Its strength was mostly derived from its huge size, and the tail which was almost as long as the entire body, along with the huge wings and the 4 claws!

And right now, just the strength within the right claw alone was comparable to its entire body, what idea was that?

“Natural ability strength, doubles my strength.”

“And the right claw now has the strength of the entire body from before. If I can completely control the full strength, with one slash…wouldn’t that be 2 times the full body power from before?”

“The change in the right claw, in terms of strength is akin to the natural ability strengthen.” Luo Feng was shocked.

Blood river crystal!

The peculiar and terrifying crystal was not only changing the beast in terms of universe origin laws, but also the essence in its body itself.

Actually during the first absorption, Luo Feng felt that the crystal itself was able to change the essence of the body, able to instantly transform one into a beast man, scaled man, and so on. However, that was simply during the absorption process alone. The moment it ended, everything would return to normal. Even though Luo Feng had always suspected that the crystal had other abilities.

However he hadn’t discovered them yet!

After absorbing 3 crystals, he hadn't discovered it.

After absorbing 10 crystals, only then did he realize it's terrifying ability!

"The golden horned beast's right claw itself has to be strengthened at least 10 times, before it is comparable to its full body strength." Luo Feng was shocked. This mission of blood river world, was indeed the right choice.

Absorbing 10 blood river crystals.

The golden horned beast's most proficient body strength had doubled.

As for the law comprehension and law unleashing, they had increased by 3 times from before! Its entire strength...had indeed leapt quite a lot.

"Continue absorbing!"

"Even that Qi Niu could absorb 12 crystals, my golden horned beast should be able to take more." Luo Feng was extremely excited.

.....

The golden horned beast raised its head and let out an excited

roar, once again beginning to absorb another crystal.

The 11th...the pain was indeed strong, however it was obviously weaker than the absorption of the 10th, not as excruciating as before.

After successfully absorbing the 11th, indeed, its law comprehension and unleashing all had risen.

the 12th...

13th...

14th...

15th...

Ah, no more.

“No more, I have no more crystals. They’ve all been absorbed!”

“I need more crystals!”

“I need more, the more the merrier!”

The golden horned beast raised its head and howled. The black clothed Luo Feng too clenched his fists, and the Luo feng outside in

the huge pit quarters frowned, “Blood river crystals, I need large amounts of it. But, where do I get them?”

Chapter 47 – Hunting Plan

Huge Pit quarters, Luo Feng who was dressed in the bronze armor sat on the stone chair and pondered.

“Qi Niu has blood river crystals. Even though I can get as many as I want, normal warriors can only absorb so many. Hence, the number of crystals he has definitely has a limit, and I am afraid I can at most get 1 or 2 more from him.” Luo Feng shook his head. That’s definitely not enough.

“Then…” He squinted, “There’s only one way.”

Sou!

A blur rushed into the cloud levels, rushing straight into the 18th level. It was Mosha Luo Feng, and beside him a silver white pyramid appeared. He followed the cabin door into the ship.

Control room.

“Luo Feng, what are you doing?” Babata’s voice resounded in the control room, “Why are you using the Mosha clansmen?”

A black armored Mosha Luo Feng sat in the wide comfortable sofa, revealing a smile. “Babata, don’t worry, I’m using the Mosha for the crystals…” He swiftly repeated the story of the golden horned beast and the crystals, also telling him the aim of all this.

“So absorbing 15 alone isn’t enough? Absorbing 10 alone is that heavenly, so what would happen if you continued on?” Babata was extremely excited.

“Hm.” Mosha Luo Feng nodded, “Hence, I’ll be placing you, the cloud contact vine and all important treasures on the Mosha body, including the life core…within this body. Right now the only thing left in that huge pit quarters is my earth human body. Even if it meets a tragedy and dies, its nothing.”

As long as the core was undamaged, even after the 3 bodies are destroyed, they could be regenerated.

“What you are doing makes sense, leaving the core in the Mosha body. In terms of survival…the Mosha body with this automaton ship is indeed much safer.” Babata admitted, “What are you preparing to do now?”

“Hunt!”

Mosha Luo Feng revealed a smile, “Blood river continent is endless, with many different worlds, every one of them controlled by sector lords. And the world cities here go up to the tens of millions…the number of sector lords too should be that many. As for the number of domain lords, it’s a hundred times that of the sector lords, even more shocking.”

Blood river continent favors the strong, and all these worlds within, all contest each other.”

“Everyday large amounts of humans die, every year many domain lords die.”

“What I need to do is to secretly hunt a few domain lords.”

“I won’t kill too many either. Since there are tens of millions of worlds in this continent…with thousands of places controlled in each world, I just have to kill 1 domain lord each! Hunting close to ten thousand domain lords all over the entire continent wouldn’t even be anything.” Mosha Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed with excitement. “From one domain lord, I can on average get one crystal. This way, I can get close to ten thousand blood river crystals!”

“I believe that this is possible!”

“This close to 10,000 crystals will be enough.” Mosha Luo feng said softly.

“Haha..vicious! Close to 10,000? Haha, then do it. This is too thrilling. Hurry and leave…use your universe’s strongest assassination clan power.” Babata too had been infected by the excitement from Luo Feng’s explanation.

Hunt! With the entire Blood River continent’s countless worlds as his target…

Secretly hunting, undetectable!

“Let’s go!” Mosha Luo Feng ordered.

Sou!

The automaton ship resembled a meteorite and swiftly flew in the space outside the world.

Blood River continent, Tianyu city, this was an ancient city more than 1 billion km away from the edges of the ancient god ruins.

Tianyu city leader’s mansion, walkway outside the entrance.

“You dare to challenge me within my own territory? You are looking for death! Even if you regret it now, It’s too late!” The green skinned man with cold eyes, dressed in armor sat high on a 10m tall grasshopper beast. He gazed down and ordered, “Give the order, bring that Mozhi family leader here!”

“City leader, that little Mozhi punk is very arrogant. He keeps butting heads with you my lord, he should die! However the Mozhi family is huge. Hence, it’s hard not to have a proud disciple, there’s no need...” Beside, a cloud level general in armor said respectfully.

Pa!

A blur crashed straight into that general knocking him backwards into a large hotel construct behind, making the entire building explode and crumble with rubble flying far into the

distance and hitting heads of passerbys. Some were simply killed on the spot. Immediately there was chaos in the streets.

Sou! From the crumbled building a silhouette flew out. It was the pale general who was spitting out blood. He knelt down respectfully, “City leader, I’m wrong, I know my mistake.”

“Remember!”

“Tianyu territory is my territory!” The cold gaze of the man swept below. “Whoever I say should die, should die! If you dare question me again…it won’t simply be this whip.”

“Understood, understood.” The general was extremely terrified.

“Go, and destroy the entire Mozhi family. If he has to blame someone, then he can blame that punk. My mood was good today, but it was completely destroyed by that little punk. He should take a look at himself first. Something so insignificant, yet he dares to provoke me…I’ll destroy their entire family. It is as simple as killing a little bug.” The man sat on his grasshopper, ordering the group below him before entering his city leader’s mansion.

And that general had just stood up.

“General.” The rest looked at him.

“What are you staring at, hurry and gather the army. We’ll go raze the Mozhi family to the ground!” The general shouted.

“Yes!”

“The Mozhi family in this Tianyu city ranks at least in the top 10 families. Just because of that one little punk offending the city leader, they are finished. What a pity.”

“How did that Mo Chong youth offend the city leader?”

“I don’t know.”

“I heard the city leader dressed up as a normal person and brought two guards along the west Jiuya tower. I don’t know what went on with him and master Mo Chong, they just clashed. And the young master has always been arrogant...today, it was his bad luck that he met the city leader. With his order, the entire Mozhi family is over.”

“Pity, pity.”

“Pity my ass, the city leader isn’t a good person. That Mo Chong is also a bastard. It’s better that more of them die.”

A large group of people gathered in the distance were discussing. Amongst them, Luo Feng who was dressed in a casual black long robe,stood and listened. While revealing a smile, he muttered “I didn’t expect to see such a good show here in Tianyu city. Hm... city leader? That brutality, I hope I get more crystals from you.”

Hu!

The black clothed Luo Feng disappeared without a trace amongst the crowd, invading the city leader's mansion.

……

Within the city leader's mansion, this was a 7 storey luxurious palace.

A cold looking man was lying in a 10m long huge bed. Two beautiful scaled woman with scales on their foreheads were massaging him

"Lighter, lighter. Right, like that."

The man had his eyes closed, ordering them.

"City leader, my sister and I spotted a piece of clothing at the Colored clothes pavilion."

"Buy whatever you see, just buy them. Just settle whatever the amount is with the management in the mansion." The cold eyed man said casually.

"Thank you city leader." The two young ladies said excitedly.

The man's lips however curled into a smile. Holding such power, such control over people's lives, the feeling of making countless people beg before him...it was simply too wonderful a feeling. "My senior sure was stupid, training so hard just to become a world city leader. Is there even a need? I'm living it up...haha, city world leader? Is it so easy to reach there?"

"Life."

"Should be this way!"

Pu Chi!

Three blood colored flashes, the cold eyed man stared in shock. Beside his luxurious huge bed stood a black clothed man, in his hands he wielded a blade and stared coldly at him.

"I'm, I'm dead? How, how can this..." The man felt his life core shatter within. Even though he was shocked, he was still staring, simultaneously his consciousness dissipated.

His life of extravagance had ended.

"How rotten." The black clothed Luo Feng stood beside the bed. He was looking at the three bare naked bodies, his eyes cold, "Leading such a rotten life and he managed to become a domain lord, that's simply pure luck. Or should I say...it's because of his background? The bigger the background, the more I like. The bigger they are, the more crystal they may potentially have."

He swiftly acquired the space ring from that city leader.

“Hm?”

“Two crystals?” Luo Feng smiled, “Not bad, it’s a good start.”

After which, he waved his hand and the three bodies, including that huge bed were all kept in his space ring. He was prepared to destroy all evidence.

Shua!

Black clothed Luo Feng was like a mirage, immediately leaving the mansion and rushing into the skies straight through to the 18th cloud level. After which, he sat in the automaton ship, flying in the space above Blood River continent.

……

Kill one person and change the location immediately.

He was absolutely cautious!

With the competition and killing between each sides of the worlds, wars often erupted. And in these messy situations, a domain lord dying occasionally was a normal thing! And sometimes when the domain lords are killed, their underlings

don’t even know…thinking they might have gone somewhere to train.

……

In space, in a side chamber of the palace, the one in charge of surveillance over the entire Blood River continent.

“Ah?”

“What is his majesty Luo Feng doing. Why is he always in that automaton ship, flying all over. Entering for a while and coming out again.”

“How is that a while, it’s normally a couple of days each.”

“However this frequency is too high.”

“Just what is he doing?”

The group of sector lords in charge of surveillance were all curious, because they didn’t understand just what Luo Feng was doing.

As Mosha Luo Feng was hunting, within the huge pit quarters of the ancient god ruins.

Luo Feng dressed in the bronze armor sat there eyes closed.

“This speed is quite fast. On average I get one crystal everyday.”

“The hunting plan till now, has already lasted for half a year.”

“Including last night’s haul, that should be 98 crystals.” Luo Feng smiled and opened his eyes. “Hm, another two more, that makes it a hundred.”

Chapter 48 – Absorption

Even though he was in the ancient god ruins, Luo Feng was very relaxed.

As his core was within the Mosha body, along with the living AI Babata and the other important things, his earth human body here had nothing to worry about.

“Even if I’m killed, I’d just have to waste some energy from the internal world to regenerate.” Luo Feng closed his eyes. His consciousness was connected to the virtual universe via the quantum computer within his space ring. “In a while, there’ll be a space origin law class. I can’t miss that.”

In a quiet and vast city more than a trillion km away.

Within the city leader’s three story mansion, a man lay in his armor in the training room, and the black clothed Luo Feng stood beside him.

“With these two blood river crystals, it’ll make my total haul since I left the ancient god ruins 100 already.” Black clothed Luo Feng immediately waved his hand and destroyed all the evidence. After which, he left without a trace and rushed into the sky, sitting in his automaton ship and flying in space above.

……

Within the control room of the automaton ship.

Black clothed Luo Feng sat in his sofa and laughed lightly, “External simulation 100%.”

Immediately the scenery about changed. A wild and incredibly beautiful dream like space image, below were the cloud levels of Blood River continent.

“Luo Feng, the previous two times you absorbed 30 crystals each. How many are you prepared for this time?” The lights beside had formed an image of Babata, the little demon smiled happily as he looked at Luo Feng.

“I have prepare 25 for absorption!” The black clothed Luo Feng said.

“Ah...”In the ancient god ruins, the golden horned beast absorbed 15. Plus the 30 crystals it had absorbed twice before. Right now it has absorbed a total of 75 crystals. Plus the 25 today, it’ll make a perfect 100.” The little demon Babata laughed weirdly, “That intense pain, can you take it?”

Black clothed Luo Feng frowned.

Pain?

Right.

Back then during the 10th crystal, it was so painful, even the golden horned beast couldn't help but crash about. At that same time, the other two bodies too suffered intense pain, enough to make one's soul leap out.

The 11th crystal however, didn't hurt as much and was in fact much weaker than the 10th.

However, as more crystals were absorbed, the pain continued to rise gradually, until when he hit the 72nd. The level of pain was comparable to the absorption of the 10th crystal back then. Luo Feng fought with all his might before, getting past until the 75th, however his entire being was in a complete daze.

"Today, will be number 76 to 100. I guess the pain will exceed the previous few times." The little demon warned, "If you cannot take it, we can split them into a few days."

"No problem!"

Black clothed Luo Feng's eyes were focused, "This little pain, if I can't even take this, how can I even think of becoming undying?"

"This isn't just a little pain. If your willpower wasn't strong, your soul would have long crumbled." Babata warned.

"I've never heard of one's soul crumbling from absorbing blood river crystals." Black clothed Luo Feng said softly, "If I can't take

it, I will probably end up fainting. At that point, the absorption will stop, and there will no longer by any danger. And Babata, I have a feeling that when I absorb the 100th crystal...a miracle will happen."

Black clothed Luo Feng's eyes had a hint of anticipation. "Let's begin!"

Shua!

Within the ship, only a core was left. At this point, black clothed Luo Feng had entered his internal world.

.....

Internal world.

The golden horned beast which was like a black mountain range slowly got up. Beside it, the black clothed Luo Feng suddenly appeared.

Hu! A heavenly pillar like right claw was extended and placed before Luo Feng.

"Number 76!" Black clothed Luo Feng took out a triangular blood red crystal and placed it on the scaled palm. It used its claw to slice through and the absorption began...

“Ah!”

Black clothed Luo Feng gripped his fists and gritted his teeth. He stood there and trembled slightly.

“Howl!!!” The golden horned beast rushed into the sky in pain. The two huge cloudlike scaled wings flapped madly, dancing about in the vast metal continent. It occasionally crashed into metal mountains, venting out as it suffered intense pain. After this went on for awhile, it finally stopped.

“Hu.”

“Still ok, it felt a bit better than absorbing 30 consecutively before. Looks like my willpower has been trained and developed more.” Black clothed Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief and released his grip.

The golden horned beast landed and lifted its right claw, triggering the mysterious energy. Immediately the claw changed from a pure black to a pale gold color. The fully armored black golden horned beast was mostly black in color, even its 4 horns only looked gold because of the many golden engravings that lit up.

In truth it was a mix of black and gold.

Only this right claw was completely pale gold, and it held within endless power! And on this right claw was an incomparably

beautiful engraving. It's complexity, compared to the entire body's gold engravings...it didn't have too much of a difference.

However even normal people, they would still feel that the complexity and overall look of this blood red engraving was somewhat lacking.

It had yet to be completed.

"Looking at how complete this engraving is, I feel that only after absorbing the 100th will it be complete." Black clothed Luo Feng stared at the blood red engraving on the right claw.

After absorbing three crystals, the blood red engraving was simple, yet complete.

After the 10th, it was a lot more complex, once again forming a complete picture.

And right now after 76 crystals...

"On to the 77th!" Black clothed Luo Feng placed another crystal into the right palm.

.....

78, 79, 80...

The further he got, the change in the right claw caused such pain that it made the golden horned beast feel like it was dying. However in its bones was a powerful and solid rock like willpower, allowing Luo Feng to bear with it over and over.

Pain!

Intense pain!

……

86, 87, 88…

Ancient god ruins, training room of the huge pit quarters.

Luo Feng's entire body was kneeling in the room. Dressed in his bronze armor, his 10 fingers were like hooks fiercely gripping the stone ground, gripping and reducing the stone to dust. He grit his teeth, crackles could be heard from his teeth, his face was flushed, veins popping out, perspiring profusely from all over, the whole ground was wet.

"Ke chi, ke chi, Pa! Pa! Pa! Spit!" Luo Feng spit fiercely. Two broken teeth flew out of his mouth.

"I…Damn!!!"

"Pain."

“So much pain.”

Luo Feng’s entire body was trembling. Sweat flowed out from the seams of the armor, and his skin felt like almost as though it had been steamed. That intense pain that boiled down to even his soul had affected his entire body.

“Hu!”

“Hu!” Luo Feng violently lay on the ground. His entire being almost paralyzed, breathing and gasping hard, breath after breath.

“My god, I finally made it.”

“I feel like I’ve died over tens of thousands of times. With the virtual universe 100% simulation, the pain too can be simulated. However the pain of death, isn’t even a fraction of this pain.” Luo feng was completely sprawled on the floor. His earth body alone was in such pain, and as the primary body of the right claw absorption, just how much pain did the golden horned beast have to endure?

One had to know that this level of pain entered into its soul via the golden horned beast’s body.

The pain the golden horned beast felt was the most intense...

“This is only the 90th, how will I continue?” Luo Feng couldn’t imagine, the pain he endured before was already the most terrifying pain he had ever endured in his entire life. So much so that his consciousness was about to crumble, almost triggering his auto defense mechanisms.

Fainting was a form of natural self preservation.

However Luo Feng was very clear about the fact that the moment he fainted, it would mean the failure of the absorption of the crystal.

……

More than a trillion km away in space, within the automaton control room, the crystal core was floating and revolving.

Internal world.

“91st!” Black clothed Luo Feng took a deep breath and placed another crystal in the palm of the golden horned beast’s right claw. The huge beast, which was larger than even rivers, looked down at the crystal with its dark golden eyes. There was a sense of fear in them, it…was simply too painful.

Chi!

After slashing a wound, fresh blood seeped out and the absorption of the 91st crystal began.

“Kill!”

“Kill, kill!”

The incomparably mad killing aura completely swarmed over Luo Feng’s willpower. Every crystal absorption’s killing intent willpower was stronger than the previous, and at this 91st crystal… the killing aura seemed comparable even to the aura whirlpool where it was 8 times the normal aura.

Maybe even stronger than that!

“My heart is like a mirror, don’t think of affecting me, get out!” Luo Feng’s willpower raged, madly defending time and again against the effects. He was finally able to get the killing aura willpower to back off.

“I’ve finally made it past the killing aura willpower.”

Actually at this point, it wasn’t simply just the pain from evolving the right claw that was unbearable, even the killing aura willpower…that alone was very hard for Luo Feng to fight and defend against.

However.

Defending against the killing aura willpower compared to the

pain of evolution was different.

Against the killing aura willpower, defending was simply defending. Hence, the failure was simply a failure. No pain, no consequence!

However that pain continued on, wave after wave...until the entire right claw had evolved. Only then would the terrifying pain cease.

“Damn, it’s here again!”

Black clothed Luo Feng’s body was trembling. He was kneeling on the ground, with his hands on the metal ground, gritting his teeth hard.

“Howl!!!” The golden horned beast madly howled to vent.

.....

The 91st was like wave after wave of killer nightmares, it finally got past it.

“92nd!”

If one wished to succeed, he had to be hard on himself!

Luo Feng continued to allow the golden horned beast to absorb the 92nd crystal, the killing aura willpower from this crystal…was simply too much. Luo Feng fought hard to control his willpower, making it incomparably solid and sturdy. He was struggling against it even though it felt like it was about to crumble.

Finally, the terrifying willpower backed off.

However what followed closely was the even more terrifying intense pain…

……

“Why do I feel.” Black clothed Luo Feng picked up the 93rd crystal and said softly, “That it would be extremely hard to reach the 100th crystal.”

“Continue!”

When the 93rd crystal made contact with the wound in its right palm, an even more intense torrent of killing aura willpower rushed against Luo Feng’s willpower. It was vast and endless, every wave was stronger than before. Luo Feng barely defended against it wave after wave.

“Rumble!” Luo Feng felt his consciousness drift, after which, the three bodies all fainted.

The killing aura willpower had broken past his defense, swiftly

returning back into the crystal.

Absorption of the 93rd blood river crystal was a failure!

Chapter 49 – 30 years later

While in a daze, the killing aura willpower finally backed out, and Luo Feng quickly regained his consciousness.

“I failed, I actually failed.” Black clothed Luo Feng frowned. “I knew that getting to the 100th would be extremely difficult, but I didn’t expect to fail at the 93rd.”

“That killing aura willpower was simply too powerful, and the pain was so intense. All of this shows one thing…my willpower is still not strong enough.”

Luo Feng was extremely wrong.

Willpower not strong enough?

Even an absolute genius of a trillion years from the undying shrine, blood god Baqi, who could become undying in a short time if he wanted to, his willpower paled in comparison to Luo Feng’s! Many sector lord pinnacles were far behind him as well. Hence…in terms of willpower, Luo Feng was indeed very strong.

The true reason was…

Just how many people had even absorbed up to 93 blood river crystals? Absorbing 10 on blood river continent alone would make one the legendary black warrior. Every extra absorption had 10 times more the requirements on the body in many different

aspects. To absorb 93 crystals? That was simply unrealistic.

93 blood river crystals would have an ever increasing killing aura willpower. It was absurdly insane!

“The right claw cannot absorb anymore. But, what about the other parts of the golden horned beast?” The golden horned beast grabbed the crystal, placing it in its left claw, slashing through the scales, fresh blood seeped out.

Rumble!

The formless energy rushed into its body, simultaneously gathering the rest of the killing aura willpower from before within and swiftly coursed through. The energy clashed immediately into Luo Feng’s willpower within the golden horned beast.

“Rumble!

“How can this be? It actually melded with the willpower from before to be even stronger?” Luo Feng was shocked.

“Kill!”

“Kill!” The mad killing aura willpower once again rushed in. Luo Feng fought hard against it, condensing his willpower like a stone, struggling to defend against it. However, even though it was rock solid...under the rush of the endless aura, it was still reduced to ashes.

Once again he lost consciousness.

That formless energy returned into the crystal and Luo Feng regained consciousness.

Within the control room of the automaton ship.

The crystal ball was revolving. On it's surface gold engravings glimmered with gold light. Suddenly in place of the crystal, black clothed Luo Feng appeared!

"I actually failed." Black clothed Luo Feng sat in the sofa and looked ahead into the vast space.

"How did it go Luo Feng?" Beside, the energy image of the demon, Babata asked.

Black clothed Luo Feng explained what happened during the process.

"Ah, that's expected. There probably hasn't been anything in the history of Blood River continent about absorbing 93 crystals. Even the highest level 4 Qi Niu beast only managed a little over 10." Demon Babata smiled. "Luo Feng, don't worry too much. As your will power gets stronger, you'll be able to absorb them in the future."

“I don’t care about this.” Luo Feng frowned. “The only thing is the rest of the golden horned beast is unable to absorb the crystals.”

“It’s because you are unable to withstand the kill aura willpower.” Demon Babata too sat on the sofa beside him, crossing his legs and looking a the vast space ahead. “The energy within the crystal is capable of altering one’s body, its range is limited. However the killing aura willpower is different…it’s a willpower that is able to spread to any part of the entire body.”

“When you wanted to let its left claw absorb the crystal, that willpower would directly connect throughout its body and attack you.”

Black clothed Luo Feng nodded.

He understood the theory.

Every absorption had an increase in the killing aura willpower. Even if used at different parts of the body…the willpower would still increase.

“Luckily, all the blood river crystals I had before, I decided to place all of them in the right claw.” Luo Feng thought. The golden horned beast’s right claw was now his trump card, since it was extremely terrifying. If he had dispersed the crystals all over the body from the start, then every body part would have been altered about 7 or 8 times.

However that way...

The amount of power raised was limited. It was better to simply make one very terrifying right claw.

“I cannot be too greedy, as this has already been such a windfall for me. Since, I am still constantly training my willpower, I believe there’ll be a day I can absorb the 100th crystal. I have a feeling that once I absorb that 100th crystal, the incomparably complex blood red engraving will be perfected by then. It should have some special properties as well by then.” Luo Feng thought.

“Continue!”

“Three great bodies, and all of them are training in their own ways.” Luo Feng quickly recollected his thoughts.

.....

There were two missions for this Blood River world. The 1st was to acquire one blood river crystal, and completing that would give him a reward of 10k points. The 2nd was to become a blood warrior and acquire the blood river medal. The reward for this was 100k points. Even though this was the case...acquiring large amounts of crystals wouldn’t get more points.

However, these crystals were unique only to Blood River world, as it was a special product of this Blood River world!

And even though there were plenty of it in this world, almost all the domain lords had most of them. Some universe level elites had a few of them too, however…they were still extremely valuable.

“Since I can, I will get as many as possible. These Blood River crystals, should be worth a lot.”

……

Mosha Luo Feng continued on his hunting trip.

Of course he spent most of his time rushing around to find these crystals, and the true hunting time itself was very short. Hence, other than hunting…the Mosha Luo feng would be in the automaton ship in the internal world, studying and training in the floating blood manual, time space scribbles and studying the 9 universe tablet, the drizzle picture.

……

The golden horned beast was training Tearing Sky and Land with the three ancient pictures.

It’s right claw’s power was shocking, since it connected directly to the universe origin laws, causing its power to amplify about 9 times. This meant that, when using the right claw versus not using it, the golden horned beast’s strength had a difference of almost 10 times! Its body alone was already incomparably intrepid and powerful, but 10 times the strength on top of that? This was

however a miracle Afterall, absorbing 92 crystals was an extremely absurd thing to do.

The power of the right claw was shocking, hence the it was training with the three ancient pictures...

Luo Feng emphasized on the three pictures!

The 1st was the beast's flight, waving its tail and dispersing the huge hand in the sky.

The 2nd was it lowering its head and looking ahead, piercing forward while flying.

The 3rd was it waving its claws, attacking brutally.

"The golden horned beast's right claw was originally very strong. After combined with this attack...and it studying Tearing Sky and land, 80% of its attention was spent to study the 1st claw of Tearing sky!" Luo Feng had long prepared to use this 1st claw technique as his true killing technique.

Since the right claw was extremely strong, naturally he had to focus on claw attacks.

Strong combinations, that meant more power!

The 1st claw of Tearing Sky...the golden horned beast began its

tedious and mad training. It was studying the techniques left behind by its ancestors, and searching for the grace of that ancient beast's claw technique, while constantly increasing the strength of Tearing Sky's 1st claw.

……

The earth body would frequent the undying lessons, occasionally studying gold and space combination, simultaneously spending long periods of time in the killing aura to alter his body.

……

Of course, all three bodies were in training!

The golden horned beast would occasionally try to absorb the blood river crystal, so that it could feel the rush of the killing aura willpower and withstanding it to train itself further!

The Mosha was training via slaughter!

The earth body was training his mind and heart from teachings of his two brothers Hong and Thunder god, while occasionally meeting them in the virtual universe and chatting. With the both of them reaching the pinnacle of chinese martial arts and indian yoga, Luo feng would get some inspiration occasionally.

……

Studying the origin laws, wonders, training his mind and heart.

In the long passages of time, Luo Feng constantly improved himself.

In a flash, 30 years had gone by.

In the vast Blood River continent, in a particular territory city leader's mansion, it was day time.

"You actually dare attack me, you must be looking to die!" A fierce roar like the rage of a god resounded throughout the skies of the city. A black silhouette rushed into the skies straight into the cloud levels, it was the black clothed Luo Feng.

"Damn, there actually was a sector lord here."

Black clothed Luo Feng's speed was shocking.

"You dare to attack me and wish to flee!" The voice rumbled straight into his ears, simultaneously a formless world energy pressure immediately poured over.

Sou!

A white pyramid appeared before Luo Feng and he flew straight in.

The golden robed middle aged man chasing behind saw the silver white pyramid, staring wide eyed, “It’s the outsiders!” He quickly chased and simultaneously used his world energy to pressure the automaton ship. However, the ship’s speed was simply too fast, it rushed straight through the 18 cloud levels.

The golden robed middle aged man stood at the 18th level and looked up through the clouds, not daring to follow.

“It’s actually an outsider!” The man’s face was perplexed, “I have to inform the undying shrine, another outsider has descended into our Blood River continent.”

……

The automaton ship was in space.

Control room.

“That was too risky.” Black clothed Luo feng sat in the sofa and let out a sigh of relief. “I didn’t expect a sector lord to be hiding in the city. Since he didn’t release his energy at all and I had no way to detect him…however his movement and use of the universe space made me feel his presence.”

“Lucky I fled quickly.”

The mosha clansman could unleash over 10,000 images, making his instantaneous speed terrifying. This was even faster than many sector lords.

Fast, but this speed was mostly used just at the start for a quick burst.

The moment a sector lord's speed truly took off, he would quickly catch up. Hence he used that outburst to create some distance and after which enter the automaton ship to escape.

"Walking along the river for so long, how can one's shoes not get wet." Luo Feng softly muttered. "After this incident, that sector lord would definitely inform the undying shrine...the shrine would probably begin to discover small patterns and traces, maybe even my entire plan! Hm, anyway, I've acquired enough over these 30 years, it's time to stop."

During these 30 years, Mosha Luo Feng's hunt had given him a total of 9,816 blood river crystals!

Luo Feng felt...

It was savage enough, it was time to stop.

Chapter 50 – Three Levels of Mental States

Virtual universe, Black Dragon mountain island, close to the river by 9 star bay, three people sat there.

A tall and sturdy youth with short hair was dressed in casual clothing, yet his energy felt like a pike ready to pierce forward at anytime. On his left was a clean white robed bald youth who was smiling. His smile was so pure, it made one's soul get drawn in.

Beside these two sat a skinnier youth. His killing aura was heavy, his entire being seemed to have been drenched in a bloody river of cold massacre, that aura was terrifying.

"Thirdie, your mental state is really hitting the limit." The bald youth shook his head and smiled.

"Second brother, in terms of mental state, I cannot compare to you. I cannot breakthrough for now. The only thing I can do is push my limits, that way at least I'll improve." Luo Feng smiled. He could feel it himself. In reality, as he was spending long periods of time in the ancient god ruins of Blood River world, he was influenced for tens of years by the killing aura.

He was originally ice cold within his bones. But now with the invasion of the killing aura, and with the golden horned beast absorbing so many blood river crystals, even within the virtual universe Luo Feng emitted a powerful killing aura.

"Pushing your limits is after all still a small path." Thunder god

shook his head.

“Second brother.” Hong sat and smiled, “You don’t have to force third brother. In terms of mental state training...he’s also exceptional! To be able to train his mental state to such a level, where he is not affected by dust or poison is great. Absolute purity, absolute rejection, and absolute coagulation...this form of absoluteness is also a growth in mental state.”

Thunder god was shocked, nodding, he asked curiously, “Big brother, but this is still after all..”

“Hm.” Hong looked at Luo Feng, “Third brother.”

“Big brother.” Luo Feng smiled at Hong.

“Your second brother and I have been giving you many pointers on mental training. However this...is different from other training. It’s a form of release in spirit.” Hong looked at Luo Feng. Many mysteries before may have been explained, today I’ll depict it for you from the highest levels.”

“Hm?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

“Heart? What is heart?”

“Mental state, just what is that?” Hong smiled. From a warrior’s training point of view, the heart is actually willpower!”

“Your willpower strength is already exceptional.” Hong said. “However…overall, from an overall look, you are still only on the 1st level of the three great mental states.”

“1st level?” Luo Feng was shocked, “Three great mental states?”

“This is my summary.” Hong smiled, “In our chinese ancient culture, we’ve always emphasized on the training of ones mental state. There are all sorts of tests for the heart, by training in them, these will all be directed at one’s heart, and will be able to see one’s heart clearly. The body is the wisdom tree. Your heart is the stand of the bright mirror. You must frequently wipe it. Don’t let it become dusty. It actually refers to looking at oneself and understanding.”

Luo Feng frowned.

“Right now, your heart is like a mirror, not affected by dust. Your heart is like a blade, slicing through obstacles. It’s already considered having seen yourself and understood it, reaching a very high level.” Hong exclaimed. Now, you continue to train your heart, making your willpower stronger! However, no matter how much you train, you are still only on the 1st level.”

“What’s the 2nd level?” Luo Feng asked.

“Simply put…man and nature as one!” Hong pointed at Thunder god beside, “Your second brother is considered to be at the 2nd level.”

“What’s man and nature as one?” Luo Feng asked.

“Man and nature as one refers to the perfect mental state.” Hong smiled, “What do I mean by perfect? When one’s Yin and Yang are fully melded and are complementing each other. As for how? Your current path…chasing limits, that’s simply pushing it! Simply pushing your limits may strengthen yourself. However only when the Yin and Yang are working together will it be perfect.”

Just like a man in this world, when he feels harmony, he’ll be sturdy and flexible depending on whichever the situation requires!”

“This mental state is as such too. When it’s time to be like a blade, or when it’s time to train. And when it’s time to be gentle like water, the water always flows around the blade! In terms of defense, the water is even more solid than a shield, hence it’s more powerful.” Hong smiled. “The harmony of Yin and Yang, man and nature, mental state harmony. Of course this is a very high level of perfection…and is that of a pure and innocent heart! In theory it’s already the pinnacle. Your brother is as such.”

Luo Feng held his breath as he listened, asking, “Heart like a blade, I understand. But how do I make my heart like water?”

“I’ll explain the theory but the state itself is hard to explain.” Hong smiled and shook his head.

That…1st level refers to one’s heart and understanding it, and to

be able to see through the rubble. The 2nd is the harmony of Yin and Yang, man and nature, heart of pureness, perfect mental state." Luo Feng asked, "In theory the 2nd state is the pinnacle already, then what about the 3rd?"

Thunder god beside him smiled, "The 3rd level, your big brother has begun to barely perceive it."

"The 3rd."

Hong said softly, "Is what I've just begun to touch. Heart is void and vast, heart is endless. Heart, encompassing everything."

"What do you mean?" Luo Feng asked.

"It's hard to explain." Hong smiled, "How about this. If the 2nd is the harmony of yin and Yang, man and nature as one, melding perfectly with everything around. Then the 3rd...is the heart being endless and vast, encompassing everything, including the endless universe, everything. Anything with a will can be encompassed, whether its slaughter, material wealth and goals, appreciation of beauty, lust for power, everything."

Luo Feng was shocked.

Everything could be encompassed.

"If one can achieve this state, even facing against an incredibly powerful opponent, life form, all willpower...cannot affect me."

Hong smiled.

“Damn, that’s sick.” Luo Feng stared.

“Sick right?” The white baldy Thunder god smiled. “Man and nature as one, heart of pureness. Whether it’s yoga or chinese ancient culture, these are all the pinnacle. However your brother’s level…in ancient chinese culture it has be mentioned before but never reached. Hence, no one really knows.”

Luo Feng looked at Hong, filled with even more admiration.

Three great mental states.

1st level, Seeing through and understanding yourself. In many Buddhist teachings and paths, this was already progress.

The 2nd level, man and nature as one, heart of pureness. This was in theory the pinnacle.

3rd level, heart vast and endless, encompassing everything. This was unbelievable.

“Big brother, how do you reach this 3rd level?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask. “The 2nd state, I can barely touch it, however I can’t fully comprehend it.”

Mental state training all relied on the heart.

Luo Feng's understanding of his self had reached a limit. Indeed he only had a small understanding of the harmony between Yin and Yang.

"Its hard to explain, I've only managed to get some ideas from looking at some books." Hong smiled, "There's a saying... Emptiness is the strongest. Another one also says that only when one doesn't contest will he be able to contest everything. Actually, I've studied many theories from the ancient chinese culture. These 2 sayings...are considered to have sparked my reaching of this level."

"Emptiness is the strongest. Only when one doesn't contest will he be able to contest everything?" Luo Feng frowned. "The logic is simple and I understand it. But what you mean is..."

"The chinese culture is bright, with countless exceptional people in history being able to reach man and nature as one, with hearts of pureness, these are all ancient history. Reach the 2nd level first." Hong smiled, "Ah, let me see. These should be helpful for you. Read these few chinese culture books, it may help."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded, suddenly he felt something stir within, "Mosha clansman is here!"

******

The Mosha clansman sat in the automaton ship. It had been flying close to light speed in the space above Blood River world for

a few months already, and finally arrived.

Blood River cloud levels, a faint silhouette immediately passed through 1,000km and landed beside the huge pit quarters, with a flash it went in.

.....

Huge Pit quarters.

Luo Feng who was dressed in the bronze armor got up on his hind legs. Looking at the entrance of the cave, a black silhouette appeared, it was Mosha Luo Feng.

“10 blood river crystals.” Mosha Luo Feng casually placed the 10 crystals and left again, passing through the 18 cloud levels and into the automaton ship which was floating in the space above. For safety reasons...he let the Mosha body take the internal core into space, at least it was very safe.

Within the huge pit quarters.

“I finally have blood river crystals.” Luo Feng collected the 10 crystals and revealed a helpless smile. “The last time I let the golden horned beast absorb everything until there was none left for my earth body.”

30 years.

A total of 30 years had passed, during which he was constantly absorbing the killing aura and changing his body, yet he hadn't tried absorbing the crystals.

"Let's try and see if I can absorb the 3rd one." Luo Feng took out a crystal. It had been long since he absorbed the 2nd...30 years later, now he was trying the 3rd.

Chi!

He cut his palm and placed the crystal on the would, the killing aura willpower clashed against his willpower.

"Compared to the golden horned beast's absorption, this little willpower is simply pathetic." Luo Feng couldn't help but exclaim, following which he felt intense pain. His body began to evolve... however compared to the successful absorption of the 91st and 92nd crystals, this 3rd one couldn't be considered anything.

The blood energy continued to pour through his body...

The blood river crystal became more and more transparent.

"Pa!"

The sound of bones breaking occurred from his chest.

“I actually failed.” Luo Feng looked at the close to transparent blood river crystal. Large amounts of blood energy was returning back, making it revert to its original state, he was helpless.

“Indeed the more I absorb the harder it gets. I only stayed in the ancient god ruins for 2 years before and I managed to absorb the 2nd. However now after 30 years, I am still unable to absorb the 3rd.” Luo Feng shook his head, “The golden horned beast’s body, looks like the body structure and composition is indeed much more perfect than a human body, at least in certain aspects, it’s much superior.”

Even though he failed, Luo Feng wasn’t troubled at all. In fact, he was anticipating, “From the looks of it, there’s still hope for me to absorb the 3rd crystal. I have to become a blood warrior, acquire the blood river medal and return to receive my 100k points reward.”

Chapter 51 – Killing Aura Whirlpool

Even though his earth body failed to absorb the 3rd crystal, he wasn't affected by it at all, instead he continued his training.

Under the killing aura environment of the ancient god ruins, even though it was for the sake of absorbing the crystals...Luo Feng's main attention was still spent on studying the 9 universe tablet Drizzle picture. He had completely comprehended the first 9 wonders. As for the middle 27, every one of them was much more profound.

It had been over 32 years since he arrived in Blood River continent. Even though his improvement was huge, his true comprehension of the wonders was still very little.

"The blood river crystals are but supplementary assistance."

"As for my mental state, I can't see or even touch it. The origin laws are the most important."

"These 30 years, the golden horned beast had combined the 3 ancient pictures and studied Tearing Sky and Land. Its improvement in the gold origin laws far exceeded the mosha clan's improvement. Luo Feng sat crossed legged in his stone bed. "Hm, I'll focus my attention of studying the drizzle picture too."

Time and Space, these were the hardest to comprehend.

His earth body's weapon the Nan Shen Armament was a combination of gold and space. His improvement in gold was very fast, so much so that space couldn't keep up, resulting in him using both the mosha body and himself to study space together.

……

The universe was vast and endless, and in it, tens of years was simply nothing.

For some ancient beings, just a blink of their eyes and it would have been trillions of years.

In the blink of an eye, Luo Feng had been in the Blood River continent for over 80 years.

Virtual universe, Thunder island.

A graceful lady in jade green armor stood at the edges of the island along a 10 li reef. Ahead of it were large amounts of revolving lightning snakes. Suddenly a silhouette shot over from the distance, landing on the huge reef, it was the golden armored apeman True Yan Emperor.

"Jade, you are looking for me?" True Yan smiled.

The Jade green armored lady turned to look, she was Jade emperor.

“Hm.” Jade nodded.

“What’s the matter?” True Yan smiled and asked.

“Its regarding your disciple Luo Feng.” Jade said, her voice clean and clear.

“Ah?” True Yan was shocked, “Why are you concerned with my disciple. My disciple is only at universe level. He hasn’t truly headed out to explore…his condition now, you should know it the best.”

Jade shook her head, “It seems clear, yet at the same time, it’s not clear at all.”

“Speak directly.” True Yan said.

“To be honest, “Jade smiled, “This Luo Feng’s improvement has been noticed by all of the management level within the Virtual Universe company. Especially right after he exited primal chaos city, he actually consecutively passed 9 levels of the fantasy ocean, only failing at the 10th. His willpower and consciousness is at a terrifying level.”

“Haha…” True Yan smiled proudly, “This disciple of mine, even though he’s only at universe level, his soul is far from evolving into an undying. However just in terms of willpower, I am afraid he exceeds that of an undying, many don’t even compare to him.”

“I know this of course, otherwise it wouldn’t have aroused the upper echelons.” Jade emperor emphasized. “And also within the last 80 years, he actually passed the heavenly bridge’s 6th level! He’s caught up with Bolan’s comprehension speed…”

“Bolan that punk, he’s making his own life difficult.” True Yan said.

“Doesn’t matter, Luo Feng’s improvement speed is shocking.” Jade’s expression was serious. “And his genius competition was organized by 9 blade knight. Hence, once he becomes undying, he would naturally be under him. The knight favors him a lot… however, he actually took on the Blood River world mission and hasn’t returned in 80 years, remaining there!”

True Yan nodded.

“80 years!”

“During these 80 years, he hasn’t attempted the heavenly bridge! Fantasy ocean!” Jade frowned hard. “He had only occasionally contacted you, and listened to some undying classes. These 80 years, the other geniuses have all improved quite a lot, all have taken on many missions, many finishing all 10. Only this Luo Feng…still remains on blood river world. And according to the report, his automaton ship has been in space for a long time, the location is the ancient god ruins of blood river world.”

“The dangers of the ancient god ruins, you should be clear.”

Jade frowned, “That place is the most dangerous place on the entire blood river continent. How many of our undyings fell there before? Especially the killing aura of that place is unique only to that place within the entire universe. If Luo Feng isn’t careful, and he enters a region with extremely high amounts of aura, he would be taken over and lost to the madness, that’s akin to death!”

“The knight’s viewing of him is even higher than that of Bolan!”

“And these 80 years, he’s been in contact with you.”

“Hence I hope you can tell me his situation on blood river continent, every bit of it.” Jade emphasized. “True Yan, honestly speaking, taking risks are important. However one cannot madly take risks, you cannot take your disciple’s life as a joke. He is afterall just a universe level punk.”

“He hasn’t been doing much these 80 years, just studying the origin laws.” True Yan smiled.

“How’s his studying?” Jade asked.

As Luo Feng hadn’t attempted the heavenly bridge, no one knew about his speed and level of study.

“Average.” True Yan said casually, “Of the 1st 36 wonders, he’s comprehended 35 of them.” Even though he said it very casually, his expression was that of pride.

“Comprehended 35?” Jade was shocked.

The 1st 9, middle 27 and final 72.

Luo Feng comprehended 35 wonders…

“How can it be so quick?” Jade stared at True Yan. “That’s impossible. During the 30 years in primal chaos city, he only comprehended the most basic 9! And his study speed outside primal chaos city should be 10 times slower. But from the looks of it, he comprehended 1 every 3 years outside, which are even more profound than the first 9.”

“1, he has me for pointers.”

“2, he has Time Space Scribbles to aid in his study.”

“3, he’s absorbed blood river crystals. Hence, his study speed has increased.” True Yan looked at jade. “Also, he is indeed a genius, his comprehension speed rises with his strength.”

Blood River continent, ancient god ruins, huge pit.

Huge pit quarters.

Luo Feng opened his eyes. He sat cross legged in his bronze armor. 80 years, it had been 80 years since he came to Blood River

continent. The effects of the killing aura shaping his body was getting lesser and lesser, however at least it was still improving. However he was still a little shy of absorbing the 3rd crystal.

“These 80 years, my comprehension of the space laws has improved a lot.” Luo Feng exclaimed.

Comprehending 35 wonders.

He would never have expected to have done something so absurd!

Primal chaos city’s 30 years was 100 years in the actual universe.

In those 30 years in primal chaos city, he only comprehended 9 wonders.

However 80 years or so in the actual universe, he actually comprehended the more profound 26 wonders. This level and speed of improvement...was indeed unbelievable! This was only possible because of the time space scribbles, and True Yan’s pointers, with the golden horned beast’s triggering of the mysterious energy, increasing his fusion with the space laws by 9 times.

Yes.

Towards the end, even the golden horned beast began to study the space laws.

This was because, in training Tearing sky and land and the 3 ancient pictures...during the 39th year, the golden horned beast had comprehended...that the ancient beast's claw attack wasn't simply infused with gold laws, simultaneously it had space laws within.

To truly figure out the powerful attack of Tearing Sky's 1st claw, the golden horned beast's main study was the ancient pictures, Tearing sky and land became secondary.

As every one of the 3 ancient pictures were incredibly profound.

And one of the claws was infused with space laws, hence the golden horned beast began to study the space laws too!

.....

With the 3 bodies studying simultaneously, reflecting each other's comprehension, especially on the ancient pictures, the rewards were bountiful.

It allowed Luo Feng's comprehension to progress extremely fast!

Also...

He realized too, the training of his mental state and soul had cleared his mind, allowing him to understand and grasp onto

whatever he was studying much faster. From a certain degree, his comprehension level had risen too.

“I think after a few more years, I’ll have comprehended the 36th wonder.” Luo Feng’s face was filled with anticipation.

“Tearing sky’s 1st claw!”

“Accurately speaking, my fast improvement speed is mostly because of the ancient pictures.” Luo Feng was curious within. “That simple wave of the claw was already so profound and unbelievable.”

Using his human body to study that claw was useless.

However its effects on the golden horned beast’s tearing sky and land, while studying that claw, especially looking at the ancient pictures...it almost felt as though that claw encompassed everything. it was so deep and profound, that his own comprehension was still superficial.

“Just how strong was that beast?” Luo Feng thought within, after which he didn’t think anymore and headed out of the cave entrance.

……

Following the pathway, he quickly reached side of the mountain and looked at the endless red aura revolving.

“Half a year ago I tried heading to the killing aura whirlpool and was able to reach the point of 9.5 times, it was less than 100m from the center of the whirlpool. I had to stop there.” Luo Feng was filled with anticipation, “I feel that i’ve had improvement over this half a year, who knows whether I’ll be able to enter the whirlpool core.”

Sou!

He rushed straight down and headed towards the depths of the aura.

Whirlpool aura...these years, besides studying, Luo Feng often went to try the depths of the whirlpool. However every time he did go, he didn’t dare risk it. Because he was very clear that the price of the risk was losing himself to madness. This was akin to death.

After a while, Luo Feng had already reached within that huge whirlpool.

“Rumble...”

The huge whirlpool that was almost like fresh blood was revolving continuously, dragging the auras beside along with it, the core itself looked like a red sun. The bronze armored Luo Feng drew closer to the center step by step, going closer and closer to the eye of the storm.

“I’m really curious, just what is in the core of this whirlpool.” Luo Feng withstood the killing aura willpower that was constantly growing strong and invading his mind, getting closer and closer to the glaring red sun.

Chapter 52 – Whirlpool core

Hua hua…the aura there was as thick as fresh blood. The large whirlpool even emitted an ancient eternal energy, it made one's very soul tremble.

"Come on child."

"Come!"

"Come here!"

"Enjoy killing and slaughter, what a beautiful and endless feeling…" A formless enticement accompanied the killing aura willpower. That strong willpower was like tanks clashing against Luo Feng's willpower, as he was affected, the enticement began

A bronze armored Luo Feng drew closer and closer towards the center which was completely engulfed in the aura, gritting his teeth to endure.

"Mine, its mine!"

"I want to kill, I know how to kill, all external willpower, break!"

"Break!"

Luo Feng's willpower was extremely solid, as it was defending

against these attacks and enticement, not allowing any of them to seep in. As he gradually drew closer to the core, the willpower and enticement got stronger and stronger. The closer he flew to the sun like red ball, the more cautious he got.

Distance of 50m, 40m, 30m, 20m, 10m...

The red ball was right ahead.

It, was the core of the huge aura whirlpool.

“Rumble...” A formless ancient energy radiated, causing Luo Feng to feel as though he was an ant against a godly dragon.

“Even if I am an ant, I’m an ant that can defeat a godly dragon.”

Luo Feng immediately abandoned the natural sense of fear within, simultaneously stepping into the glaring red light that formed the aura whirlpool that was bigger even than earth. The entire whirlpool core returned to its original calm state, and the bronze silhouette disappeared.

Aura Whirlpool core...within the Red light ball.

Luo Feng slowly progressed, however he felt the killing aura willpower actually diminish, “It’s almost as though as I get closer to the ball, the willpower is strongest. After entering the ball...it gets weaker instead.”

He flew at a speed that was even slower than a normal person's walk, after about 30m, before him was still the thick red ball.

Chi!

Luo Feng's entire being pierced through the outer layer of the red light ball, looking at the scene before him.

"Ang, Mo, Da..."

A sound that pierced through his soul, resounding deep in his consciousness. An ancient phonogram without any rules, every note infused with high endless amount of ancient energy. Simultaneously, Luo Feng was shocked at the scene before him...it was empty within the red light ball.

There wasn't any red energy within.

There were however huge, golden engravings as thick as one's arms. Every one of them was incredibly complex. There were a total of 12, 100 to 1,000m long golden engravings, inter weaving and revolving in the space. Each one made one's heart tremble, making one submit. Such energy was being emitted from the 12 thick engravings.

Simultaneously, the 12 huge golden engravings emitted golden light threads, engulfing the entire region.

The gold light revolved about, making the space around them like a sacred land.

The revolving gold light continued to produce 3 images, a picture of the huge lizard beast, raising its horn towards the skies, a huge hand smashing down towards it, causing the beast to fly, waving its long tail until it almost vanished and dispersing the huge palm.

3 ancient pictures...

These were the 3 ancient pictures he often saw. However, at this point, at the core of the whirlpool, the 12 huge golden engravings emitted the naturally formed pictures much clearer than before!

Every picture, occasionally appeared and then dispersed.

These 3 ancient pictures, were floating just like a piece of paper on water, continuously revolving, occasionally sinking to the bottom of the water before resurfacing. Repeating over and over...

“Li!”

“Ang!”

The ancient phonogram, almost like a beast without intelligence speaking, seemed to pass through trillions of years of time and space, resounding in Luo Feng’s ears.

“My god.” Luo Feng stared wide.

“Origin laws engravings, these are origin law engravings.”

Never had he ever seen the origin laws that clearly before him. Whether it was primal chaos city or the engravings on the spirit weapons, they were all extremely small and simple! And the 12 incomparably huge engravings before him, that were as thick as one’s arms, seemed like 12 simple engravings. However every one of them was interweaved with countless needle like engravings through them.

“These are space origin law engravings!”

“At least, they are a part of it.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, following which he landed where the 3 ancient pictures disappeared. This time, it was different from the blurry images that he spotted before, he saw them extremely clear this time. This was even to the point where as the beast attacked, he could feel every bit of it clearly.

“I’ll first remember these pictures and then study the origin law engravings.”

Luo Feng began to stare hard at the 3 pictures of Tearing Sky 1st claw. With his quantum computer like brain, he could remember vividly each of them like a video recording, this was very simple. However he needed to remember the feeling and situation too... that energy infused with profoundness and mystery, to allow him to study it in the future.

Studying Tearing sky 1st claw for close to 80 years, he clearly remembered the picture of that move from long ago.

And at this time, whether it was studying the original tearing sky 1st claw or altering it according to the memories he had of it before, Luo Feng was very clear that before he became undying, his level of the 1st claw paled in comparison to that ancient beast's. Hence it wasn't the time for him to be proud, but to lower his ego and study that ancient beast well.

……

As he used his entire being to remember the ancient picture of the 1st claw, Luo Feng didn't realize, as his body was there, the gold lights shot right through him. Even though there wasn't any killing aura that invaded him, his every cell within began to change and evolve greatly.

If one said that under the killing aura's attack, the body's cells would change gently and slowly.

At this time, it was accelerated 100 to 1,000 times!

The only thing was because Luo Feng was completely immersed in remembering the 1st claw. As for the changes in his body? Even if his body was destroyed it would be a small matter. Hence he couldn't allow himself to be distracted.

……

After remembering the 1st claw for some time, as he closed his eyes, the image of that 1st claw clearly replayed in his mind. He finally exclaimed, “My comprehension still isn’t high enough. This should be my memory’s limit, I’m unable to remember the situation and feeling and energy any deeper.”

Following which he looked at the other 2 pictures.

Compared to the 1st claw, spending 80% of his attention on it, for the other 2 techniques…Luo Feng had spent little time on them. As his comprehension was weak, even after trying hard to remember them, not long after, he couldn’t remember them any better already.

Within his memory…

The 3 ancient pictures were deeply recorded. The 1st claw’s situation and feeling was the most vast and ancient. As for the other two, those two faintly had the ancient energies, but obviously weaker than the 1st. The main thing was that Luo Feng was unable to remember them deeply as well.

“Hm, I’ve finally remembered them.” Luo Feng revealed a look of excitement. “These ancient pictures, humans are unable to study. However it’s extremely beneficial to the golden horned beast. Studying it raises its understanding and comprehension of the laws, that in turn helps my human body’s comprehension as well.”

The 3 great bodies were working together, naturally the improvement was huge.

“Ah, my body?” As his attention returned, Luo Feng quickly realized the changes to his body.

His body’s every cell seemed to have evolved.

Change occurred continuously.

“This change, it’s the same change as the killing aura.” Luo Feng was shocked, revealing a look of glee after. “However the change seems to be 1,000 times faster!”

“One day here is akin to a few years outside.”

Luo Feng was ecstatic.

He stood up in mid air, looking at the 12 huge golden engravings. These 12 engravings seemed simple, however they were still much more profound than the engravings that True Yan Emperor demonstrated in his classes in primal chaos city. Luo Feng looked for a while, feeling dizzy within.

“It feels like space? With some bits of gold origin laws. However upon careful examination, it’s neither.” Luo Feng was very curious.

The origin law engravings his teacher True Yan demonstrated occasionally had hundreds to 1,000 engravings. Luo Feng knew quite a bit of them.

However at this time...

He didn't understand this at all.

"The level of complexity is simply beyond me." Luo Feng spent two days looking at the huge golden engravings. Suddenly he had some inspiration, "Looks like, my comprehension of the laws... compared to the profoundness of these huge golden engravings is simply too huge. Just like when I first looked at the 9 universe tablet's 7th to 9th pictures, I didn't understand them at all. These golden engravings I can't understand these either."

No matter how expensive a book is, before a blind person, it was still useless.

Infused with endless wonders, the engravings within weren't useful at all to Luo Feng. He couldn't even remember the energies emitted from it, simply relying on his quantum computer like brain and consciousness, forcing out a simple picture within. (Just like taking a picture).

.....

Days passed.

Even within this aura whirlpool core, with the gold light shining on him, Luo Feng's body evolution speed slowed as the days passed. This was something he anticipated as it was reaching his body's limit.

"My earth body, if only it could be as sick as the golden horned beast's body. Even without any aura invasion, immediately absorbing 97 crystals." Luo Feng thought.

97 crystals...

That was the achievement of close to 80 years.

These 80 years, the origin laws comprehension, and mental state training had risen shockingly, hence allowing him to make it deep into the whirlpool core. As for the golden horned beast's right claw, these 80 years had occasionally evolved further, currently having absorbed 97 blood river crystals.

After a while, the changes that occurred deep in Luo Feng's body finally completely stopped.

"I'm already at my limit." Luo Feng thought. "I've been in this whirlpool core for close to 30 days. If it were outside, it would at least be a hundred years before my body is fully saturated."

"Who knows if I can absorb the 3rd crystal now."

"Hm, I'll return to the cave to try."

Looking at the 12 huge golden engravings floating in mid air, he turned and rushed through the red light layer, swiftly heading back towards the outer layer of the whirlpool.

Chapter 53 – Greeting Blood God

Luo Feng became a green light and entered the entrance of his cave into huge pit quarters.

Within the cave.

“In that whirlpool core, after experiencing and absorbing that golden light for 30 days, my body is already saturated.” Luo Feng flew straight to his stone bed and sat crossed legged. His eyes were filled with anticipation. “Hope I can absorb the 3rd crystal. If I still fail then I won’t ever be able to absorb it. After all, my body’s limit has already been reached, whether it’s the killing aura…or the even better golden light, it’s already useless.”

Taking a deep breath, Luo Feng flipped his hand and a blood red triangular crystal appeared on his palm.

Even after seeing it thousands to tens of thousands of times, he still couldn’t help but be drawn in by its beauty every time.

“It’s too beautiful.”

“This is a treasure of the universe.” Luo Feng gently sliced his left palm. Chi, a wound appeared and fresh blood flowed, making contact with the crystal. Immediately a formless killing aura willpower rushed against his. However, his earth body had only absorbed 2 crystals before, hence this amount of willpower was a joke.

Chi chi...

“Hm?” Luo Feng frowned, sitting crossed legged, his body began to twitch uncontrollably. His muscles twisted, his veins were squirming around like worms, scales began to appear on his skin...

Pain, intense pain.

However, the golden horned beast had absorbed 97 crystals before. Hence, this level of pain was something he could totally bear with.

Minutes and seconds passed...

Blood red energy flowed continuously out of the blood river crystal and entered his body. Gradually, the color of the crystal grew faint, becoming more and more transparent. After awhile, the entire crystal had become transparent, like glass. After which, the crystal crumbled into energy and entered his body.

“Success!”

“I finally succeeded.” When he felt the entire crystal had been absorbed, his body had successfully digesting it. Luo Feng couldn’t help but feel ecstatic.

Yes!

Mad glee!

His power had leapt, his melding with the origin laws and comprehension had all risen, this was simply one part of it. Another was the points! The Virtual Universe Company points were very valuable...just like this blood river world mission. The 1st mission was to acquire 1 blood river crystal, and the prize was 10,000 points.

However one only had one such chance.

Acquiring one blood river crystal was 10,000 points. Even if you acquired 100k crystals...you'll still be unable to get more points, getting only that 10,000.

Afterall!

To universe levels, maybe acquiring one crystal was hard enough. However to the undying, even to beings like True Yan Emperor who was able to unleash teleportation, acquiring the crystals was very simple.

"However it is strange."

The Virtual Universe Company has always declared that the blood river crystals are treasures." Luo Feng was curious, "However in blood river world, there were 10 million worlds. Within every world there would be territories, with many have

domain lord warriors. Almost all the domain lords would have crystals."

"Obviously the amount of crystals is huge."

"However..."

"Even after searching the entire treasure trove of the Virtual Universe company, there wasn't any blood river crystals to buy within!" Luo Feng was even more curious. Yes, it wasn't sold!

Blood river crystals, it was only found here in the secret region blood river world, and even in blood river world, it was very valuable.

Afterall...

it was plenty. Yet the treasure trove didn't have any.

"Blood river world mission is a universe level mission." Luo Feng thought, "The domain lords would have to head out into territories to take on envoy missions. As for the sector lords, they have to go through life or death training. I probably won't ever get the chance to enter this blood river world in the future. At least, I acquired over 9000 crystals."

Within his consciousness, Luo Feng felt that the crystal was a banned item, one that was controlled by the Virtual Universe company. Even with his absolute beginning region status, he was

unable to exchange for them.

"When I get the chance, I'll go check it out."

"Hm, first I'll take a look at my condition after absorbing the 3rd crystal." Luo Feng didn't think much of anything else, triggering the mysterious energy within.

Immediately, a blood red engraving appeared on his bare chest.

A simple but complete engraving.

"How wonderful."

He closed his eyes, feeling the depths of the endless universe, the ripples of the many laws were perceived at this point. Gold, wood, water, fire, ground, wind, light, thunder, space, time...he could feel the ripples more clearly than before.

"1 time."

"The level of clarity is 1 fold higher than before. The strength of unleashing has also doubled." Luo Feng thought.

1 time more was equal to doubling his power.

That was a whole level of power more!

“My comprehension has increased, my future comprehension speed will rise too.” Luo Feng thought, “No wonder the blood warrior is so respected. All those who are able to enter the Virtual Universe company are all absolute geniuses. To double one’s comprehension and strength the origin laws, just what is that? Giving 100k points is very normal.”

“I’ll give it a shot.”

“I’ll see if I can absorb the 4th. Also my willpower is stronger than before, I’ll let the golden horned beast try and absorb the 98th crystal to see.” Luo Feng was filled with anticipation.

……

After a while.

The earth body tried absorbing the 4th and reached halfway before he failed!

The golden horned beast fought hard for awhile and was just about to succeed before finally getting decimated by the killing aura willpower, failure!

“Haha, I cannot be too greedy.”

Luo Feng was gleeful, suddenly standing from the stone bed, “My

consciousness...it'll probably be another 8 to 10 years before I'll be able to withstand the 98th crystal's killing aura willpower."

No rush.

His life span was 10 times that of a normal human sector lord. To absorb 100 blood river crystals was the target, he could definitely hit it.

"Hm, right now I am a blood warrior." Luo Feng thought. "The 2nd mission was to absorb 3 crystals and become a blood warrior. However, I will have to receive the blood river medal, only then will I get the 100k points."

"Blood river medal!"

"Every blood warrior can go to any world city to the leader and receive the blood river medal."

"Blood god Baqi, he is also a World leader. He should have some blood river medals." Luo Feng couldn't wait at all. Remaining in ancient god ruins already had no benefits left for him. On top of that, within the headquarters of the Virtual Universe company, he had many things to do...it was time to leave blood river world.

He rushed to acquire the blood river medal!

Sou!

Luo Feng flew out through the cave and headed swiftly towards the depths of the pit.

……

“It’s 97.”

Deep in the depths, on a platform, sitting crossed legged was a huge bronze silhouette. He looked into the distance, “Number 2, what do you think of 97?”

“For so many years, he’s been staying in that same spot. The most he did was head towards the aura whirlpool.” Another voice resounded over 10k km within the captain’s ears. The blood god guards’ wrist communicators were used within the blood river continent area. As long as one was here, they could know of each other’s locations.

Because blood river continent was simply too huge.

Hence…every marker of the wrist communicator had a specific range of about only 100km! To the strong, such accuracy was already enough. Because within 100km, with a sector lord or domain lord’s strength, they can instantly discover their target.

Whether it was Blood god Baqi or the two captains of the blood god guards, using the wrist communicator…they all realized, Luo Feng had flew close to the aura whirlpool.

As their markers had a 100km margin of error.

None of them knew that Luo Feng had actually entered within the whirlpool.

“So many years, to focus only on training and not do anything else, at least we can begin to trust him.”

“Hm, indeed we can begin to.”

……

In the depths, it was vast.

A blood colored palace was erected amidst the mist. A green light landed before the palace and headed in, simultaneously saying, “Blood god guard 97, greets Lord blood god.”

“Wait a moment.” A voice resounded from the palace.

Luo Feng was very clear this was an AI’s voice, quietly and patiently waiting within the palace.

When the blood god was training, it was forbidden for anybody to disturb him. To see the blood god, they can only rely on the AI to request for them.

……

“I’m on the 5th level, come.” A majestic voice resounded in Luo Feng’s ears.

“Yes.”

Only then did Luo Feng follow the staircase. Like a blur as he swiftly headed up, in an instant, he reached the 5th level.

The 5th level was comparable in size to the 1st level of the palace.

However the layout of this level was more humane than the 1st level! Just like the design of the walls around, the luxurious rug on the floor, the materials were those that lasted over millions of years, and above this 5th level in that black throne, sat a silhouette that emitted a thick powerful aura.

Intrepid and powerful, the silhouette was dressed in a blood red long robe and had blood colored long hair.

It was blood god Baqi.

Below his majesty was another throne. There stood an incomparably tall wild beast Qi Niu. Even though he was below his majesty, with his huge stature, it caused his back to reach even higher than where Blood god Baqi sat.

“Greetings Lord, greetings Lord Qi Niu.” Luo Feng knelt down, one knee touching the ground.

“97, what’s the matter?” Blood god Baqi sat high in his throne looking down coldly.

“Lord, I’ve already absorbed 3 blood river crystals.” Luo Feng said respectfully, “I’ve always dreamt of becoming a blood river warrior and receiving a blood river medal. My reason for coming today is to request a blood river medal.”

“Ah?”

Blood god Baqi stood up fiercely. Beside him, the wild beast Qi Niu too shot out two spurts of hot air from his nostrils, they flowed past Luo Feng.

“Absorbed 3 crystals?” Baqi was shocked. He knew that the talent of this new blood god guard 97 was very high. However to quickly absorb 3 crystals...shocked him greatly. Because some humans could at most absorb 4 or 5 crystals, maybe 7 or 8, like himself!

However, it required long periods in the killing aura to alter their body.

“Yes.”

Kneeling on one knee, Luo Feng's chest bronze armor automatically ripped open, revealing his bare chest. Simultaneously, Luo Feng triggered that mysterious energy and a blood red engraving appeared there.

Looking at the simple but complete blood red engraving, Baqi's eyes gleamed. He revealed a smile and laughing loudly, "97, very good, very good."

"Rumble." Two jets of hot steam shot out of wild beast Qi Niu's nostrils. He too let out a thick booming sound, "Very good."

Chapter 54 – Undying Shrine

Within the palace, Blood god Baqi laughed as he walked down from the throne.

Luo Feng remained knelt there.

“Hm.” Baqi looked at Luo Feng kneeling on one knee, more satisfied as he looked. Blood river world was different from the universe. The universe had the Virtual Universe company and other huge powers nurturing their geniuses, allowing them to compete. However it was mostly a protective kind of nurture.

Blood river world was different!

There were over 10 million world cities on the continent. Countless sector lords fought against each other! Even if one was a genius, no matter how powerful, you’ll still have to experience slaughter to slowly reach the top! Hence Baqi would accept elites to build his own blood god guards, this was him preparing his genius army!

Right now he was in training. However, the moment he revealed himself, his power and status would have to be earned through slaughter!

Blood river continent worshipped strength! Worshipped slaughter!

“97, at cloud level 9 you are able to defeat a domain level 1 blood demon.” Baqi stood there, looking down at Luo Feng, “Right now you’ve even absorbed 3 blood river crystals. Your improvement speed would be even faster! Your level of talent is considered top level even amongst the geniuses absorbed by the undying shrine.”

“Under me, your benefits will definitely be no less than those geniuses nurtured by the undying shrine!” Baqi said confidently, “If you are loyal to me, I will treat you well!”

“Thank you Lord, I will do my best to support you and work for you.” Luo Feng knelt there, clean and respectful.

When Baqi heard those words, his smile grew wider.

“Haha…”

“Hahaha…”Baqi began to laugh even louder. The laughter resounded continuously around the palace, even the blood god guards in their training rooms on the 3rd level all looked up, wondering why their lord was so happy.

Baqi was all smiles, personally lifting Luo Feng till he stood there.

“Work hard.” Baqi smiled at Luo Feng. “First break through to domain level. As for the blood river medal, I haven’t taken over a world city. The medals that I initially brought with me have all been given out.”

“Ah.” Luo Feng was stunned.

Given out?

Meaning, Baqi didn’t have any blood river medals?

“Haha, 97, you little punk, the moment you heard there weren’t any medals…your expression changed.” Baqi smiled, “I understand your thoughts. I grew up listening to the legends of the blood and black warrior too, working hard to become a blood warrior and black warrior, to get the blood river medal.”

“That medal, to those who receive it, is simply just a medal and has no other meaning. To those that don’t receive it…it’s however a target that they’d chase for thousands to tens of thousands of years.”

“Hm!”

“I may not have any right now, but I’ll inform the undying shrine to give me a few more.” Baqi smiled at Luo Feng, “I estimate in about 10 days, if they are faster… within 6 to 7 days, they will send envoys to deliver the medals to me. Then, I’ll hand one to you.”

“Thank you lord!” Luo Feng’s expression was filled with gratitude as he bowed.

“Haha…go on! Breakthrough to the domain level!” Baqi smiled.

“Ah, right, these are two blood river crystals! When you’ve absorbed them, look for me again.” Following which, he flipped his hand and took out two more crystals, they floated out of his palm and straight to Luo Feng.

Luo Feng respectfully received them, “Thank you lord.”

Baqi smiled as he looked at Luo Feng leave respectfully, following which he couldn’t help but laugh loudly again, causing the entire palace to tremble.

……

As Luo Feng left the 5th level, he met a few other blood god guards. They were all curious as to why Baqi was so happy. Hence they came to ask! Luo Feng naturally explained to them. Immediately the group of guards were all filled with envy, congratulating Luo Feng.

After which, Luo Feng left the palace and rushed straight into the sky, towards where the aura was thick and red.

“The 1st time I met Blood god Baqi, he was brutal, cold and without remorse. He would have killed me in a heartbeat.” Luo Feng smiled and shook his head as he flew. Exclaiming within, “However after so many years, now he’s attitude is obviously much better. He even got closer once he knew I absorbed 3 crystals.”

This was a form of trust.

When they first met back then, even though he had submitted, Blood God Baqi probably still hadn't fully trusted him.

However after so long of sticking by the rules within his huge pit quarters, obviously Baqi was very satisfied and finally began to trust him. Maybe the level of trust wasn't comparable to his captain number 1 or others, but because of Luo Feng's talent, obviously Baqi still favored him heavily.

"Pity!"

"Baqi, I cannot stay in this blood river world. My area...is even more vast." Luo Feng muttered within, "After I receive the medal, I'll leave!"

"The next time I come will definitely be much much later."

Sou!

He swiftly tore through the skies and headed towards his huge pit quarters.

After Luo Feng left, not long after, Baqi personally used his communication device to send a message to the undying shrine, requesting more blood river medals.

……

Undying shrine, its core region was within the ancient god ruins.

The area was vast. There were large amounts of mountain ranges, occasionally swamps, rivers, forests and huge pits etc…in this ten million km area, the killing aura was all around. Be it high in the mountain peaks or deep in the swamps and rivers, or in the huge pits, or floating in mid air…

In every core of the whirlpool auras was a glaring red sun.

In this entire region however there were a total of 10,081 aura whirlpools about. Every one of them revolving, most of them however were about ten times less or more than Luo Feng's pit, the smaller ones had an aura of only 1/10th. There were all forms of aura whirlpools.

All different in strength, size and position.

10,081 whirlpools, separated into skies, rivers, mountain peaks, valleys, naturally formed phenomenons!

"Rumble…"

"Ji!"

"Ang!"

Like an ancient beast howling, passing through trillions of years of time and space, resounding within a region.

In the center of these 10,081 whirlpools, there was an ancient shrine a million km in area, completely black and red in color. The surface layer had incomparably complex statues, some of them were of beasts roaring, some of undyings battling and so on. The ancient shrine surrounded by the 10,081 whirlpools, emitted the same ancient aura.

Just how big was an ancient shrine that had an area of 1 million km?

Earth was tiny compared to this shrine.

The size of the shrine was comparable to the sun!

This was the center of blood river continent's strongest power. Even the Virtual Universe company hadn't completely dominated this place.

.....

Undying shrine, majestic and tall, in level 9,829 of the palace.

"Yuke." A black armored silhouette stood before the throne. Gazing downwards, his voice boomed like thunder.

Below, a white uniformed man was kneeling, his head on the ground.

“Go get 20 blood river medals and with the fastest speed send them to Baqi.” The armored silhouette said indifferently.

“Yes, great god.” The white clothed man knelt and said respectfully.

“Go!” The silhouette said.

Shua!

The armored silhouette vanished from the palace. The white clothed man got up and turned to head outside, simultaneously shouting loudly outside, “Wula, get the team of special envoys ready, we are leaving immediately from the shrine.”

“Yes lord Yuke.”

A voice resounded from outside.

……

After a while, a dark purple disc shaped universe ship swiftly tore through the skies flying away from the shrine. Up in the 15th level of clouds, it flew quickly towards the huge pit.

The ancient god ruins were simply too vast. The universe ships created by the undying shrine paled far in comparison to Luo Feng's automaton ship. Even flying in the cloud levels, the resistance was much higher than flying in space. Hence just the flight alone, Baqi said would require 6 to 10 days.

6 to 10 days here was blood river continent's time.

In truth, compared to earth time, it was about 1 to 2 months.

……

In that ship, after flying about 20 days of earth time, within a wide river in the ancient god ruins was an island.

On that island.

A warrior was in training.

At the depths of the river was a huge aura whirlpool, endless aura emitted from within, making this island…as the best place to train.

"Lord!"

"Lord!"

Two silhouettes fiercely emerged from the surface of the water, landing on the island. These two shouted hurriedly, their voices rumbling...resounding throughout the island. With a domain lord's strength, the power of those roars, one could only imagine.

"Lord." "Lord."

The two of them rushed until they were before a beautiful silver white palace, there stood a beautiful receptionist.

Rumble!

A silhouette rushed out from within the palace, immediately appearing at the entrance. With a wave of his hand, a wave of world energy formed a huge palm and slapped the two underlings shouting. It Knocked them so far back that they flew into the distant vegetation.

"I've already said it before." Before the palace, dressed in a white robe, a bewitchingly handsome youth, with fox like eyes was staring at the two who were spitting out blood. "When I am training if you are looking for me, first let the AI know and let it inform me! You actually shouted and made a ruckus. I am teaching you a lesson this time, next time, don't blame me for being merciless."

The two guards immediately were shocked to their senses.

"We know our mistake."

“We know our mistake.” The two quickly flew over and bowed respectfully.

“Hm.”

The fox like youth cleared his throat and said indifferently, “Speak, just what has gotten you both so crazy.”

“There’s some historical remnants at the bottom of the river.” One of the guards shouted.

“There’s some historical remnants at the bottom of the river, very likely from that battle countless years ago.” The other guard spoke.

The fox like youth stared wide eyed.

Historical remnants?

From that legendary battle?

“Bring me there quickly!” The youth ordered in a shrill voice, his face flushed red from excitement.

Chapter 55 – Historical Remnant

"Yes!" The two guards didn't dare delay, quickly leading the way into the distant river.

"How did you two discover it?" The fox like youth communicated while following them.

Historical remnant.

The ancient god ruins was the place where blood river continent's strongest undyings joined hands against the outsider's invasion. That battle was a bloodbath, trillions of km of area was completely wasted, even causing the area to be filled with killing aura up till now. One could only imagine how intense the battle was!

Every undying was able to build his own god country, the amount of treasures they had was plenty.

After that battle back then...

The undying shrine, there was a period of time where everybody madly searched for treasures. They swept the entire ancient god ruins, collecting large amounts of the treasures! However...even though the undying shrine had sent undyings to search for the treasures, the area was afterall still too large!

Also, the ground went too deep!

The surface diameter of blood river continent was 9 trillion km, and the depth alone was close to 100 billion km. With such depths, to actually search the entire area properly...

Even a group of undyings would definitely leave something out!

However over a trillion years, it was rare that one ever heard of a new discovery. Afterall. over countless years, 99% of the historical remnants were already found, leaving behind the extremely hard to find ones.

.....

The three of them dived straight into the river, diving deeper and deeper, this vast river's depth was at least 10,000km, very deep indeed.

"Lord, discovering the remnant was also our luck."

"Right, it's luck."

The fox like youth dived downwards, communicating, "Explain."

"The two of us were at the bottom of the river hunting some water beasts to barbecue and eat. Who would have thought that at the bottom, we ended up feeling the ground below tremor violently, causing a canyon to split apart, with some ancient

decayed weapons floating out. We didn't dare delay, hence we came to inform you."

"The moment we discovered it, we immediately came to inform you Lord."

The two of them said.

The fox like youth smiled as he heard this. He was a sector lord nurtured by the undying shrine, his sights were indeed plenty. Hence from the explanation alone he understood...

"It should be some undying or world leader's world storage which was destroyed. Hence, when it was destroyed the ground tremored, it caused his world to reveal itself." The fox like youth thought. As long as one reached the sector lord level, he could use his world energy to build his own world and even a world within a world.

And one world could be shrunk down within a villa.

Even until it reached the size of a specially constructed sand grain.

How much it could shrink depended on the materials!

Some materials were just a little bigger than a sesame seed, that alone could house an entire world. And even though creating space rings' materials were cheap, however to actually slice a piece of

space was very hard and troublesome. Hence, many wealthy sector lords and even undyings would rather use money to acquire valuable materials and store their worlds and use as their storage! Afterall, a world the size of a sand grain was easy to bring about.

However...

The god countries were different, they were even more vast and more troublesome.

“Should be an undying!”

“World leaders all have their internal worlds. They can place items within their internal worlds. Only undyings! They already don’t have their internal worlds, only god countries. And placing items within and retrieving it later, storing is very troublesome. Hence bringing along a world, where the space is huge, storage etc, was very convenient.” The fox like youth thought. “However, the materials used to store a world are still very valuable, and they cannot last forever. After over a trillion years...finally they decayed. Once that happened, then the world would reveal itself. Hence, the ground split open, allowing these two punks to discover it. Haha, my luck sure is good.”

The fox like youth reached the bottom excited, at the dark bottom, he used his world energy.

“Indeed!”

“It’s indeed a world.” The youth scanned the bottom with his world energy, reaching deep into the ground, immediately he was very excited.

Sou!

He immediately dug deep into the ground and began to search for the treasures.

……

Half a day later, Hu Xin island, within the palace.

The fox like youth stood before the fence. Gazing into the distance, he felt extremely satisfied. “I didn’t expect that, I Kuyan, could acquire such historical remnant treasures. Hm, from the looks of it, it should be some items stored in some undying’s world. Even though there aren’t as many treasures as I expected, however it’s still hundreds to thousands of times more than my wealth.”

Windfall.

The legendary historical remnant, it was that thrilling! He was a world leader, even though he had plenty of treasures, in this one instant his wealth had leapt 1,000 times.

“However, the other weapons and materials etc, I can handle. This jade gold statue however, is really useless to me.” The youth flipped his hand and a 30cm tall statue appeared in his palm. It was

completely half transparent, gold in color. Looking at this statue, it gave off a heart trembling energy.

The statue was of a wild beast. A lizard like creature, with a long tail, thick legs and a single horn on its head! Its intrepid energy emitted from the mysterious ancient statue.

“This jade gold statue is one of the legendary beast god statues I think. I’ve heard there’s a total of 18 of them.” The fox like youth shook his head, “However, it only has sentimental value, no other uses.”

Beast god statue.

An item the undying shrine worshipped. There were a total of 18 of them. However, back then during the terrifying battle, more than half of them were lost. Till today, three of them still hadn’t been found.

“Even though it’s useless to me, however giving it to the undying shrine would mean great benefit to me, I’ll get quite a reward.” The youth smiled. Using his communication device, he sent a message to the undying shrine...

The message was very simple.

It was that he, Kuyan, had acquired a beast god statue by chance and was giving it to the shrine.

……

The message quickly reached light speed. Within 1.5 days, it reached the shrine. Within the shrine…even though the beast god statues were but items of worship and had no other use or importance, its status was still highly regarded. Hence the shrine immediately gave the order for the envoy team closest to bring the statue back, and even give a reward to the sector lord Kuyan.

Yuke led his team of envoys and sat in a dark purple universe ship, arriving in the air above Hu Xin island.

“Kuyan.”

The white robed Yuke descended from above, behind him followed two envoys.

“Haha, Yuke.” The fox like youth smiled and flew from the island, welcoming them. “What a coincidence.”

“I am here under the god’s orders to deliver the blood river medals to Lord Baqi.” The white robed Yuke said. “Right now there are currently 2 teams of envoys in the ancient god ruins, and I just happened to be close to you. Hence, I was ordered to route over and receive the beast god statue.”

“Lord Baqi?”

The fox like youth was surprised. “You are heading to Lord Baqi?

I heard he has been in the aura training for quite long, and has already absorbed 8 crystals."

"Yes." The white robed Yuke nodded.

"Go, it's a good surprise that I met you here. I'll follow you to meet Lord Baqi. I've long heard of his reputation, but haven't met him yet." The youth said. Compared to Baqi...whether it was age or position, he paled in comparison. Firstly, this fox like youth was only sector lord level 3.

And Baqi, had long long ago reached the pinnacle of sector lords.

And he was a trillion year genius!

As long as he wanted, he could breakthrough to undying very quickly! In terms of position, Baqi was comparable even to the undyings. Otherwise, why would his guard team alone have two sector lords, and even a powerful wild beast Qi Niu as his brother.

"Let's go." White robed Yuke nodded.

Immediately the group flew into the purple ship in the sky. It sped off with shocking speed headed towards the huge pit.

.....

Time passed.

Luo Feng waited patiently within the huge pit quarters.

“Blood god Baqi told me that day it’ll take 6 to 10 days. According to earth time, that’s at most 2 months, however now, 2 months have passed.” Dressed in the blood god guard uniform of bronze armor, he sat crossed legged on his stone bed, worrying within.

Him staying there didn’t have many benefits anymore.

And returning would mean more opportunities. Compared to the vast universe, blood river continent was simply too small.

“Rumble!”

The air shook, and a powerful energy reached Luo Feng.

“97!” A thick voice resounded within the huge pit quarters, causing Luo Feng to jump down and reply respectfully, “Lord.”

The huge pit quarters was 10s of thousands of km away from the palace in the depths of the pit, and a sector lord’s unleashed world energy was unable to travel that far. Hence he had to control and focus his world energy in a specific direction. With Blood god Baqi’s control, it caused the air to shake.

“Come here to me.” The voice resounded.

“Yes.” Luo Feng replied, happy within, looks like it was time to receive the blood river medal.

Sou!

Luo Feng became a green light and followed the cave out, diving deep into the depths of the huge pit and reaching the bottom in an instant.

……

5th level of the palace.

Luo Feng had arrived at the 5th level, spotting the blood color robed Baqi in the throne above, along with the wild beast Qi Niu beside.

“Greetings Lord, Lord Qi Niu.” Luo Feng knelt on one knee.

“Get up.”

Baqi was smiling, “In a while, the blood god palace envoys will arrive and deliver the medals. Also…your luck this time is good.”

“My luck is good?” Luo Feng’s face was filled with curiosity.

Blood god Baqi smiled, “Haha, the special envoys that have come

have brought along another world leader Kuyan. He was extremely lucky, acquiring an ancient treasure from the undying shrine…the beast god statue! It is a statue of a beast god, a legendary being. When they arrive, I'll let you see the statue."

"Ah? Beast god statue?"

Luo Feng was curious, on the surface however he shouted, "Thank you Lord!"

Chapter 56 – Beast God Statue

When Luo Feng went to visit the blood god Baqi, a dark purple disc shaped universe ship had stopped above the huge pit in mid air.

Hua!

The cabin door opened.

The leader of the envoys, the white robed Yuke and the Fox like youth Kuyan flew out of the cabin door, followed by 8 others.

“This is Baqi’s training spot?” The fox like youth’s eyes gleamed. Gazing below at the huge pit, “The aura here is so thick, looks like there’s a whirlpool down there too.”

“Hm.” Yuke nodded indifferently, simultaneously keeping the universe ship.

“Follow me down.” Yuke ordered.

“Yes.” the group complied.

“Hehe, we’ll meet the legendary Lord Baqi in a moment.” The fox like youth was very excited.

Sou! Sou! Sou! The silhouettes rushed downwards swiftly into

the depths of the blood red aura.

Within the depths, a palace was erected there. 10 silhouettes swiftly descended and landed at the entrance of the palace, led by the white robed Yuke and the fox like youth Kuyan.

“Lord Baqi. On orders from my god, we’ve delivered the blood river medal.” The white robed Yuke bowed and shouted.

“Enter.”

A thick booming voice immediately reached the 10 people’s ears. Simultaneously, a blood god guard appeared at the entrance and personally led them in. “Envoys, this way!”

With the guard leading them, the 10 of them quickly reached the 5th level of the palace.

……

Palace 5th level.

A blood red robed Baqi sat high in his throne, gazing below. Below, on the left was the fierce looking wild beast Qi Niu, and beside him were 3 blood god guards. Captain number 1, vice captain number 2 and the blood god guard awaiting his medal 97.

Yuke and Kuyan along with the others had arrived.

“Greetings Lord Baqi.” The white robed Yuke bowed, beside him the fox like youth bowed too.

“Greetings Lord Baqi.” The 8 of them behind them too knelt down on one knee.

“Yuke, it’s been rough on you.” Baqi nodded from above in the throne. His gaze then landed on the youth beside him, “You are Kuyan?”

“Yes Lord Baqi.” The youth smiled and spoke excitedly, “I was a few generations after Lord Baqi. However, I am also one of the geniuses from the undying shrine. I’ve long heard of your name and always wanted to meet you. But today, it’s finally come true.”

Baqi nodded, remaining calm.

The Undying shrine had many geniuses in one batch, the strength of the world leaders was large also. He… Baqi was a genius of a trillion years and his position was comparable to an undying. As for the other normal geniuses, naturally he didn’t bother. What’s more, even though Yuke and Kuyan below were of sector lord strength.

One was sector lord level 3 while the other was 5.

Even in terms of quantity they hadn’t reached the pinnacle. Naturally Baqi couldn’t bother too much with them.

“Blood river medal?” Baqi looked below at Yuke.

“These are the 20 medals that my god had ordered me to deliver.” Yuke flipped his hand and 20 palm sized medals floated in his hand. They were all completely dark red, and on them were engraving and words.

Sou!

The 20 medals floated directly to the throne above before Blood god Baqi.

“Hm.” Blood god Baqi snorted coldly. With a wave of his hand, he kept those 20 medals.

“97!” Blood god Baqi ordered.

“Present!” Luo Feng walked out and knelt on one knee, replying loudly.

In the throne above Baqi smiled, “You’ve successfully absorbed 3 crystals, becoming a blood warrior. Today, before the envoys of the undying shrine, I personally present you this blood river medal! Train well, don’t waste your talents.”

“Your underling will not disappoint you Lord.” Luo Feng knelt on one knee, his voice strong and forceful.

“Hm.”

Blood god Baqi waved his hand and immediately 1 medal appeared and floated before Luo Feng.

Luo Feng stared at the medal. It was palm sized, and dark red in color. Its surface was covered in engravings that formed together an ancient palace. As he raised his hand to receive it, he said respectfully, “Thanks lord.” Simultaneously, he let out a sigh of relief within. He had finally acquired the medal.

Once one became a blood warrior and acquired the blood river medal, the reward would be 100k points!

“Everything is finished. I have no need to stay anymore. Once I return to the huge pit quarters, I’ll find a chance to leave.” Luo Feng thought.

“Cloud level pinnacle and he’s absorbed 3 crystals?” That fox like youth Kuyan let out a shrill voice, resounding throughout the palace. “Congratulations Lord Baqi. Congratulations, to acquiring such a genius. I believe that in 100s of thousands of years, he will definitely be a powerful warrior.”

Baqi only replied indifferently, changing the subject, “I heard you acquired a Beast god statue?”

“By mere luck.” Kuyan immediately replied.

“Your luck is not bad.” In the throne, Baqi nodded coldly.

And Luo Feng who was standing beside the two other guards was curious within. Just what was this beast god statue thing?

“Lord Baqi, please take a look.” Kuyan confidently extended one hand and suddenly, a statue appeared out of nowhere in his palm. It was about 30cm tall, half crystal like and transparent. It also had complex gold within, and it looked like a lizard like beast. However, its head seemed to be struggling with its 4 legs which were thick and powerful, and one horn that piercing towards the sky.

The entire statue emitted a heart trembling terrifying energy.

“Brutal!”

Almost like a crazed shout, the voice resounded through everybody’s ears, making everyone who was staring at the statue change their expressions.

“Good statue!” Blood god Baqi complemented and nodded.

“Beast god!” The wild beast Qi Niu stared wide eyed, and a complex look could be seen within his gaze as he looked on.

The two captains of the blood god guards too looked in shock.

They had heard of the legendary beast god statue before, but have never seen it! Of all present, the only one who had probably seen a beast god statue before was probably Blood god Baqi.

……

“This, this is…” Luo Feng remained calm on the outside, inside however were filled with torrents of thoughts and emotions that took over.

Right!

Without a doubt, this beast god statue was the terrifying ancient beast he had seen in the three pictures in the whirlpool. Just the statue alone…that weak but terrifying energy it emitted, it was definitely stronger than Baqi, Qi Niu or any others! Even more powerful than some of the powerful warriors Luo Feng had seen in the primal chaos city…

Naturally, the energy from the statue was weak!

“This beast god statue?” Luo Feng carefully examined it, staring at every scale, and at its incredibly defined claws and tail.

Howl!

Brutal!

Luo Feng could almost see countless years ago, where this lizard like beast dominated the universe space. Howling and slaughtering tens of millions, its intrepid energy...completely triggered Luo Feng's golden horned beast. What his earth body saw, the other bodies naturally saw too.

"Howl..." The golden horned beast within the internal world couldn't help but howl out, and its dark pupils were filled with excitement and anticipation.

"This, this is the true aim of the golden horned beast."

"This is the direction in which the beast needs to head in." Luo Feng was extremely excited.

Having long studied the three ancient pictures, along with the golden horned beast's reaction, it made Luo Feng burn with excitement within.

The shape of the statue was important, but the importance was given to god itself!

Luo Feng had long studied the blurry ancient pictures formed by the aura, using Tearing Sky and land technique to comprehend and learn. After rushing into the whirlpool, he was even able to more clearly study the three pictures. Those three within were 10 times clearer than those formed by the aura outside. Hence that image of the god was also 10 times clearer!

And at this time!

This beast statue before him...it made Luo Feng feel as though there was a living ancient beast right before him! Even though it was a simple statue, however the god that statue portrayed, that energy...was countless times higher than the three ancient pictures.

“Howl...” The golden horned beast howled within the internal world.

It was howling.

Almost like a cat howling, trying to imitate a tiger!

That ancient beast was a tiger and the golden horned beast was but a weak cat!

“That was not the correct way!”

“Wrong, what I studied before was wrong.”

“Tearing sky and land, compared to this ancient beast’s 1st claw pales in comparison. Looking at the statue itself, I know the right path.” Almost like a living ancient beast here, the energy emitted from the statue revealed many secrets that indeed benefitted the golden horned beast.

“I have to acquire it!”

“This ancient beast statue, I have to get it!”

“This statue, to the golden horned beast is like the 9 universe tablet to the human body. I don’t know who carved this statue, but they were actually able to capture its essence.” The golden horned beast studied it awhile and immediately realized that this was far from an ordinary statue.

Luo Feng’s gaze fell on the white robed Yuke and Kuyan’s bodies.

Those two were sector lords!

“What do I do? These two are both sector lords. I have no way to snatch.” Luo Feng panicked within. “And there’s even Baqi and Qi Niu here, who were both sector lord pinnacle. And once they leave, they will swiftly take their universe ship and go.”

As Luo Feng was panicking...

“The beast god statue, is completely jade gold, and every inch of jade gold is incomparably valuable. It’s a material used by undyings to create weapons.” Baqi looked at the statue and exclaimed a couple of times. However, he seemed more enticed by the material and the worth of the jade gold that was used to make the statue.

“However, 18 statues, in terms of craftsmanship, all are at their

peaks.” Baqi’s felt his problem and quickly complemented the work.

“Lord Baqi, as the medals have been delivered, we’ll return back to the shrine.” White Robe Yuke bowed.

Kuyan too kept the medals and bowed.

“Hm.” Baqi nodded.

Yuke, Kuyan and the other 8 envoys thus left.

Luo Feng stood there, frowning.

Chapter 57 – Too Valuable

As the white robed Yuke and Kuyan left with the 8 envoys, Luo Feng left the palace too.

Sou!

He became a beam of green light rushing into the sky, quickly reaching his huge pit quarters.

“Undying shrine, Beast god statue?” Luo Feng looked at the skies. He could see 1,000 li in the sky, and there, a dark purple disc shaped ship floated around.

“Beast god statue!” Luo Feng recalled the statue.

Howl!

Li!

Looking at that statue was almost like looking at a live ancient beast itself.

Through the statue and its mysterious energy, he could feel the ancient beast’s first calw scene. Such artistic grace, unleashing an attack that could destroy the entire land and skies, it was so natural! The ancient beast’s claw was one that was infused with both universe laws and ground and sky laws.

It came into contact with almost every law!

Looking at the beast statue, the golden horned beast too had some revelations. It could use this to understand how to improve in its training. Maybe the statue wasn't as godly as the 9 universe tablet.

However, to the golden horned beast, its importance was maybe even higher than the 9 universe tablet to it.

The only thing was that the statue was protected by two sector lords now.

"Hmph." Luo Feng thought, and entered his huge pit quarters.

Blood river world space, Tian Shi palace.

This palace was located in space. In terms of size, it wasn't smaller than a planet.

Within the 1st level of the palace, a group of sector lords in charge of surveillance were shocked as they looked at the huge screen.

"Ah, His majesty Luo Feng's automaton ship has entered Blood River world."

“Luo Feng’s ship, it’s been in space for so long. Why enter it now?”

“He’s preparing to return?”

“Be on your toes.”

The group of sector lords didn’t dare relax. Right now, Luo Feng was heavily favored by the upper echelons of the Virtual Universe company. In terms of position, he was much higher than the group of sector lords.

……

15th cloud level, the dark purple disc shaped ship was flying swiftly.

In the 18th cloud level, disguised fully as a cloud was a silver white pyramid automaton ship. It too was swiftly flying. In terms of speed and flexibility…this undying automaton ship was much better in many aspects compared to the Yun Mo planet ship, much less the technologically backward ships of Blood River world.

Automaton ship, control room.

Black clothed Luo Feng sat in the sofa. A light screen appeared before it, and on it there was a marker.

“Beast god statue, I definitely have to get it. The 9 universe tablet, it’s hard to get even one chance to study it, and each time, there is a allowed study period of only 7 days. And this statue...is extremely important to the golden horned beast.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed. In the vast universe, the strong preyed on the weak, and many races were destroyed and extinct due to this law of the jungle.

Everything was based on strength!

Even though the points from the blood river crystal were very important, and his rewards this time were huge, the beast god statue was hundreds to thousands of times more valuable than the 100k points!

“No matter what, I have to get it.” Luo Feng thought.

“Master, the target has been acquired. Currently maintaining a distance of 1.6million km.” The AI from the automaton ship spoke.

“Activate star annihilator cannon!” Luo Feng said coldly.

“Yes!” The ship’s AI wouldn’t defy him in the least.

A voice however resounded in the control room, shouting, “Luo Feng, what are you doing, why are you activating the star annihilator cannon? That’s a star annihilator cannon, and is comparable to an undying’s full attack. Just one shot can completely destroy a planet! The amount of energy used is

shocking too. The automaton's reserves aren't that much, your one shot will use 1/3 of the reserves!"

While Babata was shouting in rage...

The control room resounded with the AI's voice, "Star annihilator cannon 1 countdown, 60...59...58..."

"There's a treasure I need to get from that ship." Black clothed Luo Feng said coldly.

"Damn, is there a treasure that requires you to use this cannon? A star annihilator cannon is one of the pinnacle weapons in the entire human race of the universe. One shot is akin to an undyings full attack. However, because of its dispersed attack, it cannot be as condensed as a true undying, hence it cannot kill an undying. However, anything under an undying...will definitely be reduced to ashes! Aren't you worried that the treasure you want will be destroyed too?"

The black clothed Luo Feng said coldly, "That's a statue made of jade gold from Blood River continent."

"Jade gold? Hm..." Babata seemed to realize, muttering, "What a waste."

18 beast god statues, were from an era before a war over trillions of years ago.

Most of them had been retrieved, yet none of them seemed to be damaged in the least. Obviously, to actually damage these statues was extremely hard, even the undyings found it hard to do!

Even if one broke through a space ring, with the space inside broken, the statues would still remain unharmed.

Even after an undying is killed, the statues were still in perfect condition.

Undying shrine…

They've always regarded the statues as extremely important items to be worshiped. As their history was very special, what they represented was terrifying. Hence the undying shrine worshipped these statues! Other than the fact that they remained in perfect condition over countless years, the undyings had yet to find any other special use for them.

"30…29…28…" The countdown in the control room continued!

……

About 1.6million km from the automaton ship, the dark purple ship was flying.

Whether it was the automaton race or the human race, they mostly battled in space. Since the area in space was vast and unlimited, their scanning radius was naturally huge too. Much less

this...automaton ship was made from a race of technology! Which was equal to an undying.

If it were detected by the ship made by the backward Blood River continent, that would be a joke.

.....

Within the Dark purple ship.

“Yuke, that Baqi sure is arrogant. I painstakingly went all the way there, yet he didn’t even smile at me.” The fox like youth Kuyan sat crossed legged, lifting a wine glass and saying dissatisfied.

“Baqi was also known as blood god, he made his name because of his madness and slaughter. He may be closer to his blood god guards. However to others, he’s always been cold.” The white robed Yuke shook his head and smiled. “There is no way around it. Baqi is a genius of a trillion years, hence he can back his arrogance. We can only accept it!”

The fox like youth simply snorted coldly.

In front of Baqi earlier, he was affectionate and friendly. However, now he couldn’t hide it anymore.

“Kuyan.” The white robed Yuke changed the subject, “You giving this beast god statue to the undying shrine this time will get you a

huge reward."

"Haha..."The fox like youth smiled the moment he thought of the reward.

.....

"6...5...4...3...2...1!" Energy storing complete!"

Within the silver white pyramid's control room, Black clothed Luo Feng sat in the sofa. His eyes gleamed coldly as he ordered, "Fire!"

.....

The silver white pyramid was 1,200m tall.

The large pyramid at this time revealed itself. The beautiful tip of the pyramid had a condensed glaring light ball as the entire surface of the ship had large amounts of light energy gathered at the tip. It got stronger and stronger, until it sparked like lightning, finally forming a light ball with a diameter of 300m.

With the order within the control room, "Fire!"

Chi!

The light ball at the tip became a light pillar with a diameter of 300m and immediately followed the calculated path from the AI within the ship and fired out!

……

Within the dark purple ship.

The fox like youth was still smiling, “Yuke, you relax, this…”

chi!

The 300m diameter light pillar immediately passed right through the purple ship, that ship’s diameter was but about 100m, it was completely engulfed by the light pillar. Under this terrifying attack, the two sector lords within the ship Kuyan and Yuke could only stare wide eyed in fear and were reduced to nothing.

The other 8 envoys within didn’t even have time to react and were destroyed!

Peng!

The space rings all broke apart one by one, and all the stored spaces within too were sliced open, with large amounts of items within being reduced to dust. However, within the fox like Kuyan’s ring, there were several items that managed to survive the light pillar’s attack. Especially that beast god statue…

Even after the space was destroyed, it was perfectly undamaged, almost like this attack was nothing but a gust of wind against it.

The light pillar immediately reduced the ship to dust. Simultaneously, a 300m diameter cavity appeared in the wilderness of the ancient god ruins below. The light pillar condensed and gathered and finally a huge explosion occurred! Rumble…tens of thousands of km around exploded. The area at the middle of the explosion was decimated, and countless rubble and stones flew everywhere.

Star annihilator cannon!

The truth that just one shot could destroy an entire planet, was not a joke at all.

……

At the depths of the huge pit, within the palace.

“Such a strong energy ripple?”

“Who is it?”

Sou! Sou!

Two silhouettes, one blood god Baqi and another Qi Niu swiftly

rushed towards the energy ripple. Even the two captains of the blood god guards swiftly rose into the skies. All these characters flew out of the huge pit and headed towards the terrifying energy ripples.

“What’s going on?”

“Why has the lord left?”

The blood god guards all rose into the skies and flew out of the huge pit. Luo Feng too followed suit.

“Baqi, blood god guards.” Luo Feng looked at the guards swiftly flying out, thinking, “It’s time to say goodbye!”

Sou!

As Blood god Baqi rushed towards the energy ripples, Luo Feng rushed into the skies and simultaneously took off his wrist communicator, tossing the hard to destroy communicator deep into the pit. He himself swiftly flew through the 18 cloud levels and as the automaton ship drew close, he vanished into his internal world.

……

A huge crater with a diameter of tens of thousands of km could be seen.

Blood god Baqi and Qi Niu floated in mid air, gazing down at the size of the crater, and were utterly shocked.

“There’s no trace of origin law ripples.” Blood god Baqi’s face revealed shock. “This, this isn’t an undying’s attack”

“It’s the outsiders!” Qi Niu’s eyes too were filled with shock.

“Inform the shrine, immediately inform the shrine!”

……

And in the space above Blood River world, the automaton ship disguised as a meteorite flew.

Luo Feng lay in the sofa, lifting a wine glass and looked at the beast god statue that emitted a terrifying energy. He smiled happily and said, “1/3 of the energy reserves were used to exchange for a beast god statue. It’s definitely worth it. With such a small capital investment, I’ve gotten a huge profit, huge profit indeed!”

Chapter 58 – Yu Dao Door

“Look at your smug face.” The energy formed silhouette of the demon Babata mocked.

“How can I not be satisfied?” Luo Feng put down the wine glass and lifted the beast god statue. Looking ahead at the vast space, it was dreamy and filled with dust and fog. Meteorites could also be seen everywhere.

Looking at the endless space, Luo Feng’s spirit rose. Looking down at the beast god statue, he almost felt as though the statue had become a live ancient beast that was roaring. This beast itself seem to embody the laws. The golden horned beast within his internal world also raised its head to howl, resounding throughout the entire internal world.

“This is it!”

“It’s the strongest thing I can rely on.” His eyes gleamed. While staring at the statue, he said “With this statue, comprehending that 1st claw will be much faster. This will also make my path to understanding the other paths easier and smoother!”

“I want to stand at the peak of the universe, and this will pave the way to achieve that!”

“My greatest reward from this Blood River world is this beast god statue!”

Luo Feng thought.

The Mosha clansmen appeared next to him. The black clothed Luo Feng immediately received the statue and disappeared within the internal world.

Within the internal world.

“Howl!”

The golden horned beast was like a black mountain range that stood there, and while it extended its right claw, it was even bigger than the Himalayan mountains. Black clothed Luo Feng placed the statue in its palm, after which the statue vanished and entered within the golden horned beast’s storage ring.

The golden horned beast had its own storage ring. As it frequently trained deities of the world etc, it required a space to retrieve its own treasures to swallow.

It stored the storage ring within the slits of its chest’s scales.

Generations of golden horned beasts too had placed their storage items within that slit, mainly because there was a space there that was actually suitable to place items.

……

Within the control room of the automaton ship.

Luo Feng looked ahead at the space, ordering, “Let’s go, head to Meng Na city!”

“Meng Na city?” Demon babata opened his mouth in shock.

Luo Feng looked at the virtual image of Babata beside and nodded his head. “Back then I placed Na Ke in Meng Na city, and it’s been 80 years already. Who knows what’s happened to him! I gave him some treasures back then...the treasures could move his heart. Hence, before leaving I want to go take a look, since Tian Shi palace is that direction too”

The space close to Swallow mound territory was the closest to Tian Shi palace.

For Luo Feng to return, he’d have to first head to Tian Shi palace, and since it was along the way, visiting Na Ke was a natural thing to do.

“Rumble!”

The automaton ship swiftly flew, quickly becoming a blurry light in space.

Ancient god ruins, the star annihilator cannon had left a huge

crater there.

Baqi who was dressed in his blood robe and the mountain like wild beast Qi Niu along with the over 90 blood god guards all stationed themselves about the edges of the crater.

“Rumble!”

The skies shook.

Baqi, Qi Niu and the guards all looked up at a silhouette that had appeared in mid air. It was a tall and sturdy old man in grey stone colored armor, his hair stood erect. As he blinked, it was almost as though there was endless thunder energy, his gaze was like a thunder prison.

“Greetings undying.” Baqi bowed respectfully.

“God!”

The guards all knelt down orderly, even Qi Niu lowered his head.

This grey armored old man gazed at the 10k km diameter crater. Rumble! Rumble! His gaze was like the sun, shooting out two light pillars, which pierced straight into the deep crater. It was almost as though he could see entirely though the red thick aura within the crater.

“Undying.” Baqi opened his mouth. Within this group, his status was the closest to that of an undying.

However in terms of power, of course the undying was still more powerful.

“This crater…” The old man’s voice was powerful and deep. “There’s no sense of laws, the terrifying attack that created this crater is indeed not one of an undying. However in terms of power…it’s definitely comparable to the full power of an undying. Only the outsider’s valuable technological weapons can create something of this level.”

“Looks like it’s really the outsiders.” Baqi nodded.

“This is very serious.” The stone armored old man frowned saying solemnly. “Because of this huge crater…” the undying shrine had already discussed this with the highest priority. According to that terrifying ancient battle before, from all the data that we’ve collected. Even from the outsiders, weapons with power comparable to an undying are highly unlikely.”

Indeed.

The universe humans may have great technological advancements. However, power that matched that of an undying could only be created through immeasurable amounts of wealth. But that was simply not worth it.

The only ones that had truly reached the pinnacle of technology was the automaton race!

“These few years, there would frequently be outsiders entering our Blood River continent.” The stone armored old man frowned. “We caught all we could and killed all we could. However these are small matters. This time however, for someone to have such a powerful weapon, the person who’s invaded our world must have a very high status!”

“Hm.” Baqi nodded.

“Also according to the world leader Kuyan and Yuke’s ship, their signal was cut halfway in this region. Right here, they met with a tragic end.” The stone armored old man said. “Obviously the enemy used this weapon to attack from far, destroying the ship and killing both Kuyan and Yuke. This level of technological attack, those two couldn’t even defend against. Even Baqi you, wouldn’t have 1% of surviving that attack.”

Baqi’s body shuddered.

Technological weapon?

It was actually so powerful?

“Be on high alert!” The stone armored old man said. “You are our Blood River continent’s rare genius of a trillion years. If you were killed by a technological weapon, that would be the worst possible

result.”

Baqi nodded. Gritting his teeth, he asked unsatisfied, “Are we to simply just bear with this? Not retaliating?”

“Retaliate, what do you mean retaliate?” The stone armored old man looked at Baqi. He was feeling exhausted within. Without truly experiencing the ancient tragic battle from before, it was hard to imagine just how powerful the outsiders were, because of many reasons, the undying shrine was able to maintain governance.

And he, was an ancient survivor of that battle.

Back then, he was only a sector lord, he didn’t truly participate in the battle, otherwise he would have died long ago.

However he knew many secrets to that ancient battle.

“Our Blood River continent’s power is still far too weak.” The stone armored old man replied. “We cannot think of retaliating yet, we can only train well. Everything relies on power. As for this matter, you don’t need to bother with it...the outsiders rarely send someone so important. Our undying shrine will not be careless too. If we catch him, we may know more secrets from that person!”

Over a trillion years, the undying shrine had indeed caught a few universe geniuses.

Baqi nodded.

Sou!

The stone armored old man became a bolt of lightning and flashed, vanishing from the skies. As an undying, that old man's speed...was even faster than the ships their undying shrine had built!

"Lord." Blood god guard's two captains came over, the others all hadn't heard Baqi's conversation with the undying.

"I told you all to send a message to all the world leaders to check on any news of 97. Have you done that?" Baqi looked at the two captains.

"Lord." The captain number 1 said respectfully. "We've already sent out the messages. However Lord, are we not to investigate personally? I suspect 97 could still be in the area."

"We don't have time to investigate!"

Baqi shook his head coldly. "He actually betrayed me, there'll be no place for him on Blood River continent!" A month ago when the huge crater was created, blood god guard 97 had secretly left, enraging Blood god Baqi. He had once heavily favored 97. So, he didn't expect to be betrayed.

However...

Baqi never would have thought that 97, didn't need to stay at all in Blood River continent. Because his true limits, were the endless vast universe...

The automaton was disguised as a meteorite, and after about 2 months of flying in space, it finally reached Meng Na city's space.

"Master, we've arrived at Meng Na city." The automaton ship AI said.

Sitting crossed legged in the control room, Luo Feng, who was studying the universe wonders opened his eyes and smiled, "Little Na Ke, I hope you are still alive."

.....

His earth body sat in the automaton ship. He let the Mosha body fly out before flying back into space.

Shua!

Black robed Luo Feng walked in the luxurious bustling streets of Meng Na city.

It's been two months since I fired the cannon and acquired the beast god statue. I believe the effect would be pretty great. For safety reasons, I'll leave the core in space, there'll be no loss then."

Black clothed Luo Feng was very relaxed. Even if he met with a dire situation and the Mosha body was reduced to dust.

With a little energy usage, he could easily reform the body.

As long as the core was fine, the three bodies were essentially undying.

The core was Luo Feng's true core.

"Ahead is Yu Dao sect." Luo Feng walked along the streets, buying little snacks along the way to eat, and casually gazing about. "I ordered Na Ke back then strictly to not leave this place unless he reached cloud level (Universe level), he should have listened to me."

After a while.

Luo Feng stood in the streets. Looking at the luxurious mansion, there was a tag on the door.

"This is the Ni residence, don't hang around the entrance, make way."

"Black clothed punk, move to the side."

The two guards at the door ordered.

Luo Feng's expression was ugly, looking at the two guards.

Rumble!

The two guards felt as though the land and skies about them vanished. The black clothed youth before them, his formless pressure...caused them both to crumble.

"I'm asking you, where's the Yu Dao sect?" Black clothed Luo Feng asked coldly.

"Yu Dao sect, it was destroyed long ago."

The two guards said in shock.

At this time, the oncoming traffic of people couldn't hear anything. They could only see the two guards speaking to the black clothed youth, not hearing anything they said.

Luo Feng's gaze focused, "Tell my in detail what happened to the Yu Dao sect."

"Yes, yes."

"We'll speak."

The two guards immediately began to explain in detail about how

after the Yu Dao sect was destroyed and how someone came to avenge it later.

Chapter 59 – 80 Years Later Na Ke

In the dark night, the Mosha clansman left Mengna city without a trace, returning to the automaton ship in the sky.

Within the control room.

Luo Feng sat in the sofa. His expression was cold, as he said softly, “Depart towards Swallow mound city.” The automaton ship immediately accelerated and headed towards Swallow mound city.

“What’s up, Luo Feng?” The demon Babata too sat in the sofa.

“Around 50 years ago, the Yu Dao sect was destroyed.” Luo Feng frowned. “The elite strength was simply wiped out and the entire sect was destroyed…and it was actually the earliest disciple of the sect that did it. About 30 years ago, a silver haired spirit reader appeared and killed that culprit before leaving.”

“What about little Na Ke?” Demon Babata asked.

“According to what the two guards told me, I suspect that silver haired spirit reader was Na Ke.” Luo Feng said. “Back then, I left him spirit reader training methods. If my guess isn’t wrong, Na Ke would very likely have headed towards Swallow mound city.”

“Hm.” Demon Babata nodded.

Sou!

The automaton ship was swiftly flying in the space above the Blood River world.

One day later, it reached the space above the swallow mound territory.

Following the same procedure, he left his core in his earth body in the automaton ship. The mosha clansman dived through the cloud levels and headed towards swallow mound city.

Night time.

The cold winds howled, and in a forest 10 million km outside swallow mound city, within a particular cave.

“Crackle!” The fire crackled, giving the entire cave warmth.

“Father.” A tall silver haired youth laid a mat on the ground. Some food appeared in his hand, “Let’s eat. We fled so far in one go, and we are at least ten million km away from Swallow mound city. And we never entered the city, remaining in the wilderness. Searching pointlessly for us won’t be an easy task for them.”

“Hm.”

An old looking middle aged man with messy silver hair nodded.

Lifting his fruit juice and taking the food off the mat, eating as he smiled at the youth. His eyes were filled with pride and glee. Exclaiming, “Ke Ke, you are much more mature than before. For me to see you before I die, the heavens are treating me well. Speak, tell me how you suddenly vanished back then, I looked for you everywhere like a madman.”

“Father.” The silver haired youth shook his head, “This is how it all happened…”

Na Ke began to tell him in detail of what happened back then. Nabu listened with his eyes opened wide.

“I, I actually agreed for you to follow Lord Feng? And had him wipe my memories?” Nabu was shocked, after which he smiled. “Hm, I would indeed do that. Tell me, over these many years. Looking at you…you seem to have suffered quite a bit.”

The aboriginals of Blood River world were born ground level (star traveller), and in the vast surroundings, it had resulted in many special bloodlines in the world.

The Na Family…

The bloodline was special too. After maturing, their hair would turn silver.

“It’s like this, back then when big brother Feng took me…” The silver haired youth said indifferently, “…that night I fled Meng Na

city, I vowed to take revenge for my teacher…”

“I bumped into another teacher at Tong Lian mountain.”

“……”

“I then separated from my two brothers and headed to Swallow mound city alone. Arriving here, I controlled my bones and muscles to change my appearance. Plus, many of the warriors from back then couldn’t recognize me. Since I’m a cloud level right now, with a scan, I discovered the family was destroyed but you were still alive. I knew that it was a trap. Hence, I first entered the city leader’s mansion to become a general, after half a year…”

Na Ke spoke for more than an hour before finally finishing his 80 year story.

Nabu looked at the youth before him, seemingly in disbelief. This cautious, cunning and brutal youth, was the same idol worshipping, hot blooded silly little Na Ke.

His son had indeed experienced quite a lot.

Meng Na city, Tong Lian Mountain, Flame eye clan…every bit of Na Ke’s experiences, every life or death struggle, had completely trained him.

“You’ve grown up.” Nabu exclaimed softly.

“The one I am most grateful for is Big brother Feng.” The silver haired youth smiled. “He had prepared so much for me, and because of that, I was able to withstand each and every setback and stand back up! Finally reaching cloud level…however cloud level isn’t my final goal. My goal is to reach the domain level and even the world level!”

“Hm.” Nabu nodded, pleased.

His gamble back then was right!

……

Within Swallow Mound City.

City leader’s mansion.

“You are saying you can’t find him?” The purple clothed lady stood in the hall, coldly staring at the city leader Puyang Wen before her.

Puyang Wen bowed slightly in fear. “Yes, the subordinates, they…”

“Explain.” The purple clothed seductive lady’s eyes gleamed.

“It’s the subordinate’s mistake. I’ve already sent a million strong

army to go search…”Puyang Wen’s head was filled with sweat, because he was only a low level domain level while this lady before him was a high level domain level, and she was also the world leader Si Yong’s favorite disciple!

She could easily destroy him! And the only thing he was supposed to do was to keep an eye on Nabu. But, since he messed that up, how could he not be fearful?

“Idiot!”

“Useless!”

The purple clothed lady smiled coldly. “Million strong army? You said before that it was a problem with your general. That general was a cloud level spirit reader. How fast is his flying speed? In just a breath, he can fly 10 million km without a problem. Which direction should your million strong army fly in to search? Are you stupid?”

Puyang Wen was stunned.

“Get out, get out, get out.” The lady raged.

“Yes.” Puyang Wen retreated.

He waited till he exited the building. His face originally filled with fear, but suddenly his eyes gleamed with dissatisfaction. “Right, I am an idiot. If I weren’t one before…why did you support

me to becoming the city leader back then? Just wait, once my master gives the order, we'll see who's the real idiot is!"

……

Within the hall.

The seductive lady glanced at Puyang Wen, shaking her head and smiling coldly, "So useless, luckily back then I didn't place any hopes on that idiot."

"Di."

The lady flipped her hand and a communication device appeared. A screen with a map displayed and there was a light dot on it. The lady smiled immediately, "Who would stupidly keep an eye on him? Back then I doped him and put a chip into his already heavily injured body. Won't I always know his position then?"

The communication device, compared to the universe ship's construction was trillions of times easier to make.

Those sector lords had given these devices to their important underlings. The purple clothed lady, as the right and left hand woman of world leader Si Yong, acquiring these communication devices was very easy.

"The distance is really 10 million km." The lady smiled. "I'm in no rush to catch them. I'll first observe, I am sure that silver haired

man will bring Nabu to go see that mysterious warrior Feng."

The silver haired seductive lady immediately sent a message to her teacher Si Yong.

Following which she flew out of the mansion alone, rushing into the sky in the night, headed towards Nabu and Na Ke.

"She is the strongest within Swallow mound city!"

"The activation of the swallow mound army, according to the investigation, is to look for Nabu and the silver haired general."

"Hm, that silver haired spirit reader general should be Na Ke. And that lady...flying out so late at night, she should know their location." A black silhouette followed the purple haired lady from behind.

Over 10 million km, even if the purple haired lady was a domain lord level 8 warrior, with Blood River world's strong gravity, she could only reach up to 1,000km per second. Even then, it would still take over three hours for her to arrive at the forest.

"I'll not alert him first."

"Teacher will be here soon, then we'll take the chance to catch Feng. That mysterious Feng, he actually dared to kill my two seniors and the undying shrine envoys, he deserves to die." The purple haired lady stood on a branch of a 3m thick huge tree,

staring coldly into the distance, and completely hiding her presence.

Domain lords were indeed proficient in hiding their presence.

At this time, from behind her a black clothed man stood.

“Hm?” The purple clothed lady seemed to realize something and looked back suspiciously. When she saw the black robed Luo Feng in mid air behind, her expression changed.

Black clothed?

Black short hair? Youth?

“You are Feng?” The lady’s expression was serious, staring hard at the black robed man.

“Looking for me? Congratulations, you’ve found me.” The black clothed Luo Feng nodded.

“Xiu!”

Her eyes flashed and immediately unleashed a spirit attack, simultaneously using a spirit weapon to attack.

“Weng!” A beautiful flash of a blade. Its resplendence was

intoxicating, the purple clothed lady couldn't help but get shocked, following which her consciousness fell deep into darkness. The flash disappeared and Luo Feng kept his blood shadow blade back into his storage ring and grabbed the lady's neck.

She had a small wound on her stomach, the blade went through the wound and pierced right through her life core, causing her death.

In terms of power?

After 80 years of training, his internal world had swallowed the large amounts of prepared valuable metals, efficiency rising to 52 times. 80 years was akin to over 4000 years, and the domain lord level evolution 7, 8, 9 required 1200 years, domain lord level 1 to sector lord level 1, required about 5000 years.

Currently...

The golden horned beast and Mosha clansman were both domain level 9. And in terms of power, not level, they were absurdly powerful! With the Mosha clansman able to unleash 10 times its original power...it was terrifying.

"Who is it!"

In the cave, the silver haired Na Ke's expression changed, standing at the entrance of the cave.

“It’s me.” The black clothed Luo Feng walked over from mid air, carrying the body of the purple clothed lady.

“Feng, big brother Feng!” The silver haired Na Ke stared wide eyed.

“Feng, Lord Feng.” Nabu was very shocked too.

The silver haired youth looked at the body Luo Feng held, even more shocked, “This, this is the 3rd disciple of world leader Si Yong, she…”

Black clothed Luo Feng threw her body to the ground and said, “You are in danger now, the world leader Si Yong is rushing over.”

Chapter 60 – Luo Feng VS World Leader

“Si Yong?” The silver haired youth Na Ke and his father were at a loss.

Si Yong was the world leader of this side of the world, a being like an emperor!

“Si Yong knows you are here and is rushing over.” Luo Feng had discovered the purple clothed lady’s communicator after he killed her. Using his own AI to hack it, he was able to find out quite a lot.

“How were we discovered? I was very careful when I took my dad over.” Na Ke was in disbelief.

“Because there’s a chip in your dad’s body.” Luo Feng replied.

“What?” Na ke turned to look at his father. Nabu’s face was filled with suspicion. Na Ke quickly used his spirit energy to scan his father’s body, finally finding a little chip within the bone of his leg, immediately saying, “Father, bear with me, I’ll extract the chip.”

Over his years of exploring, Na Ke had heard of the communication devices. Usually those equipped with them were all domain level.

A black light swept past Nabu’s leg and the device was immediately dug out. After which he used his spirit energy to pressure the wound, and with Nabu’s body structure, this little

wound was nothing.

Luo Feng ordered the quantum computer, “Do a scan to see if there are any more devices in his body.”

“Yes master.” The AI shot out a signal scan, “Confirmed, only one device and its been extracted.”

“Hm.”

Luo Feng looked at the father and son before him. “Na Ke, Nabu, quickly leave…ah, right,” He flipped his hand and retrieved a space ring, tossing it to Na Ke.

“This is?” Na Ke was stunned.

“Wealth.” Luo Feng said.

Since he was leaving Blood River world, the currency of this world had no more use to him. However…through his hunt, he had acquired quite a massive amount of wealth. The amount he was giving them right now was about 100 times that of a city leader, Luo Feng didn’t even take out the rest.

Too much wasn’t a good thing for Na Ke. He had given enough.

“Hurry and leave.” Luo Feng said. “The further the better…as for Si Yong, I’ll stall him for you!”

“Big brother Feng!” Na Ke couldn’t help but shout.

“Lord Feng, you…” Nabu too couldn’t believe it.

“Quickly go!” Luo Feng frowned, shouting coldly.

Na Ke and Nabu were afterall clean law abiding people that had been through much suffering. At this point, there wasn’t much else to say. Na Ke immediately brought his father, stepping on a spirit weapon and becoming a beam of light leaving.

Watching the two leave, Luo Feng smiled.

“Little Na Ke, during my trip here in Blood River continent, it was fate that made us meet each other. Your future depends on your own self now.” Luo Feng said softly. After which he rushed into the skies and landed on the peak of a 1000m tall mountain. Standing alone on top, gazing into the distant horizon, “A domain lord has no challenge to me whatsoever, only a sector lord has some meaning!”

“Come Si Yong!”

Luo Feng stood there, the winds blew, he patiently waited.

……

A silver black disc appeared in the 15th cloud level above that mountain.

“According to the communication device coordinates, its right here.” Almost like the ocean blue, dressed in black armor, Si Yong’s lips were thin and cold. He vanished from the ship and became a black beam of light rushing downwards through the 15th, 14th…

Right till the 1st cloud level heading towards that forest.

Suddenly!

He stopped in mid air, frowning as he looked at the majestic peak of the mountain. There stood a black clothed man.

“I’m called…”He stared hard at him, “Feng!”

“Feng!” Si Yong unleashed his world energy, immediately discovering the purple clothed lady’s body, his facial muscles twitched, “My disciple…”

“Dead.” The black clothed man said coldly, “I killed her!”

Si Yong’s eyes were like lightning, struggling, he roared, “You actually dare kill my disciples in my territory, you are but a small domain level…”

“If you want to battle, cut the chatter, let’s fight.” The black clothed man’s eyes were piercing, filled with fighting spirit.

Si yong was taken aback. A domain level challenging a world level? What joke was that.

After he was stunned, he turned to rage!

“Haha, haha…” Si Yong laughed , “Today will be your funeral!”

The cold mountain breeze howled, Luo Feng’s blood however was burning and boiling. The blue haired man before him was a sector lord. Just from his energy alone, he should be about sector lord 4 or 5.

Domain level 9 challenging sector lord 4 or 5?

And there was a breakthrough in between?

Madness!

Even the strongest genius of the universe wouldn’t attempt something like that, because the level difference was too huge. Just strength alone was tens of times different! What’s more…a sector lord could use a side of his world to pressure his enemy. Even if the enemy was strong, no one would be that crazy.

Only Luo Feng dared to do something so insane! In terms of

genius...he was now comparable to Bolan, the pinnacle of the universe humans. And right now he was a favoured of space, the universe's strongest assassins...Mosha clansman!

"Domain level 9 against a sector lord 4 or 5?" Luo Feng stared ahead at Si Yong in mid air, as his spirits were burning wildly.

.....

The two suddenly grew silent.

One stood above the majestic peak, and one in mid air. The two who faced off were completely silent.

"Rumble..."Suddenly the land and skies changed colors. The black armored Si Yong floated in mid air, his long hair flying, his gaze shooting out glaring beams of light. Laughing loudly, "You think you can fight me?" Immediately the mountain stones, including the mountain Luo Feng was standing on began to crumble.

Countless amounts of rubble rose up and floated in mid air.

A blur of stones floated all over.

"Go!" Si Yong pointed at Luo Feng, coldly ordering.

Hu...

Like a mad tornado, countless stones passed through space. This was tens of millions of times more crazy than ten million arrows being shot, and all of them engulfed Luo Feng, almost as though it wanted to turn his entire body into a target! Si Yong was a sector lord level 5, even though he was controlling so many stones, every one of them had the power to kill a domain lord level 9. Hence, with so many gathered, the power was terrifying!

Using pure power to suppress his enemy!

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

Under the attacks of countless stones, the mountains crumbled and every one of them began to fall. Countless trees fell, the ripple from every stone's attack clashed time and again. Thousands of km were affected by the countless high powered ripples, decimating and razing the surroundings to the ground.

"Your stones fly too slowly." A voice resounded.

Si Yong turned fiercely, and on his left stood Luo Feng. He was shocked within, "This punk Feng is so fast. His instantaneous speed is definitely much faster than me! Much faster!"

"Use your real strength, otherwise killing you will be pointless." Luo Feng flipped his hand and a blood shadow blade appeared. He stared at his opponent, as his eyes burned with spirit.

Shua!

Luo Feng immediately rushed forward, his rushing speed was extremely quick. Even though he was prepared, Si Yong was still shocked. His options were limited, quickly projecting his internal world, the vast world energy immediately warped and changed everything within the 1,000 li area!

The scenery changed, it was a destroyed mountain range in the night before.

Now however it was an endless ocean, the water below even had an ice mountain.

“Hm?” Luo Feng immediately felt the terrifying pressure, almost as though his entire body was shackled.

“This is the true power of a sector lord, the strongest trump card a sector lord can use against a domain lord...an entire world? Indeed its powerful. With the pressure of the world, all of my powers will decrease in strength!” Luo Feng licked his lips, his eyes burning even more, “This is thrilling, fighting with everything!”

Shua!

Under the pressure of the world, over 10 thousand Luo Feng’s appeared in the air above the ocean. The appearance of the blur of images made Si Yong shocked.

“My god, even with my world pressure he still can form over 10 thousand images? This, this…his comprehension of the space laws, just what level has he reached? “Si Yong was completely stunned. Not even mentioning Blood River world, even in the universe there were extremely few people of this level.

“Hua!”

A resplendent flash of a blade could be seen, which was extremely glaring and intoxicating.. The moment it flashed, the surrounding space seemed to be subdued, and a formless space energy pressured on Si Yong’s region. Through the space pressure…he was able to battle the world pressure!

“Just what level have his space laws reached?” As Si Yong was shocked. One black and one white awl appeared before him.

Dang!

The white awl brought with it endless ice cold energy, as the surroundings froze into ice and snow and attacked Luo Feng’s blade!

“Chi!” Luo Feng felt his body tremble and fresh blood spurting out from his mouth. Simultaneously he shouted, “Illusion!”

Hu!

His body immediately became a blur, the surroundings became

nothing but a blur of images. This made Si Yong get even more serious. Suddenly a blur of silhouettes seem to teleport right beside him, simultaneously the brutal and powerful energy of a blade slashed right at Si Yong.

“Block.” Si Yong retreated abruptly, simultaneously using the black awl to defend.

“Dang!”

The powerful blade actually knocked away the black awl, its strong slash sliced right at Si Yong’s neck.

“Rumble!” Four shields appeared beside Si Yong’s body and they floated around him. Luo Feng’s blade hit one of them head on… knocking Si Yong’s entire body backwards by 100 km.

The Mosha clansman’s strongest trump card!

Illusionary 7 blades…Burial!

Before coming to Blood River world, his strongest move was the dutchman’s pipe. And because of how the golden horned beast had been studying the 1st claw and had fast comprehension of it, this 1st claw became Luo Feng’s strongest move. The 1st claw was very similar to Burial.

Studying the 1st claw had made his comprehension of Burial soar. After 80 years, this move instead became the Mosha clansman’s

strongest move!

Burial, why burial?

Using one's full strength, even sacrificing himself to unleash the most brutal and intrepid attack! It was incredibly powerful!

Si Yong who was knocked back had an ugly expression. Looking at the 4 shields before him, his eyes focused once more. "I was actually forced to use my world, defensive weapons and spirit weapons all in a short amount of time. This, this..." Before this, Si Yong never would have thought that he'd be forced by a domain lord to use all his tricks.

"Yayaya!!!" Si Yong's entire face was flushed red. He roared and stared at the distant Luo Feng. "Punk, I'll let you know that a domain level cannot defeat a world level. It's just impossible!!!"

Chapter 61 – Go and Die!

The surface of the ocean was roaring, and the many blocks of ice floating there were flying about, and the owner of this world Si Yong was floating in mid air. He currently had a very troubled expression. Obviously in this short time, this domain lord had forced him into such a state of rage. It was humiliating, a sector lord's humiliation!

"Words are useless." Luo Feng was dressed in black. Standing far in the distance, his body once again became a blur and through the Mosha clansman's use of Illusionary techniques movement, it was like a fish in water. his close combat instantaneous acceleration far exceeded that of this sector lord.

An illusion appeared.

Si Yong immediately retreated!

"Explode!" Si Yong roared.

Immediately, the two black and white awls before him let out a glaring light, the surroundings about the white awl became extremely cold and froze into ice. Snow was fluttering about. The area surrounding the black awl however howled, as the black water took shape, making the black awl like a black dragon.

Rumble! Rumble!

A black water dragon and a white ice dragon interweaved about, even shaking the entire world. The endless world energy poured into these two ‘dragons’, of which the black dragon was filled with endless energy while the white was filled with absolute killing intent!

This move was called the Dual Dragon Pierce. It was Si Yong’s trump card from studying the water origin laws. While maybe his comprehension levels didn’t compare to Luo Feng’s, however it was still infused with origin laws. Also, in terms of pure power and the world pressure, his advantage was obvious.

“Rumble!”

The two dragons flew around each other like a huge electric drill, immediately creating an image and reaching right before Luo Feng.

“That speed, it’s so fast.” Luo Feng who was moving at his max speed looked at the black and ice dragon that seemed to reach him in an instant. He became a blur for a moment before changing his direction and dodging, simultaneously a 6 edged shield appeared before him, defending him.

That push from the shield seemed simple enough, however it was almost as though the entire space was pushed back!

“Rumble!”

The black and ice dragons that were weaving in and out together were affected by the space pressure. Due to this, they clashed into the 6 edged shield and as they clashed... the two dragons exploded with terrifying power, knocking Luo Feng far back as fresh blood spurt from his mouth. At this point, the 6 edged shield too was knocked far away.

Xiu! Xiu!

The core of the two dragons, the black and white awls revealed their true state and pierced straight at Luo Feng.

“Shua!” Luo Feng who was in mid air immediately dodged, over 10k images appeared in the surroundings.

“Clash, explode and pierce!” Luo Feng looked at his hand below. The left arm which was completely broken from holding the shield earlier was bloody however black energy was wrapped around it and in an instant, it completely recovered. “After Infusing with the origin laws, world energy, and an entire world behind this attack, when the two spirit weapons combined...this move is extremely powerful.”

Si Yong who was floating in mid air looked delighted initially. However, right after he began to rage. Howling, “You still aren’t dead? I don’t believe you can’t die!”

“Go!!!”

Si Yong howled, his face was pale as he pointed with gritted teeth, seemingly using his full concentration to control the spirit weapons.

Rumble! Rumble!

The two awls immediately formed an arc and the air about them once again concentrated into an icy aura and the ice dragon, while the other black one had black water surrounding it, forming a black water dragon. It was even clearer than the earlier move.

The two dragons' claws, horns and wings were complete this time.

"Go and die, die, die!!!" Si Yong was completely immersed in madness.

Howl...

"Howl..."

The two huge dragons howled through the surroundings. Who knew whether it was them howling or just the sound waves generated from their extreme speed. The two life like dragons spiraled, their tails waving about, claws glistening in the light, their bodies rushed forward and immediately countless images vanished. Luo Feng was finally forced into a difficult situation.

"There's an absolute difference of at least 10 times. He has the

world to help him, along with comprehension of water laws. This is a spirit reader that extremely hard to deal with."

"Even with this mosha body, it's a very taxing to battle. However, only this can be considered a challenge!" Luo Feng moved as fast as he could. The mosha clansman was the strongest assassins in the universe. They were proficient in stealth killings, and the Illusionary techniques was just one path for it.

The Illusionary techniques combined with the Mosha clansman's illusions was an absolute combo!

Under Si Yong's mad howls, even though Luo Feng was injured time and again, he still managed to survive. As for the injuries? The Mosha clansman's body was an energy life form, its wounds could recover swiftly

"Chi!" Luo Feng spit out fresh blood again, once again dodging.

"Chi!"

The flash of a blade was clawed away by the ice dragon, its claw was completely destroyed, however, it quickly reformed. And as Luo Feng was knocked away, he dodged and once again vanished.

"How can this be, why is he still not dead?" Si Yong stared wide eyed. With a struggling expression, he said, "He's only at domain level, and I am at world level!"

“Just what ghostly movement allows him to move that quickly and so unpredictably!”

“Getting injured time and again, yet it has no effect at all.”

Si Yong floated in mid air controlling the two spirit weapons to attack Luo Feng. Obviously he had the upper hand...however he was still unable to achieve victory! He was pressuring Luo feng over and over, but Luo Feng seemed fine. That movement was ghostly, and his attacks were as terrifying as before. This made Si Yong extremely troubled.

“I can only shrink the area.”

“After that, the area I need to focus my attacks in will be smaller. This way, the efficiency will be higher.” Si Yong realized the problem. As the area they were fighting in was too huge, it allowed Luo Feng to easily dodge 10km away and flash about hundreds of times. With such a huge space, when Luo Feng unleashed his movement...the two spirit weapons naturally couldn’t achieve victory!

Rumble...

The two huge dragons retreated and stayed close to Si Yong! Luo Feng would be attacked within a 100km diameter area before. However now with them retreating, only when Luo Feng entered a 30km diameter area around Si Yong was he attacked.

The area was smaller!

Naturally the efficiency was higher!

“Smart, you finally realized the problem.” Having been forced back time and again, unable to even approach Si Yong, Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed He immediately rushed at Si Yong, and as he did…the two spirit weapons didn’t even budge.

As he drew closer however, only then did they howl out! The reduced battle area made the two dragons instantly close their distance with Luo Feng, making it taxing on Luo Feng to dodge.

“Rumble!”

One clash made Luo Feng’s entire body tremble, and fresh blood spurted from his mouth, nose and even ears. He could only retreat and dodge.

“Hahaha…” Seeing the obvious advantage, Si Yong laughed loudly. “A world level is a world leader, a domain level is just a domain level. No matter how much of a genius you are, you’ll still die without a doubt!!!”

Shua! Shua! Shua!

Luo Feng dodged time and again drawing closer to Si Yong!

The smaller battle area had its pros and cons. The good thing was that with his speed at close distance, he could occasionally get close to Si Yong. The bad part was...the closer he got, the faster the attacks were even and the reaction time was shorter!

“Shua!”

Almost like a ghostly flash, he closed in the 30km distance and instantly reaching about 100m away from Si Yong. Si Yong controlled his 4 sided shield and simultaneously used his two spirit weapons to surround and attack Luo Feng!

“I didn’t believe that with such close distance, you will be able to withstand up to 3 attacks. But 10 to s hundred attacks?” Si Yong howled!

“Burial!”

Luo Feng roared softly, unleashing his strongest move. The grey flash of the blade was brutal, instantly slicing through 10m of distance, and slashed at Si Yong. The power of that flash, the intrepid energy was simply terrifying! The surrounding space around it was completely controlled...

The flash headed forward and had a hint of gold light.

Illusionary 7 blades...burial!

“It’s useless.” Si Yong laughed.

Rumble! Rumble!

His two sided shield came over to block. The 1st side was knocked back but the 2nd managed to block the blade!

“Rumble!” The two dragons howled from behind, attacking Luo Feng!

The blade had yet to have any effect. Luo Feng squinted and immediately released the blade in his hand, his right hand suddenly grew longer! It was originally a normal human arm, in an instant it grew and pierced swiftly towards the shield, extending over 10m long, its life crystal too was within that right arm!

“Rumble!”

The two huge dragons clashed into his body and it immediately exploded, fresh blood and bones scattering.

“What!” Si Yong looked at the sudden growth of the right arm that extended and was extremely shocked.

“How did his arm grow so long, is it from the armor? It’s useless, his body has been destroyed, even if the life crystal is ok, without a flesh body to trigger it, it’s unable to trigger sufficient energy!” Si Yong was calm, triggering energy required passing through the backbone and muscles etc.

Once the body was destroyed, leaving only a broken arm, what was the use?

Shua!

The blade flashed and instantly sliced through Si Yong's neck, piercing into his body and scanning within, it pierced straight into the life core and broke it!

"How, how is that possible..." Si Yong stared wide eyed, "How can a fake hand extended from the armor unleash such terrifying bladework? Once the body is destroyed, how can it even attack with power?" Before dying, many thoughts passed through Si Yong's mind, following which, he crumbled and his consciousness faded!

The two huge dragons immediately crumbled and fell, revealing 2 spirit weapons. The world around too crumbled and the endless ocean dissolved, revealing a decimated mountain range.

The spirit weapons fell from mid air, the shield too followed suit.

Si Yong was defeated!

"Chi chi chi..." That broken arm instantly wrapped itself with black energy and as the energy gathered, it became a black clothed Luo Feng.

His eyes were filled with fatigue, however also with ecstasy and

excitement. “I’ve succeeded!” Luo Feng lowered his gaze to look at Si Yong’s body. Thinking within, “A true human, if their body was destroyed, they can only use spirit attacks, and not close quarters physical attacks. However…the mosha clansman is an energy life form. If I wanted to, I could change to tens of millions of things, much less a broken limb. I can even change into a cloud contact vine, a stone and I’d still be able to attack!”

Chapter 62 – Tian Shi Palace

The Mosha clansman could transform into almost anything, be it humans, bones, muscles, skin, the internal organs, hair, eyes and nose etc all would be exactly similar to that of a real human! Even if it got injured and its bones broke, the impact causing blood to be spit out…everything was exactly like that of a real human. And if it changed to a golden horned beast.

Similarly, every scale, horn even the engravings on the scales.

Of course…the larger the size, the more energy it required. Even if the mosha clansman transformed into the golden horned beast, it would only be a 10m huge golden horned beast. If it wanted to transform to tens of km, hundreds of km like the mountain range like huge beast, the energy within the life crystal would be depleted very quickly!

……

Night, the cold winds blew.

The mountain range was reduced to a wasteland. Black clothed Luo Feng gazed down below.

“I actually used the Mosha body to kill Si Yong?” Luo Feng was excited. “Even though the mosha clansman is strong, it’s still after all strong in assassination only. During a true 1v1 battle like this… there are many stronger than the mosha clansman!”

If it were the 12 pinnacle bloodlines of the space beasts.

Which of them weren't incomparably intrepid?

And just like the ancient beast in the ancient pictures in Blood River world, which was just as intrepid. And the pinnacle of the bug clan in the universe the Mother nest, and the metal life forms, plant life forms, the powerful existences, these were all beings comparable to the golden horned beast.

All of them were incredibly intrepid.

"The mosha clansman is strong in assassination."

"Actually, I only required to kill one of his disciples and transform into him. Then using the natural ability to imitate that disciple's energy." Luo Feng thought, "That way, even if I stood before Si Yong, he wouldn't sense any problem at all."

"When I get close, with him defenseless, I'll kill him in an instant!"

"That would be much much easier than fighting it out like before." Luo Feng was clear. Allowing the Mosha clansman to assassinate Si Yong wouldn't have been a challenge at all.

The main thing was its natural ability to duplicate was simply too

sick.

Completely imitating a person, not just in appearances but in energy too? One wouldn't even detect anything. Even in the vast universe, with countless races, the mosha clan still struck fear in all these races as the most terrifying assassins. If its natural ability wasn't so powerful, it wouldn't have gotten the name Universe's strongest assassins.

"I was able to kill him!"

"Even though it was partially due to Si Yong's poor comprehension of the laws, however with the gap in our power, I still succeeded. It also shows that my improvement over these 80 years was huge." Luo Feng was happy within. Gazing below at the decimated mountain rage, as Si Yong's internal world crumbled, large amounts of treasures were scattered throughout.

Luo Feng collected Si Yong's space item and placed the valuable treasures casually within. As for the others?

How much wealth could a sector lord have?

In the universe, one with 10 mixed elements was already wealthy. Much less the aboriginals of this Blood River world, only very few were worthy of Luo Feng's attention. The other items, added together were far from 1 mixed element's worth. With Luo Feng's status, whatever he needed all used points after all.

Sou!

He rushed into the sky, leaving behind the decimated mountain range and Si Yong's body, along with large amounts of treasure that he wasn't even interested in or were worthless to him.

However, within half a day after his departure, a team had discovered the area with the items, a few domain lords were going crazy over them and this team madly began to compete and kill amongst themselves. And as the large amount of treasures created a big stir within Swallow Mound city, countless began to join in the war for the items.

Also, the news about the death of Si Yong had spread.

Si Yong's death!

Immediately, the surrounding large world leaders began their attacks to snatch the territory.

Si Yong's power quickly faded into dust...

There wasn't even anyone trying to avenge him, much less go after Na Ke and Nabu.

.....

"This, this is what big brother Feng left for us?" The silver haired

youth Na Ke brought his father finally to a hiding place to rest. Only then did he open the space ring to check, shocked.

“Ke Ke, what’s the matter?” Nabu was curious.

“Big brother Feng left us a large amount of wealth. So much more than our family’s wealth from before, millions of times more.” Na Ke was shocked.

Nabu’s eyes gleamed immediately, “Haha, our Na Family will rise up again, stronger and bigger than before. With this wealth, it’ll be easy from now. Na Ke…our gamble back then was right!”

Na Ke nodded, worrying within about Luo Feng. “Big brother Feng said he’d go stop Si yong…”

However later on, when the news of Si Yong’s death spread, especially the location of his death, Na Ke and Nabu were overwhelmed with shock!

Obviously!

The place where Si Yong died was where Luo Feng was waiting before.

“Big brother Feng killed Si Yong?”

“Lord Feng killed Si Yong?”

Na Ke and Nabu were shocked.

As for whatever happened later in Blood River world, Luo Feng naturally didn't know.

After killing Si Yong, mosha Luo Feng rushed into the sky back into the automaton ship and began his departure.

"Blood River world."

Standing in the control room, he looked back at the endless vast continent. This was a place completely subdued and observed by the Virtual Universe Company. "Here's where we part, little Na Ke. Once I reach domain lord level I'll be sent into territories as an envoy around the universe. At sector lord level I'll be going through hellish training too. I'm afraid I won't return for a very very long time. I hope that when I eventually do, I'll still be able to see you."

Luo Feng knew...

It would probably be tens of thousands of years before he could actually return. However, with regards to Blood River world, he was still filled with curiosity. There would eventually be a day when he would return to investigate everything properly.

.....

The fog covered the distant space, an incomparably huge palace floated there, that was Tian Shi palace.

Because of this Palace's existence, the many powerful warriors of Blood River world didn't dare leave. Since the ancient times till now, they were all stuck within their world.

Sou!

The palace in space, was larger than even a planet. At this time a little dot flew out from the palace and swiftly headed towards Luo Feng's automaton ship, it was a triangular black ship with a diameter of 800m.

"Di!"

"Your majesty Luo Feng, how are you? I am the receiver of Tian Shi palace, Mo Luoke. Congratulations on your majesty's completion of the Blood River world mission." The ship drew closer to Luo Feng's automaton ship, sending a message over. Very quickly, with the ship leading, Luo Feng arrived within a vast hall in the 1st level of Tian Shi palace.

The hall was at least 1,000 km in length and width.

Luo Feng kept his automaton ship and stood shocked within the hall. In this hall, there were many other ships stopped there, taking up more than half of the area. Every ship...according to his visual perception, were at least E grade ships. Some of the ships

were even F grade.

"Your majesty Luo Feng." Dressed in silver armor with 6 eyes and blue skin, the sector lord Mo Luo Ke stood beside and lead the way. Speaking fluent universe language, his voice was very clear and resounding, "You actually stayed in Blood river world for 80 years. That's really shocking."

"The main thing was the blood warrior mission." Luo Feng smiled as he walked.

Different from Blood River world, even though there were many races within that world, most of them looked pretty similar.

However the human races were too many in the universe. With countless races, all sorts of appearances were present.

"Blood warrior mission? Has your majesty completed it?" Mo Luo Ke was shocked.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"Wow, congratulations your majesty." Mo Luo Ke smiled. "I've seen and received many geniuses who've attempted this mission, even those from the Huge Axe and universe mercenary alliance. However, very few are actually able to become blood warriors. Because, absorbing three blood river crystals normally required them to stay in the ancient god ruins for extended periods. Many of them don't have that much patience. And it's also very

dangerous within the ruins.”

Luo Feng nodded.

The two walked and chatted. Even though they weren’t rushing, in a few minutes they had passed a 1,000km distance swiftly and arrived at the stairs of the 2nd floor.

The stairway was incredibly vast. Every level was 100m high, 10km long and 5km wide. It was entirely made of ceramic...each stairway had at least 1,000 levels, spiraling upwards.

“We can only proceed from here to head upstairs.” Sector lord Mo Luo Ke smiled.

The two became beams of light and followed the stairs upwards.

“There’s no need to head up right. Just arrange a universe ship for me and send me off, wouldn’t that do?” Luo Feng asked.

“Its our leader of the Tian Shi Palace, he wishes to see you.” Mo Luo Ke said.

“The leader?” Luo Feng was shocked.

Tian Shi palace’s leader, what status was that?

He was someone who was watching over in this palace. The many powerful beings of Blood River world, and even amongst the Virtual Universe Company, he would definitely be considered an absolute being in the upper echelon.

“Hm.” Sector lord Mo Luo Ke’s eyes were filled with envy. Smiling, “I’ve been in this palace for so many years, I’ve yet to meet him face to face. Our leader has unbelievable power. With just him being here, those undying’s from the undying shrine in Blood River world, and all the ancient beings, none of them dare come out. For the leader to wish to see you, is your good luck.”

“Why does he wish to see me?” Luo Feng was curious.

The leader of Tian Shi palace, that level of being, he was at least a universe country leader level, or even stronger. How else could he control Blood River world with fear?

To the geniuses, that level of being didn’t care much for them at all.

These beings were all ancient eternal beings within the universe.

“The reason behind him wanting to meet you? Why would I, such a small figure know?” Sector lord Mo Luo Ke smiled. “My authority is only to send you to the 2nd level. I don’t even dare to follow after. However there will be someone there to receive you and take you straight to the 9th level to meet the leader.”

The moment he finished speaking.

The two arrived at the 2nd level of the palace. Luo Feng gazed far ahead and spotted a 3m tall messy haired man with a huge axe on his back. Vaguely, that man was almost like a tall mountain that made hearts tremble. The energy he emitted seemed even more terrifying than the god general 13 from back in Ganwu universe country.

Chapter 63 – Tian Shi Palace Leader

"Greetings Undying!" Sector lord Mo Luo Ke bowed respectfully.

The huge warrior with the big axe on his back responded slightly before looking at Luo Feng, "Luo Feng, the leader wants to meet you, follow me." After which, a formless energy that couldn't be seen by the naked eye formed a large hand and carried Luo Feng. The huge warrior brought Luo Feng and swiftly headed towards the 9th level of the palace.

"This is the strength of an undying?" Luo Feng felt the ripples of origin laws around him.

Flying through level after level!

Every level of Tian Shi palace was incredibly vast and huge. Very quickly, this undying brought Luo Feng to the 9th level!

This 9th level hall should be the biggest hall of all of the palace

Just like how the 1st level had a specific ship docking area, places to welcome people, with sector lords resting areas, and a special area to monitor Blood River world, and a place for the sector lords to train…in all, from the 1st to 8th level, every level was incredibly vast but each had been organized extremely well.

The 9th level however was a vast hall of endlessness!

The entire 9th level hadn't been segregated at all. The length and width reached tens of thousands of km, and its height too was ten thousand km. It was so large, that even earth was able to fit into this hall.

"Tian Shi palace leader?" As he landed in the 9th hall, Luo Feng's gaze landed on the distant silhouette ahead.

He was dressed in a silver long robe. It seemed as though his robe itself produced countless images. On it were gold engravings, however with a blink of an eye, the robe was ultimately just a silver robe. Illusionary and mysterious, it was intoxicating. His reddish brown long hair was let loose.

Standing there, gazing at the vast space outside Tian Shi palace.

At this point Luo Feng even felt that he was even more vast than the space outside, even more majestic.

"Leader!" The huge warrior bowed respectfully.

"Go on." A clear voice, like a wind blowing through a bamboo forest.

"Yes." The warrior became a beam of light and immediately left the 9th level. The light behind the stairs turned dark, as the pathway behind seemed to close.

He, finally turned around!

He had reddish brown long hair, sparkling skin, black eyes, and an engraving on his forehead. Other than the engraving, his resemblance to an earth human was uncanny. Even though he was taller than normal, however before him, even the giants would feel as though they were facing an endless space, and would be subdued and feel inferior.

“Luo Feng,” The voice seemed to resound within his ears and heart.

Only then did Luo Feng awaken. “Even with my willpower, I was still unknowingly affected by him. Its, its too terrifying. Compared to the true governing powers of the universe, even with my strong willpower, there’s still such a difference.” If Luo Feng’s thoughts were known by the warriors of the universe, they’d all break out laughing.

Standing before a pinnacle ancient being, who, through his countless years of training, the universe energies shaping, his willpower alone was at an unbelievable level.

A universe level little doll that had only lived for a few hundred years...

And compared to the Tian Shi Palace’s leader?

He alone was more than capable of keeping the intimidation on the beings of Blood River world.

“Luo Feng greets the leader.” Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

“Your willpower is not bad.” The leader nodded. It was almost like the entire land and skies were speaking. “Your batch of geniuses are the most exceptional in the past 10,000 eras, because in your batch, there’s Bolan, you and Rong Jun.”

Luo Feng was stunned by his words.

Past 10,000 eras, was essentially over 1 hundred million years.

“Before you entered Blood River world, the Virtual Universe company’s management level had a contest over you and Bolan.” The leader looked at Luo Feng. “The contest was about your sturdiness in character, and to see if you are fit for walking this path of the strong. Your high talents! And Bolan’s pride, yet his unbelievable talent. However…your willpower far exceeds his.”

“Back then some favored you, while others favored Bolan.”

“And I, I favored you.” The leader looked at Luo Feng, his eyes smiling.

“Thank you leader.” Luo Feng bowed.

“Your time here in Blood River world, according to your teacher, he said that you have comprehended the 35 wonders of the space

laws?” The leader looked at Luo Feng. “Did that happen?”

“Yes.” Luo Feng replied frankly.

“Back when your teacher said that, immediately the numbers that favored you grew.” The leader said, “I too thought that you and Rong Jun would have more hopes of becoming true absolute warriors in the universe humans.”

“Rong Jun and I?” Luo Feng was stunned.

Just complimenting him alone was enough.

Rong Jun?

From the leader’s words, everybody was contesting between him and Bolan, but no one mentioned Rong Jun at all. However right now, be it the heavenly bridge or fantasy ocean, he and Bolan were far ahead!

“Rong Jun?” Luo Feng was curious.

“If Bolan were to understand, he too would be your competitor.” The leader looked at Luo Feng. “As for Rong Jun, if you are able to exceed Rong Jun in this life, it would be an accomplishment.”

“What.” Luo Feng stared wide eyed.

This life?

If he could exceed Rong Jun in this life, it would an accomplishment? And this was said by the leader of the Tian Shi palace.

Would he not be able to exceed him? Ever since he acquired the beast god statue, Luo Feng didn't even place Bolan or Rong Jun as his opponents. He thought he was set to exceed them by far. His true opponents were the absolute beings from before! However the leader, someone of such status wouldn't speak rubbish. Rong Jun had indeed attracted two universe country leaders to accept him as their disciple, that weird matter made Luo Feng curious.

"So the upper echelons favor Rong Jun more than me and Bolan?" Luo Feng thought.

"Hmph!"

"They better look well."

"I have the beast god statue to study the 1st claw, the Mosha clan to study the 9 universe tablet, and the earth body to meld the two. I'm already ahead of Rong Jun. My return this time...I should be able to exceed Bolan too! And after this time, I will continuously improve, leaving them far behind." Luo Feng's state of mind was incredibly sturdy.

Even though he valued the leader's words, but to get shaken by

it?

He wanted to be strong!

Continuously growing!

His improvement speed will only get faster, as for Rong Jun? Bolan? It'll just depend on whether they could keep up.

"Your mental state sure is solid." The leader saw through Luo Feng's eyes and guessed his thoughts. Smiling, "The universe is vast and profound. Every one has their own miraculous meetings and advantages. The three of you are not bad. However at such a young age, your willpower has already reached such levels. It's really not easy. My good friend favors Rong Jun. As long as he doesn't fall, he will definitely have accomplishments in the future. However, I'm betting on you."

Betting?

Luo Feng was stunned, this leader seemed to know some secret about Rong Jun, yet he was still betting on himself?

"Don't let me lose." The leader's eyes were smiling, "You actually comprehended the 35 wonders." Following which he pointed in mid air.

Formless energy gathered and a stone tablet formed.

On it was a picture…the drizzle picture!

There were a total of 36 rain drops in it.

“This 36 wonders, which one haven’t you comprehended yet?” The leader said.

“This one.” Luo Feng pointed and his spirit energy landed on a particular drop.

“Since we could meet, I’ll help you out.” The leader waved his hand and immediately black fireballs with diameters of 100km immediately floated in the air in the hall. Every one of them were extremely huge and completely black. The surfaces were burning with black flames, and there was a total of 9 of them!

Chi chi chi…

The space around the black fire balls seemed to burn and split apart, and the broken space flowed erratically, locked in by the black fire balls, the space further away seemed to warp.

Almost as though there was some very strong gravity causing the space to get drawn in.

Only the space around Luo Feng and the leader was very solid.

“What’s this? Those undyings are able to play with even planets. Just what are these 9 black planets?” Luo Feng looked up shocked. Even though it was controlled in this palace, he still felt the temperature rise up to 1,000 degrees. However this wasn’t anything to a universe level 9.

However just the burning temperatures caused the space to split apart, even making the space flow weirdly locked in position.

This was definitely thousands to tens of thousands of times more terrifying than a star!

“I’ll completely demonstrate the 36th wonder which you’ve yet to comprehend. But just once, whether you can comprehend it will depend on yourself.” The leader looked at the 9 black fireballs floating, immediately they began to move, with one movement...

The land and skies vanished.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but get completely immersed within. The movement of the 9 fireballs completely infused with the universe space laws, the space was completely controlled. At this time, it was even deeper than studying the 9 universe tablet itself. The main reason was that the tablet was but something an absolute warrior of the universe had left behind, and right now, the leader of the Tian Shi palace was personally demonstrating the 36th wonder.

After finishing the demonstration, the 9 black fireballs continued to move about, all the more mysterious...

Luo Feng was completely immersed within, many thoughts and comprehensions occurred in his mind, however the more he saw, the more he didn't know.

He even lost track of time...

"Rumble!"

The 9 black fireballs were already invisible to the naked eye. Only the countless flame marks were left, finally forming a peculiar beast picture. This beast picture, was the beast in the 9 universe tablet's 7th to 9th pictures, the ones Luo Feng didn't understand.

After which, the 9 black fireballs completely vanished and the vast hall returned to normal. The leader looked at Luo Feng who was immersed in his study and waved his hand.

Shua!

Luo Feng vanished and appeared in the 1st level. Within a particular F grade universe ship's control room, he was still sitting crossed legged and within his study, not even realizing he was already in a ship.

"Send him off, don't disrupt his study." The leader communicated.

“Yes leader.”

The leader of the Tian Shi palace gazed down, almost as though he could see through the many levels. Looking at Luo Feng immersed in his study in the universe ship, laughing lightly, “Luo Feng, how much you can comprehend depends on yourself.” After which he sat crossed legged, laughing softly, “Such a young age with such powerful willpower. Interesting, interesting, even when I was domain lord back then, my willpower wasn’t that strong.”

Everything returned to silence.

Tian Shi palace 9th level, was as calm as it had been for the past trillion years.

And the F grade ship brought Luo Feng who was immersed in his study and left Tian Shi Palace.

Volume 13: Primal

Chapter 1 – Blade World

Luo Feng's nest, star fragment 80389081. It had a diameter of 6,200km.

This star fragment was floating in space, and on it was a huge villa that took up most of the space, with universe level soldiers patrolling about. Suddenly, they spotted a universe ship slowly descending. They became shocked, and immediately informed their leader Ao Duo.

"General, there's a ship!"

"A ship has come."

A silhouette appeared within the villa. It was the bald old man Ao Duo, he looked up at the universe ship. From one look, his expression changed, "The mark of Tian Shi Palace? It's actually a F grade universe ship, follow me!"

Ao Duo brought the 10 guards with him in beams of lights, swiftly flying over.

In the distance, that ship descended, landing on the wild grass and flowers.

"Hm?"

“The ship is from Tian Shi palace. It should be his majesty returning, but why haven’t they opened the cabin door after so long?” Ao Duo brought the guards and stood beside the ship waiting at attention. The ship stopped for quite a while before the cabin door opened and landed on the ground. A huge warrior with a huge axe on his back came out, coldly gazing at Ao Duo and the group.

The formless pressure fiercely landed on Ao Duo and the group’s souls.

“Greetings undying.” Ao Duo bowed in shock.

“Greetings undying.” The group of guards too were shocked.

“Luo Feng is studying now, we cannot disrupt him in this critical time.” The warrior said coldly. “Our Tian Shi palace ship will be stationed here until he awakens, you all cannot disturb him either.”

“Yes.”

Ao Duo and the group bowed, simultaneously feeling shocked.

My god.

This pressure that he released before them, had ripples of origin laws all around. Obviously this was a powerful undying! And Luo Feng was actually able to have an undying wait here without

disturbing him, this was too absurd. Luo Feng was after all an absolute beginning member. His position should still be slightly lower than that of an undying in Tian Shi palace.

Hua!

The cabin door closed and Ao Duo and the group could only wait outside.

1 hour, 2 hours...

1 day, 2 days...

“Why hasn’t his majesty awoken yet?”

“Right, we’ve been waiting here for quite some time. General, if his majesty continues his study, should we still wait here stupidly? From what I see, we should return first.”

“Shut up!”

Ao Duo ordered softly. His gaze swept at the guards that had been standing there for 18 days waiting, and said coldly, “You are all at universe levels and domain lords. How is this long? Even I’m not complaining, even the undying from Tian Shi palace is waiting, not daring to disrupt his training. And you dare complain? Hmph!”

The muttering guards all immediately went silent.

“Hmph!”

“Be silent and wait! If his majesty awakens and we are not there to welcome him, that would be our failure!” Ao duo ordered.

“Yes, general.”

The group of guards obediently complied.

Within the ship’s control room, Luo Feng sat crossed legged on the metal ground not moving.

In his mind many scenes floated in and out, the 9 black fireballs shown to him before by the powerful Tian Shi palace leader replayed over and over in his mind. Many techniques from the 2nd volume of Time Space scribbles too came into play, many areas that were obscure before were being solved!

9 universe tablet, Time space scribbles, Floating blood manual, 9 black fireballs, the ancient pictures, the beast god statue...

They all corresponded with each other.

Plus the fact that he had already comprehended the previous 35 wonders, and a lot of the 36th, with all these working together, many questions he had initially were being solved. His comprehension began to rise and Luo Feng couldn’t help but smile.

Unknowingly, Luo Feng had completely comprehended the 36th wonder, because the 9 black fireballs kept replaying in his head, displaying the entire space laws over and over. He couldn't help but continue studying and move on to the 9 universe tablet's 3rd picture...The rainstorm!

Many questions began to form in his head, many hard to solve questions. Luo Feng combined the 9 black fireballs, the ancient pictures and compared notes, attacking each difficult question one at a time, using all his focus to solve one question after another...

.....

"That's it." Luo Feng who was sitting crossed legged opened his eyes.

"Anymore and my efficiency will decrease. The best way to study the 9 universe tablet is still the Time Space scribbles. I currently only have 2 volumes and not the 3rd." Luo Feng could clearly feel that without the Time Space scribbles to tally with, his studying efficiency would have a drastic drop.

Time space scribbles were written by the founder of the 9 universe tablet. It is extremely valuable, and at the same time, it is the optimum way to study the 9 universe tablet.

Hua!

The control room cabin door opened and Luo Feng turned to look out. The huge warrior with the huge axe on his back walked in. He glanced at Luo Feng, “Since you’ve awoken, you can leave now.”

“Thank you undying.” Luo Feng bowed.

“This was the leader’s command, no need to thank me.” The huge warrior didn’t say anything more. Luo Feng bowed and swiftly followed the pathway straight out of the cabin door.

“Greetings your majesty.”

Ao Duo and the group of guards all bowed as they saw Luo Feng walk out, it had been over 30 days since they waited.

“Hm.” Luo Feng jumped down and landed on the grass, simultaneously nodding as he smiled, “I’ve kept you all waiting, let’s go.”

“Yes.” Ao Duo and the rest respectfully followed.

On this star fragment continent, Luo Feng quickly returned to his living quarters. He couldn’t wait and immediately entered the virtual universe network.

……

Virtual universe, Yu Xiang mountain Absolute beginning region,

villa 1136.

Luo Feng came to his training grounds.

“The Tian Shi palace leader’s help this time has saved me at least 2 to 3 years worth of work. And the display of the 9 black fireballs…has shed some light on my later study of the Rainstorm picture.” Luo Feng recalled the scene back in Tian Shi Palace. He couldn’t help but be speechless at the 9 black fireballs.

The universe space was very steady, even with a star’s high temperature, it wouldn’t affect the space at all.

However the black fireballs burning in the space actually messed up the flow of space itself. Its strong gravity caused the space to warp. Luo Feng guessed that even a powerful undying, if burned by the black fireballs would be burnt to death.

“Make light work of something heavy!”

“I shouldn’t think so far ahead now, I can’t even make one star yet.” Luo Feng shook his head, after which he cleared his mind and with a thought, the dark golden long rod appeared on his back. “I’ve already completely comprehended the 36 wonders, I don’t know whether I can unleash the 6th level though.”

Nan Shen Armament had a total of 9 levels.

The 5th space slicer, the 6th Own world. From the 5th to the 6th,

it was one of the two hardest breakthroughs of the 9 levels.

80 years!

Over 80 years of hard work, Luo Feng's comprehension had risen greatly. Compared to 80 years ago, it was absurd, however he was still unable to unleash the 6th level.

"Nan Shen Armament, come out!" Luo Feng ordered.

Hua!

Countless gold lights shot out from the dark golden long rod behind him. In an instant, the gold glaring lights of little golden blades shot out. Gold engravings on the little blades formed gold threads and countless lights moved in the surrounding space, triggering the space laws. Gold laws, and the alloy ground of the training grounds completely vanished into the light.

A vast world made of blade energy revolved around.

This move could change the land and skies. It was the Nan Shen armament's 6th level...Own World!

"Hm?" Luo Feng frowned. His face was flushed red as his consciousness spirit energy madly controlled the blade world's foundation...the 5832 little golden blades.

“No, no…”

“Control!” Luo Feng couldn’t help but roar.

Rumble!

The formed blade world maintained itself for about 3 to 4 seconds and after which it shook and crumbled with a crash.

The blur of 5832 little golden blades remained floating in the surroundings, however the blade world was broken.

“It actually crumbled in a few seconds. Luo Feng smiled and shook his head. “It’s still ok, this was the first time I actually formed the blade world. After so many years, this is the first time I successfully formed a complete blade world. Since I can form it, the next step should come quickly.”

Breaking through every level was extremely hard.

Just like the Nan Shen Armament’s 1st level, simply forming one golden blade. The 2nd Piercing Sky actually required 9 blades into 1. Why was the difference so huge?

Over 80 years.

Luo Feng had been constantly improving from the 5th level’s Space Slicer. His improvement speed was shocking, his encounters

too were legendary. Using these 80 years that way, he finally began to feel the entrance of the 6th level's Own World. Of course, it was just the entrance...every level's power was vastly different. Luo Feng's blade world could only be maintained for a few seconds now, it was the most basic stage of forming this 6th level.

In theory...

The Rainstorm picture, when one reached a certain level of comprehension, only then would he be able to unleash Blade world. Luo Feng's comprehension of the rainstorm picture was barely even beginning.

"The 1st 3 levels of the heavenly bridge reflects the Rain drop picture."

"The 4th to 6th levels reflected the Drizzle picture."

"The 7th to 9th levels reflect the rainstorm picture." Luo Feng frowned. "This is a rough gauge, I've comprehended the first 36 wonders. Since my comprehension is 10 times stronger than a normal comprehension of the Drizzle picture, that's why I can force out the blade world."

"However..."

"I can only maintain it for a few seconds, I estimate that I still cannot pass the 7th level of the heavenly bridge. I have to get accustomed to it and maintain for longer periods of time." Luo

Feng pondered. “And even though I’ve comprehended the first 36 wonders, studying the rainstorm picture would still be extremely difficult. However, with little bits, I think it’ll be pretty fast.”

If one’s basics were solid, the comprehension would be faster.

Luo Feng’s basics were incredibly solid!

“Studying the Rainstorm picture requires the Time Space scribbles’ 3rd volume. I should buy it now.” Luo Feng understood the theory of a sharp blade increasing one’s efficiency. He immediately rushed out of the training grounds.

Sou!

He flew into his study.

Sitting before the desk, he opened his laptop and swiftly opened the treasure trove, preparing to buy the manual. However he was shocked as he saw his points below.

“Points, 74,660.”

“Only over 70k points? Buying the 3rd volume of time space scribbles requires 100k points.” Luo Feng was stunned.

Chapter 2 – The Worth of the Blood River Crystals

His earning were already considered excellent. Back in primal chaos city with the 10 times reward he earned quite a bit. After buying the 1st 2 volumes of Time Space scribbles he still had 20,360 points left.

After that, he consecutively passed the 1st 9 islands of Fantasy Ocean, gaining 51,100 points.

And during the time he spent in Blood River world, he passed the heavenly bridge's 6th level, gaining 3,200 points.

A total of 74,660 points!

The 1st volume of Time space scribbles was only 1000 points. The first two required 10k points, the first three required 100k points, first four was 1 million...it's compounded. Especially for all 9 volumes, the entire set reached 100 billion points. This was something even the universe country leaders could only stare at.

And, there wasn't any discount!

The amount required to pay for these was like choosing a bottomless pit.

"Looks like I have to confirm the end of the mission before I can

purchase the 3rd volume.” Luo Feng gently clicked and closed the treasure trove document. He then proceeded to open the Management file and chose Training, very quickly entering the training page. He chose to confirm the end of his mission.

“How do you do, your majesty Luo Feng.” A gentle voice resounded from the screen. “You are requesting to confirm the end of your mission?”

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

“May I ask, of the two missions in Blood River world, which did you finish?” The gentle voice continued.

“Both of them.” Luo Feng replied.

“Please wait a moment your majesty. A universe ship will arrive shortly at your star fragment to verify. After the verification, your majesty will acquire the points designated as the reward.” The gentle voice spoke.

Indeed, about 8 hours later.

A grey blade shaped universe ship that was 100m long landed on the star fragment. Luo Feng led his sector lord Ao Duo and others to welcome them.

“How do you do your majesty Luo Feng.” Three black uniformed men and women walked out of the cabin door. The leading black

uniformed man said, “Please enter the ship, your guards need not follow.”

“Alright.” Luo Feng nodded.

He entered this blade like ship and quickly reached a specific verification cabin.

“When your majesty has entered the cabin, just act according to the AI’s instructions.” The three of them were humble and respectful. In terms of strength they were all sector lords. But, as their talent in battle wasn’t that high, they belonged to the management and chore side of the company. However even in these departments, they had different statuses.

The things these three handled were considered more core. They too knew that the geniuses from this batch’s genius competition, Bolan, Rong Jun and Luo Feng were heavily favored. Naturally, their attitude was humble.

If they were to meet some other geniuses who were not necessarily outstanding, they would do their job simply as is, with a cold face. Why would they even be humble about it.

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded, stepping into the cabin.

Within.

The electronic voice resounded, “Please take out one blood river

crystal and place it on the desk."

Luo Feng placed one crystal on the alloy desk.

"1st mission of acquiring one crystal, complete. Points awarded 10k." The electronic voice said. "Luo Feng please prove that you are a blood warrior and place the blood river medal on the desk."

Chi!

The cloud contact armor on his body automatically separated, revealing his bare chest. Luo Feng triggered the blood river energy within and a red engraving appeared on his chest. Even though it was simple, it was complete and infused with incredibly mysterious energy and power. This in turn, completely raised Luo Feng's melding with the universe laws and energy by one fold. Simultaneously, he tossed out the blood river medal onto the table too.

The blue light scanned Luo Feng and the table.

"Verified!"

"Luo Feng, congratulations on completing the 2nd mission, becoming a blood warrior and acquiring a blood river medal. Points awarded 100k." The voice spoke.

Luo Feng smiled immediately.

“Luo Feng.” A cold lady’s voice suddenly resounded. “I’m messaging you via the virtual universe network. This contact will be classified and divulging of this contact is forbidden.”

“Ah…” Luo Feng was stunned.

“Yes.” Luo Feng reacted.

Classified?

What classified?

“Don’t be nervous, we interview anyone that enters Blood River world.” The cold lady’s voice sounded. “Since you were able to become a blood warrior and were able to hand in one more crystal. I assume that you should still have extra blood river crystals on you.”

Luo Feng was shocked.

Blood river crystals…

He couldn’t even see any way to buy this within the treasure trove!

“The blood river crystal is unique only to Blood River world. Even in the vast universe, it’s regarded as an extremely mysterious

and valuable crystal. Hence, it is very important. Among our human race, It is considered as a prohibited item, prohibited as in it's forbidden to buy and sell this item. The moment such an action is discovered, the Virtual Universe company, Huge Axe dojo, Universe Mercenary alliance, Universe 1st bank, and Universe Galaxy bank will immediately act and collect all the crystals and punish the person heavily."

Luo Feng was shocked.

Prohibited item?

Just like how star annihilator cannon was an extremely rare item to the universe countries, this crystal was actually a prohibited item and forbidden from sale?

"The way you acquired your crystals was legal and appropriate, we will not snatch them from you." The cold lady continued. "However, there are certain things you need to know. You are definitely not allowed to sell it to others, and can only use it for yourself. If you wish to give them to others...please first send a request to our Virtual Universe company. Once the request gets approved, you can then pass it on to that individual. Also, if you wish to sell the crystals, our Virtual Universe company will be in charge of purchasing them from you. Each crystal will be worth 600 points."

Luo Feng's heart was beating fast within.

He had many crystals!

Of course there was nowhere else in the universe that these crystals can be found in, only in Blood River world. However, the amount of crystals in Blood River world was plenty. But now, he was finding out from this higher level member of the Virtual Universe company, that it was prohibited. So much so that even giving them as a gift required permission, and if the request didn't go through, he couldn't even gift them!

"The Virtual Universe company has many geniuses. In theory, with so many crystals, giving three to each of them shouldn't be anything." Luo Feng thought. "However it's obvious that the 5 leviathans are controlling it very strictly."

"Are you willing to sell your crystals?" The cold voice resounded.

600 points for 1!

Luo Feng currently had close to 10k crystals. If he sold them all, he would get over 5 million points.

My god.

That was a huge sum! Because according to what Luo Feng knew, the undyings could exchange money for points,1 mixed element for 1 point.

"If I had known, I would have acquired more." Luo Feng thought.

“Are you willing to sell your crystals?” The cold voice asked again.

“I don’t have that many, I wish to continue to absorb them.” Luo Feng said.

“Hm.” The cold voice didn’t continue about the matter. “Our conversation ends here, whatever was said today is classified and not to be divulged.”

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

After which an electronic voice resounded within the cabin, “Luo Feng, the verification is over, you may leave.” Simultaneously, the door opened.

……

Standing on the grass, he looked up at the blade shaped ship swiftly vanish into space. Luo Feng had a frown on his face.

“Luo Feng, I dare guarantee, that the blood river crystals should still have some other special uses! If it were simply for absorption, the Virtual Universe company need not keep such a tight reign over it, and be so stingy to its geniuses.” Babata shouted. “There’s only one answer. And that is, that they have other uses for it, and I dare say that it’s for the absolute warriors amongst the undying, or even the universe country leaders and knights. Hence, they are

prohibited items.”

Babata’s views were much more vast than Luo Feng’s.

Back then, he had followed Hu Yan Bo throughout the universe to explore, and experienced the dangers of life and death battles, while mostly dealing with undyings! Naturally he saw things much clearer.

“Ah?” Luo Feng thought.

“Geniuses are geniuses. However, the true pillars of humanity are the undyings, like True Yan emperor and so on. And then there are even stronger knights and universe country leaders. These eternal beings are the true pillars of humanity in the vast universe. As for the items they require, naturally they wouldn’t let you geniuses have them. Didn’t they already give you the chance to enter Blood River world? Giving you that one chance is already good enough of them.” Babata said.

Luo Feng nodded and communicated through his consciousness, “I understand! I just felt that the blood river crystals were very important, hence I didn’t sell them.”

Close to 10k crystals...

If he wanted to sell them, there will always be a chance in the future. But until he discovered if they had any other uses, he couldn’t bear to sell them.

“Selling is easy, but buying is hard. As it’s a prohibited item, there’s nowhere else to buy from.” Luo Feng thought.

Virtual universe, Yu Xiang mountain, absolute beginning region.

Luo Feng once again entered and sat at his desk. He opened the treasure trove file in his laptop and discovered that his points had changed.

Points, 184,660.

“It’s enough now.”

Luo Feng smiled and swiftly opened the technique file, quickly finding the extremely expensive Time Space Scribbles. After having tasted its benefits, he didn’t even hesitate and immediately chose to buy the first three volumes. There was no other way, no way to simply buy just one volume. Hence, he could only do it this way.

“Exchange successful!”

“Deducting 100k points, remaining points 84,660.”

“Please wait a while, someone will deliver it immediately.”

The page had three consecutive notifications.

Looking at his remaining points, Luo Feng couldn't help but exclaim, earning the points really wasn't easy. He took 80 years to finally absorb all three crystals, and that was because his willpower was incredibly sturdy, and he was able to rush into the whirlpool core. Otherwise, how long would it take, if he stayed outside the core for him to complete the 2nd mission?

100k points was indeed hard to earn!

"The true reward this time is still the close to 10k blood river crystals. Getting so many of them was still much easier than actually absorbing the three. And the virtual universe is willing to pay 600 points for each of them. I can sell them anytime, buying them however is impossible!" Luo Feng understood, only universe level geniuses could accept this mission.

Once he reached domain lord level and head out into the fields, there was absolutely no chance of acquiring more crystals.

"Blood river crystals!"

"Their true worth definitely isn't just 600 points, I'll just wait. Maybe it'll give me a surprise in the future." Luo Feng thought.

Chapter 3 – Attempting Sky Mountain

After a while, at the entrance of the Absolute beginning region entrance.

“Your majesty Luo Feng, this is the case of manuals we just received, it’s what you ordered.” Lady Fox waved her bushy tail and handed over the case.

“Thanks.” Luo Feng received the silver case.

It was finally here!

This was the 3rd manual of Time Space scribbles that was worth 100k points, (as he had already acquired the first two volumes, the Virtual Universe company only sent him the 3rd).

Carrying it, he turned and rose into the sky.

“Luo Feng, you mad man, stay there!” A voice resounded.

Luo Feng turned around to look. In the distance, a silver light landed on the grass. It was the silver armored black haired youth Wuka. This manka prince’s body growth was indeed slow. Even after such a long time, he still hadn’t fully matured.

“Why are you shouting at me?” Luo Feng smiled and walked over.

“In our past, we have had few star fragment meetings, even had the huge party for the absolute beginning members. But, you’ve yet to attend even one of them. Damn, recently even in the virtual universe you’ve completely disappeared.” As he spoke, he punched Luo Feng in the chest unhappily.

Luo Feng was initially shaken but diffused the punch.

“These past few months have been critical, hence I haven’t come online.” Luo Feng explained. These past few months, he had acquired the beast god statue and had a miraculous encounter in Tian Shi palace. It has indeed been a few months since he’s come online.

“Ah, Luo Feng.” Wuka’s face grew mysterious, as he said softly, “Let me tell you a secret.”

“What secret?” Luo Feng asked curiously.

“I just came from the Battle arena, and I got some news. Today, Bolan attempted the heavenly bridge.” Wuka said softly.

“Again?” Luo Feng was shocked.

Every 3 levels of the bridge was a breakthrough point. The higher the levels, the harder it got!

1-3 levels, 4-6 levels, 7-9...

He had spent 80 years in Blood River world. Bolan, Long Yun, Rong Jun, Wuka, Qian Shui, Jia Lai Xi etc all had chosen their own paths, all improving both slow and quick. However, everybody would still occasionally attempt the heavenly bridge! During which most of them had all improved.

However!

Bolan was on the 6th level back in primal chaos city, and over these 80 years, this absolute genius had been working hard. However, he still hadn't passed the 7th level of the bridge! It was obvious that the 7th level was extremely difficult!

Right now, in his batch...

Three people had reached the 6th level, Bolan, Rong Jun and himself! Bolan and himself had long reached the 6th level. Rong Jun just managed to do it after 80 years.

And there were four people on the 5th level currently.

"He attempted it again, did he pass?" Luo Feng asked.

"Hehe." Wuka mocked softly. "That proud punk, he just failed two years ago and attempted again today. However, he still failed... haha...would the 7th level be that easy? The difference in difficulty from the 6th to the 7th, is even more than the difficulty from levels

1 to 6 added together!”

“Failed?” Luo Feng nodded.

Right.

His 80 years had many miraculous encounters. The three bodies were all working in unison, along with the raised comprehension and melding from blood river energy. Even after all this, he still didn’t have a guarantee of passing the 7th level.

“Work hard.” Wuka said. “Rong Jun, that Savage had just reached the 6th level not long ago. It’ll be at least a few hundred years before he reaches the 7th. Right now in out batch, the fastest to reach the 7th is only you and Bolan! Luo Feng, you have to live up to the reputation of our absolute beginning’s three heroes.”

“Get lost.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but laugh and scold him.

Absolute beginning’s three heroes?

Hearing that name, he had goosebumps all over. This was because, among this new batch of geniuses, himself, Rong Jun and Wuka, were close, and their performance was good. Naturally, others would lump them as a group. This prince Wuka however was very proud of the title of absolute beginning’s three heroes.

Luo Feng wasn’t used to it, Rong Jun too would frown dissatisfied, Wuka however was very proud.

“I won’t speak anymore to you, I’ll return first.” Luo Feng said.

“Ah, what did you buy?” Wuka looked curiously at the briefcase in Luo Feng’s hands.

“Time space scribbles.” Luo Feng said.

“3 volumes? That’s 100k points!” Wuka stared wide eyed, saying, “You ruthless, you sure are wealthy!”

Luo Feng didn’t chat more and immediately flew up.

Sou!

He soared through the skies and quickly returned to his villa.

……

Within the study, he sat before his desk and held his breath as he opened the case.

Within it was a thick metal book. This book was 50cm long, 40cm wide and its thickness reached a shocking 50cm. Just how big was it? A half a meter thick book, was much thicker than both earlier volumes. The entire book was still using the gold colored metal pages, and there were a total of 1,000 pages.

“The 3rd volume!”

Luo Feng looked like a hungry wolf staring at a sheep. His eyes gleamed, and he didn’t care about anything else, immediately opening and beginning to study it.

……

This Time space scribbles’ 3rd volume reflected the Rainstorm picture. As he studied this, the golden horned beast still focused on studying the beast god statue’s Tearing sky and land everyday, focusing on the 1st claw. These two will resonated and Luo Feng’s level simply rose at a very obvious rate.

Learning is easy, application and fully grasping it however is difficult. Truly comprehending the 108 wonders was an extremely hard thing to do!

Luo Feng was currently working on the Rainstorm picture with a slight sense of comprehension.

……

“Luo Feng, there’s mail. It’s from the Virtual Universe company.” Within the training grounds, Luo Feng sat crossed on the alloy ground. He flipped the thick Time space scribbles before him, and occasionally controlled the Nan Shen Armament to practice, as countless dark gold little blades floated and danced in

mid air.

“Ah?”

Luo Feng’s thoughts moved.

Shua!

Countless little golden blades acted like birds returning to their nest, all entering the dark golden long rod on his back.

“Mail?” Luo Feng immediately pointed in mid air and a screen appeared, and on it displayed was the mail he just received.

“Secret region qualification battle?” Luo Feng looked at the subject. With a thought, he quickly opened and read on.

The level of the Virtual Universe company’s core members were separated, from high to low, and also into the primal region, absolute beginning, Sky and Land and Last Phase regions.

It wasn’t such that if one entered the Absolute beginning region, he would remain in there forever! There was intense competition amongst the core members. The weak were knocked back into the lower regions and the strong would remain. The stronger ones even got to proceed into the higher region! Competition was always present!

If one didn’t work hard...

During the genius battle, one may be the number one genius, entering the primal region. However if he didn’t work hard, he may be knocked down into the absolute beginning region during the secret region qualifications. During the 2nd time, he may be knocked into the sky and land region!

Resources were limited!

The human talents were unlimited!

As time passed, new batches of genius would always present themselves. If one’s strength didn’t match the absolute beginning region, he would naturally fall into the sky and land region.

.....

Yu Xiang mountain’s primal region members, according to strength were separated into sector lord, domain lord and universe level.

Within the primal region, there were 100 sector lords, 10 domain lords and 3 universe levels!

Absolute beginning region, 1,000 sector lords, 100 domain lords and 30 universe levels!

Sky and land region, 10,000 sector lords, 1,000 domain lords and 300 universe levels!

Last phase region...if a core member failed the competition, he would be dropped into the last phase region, this was the final step.

Of which...

The universe level members would compete every 100 years!

The domain lords would compete every 1,000 years!

The sector lords would compete every 100,000 years! As the sector lords would mostly be stuck at the pinnacle for very very long. Hence, every 10,000 years the Virtual Universe company would organize a genius battle and hero battle, during which, it absorbed a few geniuses here and there, along with some genius sector lords that pop out later. Thus, the number of sector lord geniuses were the most. Even with 100 slots on the primal region namelist, the competition was still extremely intense.

100 slots....

For the many from the genius battles, hero battles and others to compete for.

.....

Luo Feng thought as he looked at the screen, “Qualification battle?”

“I’m currently universe level. This means that there’ll be a battle every 100 years, and its beginning in 6 years?” Luo Feng thought. “From the mail, the primal region slots have extremely intense competition, and not just from people from the same batch. One will also battle with the earlier generations and seniors.”

“The qualification battle is very tragic!”

“However, to enter the primal region, other than the qualification battle, there’s actually another way?” Luo Feng smiled as he looked at the mail.

The Last Phase members want to enter the Sky and Land region.

The Sky and Land members want to enter the Absolute beginning region.

The absolute beginning members want to enter the primal region!

How is this supposed to happen?

There were two ways. One, was the qualification battles and the second was attempting Sky mountain!

The qualification battles belonged to a large scale elimination battle. The universe level members would compete amongst each other, finally picking the victors. This occurred every 100 years. And at sector lord level...it took place every 100,000 years!

However attempting Sky mountain was different.

The core members could attempt at anytime. There were a total of three sky mountains...primal sky mountain, absolute beginning sky mountain and sky and land sky mountain. If one Last phase member were to pass all three sky mountains consecutively, then he would immediately rise to become a primal region member!

“According to the mail, as long as I pass the primal region sky mountain, I can enter the primal region?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

“I’ll give it a shot!”

“After studying the 3rd volume of the Time space scribbles for a couple of months, my understanding of the rainstorm picture has grown. I can even maintain Blade world for 30 seconds now! During a battle between the strong, 30 seconds is enough.” Luo Feng thought, “I’ll attempt the primal region sky mountain.”

Virtual universe, a specially opened space.

There was a huge piece of land there, and on it were three

majestic mountains. Each one higher than the other!

“This is the Sky mountain?” Luo Feng carried on his back the dark golden long rod and looked up at the three majestic mountains. At the halfway mark of each of the 3 were glowing golden words, Sky and Land, Absolute beginning, Primal! Of which, the primal sky mountain was even bigger and taller!

Sou!

Luo Feng became a beam of light and flew straight at the primal sky mountain.

Chapter 4 – 1 v 3

Primal Sky mountain was over 10,000 Li high, and was majestic and wondrous. It was a specially opened space by the virtual universe, and it was the tallest mountain here.

A beam of light stopped at the foot of the mountain. It was Luo Feng, who was carrying a dark golden long rod on his back.

“Ah?” Luo Feng looked ahead. There laid a tall and sturdy bull man with horns on his head, and beside him was a terrifying huge axe. His snores sounded like thunder, and he had saliva drooling from his mouth, flowing down his face full of fur, landing on the black stones beside him.

That bull man seemed to realize something and he opened his eyes curiously. He looked at Luo Feng and immediately got up, laughing loudly, “You are here for the primal sky mountain?”

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Haha, there’s someone finally here to play with me.” The bull man laughed loudly. He raised his head and roared, “White ape, Snake, get over here!”

His voice boomed and resounded.

Sou! Sou!

From two different directions, two silhouettes flew out. On the left was a golden fur skinny ape man dressed in silver white armor, and he carried a black bamboo pole on his back. And from the right was a seductive lady with a snake tail, dressed in a translucent cotton dress.

“Bull, Ape and Snake?” Luo Feng frowned.

The Apemen was a huge race(as far as numbers were concerned) within the human race, just the apemen alone could be separated into many other categories. When compared to them, the bull man’s numbers were weaker than the apemen, and the snake people’s numbers were much lesser. It’s only considered rare only in this comparison, the snake people were still a commonly seen race in humanity.

“Hehe, finally there’s someone here to attempt the Primal Sky mountain.” The skinny apeman stooped and mocked.

“Let me see his background.” As the seductive snake lady spoke, her shockingly long tongue would extend out occasionally, after which her crystal like eyes stared at Luo Feng. “So it’s your majesty Luo Feng from the absolute beginning region. He is a new person, yet he dares attempt the sky mountain.”

“Snake, don’t scare him away.” The Bull man roared. Looking at Luo Feng, “Your majesty Luo Feng, the rules to attempt the sky mountain are very simple. You only need to kill all the guards at the foot, waist and peak of the mountain. Then, you’ll be considered to have passed the sky mountain! The three of us are the guardians of the mountain base!”

Luo Feng nodded.

Kill all the way to the peak?

“Will you still attempt it?” The bull man roared.

“I will.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Haha, White Ape, Snake, attack!” The bull man roared excitedly. He immediately grabbed that terrifying huge axe and with a step, the entire ground shook. Swiftly, he rushed towards Luo Feng. As the axe was already in position, a blur of a yellow axe slashed out.

Chi chi...

With the swing of that axe, even the space around was scarred.

“Hehe!” That skinny ape man mocked. While he was standing on a stone, from behind him, the black bamboo poke flew out. It seemed to instantly grow longer. There were a total of 9 joints on it, every one disconnected with countless threads weaving through.

It formed a 9 joint whip! This, was a level 3 spirit weapon... “Arc Serpent.”

Sou!

The blurry silhouette immediately pierced forward like lightning. With precise control, it actually reached Luo Feng before the bull man did. Like a venomous snake, it was trying to bite him.

“Hmph!” The snake lady snorted, her eyes gleaming purple.

A formless spirit energy immediately headed towards Luo Feng.

……

In an instant, the bullman, skinny ape man and the snake lady all attacked simultaneously. In terms of speed, naturally the spirit energy was the fastest, and it pierced straight into Luo Feng’s consciousness!

Within his consciousness.

A vast void pagoda stood there. It was exquisite, and glowing gold in color, with a total of 3 levels. His comprehension of the laws had allowed him to reach the 3rd level of the void pagoda. Actually, not long after he left primal chaos city, he already reached this 3 level pagoda!

Over these 80 years, he wanted to reach the 4th level, but it was obviously still not enough.

“Rumble!” The spirit energy crashed into the void pagoda, it slightly shook but remained undamaged.

“You think you can hurt me with just that?” Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle. His killing intent was fully unleashed, “Go and die all of you!”

Rumble!

The dark golden long rod from behind immediately shot out countless gold light, a blur of little golden blades shot out countless threads, connecting directly through the universe space and gold laws. The two laws through the Nan Shen Armament fused perfectly, even the lofty mountain vanished under the light.

A vast space, blade energy revolved.

Nan Shen Armament 6th level…Blade world!

“Dang!” A piece of blade energy immediately attacked that arc serpent that had become a black light, knocking it backwards. In the distance, the skinny apeman immediately went pale, and his expression changed. “Nan Shen Armament’s Blade world!” Simultaneously, he communicated, “Snake, attack his soul. Once you disperse his consciousness, his blade world will crumble!”

“You don’t need to tell me!” Her expression was cold. A formless spirit energy once again attacked Luo Feng.

“Dang!” The condensed blade energy knocked away the arc serpent and rushed towards the bull man’s huge axe.

The bull man felt a powerful force heading his way past the huge axe. He trembled and couldn’t help but retreat, spitting out fresh blood.

At the same time...the spirit energy attack that the snake lady had unleashed clashed with Luo Feng’s void pagoda.

“Go and die!” Luo Feng stared at the bull man.

Xiu!

The condensed blade energy followed and with a flash and pierced through his forehead, It left a hole, as his body fell.

Bullman was dead!

The skinny ape man and snake lady stopped their attacks.

“Your majesty Luo Feng, you actually defeated bullman? You’ve passed this mountain foot.” The skinny apeman said.

“Congratulations.” The snake lady said.

“What a powerful illusion, however it’s far from enough, break!!!” Luo Feng’s heart was like a mirror, seeing clearly through the distractions. His consciousness was like a blade, becoming a heavenly blade that slashed through the scenery around. Immediately the illusion was destroyed and the scene vanished.

As the illusion vanished, his expression changed.

A black light had already reached before him. That bull man with blood on his mouth roared as he rushed over, and in the distance, the snake lady was filled with shock, “He actually broke through my illusion that quickly!”

“That illusion sure was terrifying.” Luo Feng was shocked.

Before, when he had heavily injured the bull man, he had already fallen for the spell. The bull man he killed was all an illusion.

“This snake lady’s illusion has already reached such a level. The bull man and apeman are definitely not to be messed with either. When they clashed with my blade world before, they were only injured and not killed.” Luo Feng immediately had many thoughts in his mind, simultaneously brandishing a blood shadow blade and a 6 edged shield.

A resplendent flash of a blade!

Illusionary 7 blades…Dutchman’s pipe!

“Dang!” The black light was knocked away.

“Die!”

The vast blade world immediately sent a piece of the energy straight at the snake lady. Her expression changed and she roared mentally, “You two, come back and help me block it!!!” Simultaneously a black shield with snake engravings appeared before her. As a hypnotist, her control of spirit weapons had to be almost as good as a controller.

“Ah ah ah ah!” The bull man roared over. However, a fighter’s speed was far from blade energy or spirit weapons.

“Go and die!” The apeman controlled the black light, piercing towards Luo Feng.

Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang! Dang!

With the shield and blade, even though he was disadvantaged, he still managed to block the attacks.

“Hmph.” Luo Feng’s eyes flashed with a chill as he blocked.

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi!

Simply using his blade and shield allowed him to block the apeman’s attack. Hence, Luo Feng focused his blade world on the

snake lady! With the condensed blade energy, it madly surrounded and attacked her and in an instant consecutively attacking her tens of times.

Chi!

The Snake lady's spirit weapon was obviously unlike her illusion abilities, finally the blade energy pierced through her head.

"I can't maintain this for much longer." Luo Feng's expression changed.

As he was focused on both using his blade and maintaining blade world, it was extremely taxing.

"Ah!" The bull man raged, reaching beside Luo Feng.

"Xiu!" The black light was as fast as lightning, once again reaching Luo Feng.

"Dang!" Luo Feng gathered some blade energy to once again block the black light.

Rumble!

The vast blade world collapsed revealing the many little golden blades that immediately regrouped. Half of them immediately became a huge golden long blade, that blade immediately shot at

the bull man rushing towards him. It was the Nan Shen Armament's 5th level...Space slicer!

"Go and die!" Luo Feng's blood shadow blade immediately unleashed the 7th technique in the illusionary 7 blades, Burial!

The flash of his blade was savage!

Filled with endless killing intent!

"Ah!" The bull man howled and swung his huge axe.

Dang!

The golden long blade smashed into his huge axe, causing it to disperse into 2000 little golden blades. His axe too however was knocked aside and Luo Feng's blood shadow blade slashed at that moment!

Chi!

The bull man was sliced into half from his head to his feet!

"Block!" As he killed the bullman, Luo Feng used the 6 edged shield to block the Arc serpent piercing from behind.

"Rumble!"

As the black light clashed into his shield, the 9 joint serpent black light actually waved its tail as fast as lightning, and pierced through Luo Feng's head, as red and white splattering.

Luo Feng was killed!

"Damn, two of us actually died due to him." The skinny apeman let out a sigh of relief, he couldn't help but feel shocked.

Beside, the bull man and snake lady revived. She looked as Luo Feng's body vanished, shocked, "My illusion and abilities, actually couldn't affect him!"

"This is only a newbie and he actually managed to kill 2 out of 3 of us?" The bull man stared.

.....

Yu Xiang mountain, Luo Feng sat in his study.

"I actually wasn't able to even pass the foot of the mountain." Luo Feng shook his head. "Hm, in times of crisis, I still cannot maintain the blade world long enough. Just maintaining the blade world alone, I can only do it for 30 seconds. However...while using the blood shadow blade and shield, and maintaining blade world simultaneously, the time I can do it is cut short by a lot."

“My comprehension is still lacking!”

Luo Feng recalled the battle before, reflecting on the flaws and failures...

After a while.

“Luo Feng, your teacher True Yan Emperor is requesting a call.” The fist sized demon Babata on his shoulder shouted.

Chapter 5 – Five Warriors

“Teacher?” Luo Feng stood up. His demeanor was humble. Simultaneously, he opened the screen.

On the screen, one could see a pavilion, which was erected on a reef, and below it was True Yan emperor lifting a wine glass. in the distance behind him was a luxurious and majestic palace, and on it were two large golden words True Yan.

“That should be his shrine in Thunder Island.” Luo Feng thought.

“Luo Feng.” On the screen, True Yan smiled and shouted.

“Teacher.” Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

“You should have already received the mail the Virtual Universe company had sent.” He said, eyes mocking, “Don’t you really wish to make it into the primal region?”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded. After which, he shook his head helplessly and said, “Teacher, after reading the mail, I learnt that there were two ways to enter the primal region. One of them was the qualification battles and second was the Sky mountain. I just went to try the sky mountain…”

“Pffff!” True Yan spat out the wine, and his golden furred face started laughing, “You said you just attempted sky mountain?”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Failed?”

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

“It’d be weird if you didn’t!” True Yan couldn’t help but mock him. “Looks like you really don’t know anything about the sky mountain.”

“I just read the mail and found out about it.” Luo Feng said.

True Yan couldn’t stop laughing. “3 sky mountains, the core members can attempt them anytime! As long as one passes it, he’ll immediately rise to a higher region. It sounds perfect, however, do you think the difficulty would be that simple? Do you remember your 7 storey pagoda trial during the genius battle?”

Luo Feng nodded.

He had lost at the 6th storey’s 1st level of the pagoda, and Bolan actually made it to the 7th storey.

“There is a reason behind it!”

“The 7 storey pagoda was set up so that there’s almost no hope of passing!” True Yan said. “This sky mountain is the same! The

difficulty is extremely high. Yet, you wish to enter the primal region by passing sky mountain? I'll tell you this, even if the primal region universe level members all went, none of them would be able to pass their own primal sky mountain."

Luo Feng was stunned.

Even if it's the primal region members, none of them could pass the primal sky mountain?

"Do you understand?"

"If you can pass the primal sky mountain, that would mean you are even stronger than the same leveled primal region members! Naturally, they'd give you the position then." True Yan said, "As for just how hard it is, you've already tried it. Where did you fail, foot? Mid or peak?"

"Foot." Luo Feng was somewhat ashamed, "I killed two of them, before I failed."

"Being able to kill two is already not bad. How long have you been nurtured in the Virtual Universe Company?" True Yan said. "As for the difficulty of the sky mountain, the foot, mid and peak all have three guardians."

"The guardians are all fighter, spirit reader controller and hypnotist."

“The three of them will gang up on you.”

“Even if the three of them are weaker than you by a little, with their combined forces, and by working together, they become extremely strong.” True Yan said. “The mid mountain guardians are 10 times stronger than the foot! The peak guardians are 10 times stronger than the mid section!”

Luo Feng stared, “How can that be? Doesn’t that mean that the peak guardians are 100 times stronger than the ones at the foot?”

“Right, 100 times.” True Yan nodded.

“When unleashing the blade world, I can maintain it for 30 seconds. Unleashing blade world at universe level 9, even in the vast universe, wouldn’t that be absolute already?” Luo Feng was clear on his status, True Yan nodded, “Yes it’s absolute.”

“I’m almost able to pass the mountain foot, and yet the peak guardians are 100 times stronger?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but shout out, “How can a universe level 9 pass it?”

It was hard to imagine.

At universe level 9, there was still someone 100 times stronger.

He was able to unleash the blade world! And his willpower and consciousness was able to defend against hypnotism!

“Right, how can one pass?”

True Yan laughed too, “Hence, even the primal region universe level members cannot pass it!”

Luo Feng was stunned.

“The primal sky mountain is a benchmark! It was placed there for people to aspire at, for people to feel like they have a goal, and to never feel proud.” True Yan said. “Hence, if you wish to rise to the primal region, the true path is the qualification battles!”

“Teacher?” Luo Feng thought.

On the screen True Yan emperor looked at him.

“Has anyone ever passed the primal sky mountain?” Luo Feng asked.

“Yes! Of course! And quite a few in fact!” True Yan smiled and nodded. “In this vast universe, with it’s countless humans, many of them have had miraculous encounters. There are also strong characters with extremely high comprehension and great physiques…what hasn’t there been? In the vast history, just how many geniuses have there been?”

“You and Bolan are but geniuses of the last 10,000 eras. And how

long has the primal universe been around for?”

“Within the endless periods of time, geniuses stronger than you and Bolan by 10 to 100 hundred times have appeared, everything has happened before.” True Yan shook his head. “The chances of a genius becoming a strong warrior are extremely high. However, there is still a large amount of them that fall. Back during my generation, of course 10s of thousands of years earlier, there was one called Kedi. He was named as a one in one hundred million eras genius!

“Universe level, domain lord, and sector lord, these 3 periods, he directly passed the primal sky mountain, which is extremely miraculous and beyond compare. When he was in the outfield battles, he simply shocked the other races. During sector lord level, he was able to kill an undying with the title official!”

“A group of universe country leaders and knights competed to accept him as their disciples. Finally, it was the primal chaos city leader that accepted him.”

Luo Feng was stunned.

Treating the primal sky mountain as a game? Sector lord level able to kill an undying with the title official? A group of universe country leaders and knights fighting to take him in?

Madness!

“And finally?” True Yan shook his head, “In a particular universe secret region, he died. When he died, he was sector lord pinnacle.”

Luo Feng blinked hard.

“Saying someone is a genius, maybe if it’s within a galaxy, indeed he would be number 1. However in a star field? In a universe country? In the entire humanity?” True Yan smiled, “Even if you are the number 1 genius in the universe of humanity, that’s only 1 period of time. In 10,000 years, 10,000 eras, hundred million eras, the entire history of humanity? What are you against that.”

Luo Feng couldn’t help but nod.

“One should be confident, but not arrogant.” True Yan shook his head, “That Bolan is too proud. Yet he doesn’t know that the group of universe country leaders don’t even favor him. Over their long life, they’ve already seen many geniuses similar to him.”

“I understand.”

“I will work hard, if others can pass the primal sky mountain, I too will work hard.” Luo Feng said.

On the screen, True Yan was slightly taken aback before nodding.

“My reason for calling is to warn you about the qualification matches.” True Yan said. “These matches, firstly it is an internal battle within the absolute beginning region! There are a total of 38

in that region. The original 30, plus the 8 of you new people."

Luo Feng nodded.

"38 decisive battles, picking out the top 3."

"The strongest 3 will have the right to challenge the people of the primal region. Of course, very few have ever succeeded." True Yan said, "What I want to talk about now is your internal battle between the 38."

"You, Rong Jun and the rest of the 8 are all new people."

"And as for the old people of the universe level, some of them have been nurtured for 1,000 years, and many for thousands of years." True Yan said. "Right now, of these 30 old people, 5 have passed the 7th level of the heavenly bridge and 25 have passed the 6th."

Luo Feng couldn't help but stare.

This, this...

30 old people, 5 have passed the 7th level? And the rest have all passed the 6th?

"That's not strange at all. If Wuka and the rest train for thousands of years, they'd all be able to pass the 6th level as well."

True Yan said. “Time, that’s the power of time! Your talents may be high, but they’ve trained longer.”

“Why have they not broken through to domain lord after so long?” Luo Feng couldn’t help but ask.

That was simply bullying.

The new people would be crushed. 30 old people and 5 of them had already passed the 7th level!

“Bottleneck, to these geniuses, they can definitely pass it in a 1,000 years.” True Yan poured his wine, downing the glass and pouring yet another. “However, the universe level is one that allows them to take missions and earn points! And it is also a good time to lay down solid foundations, naturally their achievements would be higher later.”

“Since their life spans are long, what’s thousands of years in the universe level?”

“No one is stupid, they are all taking the chance to earn points.”

“And because of this, one can only take 10 missions every 100 years! And the safe level, normal, difficult, dangerous, suicide levels, every one of them have limits to how many you can take.” True Yan said.

“This, this is simply bullying.” Luo Feng couldn’t help but say.

“They too were once new people.” On the screen True Yan said. “You are still ok, staying in the absolute beginning region shouldn’t be a problem. However Wuka and the rest of them, they’d probably be knocked back into the sky and land region.”

Luo Feng was silent.

“Your greatest enemies are those 5, the 5 who’ve passed the 7th level of the heavenly bridge.” True Yan said.

“5, the 5 from the 30 old people?” Luo Feng frowned.

5 great warriors.

The talents of these 5 people were at least Wuka’s level, and with such long time to train and grow, they would have taken many missions and had much experience.

“Work hard.”

“Your opponents are them.” True Yan said. “This is your first qualification battle. There’s not much of a chance to enter the primal region. My request for you is for you to make it into the top 3 of the absolute beginning!”

After the call ended, Luo Feng sat in his room for awhile.

“My initial plan was to make it into the primal region. But the old people of the absolute beginning are actually that strong…teacher wishes for me to make it into the top 3?” Luo Feng thought. “A soldier that doesn’t wish to become general is not a good soldier. If I don’t even dare to dream about entering the primal region, than I’d be useless.”

“This time!”

“I definitely have to make it into the primal region!”

“6 years, I still have 6 years.” Luo Feng thought. As for these next 6 years, he already gave up on the initial plan. He already had a general idea for his plan for the next 6 years.

“My strengths!”

“My advantage is my strength and I will further strengthen them as much as possible.”

Chapter 6 – Attempting the Heavenly Bridge 7th level!

What was Luo Feng's greatest strength right now?

It was the right claw of the golden horned beast with 97 blood river stones within, the beast god statue, the 3 ancient pictures, Tearing Sky and land, the combination of those 4!

Before he went to Blood River world, his greatest strength was the Mosha clansman, the 9 universe tablet, Time space scribbles! The Mosha clansman studied the space laws, hence it was extremely fast. It even once resulted in Luo Feng's comprehension of the gold laws lagging behind the space laws!

But now, things were different!

The golden horned beast was naturally proficient in the golden origin laws. Through unleashing the right claw's 1st claw, its fusion with the universe energy was raised by 10 times! It's body itself was already absurdly strong, and 10 times stronger, with the fusion of space comprehension, it wasn't weaker than the Mosha clansman anymore!

With this level of comprehension of the two laws, when training Tearing sky and land, what kind of shocking speed would that result in? This was afterall a technique created by the earlier generations of golden horned beasts, it was naturally suited for it.

The beast god statue and 3 ancient pictures were profound, but that's only because they had no specific training methods.

Tearing sky and land however had a specific training method.

The two of them resonated!

Just the improvement speed alone of the golden horned beast studying Tearing sky and land's 1st claw was shockingly fast. Especially in these few months, since he acquired the beast god statue, his own improvement speed left Luo Feng somewhat speechless.

"My strongest attribute in training is the 1st claw."

"In battle, my strength is, being able to use both spirit reader side and fighter." Luo Feng quickly organized his thoughts, "The mosha clansman is actually supposed to train the illusionary techniques, instead...I'll let it work with the golden horned beast and train mainly on Burial."

Burial and the 1st claw.

In terms of law usage, these two were the closest, this was what made burial become the Mosha clansman's strongest move.

"When I get into close combat with the enemy, I'll simultaneously use my spirit weapons! When I attempted the sky mountain earlier, I relied on this to kill two of them." Luo Feng

thought.

In terms of close combat ability.

Luo Feng was able to use one blade to withstand that bull man, and the ape man's spirit weapon. It was only slightly disadvantaged...and while using the Nan Shen Armament's 5th level, Space slicer was actually knocked away by the bull man. Only when using the 6th level's blade world was he able to pressure him.

"My close combat strength is slightly weaker than my spirit weapon, but it's not that far off."

"I'll focus more on Burial for awhile, and with the 1st claw's help, the improvement will be very fast." Luo Feng smiled. If he were to be caught in a stalemate using the Nan Shen Armament, during the critical time, he'll use the blood shadow blade to close in and kill. That was akin to having a trump card when needed.

How strong was Luo Feng's close combat...

No one really knew, even True Yan emperor only knew of what Luo Feng had accomplished back in primal chaos city, that move that Luo Feng used to pass the heavenly bridge. During that time, his close combat was far weaker than his spirit weapon.

As time passed, the universe humanity's most elite universe level geniuses all made their preparations for their qualification battles.

Luo Feng didn't dare relax either. The golden horned beast and the mosha clansman worked on their 1st claw and Burial, Time space scribbles, 9 universe tablet, 9 black fireballs, he replayed all these scenes over and over etc. Everything resonated with each other, and when he had any questions he would go ask his teacher True Yan emperor.

"Luo Feng, how is he improving so quickly?"

"Luo Feng, you are sure you can unleash this page's technique in the time space scribbles? Show it to me first." True Yan watched as Luo Feng did it successfully. He stared hard, "Madness, how are you improving even faster than in Blood River world by so much?

True Yan was shocked.

Luo Feng didn't dare relax even after.

.....

It had been half a year since he returned from Blood River world.

Virtual universe, Heavenly bridge.

On that beautiful island in the center, a black star robed watchman Bevin was shocked to see Luo Feng appear out of thin air. "Luo Feng, since you passed the 6th level, you haven't

returned at all.”

“Yes.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Are you going to attempt the 7th level?” Bevin laughed.

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

“You look very confident.” Bevin smiled and pointed into the distance, “There’s no one on the 9 universe bridge. I wish you all the best. If you can pass the 7th level, you’ll have truly exceeded Bolan!”

“I believe I can succeed.” Luo Feng smiled, after which he became a beam of light rushing into the distance of the 9 universe heavenly bridge, and flying swiftly up the many levels.

7th level, this was a vast space.

The bridge extended into space itself. At the end of the bridge, there floated a small meteorite that had a diameter of 1km. Luo Feng, who was dressed in his dark red armor stood on the other end, staring at the floating meteorite.

“Pick your opponent. Fighter, controller, hypnotist, pick one and if you defeat him, you’ll have passed the 7th level. A hoarse voice resounded from the meteorite.

“Controller!” Luo Feng said.

Pa!

A small stone broke off from the side of the meteorite, landing on the bridge itself. It rolled about slightly on the bridge before transforming into a blue armored masked warrior, who stood on a dark cloud shuttle, and carried a dark golden long rod controller.

“Universe level 9 youngster, haven’t seen you in awhile.” The blue armored man’s voice was old.

“I wouldn’t come unless I had the confidence.” Luo Feng said.

“Very good!”

The blue armored man stood on the dark cloud shuttle and roared, “Let me see how much you’ve improved, since you have so much confidence.”

Rumble!

The dark golden long rod he carried shot out 10 million gold lights. In an instant countless little golden blades shot in all directions, seemingly warping the entire land and skies. And standing on his own dark cloud shuttle in the distance, Luo Feng’s dark golden long rod too shout out 10 million gold lights!

The two of them had similar moves! The land and skies around the two changed completely.

Rumble! Rumble!

The vast world had blade energy revolving. This was the blade world, the blade world the blue armored man formed clashed directly with Luo Feng's.

Rumble, Rumble, Rumble...

The two worlds collided, and countless blade energy clashed.

"Your improvement is shocking. However, your control of the blade world is still weaker than mine by a little." The blue armored man pointed at Luo Feng, "Go!"

Xiu!

The blue armored man gathered one thread of golden blade energy and shot at Luo Feng.

"My control of the blade world is weaker?" Luo Feng was still very confident. Actually, two months ago, he was already able to form a stable blade world! The reason he waited for two more months was to perfectly control the blade world and even under circumstance or pressure, to maintain his stable control of it.

Why he was slightly weaker was mainly because Luo Feng was multitasking. He was using only part of his consciousness to control the Nan Shen Armament. He was seeing how it would go.

“Then now, I’ll use my full focus on the Nan Shen Armament. If I can win without using close combat, then there’s no need for it.” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed. The surrounding blade energy erupted, seemingly strengthened, immediately pressuring and pushing against the other blade world. Simultaneously, he pointed and shouted, “Go!”

A thread of golden blade energy shot directly at the blue armored man.

Chi! Chi!

The two condensed blade world energies formed incomparably, and the piercing blades that clashed, completely dispersed.

The further away from the body, the weaker and harder it was to control the blade world energy. Hence, every time it would be condensed closer to the body. Since, this was the strongest point!

“Chi!”

“Chi!”

Two threads of golden blade energy once again clashed and dispersed.

“Blue armored man, you are set to lose.” After trying two attacks, Luo Feng didn’t conserve his energy anymore, coldly ordering and pointing at the blue armored man.

Xiu!

A thread of gold blade energy shot at him.

“It’s no use. You should go back and train further. Your power is close to mine, train another 3 years and you may pressure me. Train another 10 years and you’ll be able to defeat me.” The blue armored man controlled a thread of gold blade energy and shot towards Luo Feng to deflect his attack.

“Hmph.” Luo Feng stared coldly at him.

Hu!

Luo Feng’s attack actually swerved and dodged in mid air, not going head on against the blue armored old man’s attack. While it dodged…it continued on towards the blue armored man.

“What?” The blue armored man’s expression changed, “Then we’ll risk it all!”

The two controllers matched off.

Especially in blade world, the two of them used their full strength to condense the blade energy! It was like two warriors holding their blades, slashing wildly at each other! This resulted in a heated exchange. If one was stronger and could block off one attack, he could then attack and kill the other, that would mean success.

And Luo Feng's move was was made to not even block the attack against him, but slashing straight at his neck.

This was a suicidal move!

It was called...kamikaze!

"Xiu!" Luo Feng controlled that shot of blade energy till it reached right before the blue armored man, its speed was much faster than the dark cloud shuttle.

"Xiu." That dark gold blade energy reached Luo Feng too.

The two of them were both facing danger.

However, they had completely different methods to deal with it. A shield appeared before the blur armored man, and he used spirit energy to block it.

"Break!!!"

Luo Feng held one shield in his hand and a blood shadow blade in the other. With a roar, the blade pressured the space around, even affecting the blade world energy around it. This blade was filled with brutality, and was extremely fast. The edge of the blade glimmered gold and it slashed directly against that thread of gold blade energy.

Rumble!

Luo Feng felt the impact and was knocked back 10m. His blood was boiling within, however that dark golden blade energy was already dispersed.

“Chi! Chi! Chi!”

On the other end, the blade energy that Luo Feng controlled was as fast as lighting. The shield’s movement speed couldn’t keep up at all with it. After parrying two times, the 3rd time, it pierced through the blue armored man’s head!

His body fell down...

Luo Feng looked at the blue armored body and said softly, “We both have the blade world. But my blade and the Nan Shen Armament isn’t too different in level!”

The 7th level of the heavenly bridge, success!

“Bolan, I’ll take the lead.” Luo Feng smiled and rushed into the

sky, headed towards the 8th level.

Chapter 7 – Newbie Luo Feng

At the end of the heavenly bridge's 8th level.

Luo Feng looked at the floating meteorite, "Every three levels of the bridge is a breakthrough level. However, towards the end, it gets harder and harder, like the levels 19, 20 and 21, passing the 21st would make one a knight, an eternal being on the same level as the universe country leader. The 20th and 21st levels are incredibly difficult."

From the 7th to 8th, the difficulty may not be as jarring as from the 6th to 7th!

However it was still definitely more than from the 5th to 6th!

……

"Trying the 8th level at universe level 9, you are indeed exceptional. Right now, in the Virtual Universe company universe level, there's only one who has passed the 8th level." The blue armored man stood on the dark cloud shuttle, his eyes smiling behind the mask, "Receive this."

Rumble!

The blue armored man's dark golden long rod shot out 10 million gold lights. Luo Feng did exactly the same thing, as simultaneously, countless little golden blades shot in all directions,

immediately connecting with the space, and gold laws. The land and skies changed in color, and in an instant the entire surroundings were filled with blade energy.

Still the same 6th level…Own world!

“Rumble!” The blue armored man controlled his blade world and violently smashed over. immediately Luo Feng’s side began to crumble and split apart, the blue armored man’s blade world however was still growing.

“Not good.” Luo Feng’s expression changed.

Sou!

He became a beam of light, wielding the blood shadow blade and rushing at the enemy.

“Chi!” A dark golden blade energy formed right before his eyes and pierced right through his head.

Luo Feng lost, the 8th level, failure!

……

“I actually lost like that.” Luo Feng sat in his study, still shocked from before. “According to the information I’ve seen, this should be the blade world’s Omnipresent level.”

Nan Shen Armament's 6th level, Blade world was a very terrifying attack.

Just like the 1st level, forming one golden blade, up till 9.

The blade world too had different levels.

Luo Feng was currently only at the start of controlling it, and was able to condense 1 thread of the blade energy. He also had to be in close range to the enemy to do it! Because, as he got further away, the control would weaken, he still couldn't control it at will. However the 8th level opponent did it easily.

He gathered his blade energy in an instant and killed Luo Feng!

One had to reach a level of control of the blade world where one could easily do what he wanted, to make the blade energy omnipresent!

"The reason for my failure is due to the blade energy of the opponent being omnipresent, and I couldn't even defend." Even though he had passed the 7th level, he wasn't proud at all, but continued his studies as per usual.

Virtual universe heavenly bridge.

Watchman Bevin stared wide eyed, muttering, "The humans of

the universe have trillions of races, I've already seen many geniuses. This Luo Feng however...he actually exceeded Bolan! Bolan's talent was incredibly shocking to countless people before. Interesting, this is getting interesting."

After which, Bevin sent out the news of Luo Feng completing the 7th level to the people involved, also sending it out to all absolute beginning and primal region members.

.....

Yu Xiang mountain, primal region, Long Yun's training grounds.

In the vast training grounds.

Long Yun knelt on the floor, smashing fists after fist against the hallow ground.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! The ground shook and his expression was heavy. Every hit smashed the ground more, until a crater was formed.

"I said before that I would return proudly to Swelling water universe country."

"I said that I would become an absolute warrior in the universe."

"I said that I would always remain within the primal region."

Long Yun gritted his teeth. His eyes were filled with veins. “Why, back then Luo Feng and I weren’t too different in levels. However right now I just passed the 5th level and he’s already passed the 7th?”

“I won’t accept it!”

“I won’t accept it!” Long Yun grit his teeth.

“Calm, I need to remain calm.” He closed his eyes and mutter softly, “Yes, one step at a time. I cannot let him affect my emotions. If I am distracted, I’m bound to fail. I need to remain calm, calm.”

Long Yun was a very low profile person, yet no one truly dared look down on him.

He was silent.

He had been alone all this while. In his genius competition batch, his talent may have ranked only 20th or 30th, but his improvement speed was just as fast as Wuka’s.

……

Similarly within the primal region, Bolan was in his villa.

Bolan wielded the blood blade in his hand and he casually swung

it about. However, he suddenly frowned and gently tapped the screen before him and a mail opened.

“Luo Feng, successfully passed the 7th level.” Bolan gently read it out, after which he completely froze.

Pa!

The blood blade fell onto the floor, the crash actually awoke Bolan suddenly.

“He passed? He’s surpassed me?” Bolan didn’t even care about the blood blade on the ground, silently walking into his living quarters and into his study. He sat crossed legged and stared at the photo hanging on the wall. It was of an old man teaching a youth.

He sat silently...

Not a sound was muttered.

There was a very crowded spot in the absolute beginning region...the arena!

The area was a public arena where geniuses would often gather to spar against each other, even wagering on the matches, naturally both sides would wager on their fights. Afterall, the deaths in the virtual universe were fake, and no one dared bet too much on others.

“Your majesty, I think you should give up.”

“Your majesty Wuka, you’ve already lost 8 matches today.”

“Anymore, you’ll still end up losing.”

A group of universe level absolute beginning members watching the matches mocked and laughed. In the arena.

Wuka was lying flat in the corner of the arena. His head was filled with blood, as he lay there breathing heavily.

“Shut up all of you!!!” He roared fiercely. He stood up abruptly, as fresh blood stained his face red. He stared hard at the group of spectators below the arena, “I’m not dead yet!”

After which, he stared at the distant youth with silver white scales on his face. That youth snorted coldly, “Your majesty, you’ve already lose 8 consecutive matches, I think you should just leave.”

“Bullshit!”

Wuka roared.

Rumble!

With a stomp, his entire being rushed straight against that youth closing in until there was only 10m left. In his hands, two short axes appeared. He waved one of them and swung it directly at the youth.

“Hmph!” The youth with the silver white scales immediately dodged and left a hundred images. With a rumble, he immediately grabbed one of Wuka’s arms and swung him around smashing him straight into the ground.

“Get lost!”

Wuka’s other axe immediately slashed right through his own captured arm, and he flung that axe straight at the youth, causing his expression to suddenly change as he dodged as fast as lightning. However, there was a slash wound left on his chest already, as fresh blood flowed.

“Hahaha, hahaha…” Wuka stood there, his left arm grabbing the axe. Fresh blood flowing from his broken right arm, yet he laughed loudly. He held the axe and pointed with his left hand at the youth, “Mo Yi Lin, didn’t you proudly declare like an idiot before, that I wouldn’t be able to even touch you, haha…”

The youth gritted his teeth, staring at Wuka, “You madman.”

“Haha, madman, Luo Feng of our Absolute beginning 3 heroes is the true madman. I cannot compare to him.” Wuka laughed loudly, after which he turned to face the group below. He pointed

at them, “All of you listen, the 8 of us are new here. Haven’t you all just trained a few thousand years more than us. what’s there to be proud of? Yet, all of you are so arrogant, saying I, Wuka, cannot even hurt anyone of you? I’ve only just passed the 5th level and you’ve all passed the 6th. Don’t look down on us new people!”

After he finished, he jumped straight off the arena.

The group at the side of the arena, there were 8 that were gathered. The leader was a man in a silver grey long robe, he said coldly, “Wuka is indeed a Manka warrior, intrepid. However newbies are still newbies. During this qualification battle, all 8 of you are entering the land and sky region! Only about 10 of the members in that region have reached the 6th level!”

“Di!”

“Di!”

“Di!”

The group of universe level geniuses all received a mail simultaneously.

“We’ve all received something?”

“Who sent it?”

“Open it?”

The group of senior universe level members in the absolute beginning region all opened the mail.

“What, 7th level?”

“Luo Feng?”

“It’s Luo Feng of the 8 newbies?” Many of the geniuses couldn’t help but get shocked. The 6th to 7th level was too difficult, even though they were geniuses that had trained for thousands of years, only 5 of them managed to pass the 7th. The rest were still stuck on the 6th.

“Luo Feng?”

Wuka who was just about to leave heard, quickly opening the mail and reading the contents. He immediately stared with glee and surprise, following which he pointed at the group of seniors and laughed loudly, “You bunch of bastards, have you seen it? What a genius is, what a true genius is? What about us newbies? We’ve only trained a hundred years, what about it? Yet we are able to pass the 7th level, what about it?”

“Haha, you all better remember the name Luo Feng! He’s one of the 3 heroes of the Absolute beginning region!” Wuka smiled wide.

The group of seniors all went silent.

“Luo Feng?” The silver grey robed man squinted his eyes, glancing at Wuka who was wielding the blood stained axe and leaving. “To be able to pass the 7th level, I have to check him out properly. Our attempt to rush into the primal region this time... this Luo Feng has already become a threat.”

.....

The Honor secret region of the universe mercenary alliance was akin to the Virtual Universe company’s Primal region and Absolute beginning regions, a secret region which was excavated and remodeled.

Honor secret region, there was a desolate large planet.

It, was called Hell arena!

A skinny wolf like man with yellow fur and green eyes gazed into a distance while standing on a stone. Suddenly he frowned, his brown eyes gleaming green, “Luo Feng? This new batch is pretty impressive. However, the slot for the primal region is mine!”

Chapter 8 – Change

Virtual universe, primal region, Bolan's training grounds was currently an ice land.

There was enough snow to bury a person up to his knees.

Bolan sat crossed legged in the snow, topless with his eyes shut.

"Bolan." A cold voice resounded.

Hua!

Bolan stood up and the snow fell in all directions, and he turned to look. A tall and skinny man with eyes like a venomous snake, and a body rippling with origin laws, appeared in the ice land, gazing over him, "Luo Feng has already passed the 7th level. Why, are you not affected by it?"

"Teacher." Bolan bowed, not speaking more.

Primal region members had an undying specially catered to teach them, and according to their needs, they can even change for a different undying teacher!

This one before him was an official level undying.

"Stupid, what a joke." The man's cold eyes gazed at Bolan. "Are

you so stupid that you are still insisting on your old ways?”

“Teacher, I’ve thought it through.” Bolan bowed.

“Speak.” The cold man said.

“I admit I was too proud before, and too over confident.” Bolan said softly. “The study of the Universe primal chaos tablet, I’ve decided to focus on the space laws.”

“That’s wise!” The cold man revealed a smile.

Just like how a parent who makes a decision for their children, but they are obstinate in their ways. However…when the child grows up and discovers that the path his parent chose for them is the right choice.

One theory.

Bolan’s decision was a wise one. When he was young, many warriors weren’t as talented as he was, hence his choice had always been right. However…with regards to the problem of which tablet to pick in primal chaos city, the ones giving him advice were undyings and even universe country leaders were afraid of the geniuses falling.

Undyings and even universe country leaders, just how high were their perspectives?

Their long eternal lives has resulted in them seeing how many generations of geniuses pass? Their suggestions...were a result of their experience!

Maybe...

If Bolan continued down this path, in 10,000 years, 100,000 years, a million years, he would still become an absolute warrior amongst the undying. However, Luo Feng of the same generation would have far left him in his dust.

“Your space talent is the most absurd i’ve ever seen.” The cold man said. “Even compared to the legendary geniuses of before, just your space talent is top class. Your decision is very wise! You should celebrate having such a rival like Luo Feng in the same generation!”

“Because of him, he’s shocked you.” The cold man said.

Bolan was silent, his eyes however gleamed in a new way.

Luo Feng?

“Since you’ve made the decision, then we’ll begin according to the plan I’ve constructed.” The cold man said.

.....

The universe tablet was one that trained in space and time. However over a trillion years, just how many were able to work on both space and time and improve at the same speed?

Hence, there were 3 ways to study the universe tablet.

One of them was to have time as the main and space as secondary.

Another was space as the main and time as secondary.

The last was training both at the same time.

If the 3rd option was accomplished, one would definitely be absurdly powerful, and Bolan had picked this 3rd option before. But right now, he was picking to let space be the main and time as the secondary.

Once the path was chosen right...

The improvement speed would be shocking!

“Luo Feng.”

“Luo Feng, hurry over.”

“Madman, come to Wuka.”

Luo Feng who was studying the 3rd volume of time space scribbles seriously immediately received the many messages from Wuka and Rong Jun. The two of them were worried about disturbing his training, hence they sent messages. The virtual assistant Babata would report to Luo Feng according to his situation.

“The both of them, why are they looking for me so urgently?” Luo Feng smiled and shook his head.

After which he flew out his balcony and into the sky, gazing at the not too distant Wuka’s villa.

……

Within the living room.

Wuka and Rong Jun sat there, facing the table with wine on it.

“Madman is here.” Rong Jun stood up.

“Luo Feng, Luo Feng.” Wuka was the 1st to rush out and welcomed him with a bear hug.

“What’s up?” Luo Feng was shocked as he dodged to the side, smiling as he looked at Wuka, “Why so friendly?”

“Madman, you are too awesome.” Wuka grabbed Luo Feng’s arm and dragged him into the living room. Luo Feng saw the exquisite wine on the table, especially with the two complex words Thunder Rain, he was shocked, “Wuka, you stingy punk actually bought Thunder Rain wine?”

Thunder rain wine, in reality, it was something even True Yan emperor couldn’t bear to drink casually.

Even in the virtual universe, this one bottle alone cost 32 mixed elements! Meaning that this one bottle was the equivalent of an entire sector lord’s wealth, drinking 10 galaxies in one go! However amongst Luo Feng, Rong Jun and Wuka, there was no doubt Wuka was the most wealthy. There was no other way about it, his father had such a high position.

Wuka’s father was one of the pinnacle figures in the Manka universe country.

However even so, he wouldn’t dare spend money this way.

“What’s one bottle of wine?” Wuka said passionately as he gently opened the cork off the bottle, and pouring a glass for Luo Feng. The liquid was translucent, with crystal like droplets floating within, and the droplets had traces of electricity coursing through them.

Even though this bottle of wine didn’t have the same effect as changing one’s body structure in reality.

However from the body and soul, the feeling was the same. Drinking it in the virtual universe was an extreme luxury!

“It’s just one bottle. Brother, you’ve passed the 7th level. That’s awesome, thrilling, thrilling.” Wuka couldn’t help but shout.

“Oh, you all know about it?” Luo Feng was stunned.

“Madman, you are shameless.” Beside, Rong Jun couldn’t help but say as he enjoyed the wine.

“Truly shameless, you actually never told us about this. Luckily watchman Bevin sent a message to all of us.” Wuka said.

“Damn.” Luo Feng stared, “This Bevin actually…”

“Hahaha, the message came at the right time.” Wuka said, “You didn’t see, since the time the virtual universe sent the message regarding the qualification battles, the seniors in the absolute beginning region who were peaceful before suddenly got arrogant and feisty.”

“Everybody is competing to not get kicked into the Sky and land region!” Wuka shook his head, “Those seniors look down on the 8 of us, who are new. I was unhappy with it, hence I constantly challenge them to battles!”

“Frequently battle?” Luo Feng was stunned.

Wuka had just passed the heavenly bridge 5th level. But, amongst the 30 universe level seniors, 5 of them had passed the 7th level and 25 had passed the 6th.

“Why, cannot I compete? Our Manka people have never lowered their heads and admitted defeat. Even if we lose temporarily, we’ll return to battle again.” Wuka snorted coldly, “Those group of bastards are all arrogant. In the end, they were still injured by me. However, this is still not thrilling. The thrilling part was…when that group saw that letter and the news of you passing the 7th level.”

“You didn’t see their expressions, that was exciting.”

“Many just stared wide eyed with shock.” Wuka laughed loudly. “Back then I was mocking and laughing at them, they couldn’t even retort. That’s truly thrilling, hence I bought a bottle of Thunder Rain to celebrate the achievements of us newbies, and also the number 1 person of our batch.”

“Temporarily number 1.” Rong Jun smiled beside and glanced at Luo Feng.

“Hm, temporarily number 1.” Wuka nodded.

Luo Feng laughed.

The reason why he got along well with these two was because of their one similarity, which was that they were never willing to admit defeat. They may temporarily be lagging behind, however no one would give up and instead constantly improve.

“Wuka, Rong Jun, I are ready to accept another mission.” Luo Feng said. “However, my knowledge of the missions is very low, do you have any suggestions?”

“The missions, naturally the higher the difficulty, the more shocking the points.” Wuka said.

“I have some suggestions. I’ve already finished the 10 missions for my 100 years.” Rong Jun said, “And these were all suggested by my teacher…”

The three of them began their discussion.

……

Luo Feng’s plan was to first pass the 7th level of the heavenly bridge.

And after, grasp the time to go do some missions. Through real life battles and along with the training environments, he would be able to improve himself! Through that first Blood River world mission, he had gained huge benefits, he wasn’t intending to do any random mission, that simply.

Every mission had to have some great benefits hiding behind.

It all depended on whether he could get it or not.

Of course…the prerequisite was strength!

……

The three of them chatted for awhile. Luo Feng finally had a clearer plan of how to choose his missions.

“This wine is really good.”

“This feeling is even more wonderful than the life evolution when I broke through to the universe level.” Luo Feng closed his eyes, feeling the change in his body and soul. That comfortable feeling, of course these were all simulated by the Virtual Universe company. The real Thunder rain was something even Wuka couldn’t afford in reality.

And even people like True Yan emperor, Tong Nan emperor, these eternal beings, they would only purchase such luxuries once every countless years.

“This wine is awesome. It’s time I attended classes, the class today is taught by an Emperor undying, which fits me well.” Luo Feng got up.

“Hm, I won’t send you off.”

“Go on.”

Rong Jun and Wuka lay in the sofa, enjoying the delicious wine, not willing to get up.

Training should be harsh, but one should still indulge occasionally and enjoy the luxuries of life.

“These two punks.” Luo Feng smiled and shook his head, after which he became a beam of light and flew straight into the sky.

……

At this time, within another villa in the absolute beginning region.

“Today’s class talks about space and gold, the fusion of these two laws. That Luo Feng will definitely go. Mo Yi Lin, Ah Shi…you two should go attend the class too and find a way to challenge Luo Feng to feel him out. Once we know what moves he has, we’ll be prepared and when the qualification battles come…it’ll be much easier!” The man dressed in the silver grey robe said.

Chapter 9 – Provocation

Absolute beginning region, classroom number 2.

The room was 80km long and 60km wide. This was bigger than a normal city of earth, yet this was only a place for an undying to teach. There were over 1000 seats at the back of the classroom, and beams of lights occasionally flew in to fill the seats.

Sou!

Luo Feng appeared before the seats too, and picked one casually from the left.

“Look, it’s Luo Feng.”

“He’s Luo Feng from the newest batch of geniuses? Looks pretty handsome and strong.”

“He hasn’t been in the Virtual Universe company that long and he already passed the 7th level. He seems very strong. We are only on the 8th level but we are already domain lord level.” In the corner, two ladies, one with beautiful wings and another with eyes filled with enticement, discussed with hushed voices. They weren’t shy at all, and looked passionately at Luo Feng.

The other members in other places were all discussing too.

“That’s Luo Feng?”

“Right, it’s him.”

“That punk is brutal. Back when I was at universe level, the highest I got was only the 7th level. And that was over 3,000 years after joining the Virtual Universe company.”

“According to his improvement speed, he has no chance of entering the primal region this qualification battle. But by the next one…maybe there’s hope. As long as he has a few thousand years, he definitely has a guarantee of making it into the primal region.”

Two sector lords sitting in the corner were discussing.

Discussions were rampant!

It seemed the moment Luo Feng sat down, the entire classroom number 2 with close to 100 students all began to discuss him. Luo Feng became the center of attention. To be able to in such a short time, pass the 7th level, even before the 1st qualification battle,, only absolute geniuses were capable of such things!

Luo Feng sat silently there, his ears moving slightly.

He clearly heard all the discussions.

“I’ve become a zoo animal.” Luo Feng felt helpless within.

“How do you do Luo Feng.” A boorish voice resounded.

Luo Feng turned to see a bent body with a forehead with 6 protrusions, and his skin was covered in black fur. This man sat a few meters away from himself. While looking at Luo Feng and smiling, he said “I’m Suo Dragon, domain lord level. Today, I’ve heard many discussing about you…however, you are indeed impressive.”

“Thanks.” Luo Feng replied.

Within however he was laughing. According to the separation, the absolute beginning region had 1,000 sector lords, 100 domain lords, 30 universe levels. He was one of the new 8, making the entire number of the region go up to 1138.

However after the qualification battle, the numbers would return back to 1130.

Just from the looks of it, the number of sector lords were the highest, and most of the people in this classroom 2 were sector lords too. Very few of them were domain lords and the universe level numbers were very pitiful. Including Luo Feng, there were only four of them. This alone had made him shocked, because there were usually only two universe levels attending the classes.

“Today, there are two more universe level members here.” Luo Feng thought.

“Absolute beginning members have a very low chance of making it into the primal region!” Suo Dragon said softly, “My friend and I were discussing, saying that you will have hopes of making it in a few hundred years! Our absolute beginning region...very rarely will one ever make it. Everytime such a thing happens, it makes us all excited.”

“Even if you are only one step ahead of everyone, this will eventually lead to you being more steps ahead of everyone.”

“The earlier one gets into the primal region, the faster the improvement.” Suo Dragon seemed to be exclaiming while speaking.

Luo Feng to glance at him, “If you work hard, you too will have the chance of making it into the primal region.”

“Haha...”

“Don’t laugh at me. For me to remain in the absolute beginning region in the next qualification battle is not bad already.” Suo Dragon shook his head, and his eyes were filled with helplessness. “If I drop to the Sky and Land region in the next qualification battle. Then, my position outside will drop too. What a headache!”

The domain lord core members, they were placed outside with authority and position!

According to Luo Feng's way of thinking, they were placed as envoys in territories.

However...

Primal region members, absolute beginning, sky and land members, last phase members, their treatment outside was completely different. When the primal region members ventured outside, just their guard team had an undying leading the army! The position they are finally arranged for is also according to their rank!

If one was originally a primal region member but knocked back into the absolute beginning region.

Then the position would shift accordingly, even the undying general would be shifted away and a sector lord would take his place.

"This punk sure is unlucky."

"When he went out as a envoy, he must have been quite powerful. However, with his chances of getting knocked into the Sky and land region...his position will definitely shift and his rank will drop." Luo Feng laughed within. Regardless, he chatted for awhile with this guy, and came to know of some of the things the envoys frequently encountered outside.

After a while...

The undying teacher arrived and began his class, immediately the room went silent. Even if they wanted to discuss, they had to communicated mentally, they definitely didn't dare disrupt the class.

……

There were a total of four universe level students, of which one of the two had a face full of silver scales, and the other had bronze colored skin, while his forehead with a single black horn.

"Ah Shi, look, this Luo Feng is listening quite seriously." The silver scaled man communicated.

"Hm."

The black horned man looked at the left corner in which Luo Feng was seated. "Mo Yi Lin, Ni Nan has told us to find a reason to challenge him and feel him out. How do you think we should do it? If we find trouble with him and he doesn't care at all, and leaves the virtual universe, then we'd just look stupid."

"Relax, I have a plan." The silver scaled man squinted, like a venomous snake, "We'll do this first…"

"It seems simple." The black horned man frowned after listening.

“What else can we do, there’s no 100% guarantee plan.” The silver scaled man said.

“Alright, when the class ends, we’ll head over.” The horned man nodded.

After speaking to the class for awhile, under the gaze of the absolute geniuses, the Emperor undying vanished.

Luo Feng closed his eyes and tried to savor every bit of the lesson earlier before opening and seeing the two men before him. One of them had silver scales on his face and other was a sturdier looking man with a black horn on his head. Their similarity was that the two were universe level.

The two of them looked at Luo Feng.

“And you two are?” Luo Feng sat there looking at them.

“How do you do Luo Feng, I’m Mo Yi Lin.” The scaled man smiled.

“Luo Feng, I am Ah Shi.” The black horned man smiled. “We are both like you, universe level members, only we joined the Virtual Universe company earlier.”

“Is there something you two wish to say?” Luo Feng frowned.

Towards the universe level seniors, Luo Feng didn't have much of a good impression. Because, as he chatted with Wuka the day before, Wuka had explained many things and even though he didn't specifically point out anyone, there were only a total of 30 seniors, and Wuka had trouble with at least half of them.

"We know that you've passed the 7th level, respect." The silver scaled man's eyes gleamed. "I, Mo Yi Lin, love battles. Hence I'd like to have a go with you at the arena, just a friendly spar."

"I too would like to spar with you." The black horned man looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng frowned.

Battle?

If it was for training, he could easily simulate very powerful opponents in the training grounds. Battling people however was mostly just for seeing who was better or finding out his trump card.

When you know your enemy, that's when one can stay invincible.

"They probably have never fought with me, hence they don't know my battle tactics and my trump cards. Even though there's footage back from the genius battle, I was still very weak back then. I'm countless times stronger than back then. The footage

back then doesn't reflect my true strength, hence they came to challenge me." Luo Feng understood immediately.

"Apologies, I have no interest." Luo Feng stood to leave directly.

The black horned man and the silver scaled man exchanged glances, they knew they had to rely on their 2nd plan to challenge him.

"Haha, Luo Feng, you are the number one person in the new batch. I didn't expect your guts to be that small." The scaled man said.

"If you don't even dare to accept our challenge, it looks like this new batch really has no hope." The black horned man said.

"That stupid Wuka, he's so much weaker but he still keeps challenging us. Luo Feng, you are strong, yet you don't dare to do the same. This qualification battle, you newbies should just give up immediately."

The groups of sector lords and domain lords in classroom 2 listening to the class before all turned over with interest. Most of them favored Luo Feng because he was indeed shocking. However that was only because their levels were different. They were sector lords and domain lords, they had no business messing with Luo Feng at this time, naturally they were indifferent.

"The two who are challenging really have no class."

“No class at all. If it were me, I’d be too lazy to bother too.”

“Both of them are clowns.”

The sector lords and domain lords discussed, with some of the sector lords’ voices being extra loud. Immediately the expressions of the scaled man and the black horned man turned uglier.

Luo Feng however stopped in his footsteps.

This made the sector lords and domain lords shocked…was Luo Feng about to accept their challenge?

Was he so easy to provoke?

Luo Feng turned to look at the two of them.

“Hm?” The scaled man and black horned man discovered his gaze was hostile.

“Wuka battled you two?” Luo Feng looked at them.

“You mean that Manka prince?” The scaled man mocked. Besides, the black horned man too joined in, “That idiot, he battled us and was severely punished for it.”

“Congrats to you two.” Luo Feng said.

The scaled man and the black horned man were stunned.

Congrats?

“I didn’t wish to battle you two initially, because I didn’t wish to waste any time on you.” Luo Feng looked at the two, “However now, you’ve riled me up, I’ve decided...to accept that challenge this time.”

Chapter 10 – Nan Shen Armament

The silver scaled man Mo Yi Lin and the black horned Ah Shi, they heard the rage from Luo Feng's voice. Even though they were acting on Ni Nan's orders to provoke and challenge him, they were still ultimately geniuses of humanity from over a trillion years. Otherwise, how would they have entered the absolute beginning region?

Geniuses were all proud!

Waste of time?

Battling them was a waste of time, this was said by a newbie that hadn't entered the virtual universe for too long.

"Let's go to the arena." Luo Feng turned and walked out, seemingly wanting to end the battle quickly.

"Hmph." Mo Yi Lin looked at his back and couldn't help but snort coldly.

"Too arrogant." Ah Shi squinted.

The two of them exchanged glances and followed Luo Feng out of classroom 2.

There were many sector lords and domain lords in classroom 2

that had paid attention to their conversation. Seeing how it had turned out, their eyes gleamed.

“Interesting.”

“The newbie is fighting the seniors.”

“However, usually it’s the seniors pressuring and attaining victory. This time, it’s hard to say.”

“When comparing Luo Feng against these two, Luo Feng should be stronger. However...if Luo Feng were to fight against the strongest of the seniors Ke Luo Fu, there’s no doubt Ke Luo Fu is stronger.”

“Let’s go take a look.”

“Who knows, the five geniuses of the seniors might show themselves too.”

The group of sector lords and domain lords all began to call their friends as they laughed and headed out. The most exceptional of the newbies, Luo Feng, heading to the arena, this was a very interesting thing.

There were only so many members in the absolute beginning region. Naturally the more famous of the universe level and domain lord level were known to all the sector lords.

The absolute beginning region had a vast space, andmany arenas were constructed about. These became the usual spot for the members to spar and battle, even wager and bet on the matches.

At this time, there were 10 people already gathered at the side of the arena. On it were two domain lords sparring. One of them was a 8m tall and sturdy black furred apeman, and another was a cold looking bald youth, and on his bald head there were even complex engravings.

In an instant he left over 10,000 images and the black furred apeman roared as he danced with his 10m long huge axe. The clashing between these two caused the space to shake, ripples shooting in all directions.

The ground around the arena became a mess.

“I’ve lost this time.” A cold voice resounded.

“Haha.” A thick and hoarse voice replied, almost resounding with an echo. The black furred apeman stared coldly at the bald youth, “In our 10 battles over these 100 years, you’ve already lost 7 times.”

The bald youth had shut his eyes, reflecting on the battle before.

Beside, the 10 spectators were either discussing or preparing to leave, some even challenging each other.

“Ah, look?”

“What’s going on there?”

“So many people?”

The 10 people, including the apeman and the bald youth in the arena all looked at the distant bustling crowd walking over. There were at least 60 to 70 of them! Luo Feng walked ahead and behind him was Mo Yi Lin and Ah Shi, and behind them were the large group of sector lords and some domain lords. This bustling group had indeed drawn quite the attention.

……

Luo Feng walked and surveyed the area, glancing at the 10 people in the distant arena, amongst them there were no universe level.

“Pick an arena,” Luo Feng said.

“You are the newbie, you choose.” Behind him the scaled youth Mo Yi Lin said coldly.

“Ok.”

Luo Feng stomped and became a beam of light flying into an arena 10km away. The scaled youth and the black horned youth

too became beams of lights and followed. Simultaneously, the sector lords and domain lords all prepared to spectate the match, either getting in position or flying up, they all landed at the side of that arena.

"Go look."

"So many people spectating, it shouldn't be an ordinary match." The 10 domain lords too flew up. Both the black furred apeman and the bald youth followed suit.

Luo Feng and the other two landed in the arena.

Luo Feng glanced at the distant arena. It was mostly filled with the sector lords and a few domain lords, there were only two universe levels. One of them was a senior and another was the green haired youth Jiang Mo. Jiang Mo smiled at Luo Feng and waved his fist and communicated, "Luo Feng, the seniors have always despised us newbies. You have to take revenge for us, and teach them a good lesson."

"Naturally, I'll teach them a very good lesson." Luo Feng replied and smiled.

At this time...

Three silhouettes descended from the skies and landed at the side of the arena to spectate. One was a silver armored youth, another with black skin and thick lips, and finally one with jade green eyes,

sharp ears and a seductive figure, a lady. These three gathered to watch.

“They are all universe level, the middle one is one of the five strong seniors, Ni Nan.” Luo Feng swiftly thought of the information he learnt.

Since his teacher True Yan had warned him about the 30 universe level seniors and the 5 strongest, Luo Feng had collected information, especially on the 5, those 5 were... Ni Nan, Yu Feng, Ke Luo Fu, Ge and Sajin Fire dragon. The earliest to pass the 7th level was Ke Luo Fu, he passed over 2,000 years ago. The latest was Ge, over 300 years ago.

“Mo Yi Lin, teach this punk a lesson” That black skinned man roared.

“Ah Shi, don’t lose to this punk.” That seductive lady shouted too.

And the silver armored Ni Nan just watched silently.

“Relax.”

“Watch how I teach him.”

Mo Yi Lin and Ah Shi stared at Luo Feng. They had taken him to be a true enemy! Naturally it wasn’t that they didn’t have any chance of victory, because they had both passed the 6th level long

ago, they were pretty close to passing the 7th! And...strength wasn't simply based on comprehension of the laws.

One's consciousness! Unleashing! Mental state! Experience!

All these determined the final victor. Mo Yi Lin and Ah Shi were confident in their experience and battle consciousness, they believed these exceeded Luo Feng's.

"Luo Feng, you are too young, and have too much vigor. We'll make you understand that you cannot underestimate any opponent." Mo Yi Lin said. "The two of us are here in this arena, you pick either one of us to be your opponent."

"I said before I don't wish to waste time." Luo Feng looked at the two and said, "Both of you get in here!"

"Together?"

Mo Yi Lin and Ah Shi were stunned.

The group of absolute geniuses in the absolute region spectating were all shocked too. To be able to enter this region, their strengths weren't that different, and of the 30 seniors, only 5 had passed the 7th level and the other 25 had all passed the 6th...and even in the sky and land region there were 10 that had passed the 6th level.

What did that mean? It meant that the members in the absolute

beginning area were all pretty close to each other in strength! It meant these 25 that passed the 6th level were very close to passing even the 7th!

1 vs 2?

“Mo Yi Lin, you two teach him a good lesson.”

“Teach that punk!” The group gathered below slowly grew in numbers. The two universe level members that had just arrived raged and shouted.

“This is getting interesting.”

“Even more interesting.”

……

In the arena.

Mo Yi Lin and Ah Shi exchanged glances and nodded. This was good too. If they fought 1v1 against Luo Feng, they didn’t have much guarantee. But now, since he wanted to fight both of them himself, their chances of victory together were much higher.

“You said it yourself.” Mo Yi Lin’s scales on his face gathered as he frowned, his expression was struggled.

“Make your move.” Ah Shi roared.

In the distance, Luo Feng floated into the sky and gazed down at the two universe level opponents. He was clear on how strong he was, and because of this...he didn’t even regard these two as adversaries. The only reason he chose to fight was to avenge his brother Wuka.

“Babata, record the footage of this battle for Wuka later.”

“You sure are flashy.”

While communicating with Babata, Luo Feng smiled and he triggered the dark golden long rod on his back.

“Rumble!”

Immediately countless little golden blades shot in all directions. These countless gold lights seemed to form a golden sun behind him, the 6,000 little golden blades seemed to instantly connect through the universe space and gold laws, changing the surrounding 100km into pure gold.

The area engulfed was vast, even the space below the arena was affected.

Arena? Grass? They all vanished.

Only a vast world filled with countless amounts of blade energy could be seen.

Nan shen Armament 6th level...own world, also known as Blade world!

“My god!”

“This is troublesome!”

Mo Yi Lin and Ah Shi, the two absolute geniuses immediately had a big change in their expressions, and their eyes filled with shock.

“This Luo Feng can actually unleash the 6th level?” The large group of sector lords and domain lords spectating were all shocked, this was truly shocking. If one came in with the thought of simply checking out the newbies with the crowd, at this time they were all left in disbelief.

Because the Nan Shen Armament was incredibly hard to train!

This was one of the 9 godly weapons!

The strongest gold and space weapon, it used the gold laws as the main and the space laws to support. And the 9 universe heavenly bridge was built for the comprehension of the space laws. Then, the heavenly bridge’s 7th level was a test of one’s comprehension of the space laws!

Luo Feng was able to unleash the 6th level, what did this mean?

It meant that not only was his space comprehension high, but his gold comprehension was even higher!

And there were many ways to pass the heavenly bridge. If the challenger was a controller, he could pick a controller, hypnotist or even fighter, either one.

Choosing hypnotist was easier because a spirit reader controller mostly emphasizes on soul defense, hence winning would be easier.

Picking fighter was the easiest. Because he could simply maintain his distance and use his spirit weapon to attack from far. The fighter was only be able to use instantaneous acceleration over and over to try and think of ways to get close.

Picking controller was the toughest! Because once that was picked, the controller would be exactly similar in terms of spirit weapon and attack etc!

Utilizing one's strengths to attack the weakness!

However picking an identical controller, that was troublesome.

"He definitely picks controller to fight."

“Definitely.”

“Otherwise passing the 7th level wouldn’t even require the blade world.”

……

In the arena, Mo Yi Lin and Ah Shi looked at the surrounding vast blade world, as countless blade energy were revolving, a formless world pressuring could be felt, and they felt despair.

“Why is he so strong?”

“And it’s the gold and space fusion’s strongest weapon?” The two were in a mess.

And the distant Luo Feng, the blade world’s energy condensed madly with countless blade energy finally forming a translucent dark gold blade. This blade glowed slightly, it was the strongest blade energy condensed from the blade world itself. Its power was unbelievable!

“Go!”

Luo Feng ordered softly.

Chapter 11 – Rage

“Even if we lose, we cannot lose that badly. Ah Shi, give it all you’ve got!” Mo Yi Lin grit his teeth. The scales on his face were struggling and frowning, and in his hand he wielded a 50cm thick, 3m long huge silver white blade. On it were complex golden engravings, a silver white light energy flowed through it.

Ah Sh’s eyes were flushed red, while each hand was wielding a half moon blade.

“Kill!”

“Kill!”

The two of them moved simultaneously as Luo Feng gathered his blade energy.

Rumble!

Mo Yi Lin fiercely stomped on the arena and it shook slightly, he moved as quick as lightning. The winds howled around him and a visible high pressure ripple followed along, as he raised his huge silver white blade high and swung it at Luo Feng!

Sou! Sou! Sou! The black horned man Ah Shi wielded both half moon blades and their movements were extremely peculiar. Within an instant, 1,000 images appeared and they all formed a powerful battle array filled with countless cold flashes of blade

aura that lit up.

In the distance.

Luo Feng floated in mid air and pointed ahead.

“Chi!”

An incredibly condensed blade energy took the form of a dark golden translucent blade, immediately tearing through the space ahead!

“I’ll first kill Mo Yi Lin.” Luo Feng looked at the distant Mo Yi Lin, simultaneously accelerating on the dark cloud shuttle and backing off.

“Arghh!”

Mo Yi Lin used both hands to wield the huge blade. He swung it and the surrounding air seemed to condense the space, simultaneously it clashed with the dark golden blade energy! He was very clear that the blade energy’s speed was extremely fast, and that he couldn’t dodge it. The only way was to forcefully deflect it!

“Rumble…” The dark golden blade energy was incredibly strong, causing Mo Yi Lin to completely move backwards. He stepped 10 steps back in the arena, and every step causing craters in the rock ground. Simultaneously cracks could be heard from his body,

almost as though his bones had broken inside.

“Chi!” Mo Yi Lin spit out fresh blood.

“Gold, is sturdy like the sun, indeed its very strong.” Mo Yi Lin stood on the ground staring at Luo Feng. His main arm which was wielding the blade was already broken in 9 places. Luckily he mostly deflected most of the attack into his right arm, otherwise his body itself would be heavily injured.

Luo Feng became a beam of light in the distant sky, once again forming an incredibly condensed dark golden blade energy before him.

That blade swiveled on the spot, tearing through the space around it.

“Mo Yi Lin, go and die!” Luo Feng stared coldly at him.

“Bastard!”

The black horned Ah Shi roared, becoming a blurry silhouette and chasing after Luo Feng., Luo Feng however stood on his dark cloud shuttle and glanced coldly at him, “Slowly chase on!”

This Ah Shi, unleashing his movements, could produce up to 10,000 images.

Afterall, being able to produce 1,000 images under the pressure of blade world was incredible. It was a pity that with the pressure of blade world, he couldn't keep up with Luo Feng at all.

The pains of a fighter!

Unless he was like the mosha clansman, who had extreme instantaneous acceleration, pity, against Luo Feng who've comprehended the 36 wonders of space and some comprehension of the Rainstorm, Luo Feng's movements weren't weaker than his. This created the situation in which he simply couldn't catch him.

"Xiu!"

The dark golden blade energy tore through the space and shot at Mo Yi Lin.

"Ya!!!" Mo Yi Lin roared, feeling the pressure around him of the endless blade world. Every move he made was affected, he could only use about 70-80% of his power.

"Ya!"

His left hand wielded the huge blade, once again slashing as quick as lightning! However to actually hit the blade world blade energy controlled by Luo Feng was extremely hard. His injuries from before weren't even healed yet, he could only risk it all and try. And now he was using only one arm, and this left arm wasn't as proficient as his right arm, including the injuries from before...

Xiu!

The dark golden blade energy flashed and directly pierced through his forehead, leaving behind a hole there, from which, one could completely see through.

Just like a laser that had shot through.

“Ah!” Mo Yi Lin stared wide eyed, following which his body fell. Rumble...with a crash his entire body slumped onto the stone of the arena, causing it to shake and roll about.

Mo Yi Lin, failure!

.....

“Luo Feng! Luo Feng! Well done, now kill the other punk!” A loud shout suddenly erupted from below. It was the Manka prince Wuka. He shouted excitedly, beside him was Rong Jun! Not just them two, even Qian Shui, Ai Chen, Lancelot and Ao Pa Te La had arrived.

The newbies of the absolute beginning universe level had all gathered, Jiang Mo had informed them all.

.....

Flying about on the dark cloud shuttle above the arena, Luo Feng looked below and saw the whole group. He couldn't help but smile and shout, "No problem, just a little dish!"

"Yayaya, bastard!!!" Behind him flashing about and constantly chasing, yet unable to catch up at all was the black horned Ah Shi, who roared with rage, "Luo Feng, if you have the guts don't run!"

In terms of space comprehension, he was close to Luo Feng.

In quantity, he was definitely further ahead in space comprehension, in substance however, Luo Feng's was more solid.

The two of them drew close!

However Luo Feng had the blade world to pressure him. Hence, how could he ever catch Luo Feng?

"What a joke, you want a controller to fight close combat with you?" While Luo Feng flew, he glanced back at Ah Shi and pointed, "Go!"

The endless blade world gathered before Luo Feng and a dark golden blade energy was formed.

It was extremely piercing!

Xiu!

The blade energy tore through the space and shot at Ah Shi.

“Hu...huh u hu...” Ah Shi madly waved the two half moon blades before him, his entire body becoming a blur.

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

The blade energy dodged time and again, Luo Feng had no intention of matching force with him, and purely relied on its extreme speed! Shooting from different directions all around at Ah Shi, pressuring him! Just how fast was the blade energy? Every time Ah Shi waved his blades he felt as though he was dancing on knives!

“Chi!”

The blade energy shot from the side and pierced through Ah Shi’s ears and out the other! The blade energy had left nothing but a mess within his head between his ears!

“Ah...”

Ah Shi stared wide eyed, because of the inertia he moved a few km forward before rolling on the ground.

Ah Shi, failure!

……

“Haha, we’ve won, we’ve won, hahaha…” Wuka laughed loudly.

“Luo Feng, beautiful.” That handsome Lancelot smiled too.

“Well done!” Rong Jun waved his fist strongly, excited and thrilled.

Qian Shui, Jiang Mo, Ai Chen and Ao Pa Te La were all incredibly excited. They, the 8 newbies of the absolute beginning region had the lowest qualifications and power. Especially since the qualification battle was drawing close…Jiang Mo, Qian Shui and Wuka knew they were about to be kicked into the Sky and land region. Hence they were all under a lot of pressure.

This battle had helped ease that pressure and avenged them, and was very thrilling!

“Haha.” Luo Feng jumped down and landed beside Wuka and Rong Jun.

“Those two punks came to provoke me, and I just dealt with them for kicks. Wuka, were these two among those that bullied you?” Luo Feng smiled.

“Yes they were.” Wuka grit his teeth. “I’ve long wanted to teach them a good lesson, but my power wasn’t enough. Haha, Luo Feng, thanks for avenging me, haha, thrilling!”

While Luo Feng and the group were celebrating and dancing about. The universe level seniors, the 10 gathered there...

“Bastard.”

“We actually lost.”

Those 10 had ugly expressions. Because, over a hundred sector lords and some domain lords all witnessed the battle! And they lost 2v1 to a newbie. This was extremely shameful.

“This Luo Feng is indeed very strong.” The silver grey robed youth stared at the distant Luo Feng, “He is actually able to unleash blade world. And from the looks of it, for me to defeat him, I’d have to use my trump card too. However...this move was something I prepared for Ke Luo Fu!”

“Ni Nan, I heard Mo Yi Lin and Ah Shi, the two punks got defeated by a newbie?”

A thick voice resounded.

The silver armored youth turned, feeling as though a little mountain appeared behind him. This was a over 6m tall, fully black armored man, and his armor was sleeveless, while his neck was red, almost like a red metal!

His face was red and clear, and on his forehead were two curved red horns. There was a rhombus crystal embedded in the middle.

Behind him was a long dragon tail.

“This mad punk is here?” The silver robed youth thought, he said solemnly, “Yes fire dragon! Mo Yi Lin and Ah Shi, those two punks were indeed defeated by a newbie. That newbie is Luo Feng who just passed the 7th level. He’s extremely arrogant, he doesn’t respect us seniors at all. After accepting their challenge...he announced that he would face them 1v2! But no one would have expected him to actually still win.”

“Look at how arrogant those 8 new people are.” The silver robed youth shook his head and looked at the newbies.

Over there.

Luo Feng and the 8 were extremely happy, Wuka roared from the side, “You seniors have trained for how many thousands of years, arrogant for nothing. Losing 2v1, haha...I feel ashamed for you!”

“Wuka!”

“What are you bragging about.” Immediately a group of seniors raged.

“Bastard!” The dragon tailed mountain of a man roared.

Rumble!

He immediately became a red beam of light and smashed into the arena like a meteorite, causing the arena to shake. This tall dragon tailed man extended his palm leaf like hand and pointed at Luo Feng below, “Luo Feng, get up here, I’ll teach you a good lesson. You can only use that blade world, yet how dare you. What gives you the right to be so cocky!”

His voice rumbled and resounded throughout.

Luo Feng who was laughing and chatting below was stunned as he looked up, his expression changed, “It’s him?”

Sa Jin Fire dragon, one of the pinnacle races of humanity the Flame Mother race. He was one of the 5 great warriors of the universe level in the absolute beginning region. He trained in the extremely expensive and absolute Black Hole Evolution comparable to the Time Space Scribbles. 1,500 years ago he had passed the 7th level!

Chapter 12 – Black Hole Evolution

As he had checked on the 30 seniors much earlier, he was very clear about their skills, since he had information about them, especially on the 5 great warriors.

The top 5 of the universe level, Ni Nan, Ke Luo Fu, Yu Feng, Ge and Sa Jin Fire dragon. The strongest and hardest to deal with was without doubt Ke Luo Fu, and most shocking would be the chemist Yu Feng. These 2 were the most terrifying of the 5! Even Luo Feng knew within that at this point he was far from being their match.

Ke Luo Fu, courageous and intrepid.

Yu Feng walked the path of the chemist, which was a rare oddity. However, once he succeeded, he would be extremely terrifying. Even Ke Luo Fu would lose to him.

The other 3...Ni Nan, Sa Jin Fire dragon and Ge were closer in strength. Ge, even though he was the latest to pass the 7th level, his battle ability was terrifying.

“Sa Jin Fire dragon?”Luo Feng looked up at the man with the dragon tail, frowning, “Must I actually fight him now?”

The original plan.

Was that, after passing the 7th level, he would go take on missions and train well during the 6 years. Settling Mo Yi Lin and

Ah Shi was just a convenience earlier. He had never thought of them as threats. However it was completely different with Fire Dragon.

……

In the arena.

Fire dragon waved his tail, slapping the sides of the arena stones, and staring down angrily, “Luo Feng, get up! Do you not dare come up?”

“Get up.”

“Luo Feng if you have the guts go up.” The universe level seniors all shouted together. “ Mo Yi Lin is weaker than you so you dare to bully him. Meeting Sa Jin… you are so terrified you don’t dare to get up?”

******

The spectators below were mostly made of sector lords. In reality, they were all in dangerous secret areas exploring, going through life of death training. Training over and over, their mental states were extremely nervous. Occasionally watching the younger universe levels spar was interesting. What’s more it was the geniuses among the geniuses fighting!

“Sa Jin vs Luo Feng?”

“Interesting, if they really fight, who do you think would win?”

Three sector lords in black armor discussed.

“That Sa Jin Fire dragon, he trains the most pinnacle manual, the Black Hole evolution. Even though with his points he could only exchange for the 1st few manuals. However just those are enough for him to unleash his full strength. Beating Luo Feng shouldn’t be a problem.

“I’m favoring Sa Jin too.”

“Haha, everyone is thinking the same thing. I’m favoring Sa Jin too. When I saw him battle Ke Luo Fu before, this Sa Jin was indeed of the battle race Flame mother, his strength was incredible. Unless Luo Feng can make his blade world reach the omnipresent level, he can’t win.”

……

The sector lords of the absolute beginning region were all sector lord level 9 pinnacles.

Sector lords capable of entering the last phase region were all usually recognized by the laws. And the absolute beginning sector lords…anyone of them was an absolute being in the universe, stronger than black dragon mountain’s Jiang Tian Chen by many times. Just how critical were their judgement on this battle?

They clearly saw both Luo Feng and Sa Jin's strengths.

******

The sector lords and domain lords watched with anticipation, the distant seniors too were challenging, in the arena, Sa Jin's eyes were gleaming, looking down on Luo Feng

"Will you go or not?" Wuka looked at Luo Feng.

"Even you don't have any guarantee, from what I see. That Sa Jin seems to want to teach you a good lesson, you cannot let it happen." The green haired youth Jiang Mo said soflty, "And Sa Jin had passed the 7th level more than 1,000 years ago. Even if you back out now it wouldn't be a disgrace."

"Will you go or not?" Rong Jun asked softly too.

Around him, Ao Pa Te La, the gentle and beautiful Qian Shui and Ai Chen, the handsome Lancelot, all looked at Luo Feng.

The 8 of them were of the same faction, the newbie faction.

Their honor and shame were as 1!

"I was originally waiting for the qualification battles to show my trump card. Looks like I have to use it now instead." Luo Feng

looked at the man with the dragon tail, and at the surrounding newbies around him looking at him with hope, he made a decision. For everybody…this battle!

He had to win!

Rumble!

Luo Feng became a beam of light like a shooting star and landed in the distant arena.

“Haha!”

“Good!”

“Luo Feng, you’ve got guts.”

“Nice.”

“Work hard, I favor you.”

The group of sector lords and domain lords all shouted loudly, hoping for the battle to be exciting. In their hearts they regarded him as the same level as them, because they could easily see that his improvement speed would eventually make him have a very high possibility of entering the primal region eventually.

……

In the arena.

Luo Feng and Sa Jin were a few km apart, staring at each other. They could see each other clearly, even the perspiration beads on each other's face could be seen.

"You've got guts!" Sa Jin's voice was strong and firm.

"Cut the chatter and make your move." Luo Feng said. When the distant Sa Jin heard this, he immediately smiled, "You sure are an arrogant punk. However, I'll wake you up!"

Shua!

The dark cloud shuttle appeared below Luo Feng's feet, simultaneously the dark golden long rod on his back shot out 10 million gold lights. The little golden blades shot in all directions, the engravings weaved through tens of millions of golden threads. The countless threads connected with the land and skies, immediately forming a 100km area.

The space was vast, countless blade energy revolved.

Blade world!

"Haha…interesting, somewhat interesting!" Sa Jin stood in the

arena. He raised his head and laughed, simultaneously red flames shot out from around him. The burning flames engulfed his body, at the same time, it clashed and blocked the blade energy.

He was like a flame god.

“What a powerful fire domain. It’s incomparably condensed and able to block my blade world’s pressure.” Luo Feng thought and the dark cloud shuttle floated in mid air, simultaneously swiftly forming an incomparably condensed gold blade energy

A translucent dark gold blade was formed.

“Go!” Luo Feng pointed ahead.

Xiu!

The dark gold blade energy immediately pierced forward.

“Kaka!” Sa Jin was wearing black armor all over. At this time, huge gloves appeared on his hands, it was made of a completely black metal. The joints of the finger regions were sharp like knives.

“Rumble!”

Sa Jin, against the lightning fast dark gold blade energy, punched heavily forward!

His fists were like arrows!

His bare arms and thick neck muscles shook slightly, as obviously he had poured all his power into that one punch. A simple punch, however the power was explosive. If he went to the Undying Altar, Sa Jin could at least reach 90 times his explosive force.

“Peng!” The dark gold blade energy dispersed and Sa Jin took a heavy step back. His heavy boots stomping on the arena caused countless amounts of rubble to fly.

This scene made Luo Feng’s expression change, “He blocked it like that?”

“He’s actually able to make me step back.” Sa Jin looked at Luo Feng and forced a smile, “The Nan Shen Armament is indeed one of the 9 godly weapons!”

Rumble!

Sa Jin strided and he rushed right before Luo Feng, Luo Feng retreated quickly.

“So fast! Under the blade world’s pressure his instantaneous speed is still so fast.” Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and immediately dodged.

Rumble!

Immediately over 10,000 images appeared in the space around him, these countless images flashed.

10,000 thread movement, the 4th level, 10,000 thread movement!

After comprehending the 36th wonder and through the 3rd manual of time space scribbles along with the rainstorm picture, after half a year...Luo Feng was able to unleash the 10,000 thread movement! Especially with the blade world and its assistance, it was even easier. Usually when he unleashed 10,000 images, it was purely for speed

However the 10,000 thread movement was able to effectively make the 10,000 images combine and work together, making him like a ghost, who was hard to guard against.

“10,000 thread movement?”

“I hate these kind of techniques that’s only for fleeing.” Sa Jin’s eyes seemed to be burning.

“Haha, a controller would naturally not fight close combat with a fighter.” Over 10,000 Luo Feng’s were laughing simultaneously, also the gold threads once again condensed and shot forward.

Xiu!

The golden blade energy was just like a playing child, over and over circling Sa Jin, and not going straight up against him.

“Bastard!” Sa Jin raged. He loosened his grip on the gloves and struggled as he once again gripped tight.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

7 images!

7 Sa Jins, and every one of them were using some fist technique. From the left to right, every one of their gloves glowed brighter and brighter, especially the 7th image. The dark red light was at least 30 cm thick, making the fist look like a huge hammer!

“Rumble…”

Sa Jin punched a fist into mid air. The land and skies shook with a rumble, and half of the blade world collapsed. Only the region around Luo Feng was maintained.

Luo Feng’s expression changed, “This is the 9 fists?”

The black hole evolution was comparable to time space scribbles. They were considered same level manuals, as long as one reached a high level in these two, they could become universe country leaders. Luo Feng had heard that when the black hole evolution

was trained to its peak, whether it was a fist, blade or sword, every thought could produce a black hole.

Black hole, this was an extremely terrifying celestial body!

It wasn’t a true hole.

But a celestial body formed from countless collapses and condensation into one body! In terms of density, the White dwarf star was very high, but the Zhongzi star was more terrifying. However, nothing was able to compare to a black hole.

The black hole was an extremely small but condensed entity. Its density was even more terrifying than 10 planets, its strength and gravity was absurd!

Gravity, tearing through space!

Accurately speaking, the black hole was between the primal universe and the messy flow of space feeling. Because of its high density, mass and gravity, even the space flow couldn’t affect it. Hence, it was like a boulder rooted and unmoving. It swallowed all light, ships, stars and planets into itself.

Even great undyings, if they were to be sucked in, they would also die!

The 9 fists was one of the final moves in the black hole evolution manual, and its reputation was well known.

Chapter 13 – Gamble

At this time, there were two silhouettes walking in space above the clouds, where the absolute beginning region was in Yu Xiang mountain.

Yu Xiang mountain was where the core geniuses of the Virtual Universe company gathered.

Thunder island was where the undyings of the Virtual Universe company and the absolute warriors gathered.

Meaning, that Yu Xiang mountain and Thunder island, the space in which they were located was in truth the headquarters! The number of warriors gathered was even more than in reality. Under normal circumstances, Luo Feng and the rest had no way to fly that high.

They were unable to fly out of Yu Xiang mountain to Thunder island.

They couldn’t fly too far away from Yu Xiang mountain either, just like an invisible barrier that covered the entire area! Same theory. Thunder island, which was the gathering place for countless undyings and stronger beings, had a formless barrier too. Those beings couldn’t fly too far from Thunder island!

Hence...

To be able to leave Yu Xiang mountain and Thunder island and fly within this space above, these were definitely the true upper echelons and powerful beings.

There were two people walking slowly in the space. One of them was almost 8m tall, and was dressed in silver armor, baring his arms and neck. As for his face, it was dark red in color, and there was a rhombus crystal embedded between his eyes. He too had a thick strong tail, and his deep eyes look almost like stars burning.

From one look, one could tell that this being was a Mother Flame race person.

And the other was only 2m tall, skinny and dressed in a peculiar black armor, and on it were countless silver engravings. In the middle of his forehead he had a 3rd eye...a vertical eye. That eye seemed to be a place where a golden blade was gathered at, giving off the feeling as though his gaze was like knives shooting out.

“Hahaha! Mother Flame, look below. One of the two punks below is your descendant.” The 3 eyed man gazed below. Through 10,000 km of space, he clearly saw the two, who were preparing to battle.

Mother Flame?

The ancient Mother Flame race, only one person was worthy of the name Mother Flame, that was the 1st mother flame race person born within the vast universe! He was the first, after mating with other races, through countless years, the race was established.

He was the only ancestor head of the clan for over a trillion years, and was also the Flame crystal universe country leader!

“He’s called Sa Jin. He is a genius from the fire dragon side.” Mother Flam gazed below and smiled.

“Mother flame, who do you think will win below?” The 3 eyed man laughed lightly.

“Of course Sa Jin!” Mother Flame laughed confidently. He then looked at the 3 eyed man beside and said, “Why, Mang Ya, you don’t agree?”

The 3 eyed man smiled, “I bet that his opponent wins. If I win, you have to give me that dagger of yours, how about it?”

“Dream on!” Mother Flame stared.

“Fine, not your dagger then. But if I win, you’ll have to give me that golden horn world stone instead. How about that?” The 3 eyed man said.

Mother flame glanced and smiled, “That’s fine. But, if I win instead, you’ll have to give me the Purple Thunder glass.”

“Ok!” The 3 eyed man replied.

“Haha…then get ready to give that exquisite glass to me.” Mother

flame said.

“You get ready to give me that stone too. A golden horned beast can only gather enough to make one such stone in its life. With that, my disciple’s weapon’s main material would be acquired.” The 3 eyed man smiled.

The two of them smiled, while gazing below.

The purple thunder glass and the golden horn world stone, those were mysterious items formed in the universe.

The golden horn world stone, only the pinnacle of the 12 space beasts, the golden horned beast could produce it. And it could only produce one in its entire life. As the numbers of the beast were extremely low in the universe, this stone was extremely rare and valuable.

As for the purple thunder glass, in the universe, only the bug clan region’s terrifying Thunder shrine produced it. This thunder shrine, countless years ago had a peculiar clan that lived in it, even that clan had yet to fully explore the secret region.

Later on, that clan was destroyed by the automaton race!

The thunder shrine then became a strongly reputed secret region, causing trillions of races in the vast universe to head over and explore it. The undyings of the humans too went over. The thunder glass was a more important and valuable material.

“Hehe, 10,000 thread movement.” The 3 eyed man nodded and smiled.

“Haha, 9 fists! He’s bound to win.” Mother flame smiled too.

The two of them continued to gaze below.

……

Yu Xiang mountain absolute beginning region, in that arena, Luo Feng and Sa Jin’s fight had already reached the craziest level.

“Rumble…”

Sa Jin’s one punch immediately caused the surround space to crumble. His eyes were staring straight at Luo Feng, “Punk, you are bound to lose!”

Sou!

Sa Jin’s speed exploded and his movement became peculiar and hard to predict. It was almost as though in an instant there were two Sa Jin’s rushing over, and yet it also felt like there was only one.

“His 9 fists already warps the space itself, and his silhouette and image seems real to the naked eye.” Luo Feng’s expression

changed. Stepping on the dark cloud shuttle, he unleashed the 10,000 thread movement and dodged. He simultaneously controlled the blade world, and with only half of the world left to extend, he borrowed the blade world's energy and locked onto his target!

"It's no use!"

Sa Jin roared and instantly reached before Luo Feng.

Rumble!

That 30cm thick, red light huge fist was like two dark red hammers. There were flames surrounding the fists. It was fast like lightning, leaving a streak of flames and hitting Luo Feng's body. Chi! Luo Feng became a blur and dispersed.

"So fast." A few km away, Luo Feng stared at Sa Jin on the dark cloud shuttle. Once again a thread of condensed golden blade energy appeared before him!

"Go!"

The dark golden blade energy tore through the space forward.

Luo Feng didn't control the blade energy to match force with force. but rather, he used it to attack from peculiar angles, affecting Sa Jin's speed.

“Roar!” Sa Jin was frustrated as he was stuck. With a roar, the flames around him condensed and simultaneously a dark red light formed around his bones and skin all over. He resembled a person wearing a dark golden light armor, simultaneously his right fist became a blur.

Peng!

It was extremely fast, as it knocked against the blade energy.

“It’s speed is so much faster than before?” The distant Luo Feng’s expression changed.

“I was prepared to use this against Ke Luo Fu. However today I’ll let you try it out!” Sa Jin’s speed exploded and he rushed towards Luo Feng.

Sou! Sou!

His movement was fast like lightning. Luo Feng was getting fatigued just from dodging, it was risky.

……

“Black Hole evolution’s Flame Crystal 9 bodies? This Sa Jin has actually completed one of the levels?” The grey robed Ni Nan below the arena changed his expression, “It’ll be very hard for me

to beat him.”

Flame crystal 9 bodies, was one of the other techniques within Black hole evolution.

In terms of power, the 9 fists was stronger.

The flame crystal 9 bodies, once completed, one’s entire body will have an armor like layer. Also, it wasn’t only for defense, it would amplify the warrior’s speed and attack as well, it was a very powerful technique. However, simply starting this was very hard. That Sa Jin was from the Mother Flame race, hence he was naturally suited for this. With high talents and a good teacher, after training hard for thousands of years, he finally had some progress.

……

“Luo Feng is in trouble now.” Rong Jun’s expression changed.

“That block head is moving too fast.” Wuka stared wide eyed too.

The group of newbies.

And the universe level seniors, including the sector lords and domain lords were all shocked. Not just power, but level wise…this Sa Jin could be considered among the middle and top even amongst the domain lord level geniuses.

“This Luo Feng is about to lose.”

“Hm, no shame in this loss.”

He was overpowered.

Luo Feng was indeed being overpowered. Sa Jin who had unleashed the flame crystal 9 bodies, was a strange being after all. His fists speed could already keep up with the blade energy speed, and his body movement could catch up to Luo Feng on the dark cloud shuttle. After two attempts, during the 3rd time, his fists hit Luo Feng’s 6 edged shield.

Rumble...

The shield was knocked away and Luo Feng fell hard on the arena ground, leaving a crater on the surface.

“You actually didn’t die? Your usage of the shield is just as good as a strong fighter’s.” Sa Jin smiled, “However, it’s useless!”

Strong fighter?

Shield and blade, these were what the Mosha clansman had trained in the Illusionary techniques for many years. It used the blade well, naturally the shield defense was just as strong.

“Rumble!” Sa Jin rushed over again.

Luo Feng who was on the ground looked up fiercely, staring at Sa Jin, he roared, “Go and die!!!”

Weng...

The blade world fiercely rose in all directions, and a condensed gold blade energy gathered before him. Sa Jin still rushed over without a care, but suddenly, he revealed a look of shock...

“Rumble!”

A terrifying consciousness pressure descended on him, smashing against Sa Jin’s consciousness!

One of Luo Feng’s trump cards...Consciousness pressure!

The golden horned beast was already domain lord level 9. This domain lord level 9 beast, just in terms of consciousness strength... was comparable to a human sector lord level 3’s pressure!

Back when Luo Feng was in blood river world.

The domain lord pinnacle consciousness pressure was enough to cause a star level’s soul to instantly crumble, with a glance, he would die!

And right now, Sa Jin had encountered a sector lord level 3 pressure. Even though that Sa Jin had a good bloodline and high talents, and had many miraculous encounters, in terms of consciousness strength he was at most a domain lord level 1 or 2.

There was one huge level gap!

Even if he didn't die, he would still be thrown off balance for a while, losing all resistance!

This ability was very powerful. While exploring Blood River world, Luo Feng used this often. However, when he attempted the heavenly bridge level 7, he never used it at all. Because...the heavenly bridge was a test of one's comprehension of the laws. Using the consciousness pressure would be akin to somewhat cheating, and Luo Feng was afraid the Virtual Universe system would immediately be on alert. Hence, he never used it before in the heavenly bridge.

However, during a 1v1?

He could still use it!

"Rumble!" Sa Jin instantly spaced out, and his eyes were lifeless.

Chi!

The dark golden blade energy shot through his eyes and pierced his head! As it pierced through, his eyes seemed to gleam a little, as

though he had regained consciousness. However, it was too late...

Rumble...

Sa Jin fell on the floor, smashing into the arena.

“Return!” Luo Feng stood up. The countless little golden blades in the sky around all flew back into the dark golden long rod.

Victory!

Chapter 14 – Arrival

High above the misty Yu Xiang Mountain, there stood two men gazing down with different expressions.

“Haha, Mother Flame, thanks for you golden horn world stone. My disciple’s weapon finally has its material.” The 3 eyed man smiled, simultaneously glancing over, checking his expression.

“That punk actually won?” Mother flame gazed below and frowned. “What strong consciousness pressure.”

“Don’t change the subject!” The 3 eyed man smiled. “Are you trying to get away with it?”

“Relax, I’ll definitely give you the stone.” Mother flame felt his loss. This wasn’t a commonly seen metal in the universe, like the Hybrid copper essence. Even though it was an extremely expensive metal, however with the Yun Mo Master Hu Yan Bo’s ability he could still acquire a large enough amount to build a ship!

And the golden horned world stone? One golden horned beast could only produce one. If a beast died prematurely, then it wouldn’t even have had a chance to produce the stone.

Even with all the stones in the universe added together, a ship couldn’t be built.

Compared to the hybrid copper essence, it was like diamond

versus soil.

“I can’t understand why that punk’s consciousness pressure is so strong.” Mother flame said.

“He was born with great brain size, or some miraculous encounters, causing his soul to evolve.” The 3 eyed man smiled. “Anyway, in the vast universe, there are a lot of mysteries. There’s still much even we don’t know! Encountering something that evolves one’s soul and consciousness strength. Even though it’s rare, there’s still such things.”

Mother flame shook his head, staring at the 3 eyed man, “You’ve earned quite a bit.”

“Haha, don’t blame me. Blame that little genius from your clan. His willpower is very average, if he was strong enough, he would have been able to remain conscious.” The 3 eyed man smiled.

Mother flame was shocked, nodding, “Hm, his willpower is average.”

The consciousness was the countless soldiers, whereas willpower was considered the general!

When Luo Feng attempted fantasy ocean, knocking through each island, he would feel the consciousness pressure!

At the 9th island, even many sector lord pinnacles couldn’t pass

it.

The 9th island's consciousness pressure was stronger than even a sector lord pinnacle! In between the sector lord pinnacle and undying.

And when Luo Feng attempted it before, his consciousness was only at the domain lord pinnacle level.

A whole level gap!

He forcefully dealt with it!

Keeping his calm and passing it. And when he reached the 10th island, as that was a pressure on the level of an undying, it completely crumbled his consciousness. Hence, he had failed at this level! A sector lord to undying was a huge evolution of the soul, hence the pressure increase from universe level to domain lord and sector lord wasn't as terrifying.

Sector lord to undying.

There was an absolute increase in consciousness pressure!

Hence, at the 10th island, Luo Feng's consciousness was simply destroyed!

Luo Feng's willpower was already very terrifying, and his

consciousness was incomparably sturdy, like a crystal.

It could withstand anything!

When it comes to retaining consciousness, unless it was simply too much of a difference, it would just break.

Either the consciousness would prevail strong, or it would just break. There were only two outcomes!

And those without strong willpower, simply getting shouted at would stun them!

Stun!

This was a state where they were semi conscious and blanked out.

That Sa Jin, under Luo Feng's consciousness pressure attack was stunned for an instant. If his willpower was as solid as Luo Feng's, he would have at most felt a little dizzy, but still would have been able to maintain his consciousness.

Absolute beginning region, the area below the arena was silent.

Close to 300 people had already gathered there. This was about one quarter of the members in the entire region!

“How can that be?”

“He lost?”

“Sa Jin unleashed the 9 fists and flame crystal 9 bodies. Yet, he still lost?”

“What happened at that last moment? That Luo Feng, did he use some spirit attack?” The group of sector lords were shocked, as most of them had thought that Sa Jin would win. However, the final outcome was quite a surprise. Even with their abilities, they weren’t able to see what actually happened.

“Lost?”

“We’ve lost?”

“Sa Jin, he lost…”

The seniors of the universe level were all completely stunned. They looked dejected at the black haired youth, they too were geniuses in the absolute beginning region! They too were picked from the genius battles, picked from a battle of the strong, and the final group nurtured from the 1,008 universe countries.

Who wasn’t a genius?

And these were geniuses that had been training for very long!

And yet today, against a group of newbies that had just joined the Virtual Universe company who had yet to participate in their first qualification battle, they lost.

"Ni Nan."

Mo Yi Lin and Ah Shi who were defeated earlier stood beside the grey armored Ni Nan, "What, what happened?"

"How could we lose?" Ni Nan stared at Luo Feng in the arena. "Sa Jin that punk, even I have no guarantee against him. I can only hope to risk it all and battle. However...in that final moment, he was still defeated. Just what happened?"

"Just what happened?" Ni Nan was worried within.

Because, Luo Feng would be his obstacle in the qualification battle.

"Sa Jin's final defeat, I might meet the same end." Ni Nan frowned and was pondering hard. "At that final moment, what happened?"

.....

Luo Feng carried his dark golden long rod and headed down from the arena.

“Haha, Luo Feng, beautiful!” Wuka jumped and cheered loudly.

“Impressive.” Rong Jun smiled and waved his fists.

“Luo Feng, your final roar, “Go and die” was very thrilling.” The handsome Lancelot laughed and shouted too. Jiang Mo and Qian Shui and his sister shouted excitedly as well. The gentle and calm Ai Chen was all smiles too, and Ao Pa Te La laughed stupidly there.

Luo Feng smiled and walked to the side of the arena, and jumped down.

“Luo Feng!” A roar could be heard from behind.

Luo Feng turned.

In the distance, a silhouette descended from the arena, it was Sa Jin. The tall and sturdy Mother flame race was filled with shame and rage. The moment his consciousness returned to reality, he immediately jumped back into the virtual universe and flew over from his villa.

“What happened before?” Sa Jin stared at Luo Feng.

He didn’t understand.

For someone who was at the same universe level 9, how could the consciousness pressure difference be that huge?

“Don’t ask me, I can only say your willpower is too weak.” Luo Feng looked at Sa Jin and communicated mentally, “Go and train your willpower well.”

Sturdy willpower.

Even if one’s consciousness was pressured, as long as the difference wasn’t too huge, one could still maintain consciousness.

“You…” Sa Jin pointed at Luo Feng, speechless.

“I hope the next time I see you, you’ll be stronger. Otherwise… the slot of the primal region doesn’t have your place.” Luo Feng finished and jumped down. He landed beside Wuka and Rong Jun and the rest of them, laughing as he said, “Let’s go back.”

“Wuka, don’t fight with me. I’m treating today!” The genius Jiang Mo from the Ao Gu Si planet shouted.

This batch of newbies, in terms of wealth.

Wuka, Jiang Mo and Qian Shui were all pretty wealthy. As for Luo Feng and Rong Jun and the rest, they were far worse. Afterall their families were not extremely wealthy.

“I don’t care who’s treating.” Luo Feng smiled.

“As long as there’s something to eat.” Rong Jun smiled.

“Viciously take his money.” Wuka shouted.

The group of newbies laughed and left.

……

Over 200 sector lords and domain lords were still discussing below the arena. Even though they were shocked, they slowly returned to their groups and left. Obviously this battle had made them all strongly remember the name Luo Feng.

……

Below the arena, only the universe level seniors still lingered

“Sa Jin, how could you lose?”

“What happened?” Many people close to Sa Jin walked over.

“Sa Jin?” Ni Nan walked over too.

Sa Jin snorted, gazing at the group and staring at Ni Nan, “Ni Nan, you have to be careful too. Otherwise, you’ll lose to him too at this qualification battle.”

After which, Sa Jin turned and left.

“That punk!” The silver armored youth Ni Nan stared at the huge back of Sa Jin, his gaze gloomy, “He actually didn’t share anything.”

……

Sa Jin rushed into the sky, smiling coldly, “Ni Nan, do you think I am that stupid? Telling you that Luo Feng’s move? Wouldn’t I be helping you prepare then. If you all lose, I’ll have more hopes of entering the primal region. It’s good I lost this match, at least I’ll be prepared for the qualification battle.”

“Hm, looks like I have to frequently visit fantasy ocean to train my willpower.”

“With weak willpower, I won’t be able to withstand that consciousness pressure.” Sa Jin decided.

This battle quickly grew widespread. Even the undisputed king of the absolute beginning universe level Ke Luo Fu and the terrifying Chemist Yu Feng heard of it. After which many seniors continued to challenge Luo Feng…however he didn’t even respond. Because he had begun to his training mission!

According to the plan, after passing the 7th level he was to begin his training!

……

Absolute beginning region, Dragon tower planet.

This was an ancient and enormous planet. A disguised automaton ship entered the atmosphere of the planet, after which a silhouette kept the ship and flew 100km, landing in the vast forests below.

This was none other than Luo Feng.

His upper half was covered in the dark red armor, an armor made by the cloud contact vine. Above it was another layer of alluring colors. His arms were covered in two alluring colored guards. His legs too had the same armor, formed from alloys, its flexibility and defense were both very high. His arm guards were embedded with a screen within, and on it, large amounts of words were displayed. It was information pertaining to his surroundings.

He carried the dark golden long rod on his back.

“It was really uncomfortable in Blood River world not being able to use many weapons and technology. In this Dragon tower world however, I can use anything.” Luo Feng glanced around. “However the danger level here is very high too.”

Universe level soldier Luo Feng had arrived in Dragon tower planet.

He thus began his training mission journey…

Chapter 15 – Intrepid Luo Feng

Dragon Tower planet, an ancient planet produced in the absolute beginning region.

If it were in a regular star field, these sort of enormous planet wouldn't even exist. However with the secret region's incomparably thick universe energies production, a separate path is opened in the universe secret region, with many special celestial bodies and life.

"Gravity, 10,812 times that of earth?

"The air, 98% nitrogen?"

The fully armored Luo Feng walked within the vast forest, the screen on his left arm showing him specific details.

He gazed about, while his ears started moving.

"There's something there!"

Shua!

His boots gently stepped on the rotted branches and leaves below. In an instant he vanished to 100km away. He squatted on an ancient tree's branch that was at least 30m thick. A mix of green and yellow color could be seen around the bent neck of the tree. He

gazed at the enormous thing that was 10km away.

With his vision, this huge dragon 10km away was clearly seen by him. Even the scales were clearly visible.

At 1,200m tall, its body length was at least 1,600m. With a 100m short tail, it's entire body seemed to be covered in purple stone like scales. Its head was huge, especially its blood colored mouth, which seemed to be extremely hideous., A single gulp would be able to finish off an entire river.

It's 4 hooves were strong. Hence, it's ability to run was unbelievable.

It, was the leader within the surrounding 10,000 km. This T-rex type...rock dragon, it had high offensive abilities.

The black blur of dragons with wings 100m wide, which were flying above were roaring.

"Sou!"

The rock dragon rushed forward fiercely, leaving a trail of images in the distance. As it ran it suddenly opened its mouth and a blood colored light flashed, hitting one of the winged dragons and causing them to scatter as they roared.

And the dragon which was hit by the light, madly struggled. However it was dragged into its mouth following that blood

colored light. Ka cha ka cha...that 100m long dragon was eaten cleanly.

"Ang..." The rock dragon roared happily after finishing.

In the distant forest.

Luo Feng stood on the branch and looked at his arm wrist band, and on it the data was clearly shown. "Rock dragon (Mature) : Universe level 9 pinnacle. One of the targets!"

Shua!

The screen changed to complex pictures. On it were many different types of dragons. Without a doubt, all of the targets were all universe level 9 pinnacle.

The mission on Dragon tower planet was Dragon hunting.

The mission was to kill all of these targets and acquire a certain material from each of them to present. After killing all of them... when one returned, they would be awarded 10,000 points!

The mission seemed simple enough. To kill one, it was indeed easy.

However there were still hidden dangers within.

There weren't simply these weak dragons alone on Dragon tower planet (To Luo Feng this level of warriors, universe level 9s were indeed weak), there were many other domain lords and even sector lord level dragon races! The moment a sector lord pinnacle dragon race was disturbed, even the automaton ship's star annihilator cannon could fire one shot after storing for awhile!

And within the planet were countless dragons.

If he was surrounded...

Even if he was sitting in the ship, he wouldn't be able to escape!

"Rock dragon?" Luo Feng nodded, "The 1st one!"

Sou!

He became a blur and vanished.

10km away, the rock dragon that had just eaten fully within the forest was roaring and gazing about proudly. It had the right to be proud! Because, during the growth period of the dragons, almost 90% of them are eaten or killed during the infancy period. Very few actually manage to live through and reach maturity!

On Dragon Tower planet, the matured dragons, the weakest were at least universe level.

Any one of them could control a territory. Of course, the territories differed in sizes.

“Go!”

Luo Feng appeared in mid air and the gold light around him formed a 3m long dark golden long blade.

Nan Shen Armament’s 5th level…Space Slicer!

Xiu!

“Ang…” That huge head of the rock dragon slightly turned and saw the little dot in mid air staring at it. It just let out a dissatisfied roar, when a gold light shot over. It wanted to turn and doge, but felt the formless space pressure entangling it.

It became slightly slower.

Chi!

The gold light shot through the head of the dragon, chi chi chi… it madly slashed about.

After which, the gold light flew out of the head and returned to Luo Feng.

Those huge eyes of the rock dragon stared wide eyed at the little dot. It didn't seem to know just what terrifying life form that dot was, after which...its consciousness was destroyed.

"Rumble..."

The huge body of the rock dragon crashed onto the ground, causing the ground to shake quite a bit.

Sou.

Luo Feng landed on the body, and his boots stepped on the purple stone scales. He looked around and felt like he was on a mountain.

"Collecting the scales on its chest." Luo Feng flashed and appeared on the chest of the dragon. Using his spirit energy, he took one of its scales and keep it within his space ring.

Shua!

He instantly landed in the distant wilderness. Through the grass, he looked about, "On to the next."

The vast Dragon Tower planet, anything under sector lord level would die without a doubt under Luo Feng's hands!

Not discussing the colorful boots and pant armors he wore, even though those were all cheap alloy materials, they were still E9

grade. Luo Feng's strongest armor was still the cloud contact armor within, and right now it had already reached domain lord level 9, (The 80 years in Blood River world was enough). By simply relying on it alone, he would be able to wipe out all those under sector lord level.

To Luo Feng, the biggest problem was...

How to let It breakthrough to sector lord level, using points? He couldn't bear to use money, as he didn't have enough.

"I can only wait."

"When I've done all the missions I can do, and make it into the primal region, I'll let the human body rise to domain lord level. That way, I can acquire the biggest part of my teacher's inheritance."

.....

Dragon Tower planet mission (Dangerous level)

He finished it in 39 days, acquiring 10,000 points.

.....

Space Cliff mission (Dangerous level).

He used 21 days to complete it and was awarded 15,000 points.

……

Luo Feng began his journey of completing missions.

……

According to the rules of the Virtual Universe company, only universe level geniuses could take on these missions. The domain lords were sent outside to territories and the sector lords had to go through life or death training.

And the universe level geniuses could at most take 10 missions every 100 years.

To prevent them from continuously taking on missions, every one's total number was limited.

For a universe level genius, completing an impossible level mission had restrictions. A primal region member can at most take on 3! Absolute beginning members can only take 2! The sky and land and last phase members can only take 1!

This was in consideration of their safety.

If one's power wasn't enough, wouldn't it be suicide to take on the impossible level missions?

There was also the distribution of resources.

The impossible level missions were incomparably dangerous. The points awarded however were extremely absurd. The primal region members could only do 3, which was the highest of the lot.

The dangerous level missions, the primal region members could do up to 15! The absolute beginning members could do 10! The sky and land members could do 6! The last phase members could do 3!

The difficult level missions...

According to the points, Luo Feng had never once considered the safe, normal and difficult level missions. The points awarded were too pitiful.

The impossible level missions, lowest amount of points was 100,000. There were even some with ten times the points, leading up to one million!

The dangerous level missions, normally they gave 10,000, 20,000, and at most 100,000 points.

The difficult level were all about 1-2000 points.

The normal level were about 1-200 points.

Safe level was not worth even mentioning.

6 months later.

“Brother, you are awesome, simply too awesome. Damn, It’s only been that long and you’ve completed 4 dangerous level missions?” Wuka looked like he had seen a ghost as he stared at Luo Feng.

Rong Jun who was beside him, stared at him too.

Luo Feng sat and lifted his wine glass and said while laughing, “Don’t be so shocked. Weren’t you the one who asked me, and would I lie to my brothers? However, after I told you all...look at your expressions.”

“Including your Blood River world mission, you’ve already completed 5 dangerous level missions right.” Wuka pondered, “From what I know, the dangerous level missions are set in many secret regions. Of which, there are only 5 in the absolute beginning region. Completing so many in such a short time, if you had to go to other star regions, just the travel time alone wouldn’t be sufficient...”

Wuka stared at Luo Feng, “You’ve done all the dangerous level missions in the absolute beginning region?”

“Smart.” Luo Feng smiled and nodded.

“Vicious.”

Wuka nodded, “To save time, you don’t even choose the missions seriously.”

“Anyway only 3 of the dangerous level missions give the highest points.” Luo Feng smiled indifferently. “And absolute beginning members can at most do 10 of the dangerous level missions, I still have credit.”

“Ah?”

Luo Feng looked down at the fist size Babata on his shoulder, standing up.

“Wuka, Rong Jun, my teacher is looking for me, I’ll leave first.”

“Teacher?”

“Go on!”

The two of them didn’t stop him.

Luo Feng became a beam of light and left Wuka’s villa, heading back to his own.

……

Within the training grounds of his villa.

The tall and sturdy True Yan Emperor rubbed his golden fur on his face. His expression was that of a shock, as he looked at his disciple. True Yan was an ancient being of over trillion years. However, of his many disciples, only 3 to 5 of them could truly make him proud, and Luo Feng was one of them.

“You are very talented!”

“Your improvement is getting more and more shocking!”

“You have the right to be proud and confident.”

He rubbed the fur on his face, frowning as he looked at Luo Feng. “You’ve already done 5 consecutive dangerous level missions. However, there is still impossible level! This is the impossible level!”

“Why is it called impossible?”

“The death rate is about 90%. Whoever’s gone in has been very confident. However, the death rate still reaches 90%. You, look at yourself...you haven’t even taken part in your first qualification battle and you are attempting an impossible mission. Speak, I don’t know whether to call you rash and crazy or confident?” True Yan looked at his beloved disciple before him, he couldn’t help but advise him.

“Teacher, I’ve made my decision and I’m very confident.” Luo Feng said.

Chapter 16 – Impossible Mission

Luo Feng was very humble in front of his teacher, his answer however was filled with immovable determination.

True Yan Emperor looked at his respectful disciple before him and shook his head, before smiling. “Luo Feng, your decision is pretty reckless. However, even before me, you seem decided and immovable, that’s good! To become a strong warrior, one has to constantly reflect and discover his own faults to improve! And if one thinks his own decision is correct, he has to believe in it and press on.”

“Since you’ve made up your mind, I won’t try and dissuade you!”

“Just one thing, come back alive.” True Yan looked at this disciple in his prime. In his trillion year life span, he had seen many disciples die.

“Teacher, I will definitely come back alive.” Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

“Go on!”

True Yan nodded and waved.

Luo Feng bowed and left the training grounds. True Yan watched as he left, and his eyes were filled with a sense of complexity, after which he disappeared.

Walking out of the training grounds, the staff and guards in the villa all bowed as they saw Luo Feng.

“Your majesty.”

“Your majesty.”

The group was incredibly respectful.

Luo Feng however frowned and pondered, “Teacher was right, those that dared attempt the impossible missions were all extremely confident too. Yet, their death rate was still as high as 90%. I have the mosha clansman and golden horned beast, my survival ability should be 10 times of theirs, however I can’t be careless.”

Just in the 4 dangerous level missions in the half a year, there were two occasions, during which he was actually met with danger.

He instantly switched to the mosha clansman and relied on the domain lord level 9 mosha and it’s unbelievable speed to get away.

If he could meet with trouble in even the dangerous level.

During this impossible level mission, naturally he couldn’t be careless at all.

……

Luo Feng entered his study and sat before his desk and opened the laptop, opening the pages.

Safe level, normal, difficult, dangerous, impossible.

“Impossible!” Luo Feng didn’t even hesitate, pressing it.

Di…di…di…di…di…di

A piercing sound resounded from the screen.

“Luo Feng, this is a heavy reminder, this is the impossible level mission. Many of our members from the absolute beginning and primal region have in the past lost their lives. We advise you that after passing the qualification rounds, to go and try the impossible mission.” The electronic voice resounded within the study.

“If you wish to drop out please cancel your choice. If you wish to proceed, please confirm.”

“The moment you confirm, you cannot back out.”

“You’ll have to undergo the impossible mission!”

Luo Feng smiled, pressing confirm.

Di!

The page refreshed itself and a new page appeared, a page that displayed only to those that begun the impossible mission.

There was a line right above the page... “Impossible mission, death rate 90%, surviving the impossible mission requires strength and luck. You can at most pick two impossible missions, please pick wisely.”

“Here is the list of impossible missions:

1, Purgatory Abyss (Virtual Universe company primal region)

2, Cloud palace (Huge Axe Dojo Beginning God region)

.....

8, Demon mountain (Virtual Universe company absolute beginning region)

.....

12, Death star (Universe Mercenary alliance Honor region)

.....

18, Blood demon continent (Universe 1st bank Dripping blood region)

Luo Feng looked at the list and frowned. “There are a total of 186 dangerous level missions, however, this impossible level list only has 18, pathetic.”

There were 18 impossible level missions.

Among which, 4 of them were in the Virtual Universe company regions. The other 14 were in the Huge Axe dojo, universe mercenary alliance, universe galaxy bank and universe 1st bank regions. Just from these names, Luo Feng could feel the danger from each of them, why they were named impossible and that these weren’t set just to scare people.

“Hm!”

“I’ll seriously look through them first, just what places are these impossible regions.” Luo Feng opened and flipped through.

The detailed introductions and requests of each mission were shown.

The different points awarded.

The lowest death star mission, however this mission had a total of three options within it, and every one of them awarded 100,000 points. Added together, it was quite a bit.

The highest purgatory abyss mission only had one, and the points awarded was 1 million.

……

After reading through each and everyone of their detailed information, it took a total of half an hour.

“Inhale!”

Luo Feng inhaled a breath of cold air. Staring at the screen, he said softly, “Vicious indeed, it wasn’t wrong when it said earlier. To survive these missions, strength is a given, but you still need luck. Even I, if my luck goes south and I end up in a nightmare situation, with everything revealed, I may not survive.”

18 missions, all of them were extremely abnormal!

“As long as my luck isn’t too bad, I still have some guarantee.”

“Which do I pick?”

Luo Feng wasn’t even afraid or worried.

In truth, there wasn't any 100% safe or guaranteed things in the universe. Even for the normal people of earth, a flower vase might just drop on someone walking and minding their own business. Even if one followed all the rules, those drunk drivers might simply crash into you. Even for such a powerful warrior like Luo Feng, if he had bad luck.

He might encounter an absolute being going through some tragic problems, venting it out and killing all the punks around.

Or there may be a bug clan or automaton group attack, through universe travel, entering the secret regions and killing everybody.

All in all.

There wasn't any 100% safe thing, or 100% guarantee to passing any mission.

"Hm, "Demon mountain is the only one in the absolute beginning region. From the description, it seems more suited for me, and It's close as well. I'll pick this!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed and he gently tapped.

"Di!"

"Please confirm your selection of Demon mountain mission."

"Selection success."

“Please fill in the departure time, the Virtual Universe company will arrange for people to send you there.”

Luo Feng took a deep breath and nodded.

……

Demon mountain was a mysterious ancient place in the absolute beginning region.

It floated in space.

Surrounding the demon mountain, there were a total of 9 ancient planets. On these planets were many surviving aboriginals. Countless of them would leave their own planet to explore demon mountain, because only through surviving demon mountain would they be accepted into the Virtual Universe company and becoming a member of the virtual universe company.

Yes!

Different form Blood River world, Demon mountain and its surrounding 9 ancient planets were being controlled from the shadows by the Virtual Universe company! Of course, in terms of mystery level, that demon mountain was even more mysterious.

……

Demon mountain mission:

1, Survive in demon mountain for 3 months, points 100,000.

2 Survive in demon mountain for 3 years, points 300,000.

Just these two simple missions needed to be completed.

Simply survival!

However from further reading Luo Feng realized that simply surviving was a very hard thing to do.

Two days later.

A universe ship landed on Luo Feng's star fragment territory.

"Your Majesty Luo Feng."

3 black uniformed men walked down from the ship, bowing respectfully.

"Hm, let's go." The bright colored armored Luo Feng with the inner layer of cloud contact vine armor nodded and said.

“Yes.”

The 3 uniformed men bowed respectfully, and followed Luo Feng through a cabin door. After which, it shut and slowly rose up.

“Respectfully sending off your majesty!”

The sector lord Ao Duo and the group of guards bowed behind.

Sou!

The universe ship vanished into the distant space.

……

“Universe travel complete, travelling within the dark universe. Your majesty Luo Feng, it’ll take about 6 hours to reach demon mountain.” The leading black uniformed man smiled. He had silver threads on the sleeve of his arm.

“Hm.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Right, you are the dedicated team for sending people to demon mountain?” Luo Feng suddenly asked.

The black uniformed man smiled and bowed. “Yes, all of the universe level members in the absolute beginning region, as long

as they are heading towards demon mountain, I'm the one who would send them off."

"What's the death rate like?" Luo Feng asked.

"No idea."

The black uniformed man smiled. "Even though I receive them, when the survivors return, its members from the Virtual Universe company specially stationed at demon mountain that send them back. Hence, I don't know how many actually end up dying. However, from my colleague, I heard its pretty high."

"Ah." Luo Feng nodded.

"However I can tell your majesty, including yourself, there's been a total of 3 people who've headed there." The black uniformed man said.

"3?" Luo Feng frowned.

"One of them is a primal region member, one is a last phase member and the 3rd is yourself. However, they are all already within demon mountain." The man smiled, "The one in charge of receiving them after is my colleague."

Luo Feng nodded.

Universe level primal member? Three seniors and Bolan and Long Yun, that's a total of five of them. He might face them in the qualification battle, hence he had checked on these five's details.

"Who could it be, Bolan? Or Long Yun, or one of the three seniors?"

After which Luo Feng returned to the resting room.

After about 6 hours, the universe ship once again went through universe travel and returned to the actual universe.

"Look!"

"Ahead is demon mountain." Within the control room, the black uniformed man pointed ahead. Through the external simulator, Luo Feng could clearly see the distant space in which there was a spot covered in green and white mist. It was a huge black mountain, it was incredibly majestic, and enormous.

In the distant surroundings about this mountain, he could see the ancient planets.

From where he stood, he could see five ancient planets.

"Demon mountain was 1.8 hundred million km tall. At its base, its width is 3.2 hundred million km." The black uniformed man pointed at that majestic mountain in space. "Demon mountain is what our Virtual Universe company people call it. The aboriginals

from the 9 ancient planets all call it as sacred land, forbidden area, Inherited forbidden land and so on. Large amounts of the aboriginals enter the mountain. In terms of numbers, the members of the Virtual Universe company that enter aren't even a 10 thousandth of the aboriginals there."

Chapter 17 – Demon Mountain

Demon Mountain was majestically floating in space.

This Demon mountain was simply too enormous. Any platform at the base of the mountain alone, or any canyon was equivalent to the surface area of earth. Hence, at the foot of demon mountain, there were many magnificent palaces, some as tall as 10,000 li. Those who are able to build such palaces were all undyings!

“It’s forbidden to announce loudly!”

“It’s forbidden to fight or kill each other!”

“It’s forbidden to fly out of the canyon!”

“Anybody who breaks these rules will be killed immediately!” A powerful voice resonated throughout the canyon.

Within the canyon, there were many silhouettes, who were either sitting crossed legged or leaning on the stones, or chatting in their groups. They all looked pretty similar, with two hands, two feet, two eyes, nose, and mouth. Even their heights were similar to that of earth people.

The only difference was they all had two curved horns on their foreheads.

Some were black in color, while others were silvery white.

From one look, one could see that there were at least 1,000 people in that canyon.

“Teacher, how long are we going to wait here? Demon mountain has been closed for so long, yet the Virtual Universe company isn’t letting us in at all.” An armored but bare armed black horned youth said softly. Beside him were another six men and women, surrounding a purple armored old man in the center.

There were eight of them..

The purple armored old man was at sector lord level. As for his disciples, two of them were domain lords, while the rest five were universe level.

“They have to reach 10,000 people before we can enter!” An old voice resounded from the old man.

“Teacher.” A clean voice sounded, a silver horned young lady couldn’t help but say, “The warriors that get here from the many planets, sometimes there’s many while other times there’s only a few. There’s no pattern at all! Right now we’ve only gathered a little over six thousand, who knows how long we’ll have to wait until we hit the 10,000 mark.”

“Do you wish to go against the rules of the Virtual Universe company?” The purple armored old man turned and glared at his

disciples.

The lady bit her lips and went silent.

“Wait patiently.” The old man exclaimed. “As long as any one of you can survive in there for a month, then you’ll be accepted into the Virtual Universe company. Then, you’ll be able to explore the vast universe. Compared to the vast universe, our 9 star ocean is simply too small.”

The seven disciples’ eyes gleamed.

Right.

9 star ocean (The name of the 9 Ancient planets bunched together), in history they’ve had many that entered the Virtual Universe company. Some having gone to explore the universe, and returned to build their own sects and left behind advanced technology. These experiences and incidents made the 9 star ocean know about the wonders of the vast universe.

“Remember, if you feel that it’s too dangerous and you can’t hold out for a month, immediately find a way to exit.” The purple armored old man said. “Safety first! If you cannot pass this time, you can always return and try again when you are stronger.”

“Understood.” The seven disciples nodded.

Suddenly...

A controlled announcement resounded from a distance, the eight of them immediately stood up.

“Teacher, look over there?”

“It’s the Virtual Universe company attendant.” The eight of them including the thousands in the canyon all looked shocked at the large group of silver armored people flying from the majestic palace. These were attendants of the Virtual Universe company, and they had high amounts of power and authority.

Even the aboriginal sector lords didn’t dare offend them.

“So many of them?”

“Close to a hundred.”

“Why are there so many attendants?” The thousands of universe levels to sector lord aboriginals were all extremely shocked, yet no one dared make a loud sound at all. Because, anyone who disobeyed the rules had one end…death!

“Look, a ship.”

“Wow, what a beautiful ship.”

The thousands of aboriginals’ eyes gleamed. In the distance a

universe ship swiftly drew closer and quickly stopping above the canyon, the cabin door opened.

A colorful armored black haired youth walked out. Close to 100 attendants flew over, all gathering in an organized fashion and standing respectfully. At the front of the group, three white robed men and women all bowed respectfully, “Your majesty Luo Feng!”

“Your Majesty Luo Feng!” Close to 100 attendants said respectfully.

In mid air, Luo Feng nodded, after which, with the three white robed people accompanying him, the group of attendants all flew downwards.

“My god!”

“My god, even the white robed attendants personally welcomed him?”

“White robes, those are sector lord pinnacles that have been acknowledged by the laws, they are like gods!”

“I can see that the black haired youth is only a universe level.”

Thousands of aboriginal warriors didn’t dare make a ruckus, and could only discuss in hushed voices to vent their shock. The powerful silver robed attendants were extremely respectful towards that black haired youth, like he was Sun Zi.

Suddenly...

One of the silver robed attendants left the large group and rushed towards the canyon, immediately the voices of the thousands hushed.

“Listen well.” The silver robed attendant gazed coldly down on the thousands of aboriginals. “One of our Virtual Universe company majesty’s is about to enter and train in Demon mountain. Hence, we are about to begin the demon mountain mission. You can all enter too, go acquire your identification tag and prepare to enter demon mountain.”

“Yes!”

Thousands of aboriginals replied.

The attendant flew away and the aboriginals below were extremely excited.

“A majesty actually came, our luck sure is good. Now we don’t have to wait for 10,000 people anymore.” The purple armored old man laughed loudly, and beside him, his seven disciples were gleeful, of which the silver horned lady said, “Teacher, just who is that majesty, his position seems really high?”

“The majesties of the headquarters are all absolute geniuses picked by the Virtual Universe company from the vast universe.

They are 10s of thousands to millions of times stronger than you all." The purple armored old man said, "And for three white robes to welcome him, this majesty must have the position of that of a god!"

"Like a god?"

The seven disciples all stared wide eyed.

Luo Feng flew towards the palace, gazing at the aboriginals below in the canyon.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, these are all aboriginal warriors of the 9 planets. According to the rules we've set, entering demon mountain...the lowest should be at least a universe level. Hence amongst the group, most of them are universe levels. There are also some domain lords and sector lords." The tall and handsome white robed youth explained as he smiled, simultaneously carefully observing this Luo Feng before him.

Luo Feng's name was reputable even in the management level.

Even though this person was a low level management level staff, he knew too...that Luo Feng hadn't even passed his first qualification battle and he had already passed the heavenly bridge's 7th level. This had made the upper echelons of the Virtual Universe company favor him.

Such a person, how could he be neglected?

They welcomed him and acted according to the primal region member's customs, which was that three white robes and a team of silver robes are to welcome him. And usually, absolute beginning members only get 1 white robe and 9 silver robes.

.....

2nd level of the palace, Luo Feng entered the 2nd level through the guidance of the white robed youth.

And the thousands of aboriginals were entering the 1st level single file.

"These are your identification tags!"

"Everyone will get one, quickly." The attendant said as he gave out the completely black tags. "If you want to enter the virtual universe company, there are two ways to do so. One of them is to survive a month in demon mountain. The other is to kill others and acquire 1,000 black tags or 1 red tag."

"Black tags are the ones you all get."

"The red tags are given to the majesties that come from the Virtual Universe company to train here. As long as you can kill one of them and acquire his red tag! You'll not only get to enter the Virtual Universe company, but you'll also get a treasure that even an undying would favor."

These words made the eyes of the thousands of aboriginals gleam, however they weren't shocked at all.

Because these rules had been passed down over countless years, they all knew it well.

Palace level 2.

"This is your tag." The white robed youth gave Luo Feng a red tag and smiled. "You have to remember, the moment you appear within 500m of those aboriginals, the tags will resonate and they'll know you carry the red tag, they will immediately try to surround and kill you."

"I know." Luo Feng nodded.

He had read the detailed information much earlier.

Killing someone like him...

Those aboriginals would immediately change their lives, naturally they'd risk it all.

"In demon mountain, those who are able to kill you are either the aboriginals or the beasts within demon mountain." The white robed youth explained. "Naturally...if they can kill you, you can kill them too. As long as you can collect 10,000 black tags, you'll

acquire an extra reward. This is a reward outside the mission!”

“Extra reward?” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, “This, I didn’t know about.”

The white robed youth smiled, “The extra reward is even better than your point rewards!”

“Ah?” Luo Feng’s heart skipped a beat.

“However, I don’t have authority to tell you what the reward is. When you acquire 10,000 black tags, then you’ll acquire the reward. Relax...the Virtual Universe company is extremely generous.” The white robed youth smiled, “As long as you acquire 10,000 tags, you can exchange one time. If you acquire 20,000 tags, you can exchange two times and so on. There’s no limit.”

Luo Feng smiled and shook his head.

Was it that simple?

There were only how many aboriginals within? And among them, there were sector lord pinnacles!

This demon mountain mission wasn’t simple at all.

Demon mountain demon mountain, why demon?

Actually, even though the threat of the aboriginals was big. As long as he didn't want to collect the 10,000 tags and hid well, then the threat of the aboriginals paled in comparison to the threat of demon mountain itself!

"Demon mountain, entering from the front would be demon note mountain. Entering from the caves behind would be Ice mountain." The white robed youth smiled. "I believe, that your majesty Luo Feng knows about the two different regions, please make a choice of which one you will enter from."

Demon mountain had two sides.

They were split into demon note mountain and ice mountain. The universe evolutions had made two special environments in this mountain. These are actually the true terrors of demon mountain.

Chapter 18 – Official Po Yu

Luo Feng smiled.

The demon mountain was separated into demon note mountain and Ice mountain, of which ice mountain was exactly as it sounded. It had extreme cold temperatures! The cold reached unbelievable levels, the absolute cold was only what the technology of earth allowed to be measured and knew. In the vast universe, the absolute cold reached even lower temperatures!

Just like the huge ice planet that Luo Feng's star fragment revolved about.

Like the ice mountain!

They were all extremely cold, even to the point that it could harm a universe level's body and cells. The temperature within ice mountain wasn't constant throughout, some parts could harm a universe level, and some parts were so cold they could even harm a domain lord or sector lord! Hence if one was exploring within and accidentally stumbled upon a terrifyingly cold area, he could be instantly frozen and killed.

Ice mountain, the main thing was its effects on the body.

Demon note mountain was against the soul.

Demon note mountain was vast and deep. One could feel chilly

winds howling about, and occasionally accompanied by all sorts of sounds. These sounds were natural hypnotism, if one got careless he could be hypnotized. Because different regions had different sounds, with different levels of hypnotism. Several terrifying places could easy make a universe level or even domain lord to lose their consciousness and become meat puppets!

"I choose demon note mountain." Luo Feng said.

"Demon note?" The white robed youth was shocked, saying, "Your majesty Luo Feng, forgive my intrusion. This ancient mountain's two sides. Even though that ice mountain is dangerous, it's effects are against one's body. When you compare body and soul, the soul is the core. There's still a chance to struggle in the ice mountain. However the moment you are affected in demon note mountain you'll lose your consciousness, you won't even be able to resist."

"No problem." Luo Feng smiled.

Demon note?

Natural hypnotism?

In terms of willpower, Luo Feng already exceeded most sector lord pinnacles, and was even comparable to an undying! 80 years in Blood River world's killing aura training had made his willpower much stronger than before.

“Since that’s so, I’ll arrange for people to send you to demon note mountain.” The white robed youth bowed. “Your majesty Luo Feng, please remember to bring your identification tag when you leave! Once you lose it, it means you’ve failed the mission.”

“I know this.” Luo Feng nodded.

“Please wait a moment.”

The white robed youth turned and left and walked along the vast halls of the palace, his silhouette was like lightning, instantly reaching far away. In just a second, a 100m long oval shaped universe ship flew over and stopped before Luo Feng. The cabin door opened and three white robed people walked out, including that youth from before.

“Your majesty Luo Feng, please!”

“Hm.”

Luo Feng instantly closed the distance and entered the ship.

******

Demon mountain was majestic and tall, the universe ship was like a fly revolving about it.

Control room.

Luo Feng glanced over, he could occasionally see caves in the majestic mountain, and those caves were filled with cold air.

“Your majesty Luo Feng, demon note mountain takes up about half of the entire demon mountain. Due to it’s size, there are trillions of entrances into the mountain itself.” The white robed youth pointed. On the distant mountain one could easily make out a blur several kilometers to hundreds of kilometers wide caves, “Your majesty can pick anyone to enter from.”

“We’ll fly awhile more.” Luo Feng ordered.

“Yes.”

……

After a while, the ship was far from the canyon earlier. Only then did Luo Feng pick a cave to enter.

At the base of the mountain, many palaces were built there, some big and some small.

Close to the base of Ice mountain, there was a ten thousand km tall completely jade green umbrella like palace. There stood a group of attendants in green armor, and these group of attendants could all easily destroy an entire country. They all had a jade green snake tail and on it were dense scales.

Sou!

The ship carrying Luo Feng earlier stopped before the palace, the door opened and the white robed youth flew alone to the entrance, standing outside full of respect.

“Zhe Chang, enter!” A gentle voice resounded.

The white robed youth seemed to be shocked as he squinted a little, however he still maintained a look of respect and entered the shrine.

The palace was huge and complex.

The white robed youth flew for awhile within and finally arrived within a chilly large palace. This palace was several li in width and height. There weren’t any staff within, only a 1km tall throne could be seen, in which a terrifying silhouette sat.

“Greetings Official Po Yu!” The white robed youth bowed.

He didn’t dare to look up at the silhouette in the throne.

“Luo Feng, has entered?” The gentle voice resounded.

“Yes, his majesty Luo Feng just entered.” The white robed youth said, “He entered demon note mountain.”

“Hm.”

The gentle voice continued, “When he comes out, bring him to meet me.”

“Yes.” The white robed youth bowed.

“Zhe Chang, you can go.” The gentle voice said.

“Yes.”

The youth didn’t dare speak anymore, swiftly leaving the palace and out of the chilly place. Once he walked out, only then did he let out a sigh of relief, “Official Po Yu is a sick bastard. His moods are irrational, and he can kill me randomly at will, that would be injustice. Luckily nothing happened today.”

Where there were benefits, there would be competition!

For a huge leviathan like the Virtual Universe company, there would definitely be competition within the internal departments, only they were all suppressed. However for a being like Po Yu, randomly killing a sector lord didn’t mean anything at all.

Luo Feng and Bolan and such people were heavily respected, they were like the fruits of the company.

But that was only because they were geniuses, hence they were

respected. And for people like Zhe Chang who had to slog until he reached the sector lord level, he had to remain cautious at all times. His position wasn't high enough...he could easily be killed by the upper levels just because they were in a bad mood.

.....

Within that chilly palace.

High above in the throne, a huge silhouette flew and landed within.

She was a person with a 10m long jade green snake tail. Her upper body was simply perfect, especially her long jade green hair. The absolute beauty that enticed even one's soul, her mesmerizing eyes that gazed far within the palace, seemingly looking at a place a trillion years away.

"Ha!"

"Ha!" She suddenly revealed a manic laugh, "Hahaha..."

"The opportunity has come!"

She muttered softly.

After which!

Chi chi chi…her body swiftly began to change, her jade green tail shrank and became two bare feet, simultaneously clothing grew on her body and she became a 8m tall absolute beauty.

“I’ll first collect on the loan.”

“Killing him is only the first step.”

The absolute beauty muttered softly and vanished.

……

A few minutes later, within a dark red planet, one of the 9 revolving around demon mountain, a universe ship swiftly entered.

On the planet.

An ancient city took up 10,000 Li in area. It was one of the top 3 sects on this planet, the thousand star sect.

“Rumble…”

The elders of the thousand star sect all swiftly came out from within, some rushing from the quiet spots about. In just a few minutes all of them had rushed to the shrine of the sect.

Shrine, why shrine?

Because there was a god, hence the shrine was built. There was currently a 1,000 star undying in this sect!

“Why has the Sect leader called us so urgently?”

“I don’t know.”

“Hurry, the leader has never called us so urgently before.”

Sector lords and domain lords all swiftly rushed to the thousand Star sacred land. Within the shrine, a beautiful lady sat in the majestic throne high above, and below was an old man with two, one meter black horns, it was the thousand Star sect leader thousand star elder.

“Sect leader.”

“Sect leader.”

The sector lords and domain lords rushed over and bowed respectfully.

“Master Bing!” The black horned old man knelt down respectfully. “The closest sector lords and domain lords from the thousand star sect have all gathered. There’s a total of 6 sector lords and 53 domain lords.”

“Master?”

The sector lords and domain lords with either black or silver white horns were all stunned.

The beautiful lady in the throne looked at the shrine’s entrance, a formless energy seemed to push open the door.

Rumble…

The door automatically opened, making the sector lords and domain lords even more nervous. They all couldn’t help but glance at the beautiful silhouette in the throne, however they couldn’t see her appearance. They could only feel a formless pressure causing them to feel a natural sense of fear.

“Those of you who’ve passed demon mountain, stand on the left. Those who haven’t stand on the right.” A gentle voice resounded.

It was like they were being controlled.

59 naturally moved to the two sides. 32 of them stood on the left and 27 on the right.

“Six of you stay!” Six jade green lights descended from above and landed amongst the 27 sector lords and domain lords. Three of these were sector lords, and three were domain lord level 9s, “The

rest of you can leave.”

The door opened automatically again.

The other 53 sector and domain lords moved out like puppets, after which the door shut again.

Outside the shrine.

“What’s going on?”

“What just happened?”

“Didn’t the sect leader gather us, why are we out again?”

The sector and domain lords were almost like in a dream like state, they exchanged glances, not remembering clearly what happened in the shrine earlier.

“All of you go back! Immediately! No questions allowed!” An old angry voice resounded in their minds.

“Yes, sect leader.”

The group immediately complied and dispersed in all directions.

……

Within the shrine.

The beautiful lady sat in the throne, gazing down at the three sector lords and three domain lords.

“To work for the thousand star sect is our honor. Whatever the master wishes and orders, our thousand star sect disciples will complete.” The black horned old man thousand star elder said respectfully.

Chapter 19 – Self Preparation

The three sector lords and three domain lords were extremely nervous. They could see that the other warriors had left with puppet like gazes. To be able to control sector lords without any action whatsoever, and to make the sect leader kneel there like a maid. This being before them must be an absolute being even within the Virtual Universe company.

“thousand star, you can leave.” The beautiful lady ordered.

“Yes.”

The black horned old man left swiftly through the left side door. Only the beautiful lady above and the six were left behind.

“The six of you, look carefully.” The beautiful lady pointed in mid air. Immediately, a light formed screen appeared from where her left hand pointed, and on it displayed the black haired youth Luo Feng, he was dressed in his colorful armor. The screen showed his detailed measurements and data.

“I need you to kill this person!”

“This one on the screen.” The lady said.

Immediately the six below were suspicious, a great being, even stronger than their sect leader, getting them to kill one person, just how strong was this person?

“He, is only at universe level 9.” The lady said gently.

“Only universe level 9?”

The six of them below all let out sighs of relief. Amongst them were three domain lord level 9s, killing a universe level 9 was as easy as killing an ant.

“However don’t look down on him.” The lady pointed at the screen. “He is wearing alloy armor, it may look very normal, but they are still E9 grade. However such simple armor defense cannot compare to genetic armor’s complete defense. Below that however is a layer of cloud contact armor.

“Cloud contact vine?”

The six of them were suspicious.

Immediately data appeared on the screen, the lady continued, “Cloud contact vine, a special assisting plant life form. It is able to meld with the skin and act as armor, or whip, and is able to transform to many things and constantly evolve. And his cloud contact vine is domain lord level 9!”

“The cloud contact vine’s strength is able to morph at will, and its life energy is extremely strong. It’s strength is usually much stronger than a human of the same level.”

“Hence, you three domain lord level 9s will probably be easily killed by his armor alone.” The lady said.

The three domain lords of the six below were immediately shocked.

Mysterious!

Sick!

Their home towns had never heard of such assisting plant life. A universe level 9 using a plant life form, and is easily able to kill a domain lord level 9? That was absurd.

“You three sector lords, the weakest among you is a sector lord level 5, and highest is at sector lord level 9. As long as you meet him, you should be able to easily kill him.” The lady said, “As for the three domain lord level 9, if you meet him, you will die.”

The three domain lords listened nervously, not daring to speak.

“This is called a laser gun!” The lady flipped her hand and immediately 3 automaton weapons appeared, 3 laser guns with diameters of 1m, totally about 3m long. It was made of a silver white material, and on it were no engravings. Obviously it was the style of the automaton race.

“E9 laser guns!” The lady said indifferently, “It only needs 0.1 seconds to prepare, an absolute level laser gun.”

“With a hit of this gun, you can pierce through E9 grade material and kill even a sector lord level 9 warrior.” The lady’s words had just resounded and the six below changed their expressions.

Their eyes gleamed as they stared at the guns.

Heavenly!

Madness!

They weren’t completely oblivious to the vast universe. They too knew that within the universe, strength was what mattered. Even there, sector lords had special authority and status. Just how hard was it to become a sector lord? Which one of them six hadn’t been through hell and hardships?

However one simple technological weapon, even a weakling with this weapon could prepare in 0.1 seconds and kill a sector lord level 9?

This was madness.

This level of technological weapon, even amongst the universe countries of humanity, was still an absolute high level weapon, and the price was extremely expensive. Many sector lord’s entire wealth couldn’t even afford a fraction of one of these E9 grade laser guns. These 3 E9 grade laser guns, even normal undyings wouldn’t be able to afford.

“These 3 E9 grade laser guns, will be used temporarily by you three.” The lady waved and the 3 guns flew towards the three domain lords and floated before them.

The three domain lords stared wide eyed at the completely silver white technological weapon.

What a beautiful structure!

Terrifying barrel!

This little thing, 1 gun, could kill a normal sector lord level 9?

“The three of you are weak, and are all fighters. Even if you meet this black haired punk, he wouldn’t bother with you.” The lady said, “In his eyes, he can kill you three in an instant.”

“Hm.” The three domain lords nodded.

“And because he looks down on you, and doesn’t think of you as a threat, you’ll have a chance!” The lady said, “With your combined strengths, even if you meet the cloud contact vine’s attack, if you can hold up for 0.1 seconds, you’ll be able to store enough energy to shoot him.”

“Understood.”

“Yes.”

“We will definitely be able to kill him.”

The three domain lords answered excitedly, their answers all different.

The three sector lords beside glanced at the laser guns. While their eyes were gleaming, the lady in the throne however said coldly, “You three sector lords, just your powers alone should be enough. Remember the target’s appearance and armor.”

“Yes.” The six replied respectfully.

“He’s different from you lot.” The lady said, “His wealth alone wouldn’t lose to even your sect elder, hence he’ll be prepared. He may change his appearance, armor etc. Just remember, the moment you meet a universe level 9, no matter what he looks like, make a move! If you discover the cloud contact vine body, you’ll be able to confirm the target.”

“When you meet the domain lord level or sector lord levels, don’t make a move.”

“Your target this time is him!”

“You three domain lords remember clearly, flee if you meet a sector lord. If they truly wish to kill you, you can then use the laser gun to attack! If you meet a domain lord just flee! Kill any universe

levels! If you discover the cloud contact vine...then use the laser gun. Because, your laser guns can at most shoot 9 times, its energy will be depleted after those 9 shots."

"Yes!"

The six of them complied.

The six of them understood, that even though they were three domain lords and sector lords, this being before them had obviously placed her hopes on the three domain lords.

"This black haired youth sure is unlucky. A great being actually has a grudge with him and has deployed such vicious tactics."

"However we don't know his identity and status, this being actually doesn't dare to kill him herself, letting us do it for her."

"Who cares, anyway killing within demon mountain is allowed by the Virtual Universe company."

Many thoughts went through their minds.

"If you manage to successfully kill him, the six of you including thousand star sect will be heavily rewarded by me!" The lady said. "I hope that the six of you don't let me down. If you do, you should know what the result of that will be." The lady gently gripped armrest and rubbed it, it began to crack and break apart.

The six of them were shocked.

“We’ll pledge our lives to complete this mission!” The six complied.

“Hm.” The lady nodded.

Within the majestic demon mountain.

The caves and canyons were a vast sea of black, and on the surface of every stone however there was a layer of cold ice. Whether it was the walls or ground, they were all covered in that cold. The formless chill made Luo Feng who was walking within frown, as it pierced right through his cloud contact armor, painfully against his skin.

“This is demon note mountain, and its already this cold. Ice mountain must be even crazier.” He gently breathed in and felt the cold air enter his lungs, immediately his organs within went numb.

“It’s cold enough as is.”

Suddenly he stopped.

This cave was at least 10km tall and 80km wide. One could even build an entire city within this huge cave.

“So many pathways?” Luo Feng gazed ahead. There were many large and small caves, extending to hundreds of pathways.

Hu!

Howl!

The sound of the wind howled through the many passages, almost like a demon’s cry or wolf’s howl. The sounds created were very peculiar, with occasional high and low frequencies that would permeate into Luo Feng’ s consciousness and soul, creating a noiseless hypnotism within.

“You dare try with this level of hypnotism, hmph!”

Within his consciousness.

Luo Feng’s willpower was as sharp as a blade. It instantly gathered and formed a sharp blade that was cold and condensed. It would break any hypnotism that even drew near! This was his willpower at its limit after his 80 years of training in Blood River world’s killing aura!

His 2nd brother Thunder god thought he was at the limit!

Indeed he was, and he had always been! Absolutely cold like a mirror, sharp like a blade! With no compromise!

“Demon note mountain, different regions have different levels. The moment I succumb to it I’ll be a living puppet, with no chance to struggle at all. I cannot be careless.”

“And there is the threat of the aboriginal warriors and wild beasts.”

“Hm, I’ll act according to the plan before.”

Luo Feng stood in the ice, swiftly taking off his colored armor and retrieving a completely silver armor he had prepared just for this mission. This was an armor that was the most common within 9 star ocean.

Its material was F grade metal.

Maybe using an F grade metal to build a ship like the Yun Mo Ship was something beyond what he could do. But simply building an armor wasn’t hard at all for him.

“This is an impossible mission, not like the dangerous level from before. That colored armor is definitely not enough!”

Luo Feng immediately donned the silver armor and kept his bracelet screen into his storage ring, connecting with the cloud contact armor that grew two black horns on his forehead. These two dark red horns extended and slowly changed its color to black.

Black horns!

The simple and common silver armor! The black blade on his back! His entire savage energy had grown completely.

“Very good.”

“Even though there will be killing between the aboriginals themselves, this is still normal. The moment my identity is revealed, there will be madness. This red identity tag is very dangerous, it’s like a hot coal in hand.” Luo Feng though, storing the red tag in his storage ring. “I have to get a black identity tag on myself later, if I’m disguising myself, I have to do it all the way!”

Luo Feng was very clear.

Only with talent could he catch the fish, disguising himself as one of the aboriginals would decrease the dangers significantly.

“Sou!”

He randomly picked one of the passages of the hundreds ahead, flying deep within, and began his journey into the depths of Demon note mountain.

Chapter 20 – Exploration

When Luo Feng entered demon note mountain, the 1,000s of warriors were still lining up for their identification tags, after which they either entered demon note mountain or ice mountain.

They all had to enter from a fixed, pre picked location from among the 10,000 entrances.

Sou!

A purple disc shaped ship flew to demon mountain's canyon, the cabin door opened and 6 silhouettes flew out and kept the ship. These 6 were the 6 from the 1,000 star sect sent by Official Po Yu. The leader of the sect was after all an undying, and a core member of the Virtual Universe company, who had explored the universe before. Hence, the domain lords and sector lords of the 1,000 star sect all had universe ships.

Normal universe ships were very cheap.

Of course, domain lords didn't have large enough space rings to store the universe ships, the sector lords however could store them in their internal worlds.

"Bayan, look. There's so many queuing to get their tags. Even though one tag is being handed out every second, it would still take a couple of hours to go through these thousands."

“Don’t get careless, we have to grasp our time. We cannot miss our chance, if we do, we’ll have to wait for the next 10,000 batch before we can enter.”

The 6 immediately flew towards the distant palace.

It took a few minutes for Official Po Yu to head towards 1,000 star sect, giving the order also took a few minutes. They took another 10 minutes to head over to their ship. At this time, only a small group of the thousands of aboriginals had acquired their tags. As for the distribution? The Virtual Universe company’s members definitely wouldn’t have such high efficiency for such aboriginals.

1 hour later.

“Let’s go! To demon note mountain!”

“According to the god’s orders, we’ll split up and it’ll be easier to meet our target.”

“Hm, we’ll split here.”

The 6 of them followed the same cave entrance to a split path and separated, and they headed in 6 different paths.

Actually, attempting demon mountain was mostly meant for universe levels. There were very few domain lords and even less sector lords.

Hence, the weakest amongst these 6 was domain lord level 9. The true dangers of demon mountain were the demon notes and beasts. Compared to this, the threats of the other aboriginals to them was small, unless they were truly unlucky to meet the rare sector lord in this vast mountain.

A black horned youth was carefully progressing along the deep and vast pathways, where countless of them interweaved.

“Ang!”

“Yang!”

“Howl!”

Every time he heard the demon notes, Luo Feng would immediately slow down and stop, not daring to risk it, in case he accidentally headed into an extremely strong area. Even though he was confident…he didn’t dare to be careless.

“Luo Feng, at a distance of 18.2km ahead of your path, there’s a domain lord level 3 fighter.” Babata’s voice resounded in his consciousness.

“My path?” Luo Feng frowned.

In demon note mountain, other than his three great bodies and

the cloud contact vine, there was one more very important thing, Babata! He had an extremely powerful scanning device. Even though the area was small and only within 20km, its efficiency was extremely high. Even Sector lords couldn't detect that well in this range here.

This scanning device was an expensive device bought back then by the master Hu Yan Bo of the Yun Mo Planet. Even the current Luo Feng wouldn't be able to afford such a high end device.

Naturally...

The area was only 20km, suitable for such special regions and secret regions like demon note mountain.

"Swiftly getting closer, 12.8 km...9.9km..." Babata informed him.

"I see him." Luo Feng looked ahead.

The path had straightened up completely at this point. Hence when the distance reached 10km, Luo Feng could see that ghostly dwarf like fighter. He was even able to clearly see the black hairs on his face, and his cold eyes. He carefully proceeded forward. When he spotted Luo Feng, he stopped, and after which smiled manically and rushed forward!

"Universe level 9! Haha..." The dwarf laughed loudly. With just two flashes, he reached before Luo Feng, and in his hand he wielded a dark red axe. This hatchet had complex engravings on it.

Luo Feng shook his head.

“Clang!”

He instantly brandished his blade!

Wave!

The cloud contact vine on his body naturally exploded with domain level 9 vine strength. Just a small portion of its strength was already much more powerful than a human domain level 9! The air around was pressured and a blood shadow blade slashed forward with unbelievable speed at the dwarf and his axe.

Rumble!

Just like a huge hammer smashing an ant, the dwarf stared wide eyed as the axe in his hands was immediately knocked backed towards himself. The back of the axe clashed, “Pu Chi”....instantly crushing his body till it exploded, his bones and muscles gushed out of his armor, and fresh blood spewed everywhere as well.

Rumble...

The entire ground rumbled and shook, the surface frozen layer immediately split in all directions with cracks extending, the ice split open and extended for 10km.

“I didn’t actually wish to kill you.” Luo Feng swiftly retrieved the two black tags in this dwarf’s storage item. This was already his 19th tag. “You happened to cross my path and attacked me first, how can I not kill you?”

Luo Feng kept the black tags and swiftly proceeded.

10,000 black tags yielded an addition reward, indeed.

However?

The higher the reward the higher the difficulty. As long as he survived in demon note mountain for 3 years, he would simultaneously accomplish the 1st mission, which was to survive for 3 months and the 2nd mission, which was to survive for 3 years. When that time came, he would acquire 400,000 points! The reward for the 10,000 tags was even better than this!

One could only imagine the difficulty!

“Only 10,000 people are allowed to enter in every batch, and they kill amongst themselves. Who knows where they would end up dying in here. Some may even have left early on. Most of the tags should land in the sector lord’s hands. To collect 10,000 black tags with my current strength, it’s definitely impossible.” Luo Feng was clear.

He looked down at the dead dwarf, shaking his head.

“My mission is to survive for 3 years.”

“I don’t wish to kill others.”

“However if anyone gets in my way, I can only do so.” Luo Feng continued, leaving behind the body in the broken ice surface.

The low temperatures caused the fresh blood to already freeze, the splits in the ice too swiftly froze over, and not too long after, everything looked like it was before.

……

Demon note mountain was vast, it took up half of the entire mountain.

And the base of demon mountain itself reached a shocking 3.2 hundred million km. It’s height reached a shocking 1.8 hundred million km. Since there were countless caves and pathways that crossed all over, Luo Feng could only cautiously proceed 100,000 km per day. Even after 3 years, he would have probably only covered a small portion of demon note mountain.

Cautious and careful.

1 day, 2 days, 3 days…

In a blink of an eye, 9 days had passed. Within these 9 days, through Babata's scanning device, Luo Feng had discovered one sector lord, immediately he turned and slipped away. This was also the only time he got close to a sector lord. Other times, he met a few domain lords and large amounts of universe levels. As no one trusted each other, and he didn't want to be chased down after fleeing, he could only kill those that attacked him.

Within these 9 days, he had already collected 112 black tags.

"My luck is not bad at all. Within these 9 days, I actually haven't met any of the terrifying beasts of demon mountain." Luo Feng walked along a vast pathway that twisted and turned, throughout which, Babata maintained his scanning device at all times.

"Luo Feng, according to the demon notes you've encountered the past 2 days, you should be entering a more dangerous region now. The demon note is obviously much stronger, I guess there's a dangerous place nearby!"

"Babata, the information the Virtual Universe company gave us is that there's no way to scan the dangerous regions in demon note mountain, it might seem very safe but dangers may pop up anytime. There's no need to scan." Luo Feng communicated mentally, simultaneously scanning around in the distance carefully, he couldn't completely rely on the scanning device.

As normal pathways had distances exceeding 20km, and the scanning area of the device was only 20km. Hence, it was very likely they could actually see each other before the device could detect.

“Luo Feng, 3.6km to your left there are 3 domain lords.”

“3.6 km?” Luo Feng was shocked.

Looking to his left.

Not too far away was a stone wall, only then did he let out a sigh of relief.

“Its within another path.” Babata said.

“Another path, there’s no danger, why’d you inform me?” Luo Feng shook his head.

“Their conversation, I think it’s important for you.” Babata said.

“Ah?” Luo Feng thought.

With a flip of his hand, a little screen appeared.

“Broadcast the footage of the scene to me.” Luo Feng said.

“Sending already complete.”

Di.

In the little screen in his palm, it showed a similarly frozen stone cave, in which he could see an old man, a middle aged man and a youth. These 3 were staring intensely at 8 thick books before them. “It’s the Pheonix sect’s manual! This dead person must be an upper level in the phoenix sect.”

“Teacher, someone actually killed this person and didn’t even take his manual treasures. Haha.”

“You are wrong, it wasn’t a human that killed him. It’s a beast! Look at the scars on his armor, obviously a large claw had attacked him.”

“Teacher, teacher.” The youth smiled, “We acquired the phoenix sect’s manual here, can it be considered another inheritance?”

“Don’t compare this manual to an inheritance.”

The old man ordered, “The phoenix sect is very valuable. However, this forbidden land is called demon mountain by the Virtual Universe company, they also send many valuable beings here. From what I hear, they would occasionally send some undyings to enter to acquire the inheritance of this forbidden land!”

“Ah!”

“Undyings to accept the inheritance?” The 2 beside were

shocked.

Looking at the screen, Luo Feng was shocked too.

“This you wouldn’t know, this is our 9 star ocean’s secret.” The old man said. “The forbidden land, why is it called so? Because this ancient gold mountain exists for passing down things! It’s existence is extremely ancient, tracing back to the earliest of histories of 9 star ocean. Back to the time before the Virtual Universe company took control of demon mountain! Anyway, this forbidden land…has things even the Virtual Universe company desires!”

“Just how powerful is the Virtual Universe company?”

“That’s impossible.” The 2 disciples couldn’t believe it.

“Cough.” The old man coughed a couple of times and said softly, “The Virtual Universe company is a leviathan of the universe, it is indeed very powerful. However, they still regularly arrange for powerful beings and undyings to enter here, trying to acquire the inheritance. This is a fact. This is our 9 star ocean’s most ancient inheritance, whoever acquires it, that person would really be taking one step to heaven.”

……

Luo Feng looked at the conversation of the 3 on his screen, very quickly, it then ended.

He frowned, “Inheritance? Demon mountain? Forbidden land?”

Chapter 21 – Discovering a Mystery

“Demon mountain actually has treasures the virtual universe would desire?” Luo Feng thought within.

The history of demon mountain was extremely ancient. It had existed long before the Virtual Universe company had taken control of the absolute beginning region. A naturally formed mountain as such would definitely have treasures that were out of the ordinary. It would be normal for them to allow undyings to explore it.

However, are there really such treasures?

Luo Feng frowned.

“Very likely!”

“The aboriginals of 9 star ocean all call demon mountain the Inheritance forbidden land for hundreds of millions of years. They definitely wouldn’t call it as such for no reason, there’s definitely a meaning behind it!” Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed more, “And Babata’s scan showed that the old man said it with full confidence that there were frequent undyings that explored the mountain, this were probably verified information too.”

“Undyings entering here, for what?”

“For something to attract the undyings, these must not be

normal treasures at all.”

“That old man said that the Virtual Universe company frequently arranges for high level beings and undyings to enter, he probably has me mixed up with their high level beings. They don’t know that im currently just on a training mission.” Luo Feng smiled, suddenly he was stunned.

“No!” Luo Feng stared wide eyed, a look of fear.

“Training mission?”

“Wrong! Wrong! Wrong!” His mind flashed with thoughts, he instantly guessed a few of the mysteries. “Only a bystander can see the picture clearly! Indeed this is true...Those of us undergoing these training missions mostly haven’t understood this. However the aboriginals have seen the truth!”

“Training mission?”

“If it were purely for risk, the Virtual Universe company could completely create a risk environment specially for the geniuses to do it in. Why would they need to send them to such a far away naturally produced mysterious place?” His eyes gleamed, “While we are to train on one side, the more important thing is...for us to get the opportunity to evolve even further in a huge burst!”

“From the Blood River world mission, I can see how the virtual universe plans its nurture.”

“The Blood River crystal of that world is a contraband item, however, they still let us do the mission. Why? For us to get the chance to absorb the crystals, raising both our comprehension and strength.” His eyes glowed, “Right, just like that!”

“The training missions aren’t simply for training. There should still be other miraculous encounters awaiting us geniuses.” Luo Feng squinted his eyes.

In his mind the many memories of the dangerous level missions flashed.

During the 1st Blood River world mission, he had a miraculous encounter and gained much from it. However obviously…this was an opportunity supplied by the Virtual Universe company.

The 2nd Dragon tower planet mission, as he hunted each dragon then, he found it strange, the number of types of dragons there was simply too many and extremely powerful. For an ancient planet to produce so many powerful dragon types, that was simply unbelievable. On top of that, the sacred land of the planet was a majestic tower…named dragon tower, there were too many powerful dragon types surrounding that tower. He simply finished the mission back then without actually going to explore in.

The 3rd Space Void mission, an endless cliff floated in space, and in between were peculiar thick chains. This existence was simply too peculiar, Luo Feng was extremely cautious then, only entering a few 1,000 km into its depths, collecting the required mission

items before leaving immediately.

.....

5 dangerous level missions.

This 6th mission was the impossible level mission. The mission seemed simple with its requirements for completion, as there were only two of them. One, was to survive 3 months (100,000 points) and the 2nd was to survive for 3 years (300,000 points).

“These places, none of them are that simple!”

“Just testing and training alone, the Virtual Universe company which has everything doesn’t need to go to such lengths, they could totally create a dangerous environment to train its people. Rather than send them to such crazy secret region places. And like the blood river crystals, they are contraband!” Luo Feng frowned, “I’m sure these places still have some secrets! And these secrets... some of them should have great benefits for us!”

What was the aim of the Virtual Universe company?

To train, and to nurture ofcourse!

But, the miraculous encounters these places had, were actually the true hidden rewards for the missions.

“Indeed!”

“It should be like that!”

“Otherwise, there’d be no need for us to go to such dangerous places just to gain experience. No such need at all! Letting us go to Blood River world, they are probably wishing for us to become blood warriors and even black warriors! Heading to dragon tower, space void, they probably had some other motives.”

“By letting absolute geniuses enter demon mountain, they probably wish too that we’d acquire the inheritance of the forbidden land.” Luo Feng nodded. The more he thought about it, the more it seemed right. This was the true thought process of their nurture and training, giving them additional opportunities while training.

“Whether it’s a black warrior, or acquiring the inheritance, they’d both be very hard. Otherwise, there’d long be a genius legendary story of one who’ve acquired it over these trillion years. The Virtual Universe company wouldn’t then need to keep sending undyings in.” Luo Feng nodded.

This ancient demon mountain most definitely has treasures!

And acquiring them would be extremely difficult. After all the Virtual Universe company only gave one chance to acquire them to each genius.

“Right.”

“Definitely.”

“Tian Shi palace is stationed above the Blood River world, and within it was such a level of absolute being! The space void too had undyings that trained hard within! This demon mountain base had large amounts of sector lords and undyings stationed too. Just from the majestic palace alone, one would know how many undyings were around!” Luo Feng thought and nodded. “It’s no secret, if it were just a training ground, why would they put so many undyings around?”

……

Luo Feng stood on the frozen ground and pondered, the more he thought, the more sure he was and he smiled excitedly.

“Luo Feng, 19.6km ahead of you there’s a 39m tall bear like creature, completely silver white beast, and It’s coming over.” Babata’s voice resounded in Luo Feng’s mind.

“Hm?”

Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed and he scanned ahead. There, he saw a simple and honest silver white bear. It’s eyes were white too, and it almost looked like a huge ice statue slowly walking over. “Wild beast, one of the threats next to the demon notes.”

Wild beasts were special life forms naturally formed in demon mountain.

They were formed in demon mountain's extreme cold conditions. They had very little intelligence, and in terms of that, they probably couldn't even compare to the cats and dogs of earth. They could be said to be....extremely stupid! However, because they were that way, they only knew one thing...if they discovered any other beast or life, they would immediately attack!

Any plan against their low intelligence was ineffective.

"From the natural energy it emits, its strength is at universe level 3." Babata's voice resounded in his mind.

"Howl..." That white bear looked at Luo Feng and immediately let out a howl, rushing over.

Sou! Sou! Sou!

It's speed was extremely fast, as it became a blur and reached right before Luo Feng.

"Such a cute beast." Luo Feng brandished his blood shadow blade and instantly flashed past the bear, simultaneously slicing its head.

Chi!

After its head was cut off, the solid ice chunks smashed against the stones on the walls. However the beast continued to attack, howling, “Howl…howl…” attacking Luo Feng.

“Chi! Chi!”

His blade flashed over and over. Luo Feng harmed it over and over, only after it was cut into 4 or 5 pieces did the countless ice chunks fall to the ground.

“What a peculiar life form. Its entire body is formed from the solid ice chunks. Even after I cut it up, it’s simple consciousness doesn’t dissipate.” Luo Feng looked shocked and curiously at the countless ice chunks. He saw them slightly struggle, and two pieces swiftly began to fuse back together.

“So the information that said these beasts don’t die, it’s like that.” Luo Feng shook his head, swiftly leaving. He didn’t have the patience to keep fighting against such a simple intellect beast that was akin to a cat or dog.

His luck was good this time, he met a weaker beast.

The strongest of the beasts were akin to a sector lord pinnacle, and they usually appeared in a group.

……

In this crystal like dark and deep stone pathway, a skinny black

horned youth with black armor was present, and his eyes were burning with flames. He walked casually as though leisurely, simultaneously a formless world energy was spread throughout a 1,000km scanning.

"Hm?" His eyes gleamed.

Sou!

He immediately became a beam of light, with his sector lord level 6 strength he almost instantly followed the winding pathways and rushed 1,000km. There, a domain lord level 8 and a universe level 9 youth were carefully proceeding, chatting softly, "Grandpa, we just have to press on for another 2 days and it'll be a month!"

"Hm, then we'll be able to join the Virtual Universe company."

"Who's there!"

The 2 of them immediately saw a flash flew over, their expressions changed and they fled.

Rumble!

The burning flame fiercely expanded over, engulfing the several km area. The domain lord level 8 old man and universe level 9 youth were instantly burnt to death.

“Hm?” The black horned skinny youth’s burning eyes scanned that universe level 9 youth’s body surroundings, “No cloud contact vine armor?” After which he waved his hand and acquired the space bracelet and ring, scanning them.

“No red tag!”

“Hmph!”

“This universe level 9 isn’t the target the god wants.” The black horned youth shook his head. “I haven’t found the target even after acquiring over 1,000 black tags. I should continue!”

The black horned youth continued to search again, extending his world energy to over 1,000km in area.

Chapter 22 – Chase

The chilly breeze howled through the icy pathways, Luo Feng pressed forward at lightning speed through the bone chilling cold.

“Yao!”

“Si!”

Some peculiar noises formed from the wind. Some were so high in frequency that it couldn’t even be heard, but they still pierced right into Luo Feng’s consciousness. Those enticing inaudible noises would occasionally be strong and sometimes weak, Luo Feng’s eyes were focused, taking one step at a time, not affected by these.

“Rumble!”

Almost as though his piercing blade like willpower was hit by a sudden powerful formless wave, causing him to be taken aback.

His body shuddered a little, his expression changed.

“Terrifying, I haven’t let down my guard at all, and this hypnotism power actually rose by a 100 times suddenly.” Luo Feng was shocked within. The wind mixed with the hypnotism seem to combine to form a very powerful combo, causing his solid willpower to slightly tremble.

“The true threats usually come when it seems most safe!”

“Indeed demon notes!”

He squinted his eyes, progressing forward for 1,000km and arrived within a crystal ice like world. Countless layers of ice covered the stone floors, forming a vast and yet beautiful cave, and on the walls were naturally formed beautiful marks all over.

“A total of 816 caves, which do I enter?” Luo Feng gazed about. Suddenly, his gaze landed on a distant octagon shaped cave, he felt something special coming from that deep cave.

“This one.”

Relying solely on his instinct, he swiftly entered through that cave.

……

At that intersection of the 817 caves, there would occasionally be an aboriginal coming from one of the caves before entering yet another.

Half an hour later.

The black horned skinny man walked out of a certain cave, looking at the other 816, frowning, “So many?”

“Hm?”

His gaze landed on the same octagon shaped cave, “This one feels different, I’ll go take a look.”

Sou!

With just one step he had stepped deep into that cave.

The deep cave was 12km wide, with varying heights throughout. The ice that covered the walls formed stalactites from above or even weird and peculiar ice statutes throughout.

The black horned skinny man walked while expanding his world energy up to 1,000km around.

“Domain level 8?”

He frowned, his body became a blur and simultaneously chased over 1000km. Looking at the distant silhouette rushing over, the large bearded white horned middle aged man’s expression changed as he swiftly fled. He shouted, “Flame sector lord, I am from the Mass Star sect…”

Rumble!

The flames burst forth and instantly the surrounding area

became a sea of fire, that domain level 8 middle aged man was instantly burnt to death.

"The fact that you know I am Wu Qi means you really cannot live!" The skinny man snorted coldly. "Whether or not I kill my target this time, even if I acquire enough black tags, I still won't hand them over, I'll pretend I failed and return. I am afterall a sector lord, I don't want to be bossed about within the Virtual Universe company!"

There were 2 perspectives of the 9 star ocean warriors.

One of them was to become a strong warrior, joining the Virtual Universe company and exploring the universe. Many didn't want to simply remain in 9 star ocean.

The second one were the powerful people in 9 star ocean, they didn't wish to join the Virtual Universe company's lower levels, only to be ordered about by others.

And the flame sector lord Wu Qi was the latter.

"He has quite a lot of black tags, a total of 726." The skinny man shook his head. "I didn't wish to collect them at all and now I've already got over 2,000."

He continued forward!

He casually progressed, however he was still cautious. To him,

the most dangerous thing in demon mountain was the demon notes, the legendary terrifying demon notes that even the sector lord pinnacles couldn't withstand, losing their consciousness in an instant and becoming zombies.

Half an hour later.

"Hm? Universe level?" The skinny man's eyes gleamed, he immediately used his world energy to scan this new enemy.

"Let's hope it's the target." The sector lord Wu Qi thought, having already failed a hundred times.

Sou!

He instantly shot towards his target.

.....

About 1,000km away from the black horned skinny man, in the same vast pathway, Luo Feng continued forwads.

Hua!

The world energy brushed past him, Luo Feng didn't even seem to realize, pressing forward.

“Luo Feng! World energy just passed you!” Babata who had maintained his scanning mode all this while fiercely shouted within Luo Feng’s consciousness.

“What?” Luo Feng jumped with shock.

“Hurry and go!”

Luo Feng unleashed his movement and instantly fled into the distance, flying swiftly.

Even though he was fleeing, he wasn’t too nervous, because he had encountered a few sector lords these past few days in demon mountain and he had left them in his dust. And sector lords normally didn’t care too much about chasing down a universe level punk, hence he wasn’t really in danger!

“It should be like before, as long as the distance gets far enough, I should be fine.” Luo Feng thought.

“Luo Feng, he’s less than 20km away from you!!!” Babata shouted, “He’s here, he’s caught up!”

Luo Feng turned around fiercely to look.

Rumble!

The black horned man that had turned into a red flame was

visible now, he was staring at Luo Feng, his killing intent obvious.

“Damn, is there a need for a sector lord to chase down a universe level?” Luo Feng gritted his teeth.

Shua!

He swapped with the mosha clan in his internal world. Luo Feng had long prepared for such situations, hence when he entered demon mountain earlier, the mosha clan had already taken the shape of his human body, the same black horns, the same silver armor! And it even matched the life energy of his human energy, as it’s natural talent was cloning. Even though they shared the same soul, their life forms were ultimately still different. Hence, the energy they gave off would still be slightly different, hence it had to rely on its cloning technique.

Sou!

The Mosha clansman immediately unleashed the illusionary techniques and its speed exploded!

At the moment of life and death!

He couldn’t care about anything else!

……

The black horned skinny man Wu Qi who had been casually chasing after the universe level 9 that he discovered had one thought in mind, he'd rather kill the wrong target than let him off!

"Ah?"

"He actually discovered me and fled. What a pity, his speed is too slow." The sector lord Wu Qi happily chased, his casual speed alone was much faster than Luo Feng's human max speed, very quickly the distance between the both of them reached below 20km, the two of them could see each other.

At that time, Luo Feng instantly changed his bodies.

"He seems to have undergone some change." Wu Qi thought.

As Luo Feng swapped his bodies with almost zero time lapse, plus the exact similar appearance, dressing, life energy etc. The sector lord had indeed detected a slight change, but he never would have expected...that Luo Feng had already swapped his bodies.

The Mosha clansman! Instantaneous speed explosion!

In terms of maximum speed, the mosha clansman couldn't compare to the sector lord level 6. However in terms of instantaneous speed, it still far exceeded that of Wu Qi.

Sou!

In an instant, Mosha Luo Feng had already passed 1,000km, disappearing from Wu Qi's world energy scanning area.

"What? So fast?" Wu Qi changed his expression, "How can a universe level 9 be that fast, at least within 9 star ocean, there's no such absolute being. To reach such shocking speed, he definitely has some special methods. I believe that he is the target the god wants."

Wu Qi had already killed many universe level 9s, yet he had never met one so peculiar.

Firstly, he detected him early, and secondly was his speed in fleeing.

This made Wu Qi realize, he could very likely have met the target!

"Chase!"

Rumble!

He became a beam of light and followed the stone pathways swiftly, he madly expanded his world energy to 10,000 km in area, immediately feeling the distant fleeing silhouette. However as the pathways in this cave weren't straight but curved, he couldn't keep accelerating.

Just like a 100m race before the Great Nirvana on earth, if one ran in a straight line he could maybe complete it in 10 seconds.

However if it were a S shaped route, with 10 over curves in the 100m race, one definitely couldn't run at his max speed.

This was just a theory!

Sector lord Wu Qi and Mosha Luo feng both could instantly accelerate and decrease in speed. To make turns under such circumstances, the space genius with extremely high comprehension of the space laws, the Mosha clansman could unleash its greatest strength...instantaneous acceleration!

Xiu! Xiu! Xiu!

With 3 flashes, he vanished from sector lord Wu Qi's over 10,000 km in area world energy scanning.

.....

"Luckily the pathways were curved. Otherwise I would have to rely on the golden horned beast." Mosha Luo Feng thought as he fled.

Through Babata's scanning, he realized the enemy should be sector lord level 6!

Back in Blood River world, the Mosha clansman had used the domain lord level 9 strength to kill Si Yong. Si Yong was a sector lord level 5! However...the battle techniques of Blood River world were average, their spirit weapons were very normal too. Because Blood River world and the Virtual Universe company were after all enemies.

9 star ocean however was different!

9 star ocean was governed properly. Amongst the 9 ancient planets were many sects with undyings with universe ships. Hence in terms of weapons etc, 9 star ocean far exceeded Blood River world.

“For the Mosha Clansman killing Si Yong was already extremely hard.”

“And this punk, sector lord level 6, he probably had undyings teaching him. In terms of technique and law comprehension etc, he should be stronger than Si Yong. No only that, he is also one level stronger than Si Yong. Unless I use the golden horned beast, I would probably have no hope of winning.” Mosha Luo feng flashed time and again, fleeing further and further.

At his max speed, within a minute, he had already rushed out of the vast pathway.

Rumble!

Fleeing at his max speed, Luo Feng fiercely slowed down, he stared hard ahead. There stood an incredibly vast ice forest, with wild beasts 10m, 100m and even 1,000m tall. The smaller ones were at half a meter long, and they could be seen everywhere. With just a glance, there were at least 1,000 of them, of which some had extremely high energies, and even more terrifying than the sector lord behind.

1,000 beasts all seemed to turn simultaneously.

“Howl…”

“Howl…”

Luo Feng stared wide eyed, he didn’t dare proceed or retreat and cursed within. “I’m really unlucky, I felt that this octagon cave was different from the rest. And it really is, by giving me 1,000 beasts at one go!”

Chapter 564: Danger From All Ends

In the vast ice forest, the scenery was beautiful. Different black stone ice formed all sorts of scenery, and within it, lived a group of extremely stupid but very terrifying beasts. Some were big and some were small, and according to their size, they had formed their own territory.

This was completely subconscious.

The 1,000 beast's weakest was at a universe level, and the strongest was at sector lord pinnacle. Of which those that had reached that level, from Luo Feng's glance, there were 12 of them. And among the sector lord level 9 beasts, 3 of them were extremely majestic, one of which was 2 km long, like a giant lizard, the scales formed by the ice were clearly visible.

There was another that was humanoid form, and was 800m tall, like a giant automaton puppet beast.

The last one was a bird type beast with 6 ice wings.

These 3 sector lord pinnacle beasts each took up 3 regions of the forests, and around them were large groups of other beasts.

"I'm trapped from both ends, what should I do?" Luo Feng fiercely slowed down, shocked.

"Howl, howl..."

With a glance, within the 1,000km area, the 1000 beasts all slowly and stupidly turned to look at Luo Feng. The closest 100 to the cave entrance didn't hesitate as they roared, simultaneously flying or running, some flashing, like 10,000 horses' energy rushing towards him!

Kill!

Killing all beings that weren't beasts! These beast's consciousness and intellect were extremely simple. However, it had given countless warriors attempting demon mountain headache, there was no way to not be enemies of them.

Also.

They were a special life form, as they had no soul. Even if they were sliced into thousands or hundreds or pieces, they were still simply ice chunks. However, these special ice chunks were infused with their sole consciousness, who knows where they were actually stored in. Also, soul attacks were completely useless against them.

"Rumble..."

1,000 beasts all rushed at the same time, the ice forest rumbled, and a layer of ice immediately broke apart.

"Damn!" Luo Feng stared and gritted, "I just have to risk it!"

Sou!

He became a beam of light and clashed straight at the oncoming beasts.

Since Luo Feng's energy aura wasn't very strong, hence the 100 beasts that were attracted to him, and the strongest among them was only a sector lord level 1 or 2. The rest were either domain lord or universe level. And Luo Feng that became a beam of light, the Mosha clansman's strongest point was instantaneous acceleration!

Rumble!

Luo Feng clashed with the claw of a universe level 8 or 9 beast.

"Sorry!"

He wielded the blood shadow blade and immediately pierced angrily at this 4 clawed armored beast which was running towards him. The domain level 9 compared to a universe level 8 or 9, the huge difference in power allowed Luo Feng to instantly pierce through this beast. Rumble! Countless ice chunks broke apart and Luo Feng pierced straight into its body.

At the instant he entered its body!

"Change!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

Hua!

Black energy engulfed his body instantly and it swiftly gathered and formed a simple and cute ice formed bear! It's look was completely similar to the 1st beast Luo Feng had killed, only its height was much lower, forming only a 8m tall beast.

"Clone!"

Natural ability...cloning!

Its energy completely matched the bear beast he had killed before, actually most of the beasts had almost identical energies. The only difference was the strength level! Of course...the energy of humans and the beasts were completely different.

...

It may seem slow, in truth from the time Luo Feng reached the ice forest and met the beasts and rushed towards them.

It was like mars hitting earth!

There was a huge explosion!

Countless ice chunks shot in all directions, the ground was littered with all types of ice.

"Howl..." a 8m tall, completely formed ice bear beast with an energy of universe level 3 walked out from the explosion, letting out a low roar.

The 100 other beasts immediately slowed down and swiftly looked for its target, that human.

However, they couldn’t see it!

With intellects even simpler than a cat or dog, they wouldn’t even think about why the human had vanished. The beasts only knew one thing...since they couldn’t find the human, they turned and returned to their old way of life.

Sector lord Wu Qi had become a complete fireball, chasing his target with shocking speed.

"It must be him!"

"Universe level 9 and he was able to detect me early. And as he fled, his speed reached such unbelievable levels! He definitely has some special technique or special treasures. And these are definitely not something the warriors of the 9 star ocean have." Sector lord Wu Qi’s eyes burned with flames. "It definitely must be the target the god is aiming, only a target that the god wants to kill but cannot kill personally would have such methods!"

Wu Qi naturally understood.

A being that their 1,000 star sect leader had to kneel before and call master, what level of being was that?

And that being herself didn't dare personally kill this universe level 9 youth. Instead, using the Virtual Universe company allowed rules, she commanded others to do her bidding to kill him in demon mountain. Obviously...that youth's position must be very high, his background must be special too.

At least terrifying enough for that great being to not mess with!

Understanding was one thing.

But he had no choice, if he didn't fulfill the task, they would die immediately! Hence he could only do his best to search, and killing within demon mountain was allowed by the Virtual Universe company. He had never heard of...having to pay for killing someone in demon mountain.

"Rumble!" Sector Lord Wu Qi instantly rushed out of the cave entrance and into the ice forest.

"My god!"

He stared.

Within the ice forest, 100 beasts were slowing down, that

explosion from the clash before, the ice chunks were still landing on the ground, the 8m tall ice bear was still roaring.

"Hua!"

The hundred beasts along with the other silent beasts in the forest all seem to feel the sector lord's huge energy, turning simultaneously! 1,000 beasts, almost 99% of them all turned at the same time to look at the terrified sector lord Wu Qi that had slowed down.

"Howl..." The sector lord pinnacle lizard beast let out an earth shaking roar.

Rumble!

It was the first to flash and rush towards Wu Qi!

"Howl..."

Howl...

The other sector lord level beasts under the lizard beast, along with over 1,000 others all roared as they followed their leader, madly rushing towards the human warrior! And the tall human like beasts and bird beasts, as well as the two other sector lord pinnacles simply looked on!

One third of the beasts in the entire ice forests all rushed at sector lord Wu Qi!

"My, my god!"

The sector lord squinted, his face pale, "So many beasts?"

Rumble!

He turned and became a ball of flame, swiftly fleeing back into the caves. As a warrior of 9 star ocean, he was very clear on how terrifying the beasts were. Even though they were stupid, they had no fatal point. Even if they were cut in half, they would continue to attack.

Hence, the same level human and beast, the beast was actually even more terrifying.

Soul attacks were useless!

Even cutting them in half or piercing their heads was useless!

Howl...

The lizard beast was as fast as lightning, he led the way.

The four sector lord level beasts followed behind! And after was

the large group of domain lord level beasts howling as they chased.

"Howl..." A cute bear beast followed the large group of over 1,000 beast army, rumbling through the cave and chasing.

That ice bear, its silver eyes glanced about.

"Good."

"It's like what I expected, these simple minded beasts have taken me to be one of them. Hehe, my body build, energy etc, is completely like the beasts." Mosha Luo Feng's ice bear, within the vast army of beasts, muttered within and followed the group and chased sector lord Wu Qi.

Of course, the main force chasing him was the sector lord pinnacle lizard beast and the 4 other sector lord beasts.

The army behind was purely just following the leader.

...

Sector lord Wu Qi risked his all and madly fled. His world energy was expanded to over 10,000km area, checking on the army behind him.

"How unlucky."

"I’m only chasing after one universe level 9, and I hit the beast nest." Over 1,000 beasts, among which, 3 of them were sector lord level 9. "These 3, anyone of them can easily kill me." Sector lord Wu Qi couldn’t care less about his assassination order, he only knew he had to protect his life.

Sou!

Sou!

Sou!

Through the bends and twists in the pathway, occasionally spacious and sometimes narrow, the sector lord was incredibly nimble as he passed through the bends and accelerated.

Compared to him, the 2km long lizard beast’s running speed was obviously affected more. As the pathways were normally only a few km wide, hence it couldn’t accelerate at its full speed. Because of the pathway before, Wu Qi couldn’t catch up to Luo Feng.

And now.

Because of the same reason, sector lord Wu Qi left the lizard beast behind.

"I’ve lost them!"

"They’ve already left my 10,000km detection area." Wu Qi let out a sigh of relief as he realized the lizard beast wasn’t within his world energy area. However he still continued to flee, pressing on as he reached the end of the tunnel in one breath...the intersection of 817 caves!

"That universe level 9 was probably killed by the beasts." Sector lord Wu Qi looked at the octagon cave behind, frowning, "According to the god’s orders, I have to confirm that punk’s identity to consider the mission as a success. However the place he died is within that ice forest!"

Chapter 565: Who?

To confirm Luo Feng's death, the most important thing was to see the remains of the cloud contact vine, along with the red identification tag.

"If I enter the ice forest and get surrounded by those beasts, I'll definitely be killed. Much less him."

"But I have to confirm his identity."

Sector lord Wu Qi stood at the intersection of the 817 caves, nervous and restless.

What should he do?

Both ways were just as difficult!

"I'll first enter the virtual universe network to check with the others." Wu Qi sent a thread of his consciousness into the network swiftly.

Different from Blood River world, the 9 star ocean was an area controlled by the Virtual Universe company. Sector lords and undyings were frequently visiting back from exploring the universe, hence they had stuff such as the virtual universe network along with universe ships etc.

Virtual universe, in an ancient house.

"Bayan, Bayan."

Sector lord Wuqi sat in the chair, and a screen appeared before him. Very quickly, another black horned man appeared in it, it was the strongest one of the 6 from the 1000 star sect group, sector lord level 9 Bayan.

"Wuqi, why are you looking for me?" Bayan asked on the screen.

"I think I've found the target." Wu Qi's eyes were burning like flames.

"Ah?" Bayan revealed an expression of glee. This mission was simply like a hot coal in hands, they were very clear that the background of their target wasn't simple, however they had no choice about it. If Wu Qi had killed the target, naturally Bayan would be extremely happy, he quickly asked, "Have you confirmed?"

"There is no way to." Wu Qi shook his head.

"Why?" Bayan was suspicious.

"It's this way, I discovered a universe level 9 before." Sector lord Wu Qi began to explain the entire story .

Bayan was silent for awhile.

"You are wrong!" Bayan said.

"Wrong, where have I been wrong? Even I almost died, hence that universe level 9 would definitely have died. And to have been able to escape from me...he definitely isn't from 9 star ocean." Wu Qi was very confident.

"Yes, indeed it's very likely he isn't from 9 star ocean." Bayan said. "However Wu Qi, you've forgotten one point. This demon mountain would very frequently have high valued beings from the Virtual Universe company. These beings, are all universe level 9s, all with many of their own methods. You've indeed met one out of the ordinary, however, it may not necessarily be the target. It might very likely have been another of these beings."

"Ah..." Wu Qi was stunned.

Yes.

Bayan was right, there were many high status universe level 9s that explored demon mountain, not just one.

"Then what should I do?" Wu Qi frowned. "Should I wait at the cave entrance for a chance or continue searching."

"This way, you stay there and guard first." Bayan said. "After awhile, you can sneak back into the cave...get close to the ice

forest, carefully hide your energy and you shouldn’t be discovered. Check carefully whether there’s a cloud contact vine remains. I think those stupid beasts shouldn’t have destroyed the remains."

Wu Qi pondered for awhile before nodding.

Within the vast pathway.

The huge lizard beast, after discovering the human sector lord had vanished and chased for 100s of thousands of km to no avail, stopped.

Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou!

After awhile, the 3 sector lord beasts behind slowed down too and stopped behind the lizard beast.

"Howl..." The lizard beast raised its head and howled, causing the entire pathway to tremble.

"Howl..." The other 4 sector lord beasts raised their heads and howled too.

After which the lizard beast turned and started to return, the other 4 sector lord beast followed suit. When they were chasing the human before they were extremely fast, however they casually ran back, using only one third of their speed before.

"What’s going on?"

"Returning?"

One member of the vast army, that 8m tall cute ice bear looked around. It saw that all the beast stopped running, there were many types of them, and they all followed the leading lizard beast and returned.

Even though the lizard beast and the other sector lord beasts were returning, the over thousand other beasts weren’t completely uniform.

Most of them started to return.

Only a small group of them continued to walk about slowly, with about 10 of them continuing down the pathway, heading towards where the sector lord had fled to.

Their thought process was extremely simple.

Just like a group of little chickens running amok, most of them would run together but some would still leave the group.

"No wonder I met a single one earlier." The ice bear Luo Feng pondered, carefully observing the happenings about. "The beasts enjoy being in a group and community. However there would occasionally be some dumb enough to leave the group."

"Who knows whether the sector lord has died or not!"

"If he's dead I can leave this path. If he hasn't died, he probably would have left far away, I would still be able to leave the same way."

The ice bear slowly followed the 10 or so other beast and headed in the direction of where the sector lord fled.

The ice bear would occasionally run and then stroll.

The other 10 beasts too would occasionally use their huge ice bodies to nudge the ice bear.

...

Moving with the 10 beasts, the ice bear ran for awhile, leaving them behind.

Only then did it began to accelerate towards the cave entrance.

After awhile...

"Luo Feng, I've scanned world energy ripples! It's that sector lord from before."

The running ice bear naturally slowed down, deliberately using its body to knock into the ice walls beside, after proceeding forward a little more, he turned and headed back instead.

...

"There are beasts?" The black horned skinny man at the intersection of the 817 caves frowned, after which he let out a sigh of relief, "A universe level 3 beast."

"So stupid, using its body to knock into the ice walls?"

"Seems stupid."

He was too lazy to go kill a beast.

And Wu Qi was still afraid from before, he was afraid that the commotion caused from killing this beast would attract even more.

"Hm, it's returning."

"That's right, return to your nest." Sector lord Wu Qi smiled, that beast had already turned and left his world energy area.

...

Within the ice pathways, the ice bear slowly walked and as it left

the world energy area.

"Luo Feng, we've already left the world energy area."

"Phew."

The ice bear's eyes had a hint of vigor, "I didn't expect the sector lord to stick around."

"I was 10,003km away from the 817 cave intersection. According to the distance, I deduce that the sector lord could very likely be hiding at the intersection. This is just an assumption." Babata communicated via consciousness. "That area is very safe, the moment he discovers any beast that tried to follow him, he can immediately head into another cave. I think the beasts too wouldn't be able to guess which cave he headed into. However he hasn't left, making me suspect..."

"Suspect what?" Luo Feng asked.

"The beasts are terrifying, that sector lord is very clear on that. Him staying at the intersection, even though it's safe, there would still be the chance of beasts chasing out! The safest way is to leave far away. But he hasn't done that!"

"He's not collecting tags in demon mountain but standing guard there."

"Plus, he tried so hard to kill you before, I have to suspect...that

his true aim is you Luo Feng." Babata said.

"It’s me?"

Luo Feng frowned, remembering all that happened earlier.

Indeed, this sector lord was on high alert at the cave entrance, not daring to relax. If it weren’t for killing him, there was no need for him to be on such high alert there.

"Why would he want to kill me?" Luo Feng frowned.

For the aboriginals to join the Virtual Universe company, one way was to stay in demon mountain for a month, and the other way was to collect 1,000 black tags or 1 red tag. However with a sector lord level 9’s strength, collecting 1,000 black tags or staying 1 month there was very simple. There was no need to stand guard at the cave at all.

"Even if he suspects you are the one from the Virtual Universe company, there’s no need for him to kill you. Because, killing you wouldn’t do good for him in the Virtual Universe company in the future. Also, he has no need to."

"I deduce that..."

"Someone wants you dead or wants one of the other two from the company dead!" Babata said.

"Wants me dead?" Luo Feng's expression changed.

According to the information.

There were a total of 3 core members that had entered demon mountain.

"His target should be one of you 3." Babata was very sure. "And it's hard to say whether the other 2 entered demon note mountain. Hence, the chances of his true target being you should reach up to 50%."

"50%? Who would want to kill me? Who have I offended?" Luo Feng frowned.

"At times, some people you don't even know may want to kill you. At other times, you don't even know when you've offended others." Babata said. "I've followed your teacher for over 60 million years, I've seen too many mutual deceptions. I advise you to be very careful. This demon mountain exploration isn't that simple.

"Understood." The ice bear let out a low roar and began to return to the ice forest.

...

As the ice walls of the pathway were simply too thick, even though the surface layer could be split and broken, the several km thick rock layer behind couldn't be broken through.

Even a sector lord warrior had to flee with all his might, with no way to break through. It meant one thing...that this majestic mountain's black rock was extremely sturdy.

After a while.

The ice bear slowly returned to the ice forest. Within the vast forest, the beasts all lived quietly, and the ice bear Luo Feng didn't arouse any suspicion from the rest at all.

Howl...

A 600m long domain lord level 9 flying beast lay on the ice layer, it casually flapped its ice wings and it knocked the ice bear that was just walking past to fall and roll about. Only then did the ice bear stupidly stand back up again.

In this ice forest beast nest, the ice bear passed through many of the beasts, continuing forward.

"There's actually no way to head out from here, I can only see if there's another exit in this forest." Luo Feng thought.

The ice bear slowly progressed, occasionally letting out a low roar.

Chapter 566: Death Trap

The wild beasts groups in the ice mountain area was divided into 3.

The lizard beast, the giant human beast and the bird beast. These 3 sector lord pinnacles governed the 3 groups. The ice bear Luo Feng walked about slowly and stupidly, similar to the others. After over 3 hours, he had completely walked about the beast area.

"Damn!"

Ice bear Luo Feng let out a sigh of relief, glancing back at the vast ice forest in which the beasts lived.

"I've finally walked out of the beast group area." Only then did he relax. The initially stupid ice bear's eyes gleamed as he looked ahead.

The path ahead was still a vast ice forest.

Occasionally he would see one or two stray beasts.

"Since there's no way to return with that sector lord guarding that other route. I can only proceed forward!" Ice Bear Luo Feng occasionally ran and slowed down. At this time, he couldn't see any other beasts about, and before him was a vast endless ice forest.

This ice forest was endless!

He continued as the ice bear.

"Ang!"

Howl!

The demon note was sometimes strong and weak, invading his soul, and hypnotizing his consciousness. The moment one succumbed to it, he would become a zombie.

"This is troublesome." Ice bear Luo Feng slowed down, and his silver eyes filled with a hint of worry. "The deeper I get into the ice forest the stronger the occasional demon note."

Chi!

The formless and noiseless demon note invaded his soul.

Ice bear Luo Feng slightly trembled.

"The strength of this demon note, even normal sector lord level 3 would be immediately controlled." Luo Feng was shocked within. According to the Fantasy ocean’s islands and information, he could roughly gauge the levels of willpower and consciousness. In terms of willpower alone, he was comparable to a normal undying.

Only his consciousness was still weak, hence he was stuck at the 10th island.

And the demon note...

Didn’t have any consciousness pressure, just hypnotism! Hence Luo Feng was more proficient in withstanding it. This was the reason for him to choose the demon note mountain.

"Mi!"

A peculiar sound pierced into his soul, immediately millions of illusions appeared, wave after wave of hypnotism started. Just to go through all of these would take countless years.

"Break!"

His extreme level willpower had no compromise, he completely broke through all the illusions!

Sou!

The ice bear became a black energy flow, the formless energy took the shape of a human and finally formed the black horned youth again. He was already 100 km away from where he first discovered the beasts. Plus he hadn’t seen another beast in over 100,000 km, hence he returned to human form.

Swap!

He swapped back to his earth body, it was best he didn’t reveal the mosha body too much.

Luo Feng looked at the side of the ice mountain. "The demon note from earlier, even sector lords 6 or 7 wouldn’t be able to take it."

"How strange." Luo Feng frowned. "It’s been awhile since I entered demon note mountain, however most of the demon notes in the caves are mostly weak. Even universe levels can take it. Occasionally they could hypnotize a universe level, only very few reach up to the domain lord level. As for the sector lord level demon notes...they rarely appear!"

Looking at the vast ice forest ahead.

Luo Feng frowned, as it felt extremely peculiar. Within this ice forest...the demon note strength was too terrifying. Looking at the situation, the deeper he went...the demon notes he encountered would occasionally get stronger. If this went on, he was afraid the next one would be at the sector lord pinnacle level! Any stronger...

It would even be able to hypnotize an undying.

At that time, Luo Feng didn’t have the confidence to withstand it.

"Do I continue?" Luo Feng pondered.

"Go!"

Luo Feng gritted his teeth, his eyes gleaming. "I'm very clear of my own limits, this current demon note is still far from my threshold! I want to see...just how strong the demon note in this ice forest gets!"

He continued on!

...

As he progressed, the demon note was sometimes stronger than others, however as a whole, it was indeed stronger than before.

After about 100,000 km.

"That demon note earlier is the most terrifying since I entered demon note mountain. It should be able to hypnotize even sector lord pinnacles." Luo Feng gritted his teeth, his eyes squinting, his gaze was like a blade, piercing forward.

One's eyes were the windows to the soul.

Obviously Luo Feng was already on high alert, his willpower and consciousness were condensed to their limit!

"Still quite far from my threshold."

He continued on, maintaining his caution, and not daring to get careless.

After walking another 2,000km or so, he reached the end of the vast ice forest. Ahead were 3 familiar spacious pathways.

"Cave pathways?"

"The ice forest is over?" Luo Feng smiled, somewhat curious, "This ice forest has such strong demon notes. Are there no other secrets?"

He turned around and glanced at the 100km of ice forest, feeling that there should be something else special within.

"I'll randomly pick one."

Luo Feng walked towards center of the 3 pathways. This one was close to 20km wide, and 7 to 8 km tall. Compared to it, Luo Feng was a small dot. Like an ant walking within a human's walkway. When Luo Feng reached 10m before the entrance, he took one step and stepped through.

Rumble...

An unbelievable terrifying swallowing strength generated from the cave's entrance. The surrounding space became a visible

energy whirlpool, as the ground's ice layer itself was ripped up from below and sucked into the cave. Luo Feng couldn't react in time!

Sou!

His entire being was sucked straight into the cave! Like a huge mouth swallowing anything that came close!

"Damn, what is this?" Luo Feng stared.

"Clang!"

While he was being swallowed, a noiseless demon note pierced straight into his consciousness. Like a huge copper pot clanging about, in an instant he felt his consciousness and willpower drift almost like a small boat in a tidal storm. Each wave after wave made it feel like the boat was about to capsize.

Sou!

Because of the demon note's interference, Luo Feng was at the brink of collapse, he couldn't care about anything else, his entire being got sucked in...

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi!

From his arms thick and powerful dark red vines extended

fiercely. The vines either pierced deep into the ice walls or clung on to the entrance of the cave. Countless leaves extended into the ground surface with more vines extending as quick as lightning out!

The cave's width was about 20km.

As for the domain lord level 9 cloud contact vine, every vine alone far exceeded this little distance, almost like a big octopus with many tentacles, madly heading towards the entrance of the cave.

The strength of the plant life form was unbelievable.

"Rumble..." The terrifying swallowing strength made even the cloud contact vine, at full strength began to rip apart at its vines.

Pa! Pa! Pa!

The thick vines tore apart! The leaves that penetrated the ice layer too were plucked apart!

"My god!"

The demon note came and went fast.

Luo Feng quickly regained his consciousness, seeing the vines start to break apart, he immediately roared within, "Swap!"

Sou!

His earth body immediately became the mosha clasnman, and the mosha clasnman had already become a 30cm long, 6cm wide shuttle, it had 2 horns, it was round in the middle and smooth.

As the shuttle's size was much smaller than a normal human body, and because of its build, it made the swallowing strength several hundred times less compared to the human body before.

"Sou!"

The favored of space mosha clansman, with only 1/100th of the swallowing strength acting on it, finally broke through and flew out of the cave.

...

When the mosha shuttle was over 100m away from the cave, the terrifying swallowing strength instantly vanished.

Hua!

The shuttle became a black energy and formed a human body.

Luo Feng stared at the center of the 3 caves, recalling the scene before, trembling from within.

"Instantly attacked by the demon note, I could only withstand it with all my might. Normal sector lord pinnacles wouldn’t be able to withstand it. And that swallowing strength...only after the mosha changed form and used its proficiency in the space laws was I able to escape." Luo Feng looked at the cave ahead, filled with fear.

If he was swallowed in, what would have happened?

Who knows!

"Luo Feng!" Only now did Babata’s voice resound, "That was a typical death trap within a universe secret region."

"What death trap?" Luo Feng asked.

"In the vast universe, the most peculiar and mysterious are the secret regions. These regions are all special occurrences that evolve from the primal universe, forming many different regions. All these regions are never the exact same. And the danger levels are different too!"

"The forms of danger are different too!"

"Some are obvious dangers, even though terrifying, but it’s still good that way."

"Some however have obscure dangers, seemingly safe yet the danger suddenly occurs. Just like the cave ahead, this demon note mountain has trillions of pathways, the rest are all safe. Only when you enter one without defense, then the swallowing strength will suddenly hit you with the demon note! I dare say...within that cave, there are even more dangerous things." Babata said, "This sudden danger, without any chance to prepare or defend, make these considered death traps."

"Who knows how many undyings!"

"How many geniuses with bright futures!"

"How many great beings have fallen in the death traps!" Babata said.

Luo Feng was shocked.

He suddenly remembered his teacher True Yan who spoke of an absolute genius that was able to kill an Official level undying when he was sector lord pinnacle. However, that absolute genius finally still fell within a secret region.

"Even though the absolute beginning region was controlled by the Virtual Universe company, there are still some special places that even they cannot fully control." Babata said. " Just like the Blood River world, and the depths of this demon note mountain, they are like that! You need to be extremely careful. Back when I followed your teacher, I've seen too many such situations, too many warriors dying like this. These death traps...some carry huge

treasure troves, but some are truly dead ends!"

Luo Feng nodded.

After which he turned to look at the left and right caves.

"I cannot head back. That sector lord is standing guard!"

"Ahead of me, there are 3 caves, among which I cannot enter the middle one.. But, which of the other two should I go to?"

Chapter 567: Domain level 9 Opponent

With 3 paths ahead and no way back, Luo Feng once again became a shuttle shape and tried the cave on the left.

"Ah?"

"There’s no swallowing energy, and no such terrifying demon note." The flying shuttle within the cave flew a 100,000 km in one breath, finally reaching the end of the cave. Ahead were 38 other caves, simultaneously there were 3 bodies.

"Someone has already been here."

"Looks quite safe." The shuttle returned to human shape. Surely he couldn’t simply just fly around in that form, if he were to be seen by others they’d be shocked.

3 days later.

In his earth body in the black horned youth shape, Luo Feng carefully progressed, and he felt relaxed within though.

Ever since he entered the left cave after leaving the ice forest, he hadn’t met such a precarious situation, and everything was very normal. Just like when he first entered demon note mountain, he would occasionally meet another warrior or a lone beast, and the demon note wasn’t that strong.

"It seems like the ice forest area was indeed special." Luo Feng recalled the episode from before. "The deeper I went into the forest, the stronger the demon note, until the end of it. There I encountered the swallowing cave and the strong demon note....after that, there hasn't been any danger."

That cave was an end point.

"I still feel that cave had some secret behind it." Luo Feng thought so.

"What are you thinking about? That swallowing cave from the ice forest?" Babata's voice resounded.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"I knew you'd think about it, right! Danger often accompanies miracles...these death traps are very terrifying. The dangers will hit wave after wave, however if you survive it, you might get a shocking reward." Babata said. "This is also why many great beings enjoy exploring secret regions."

"However, you have to know your limits."

"The number of treasure troves the universe has produced is countless, however many absolute beings have all fallen to these places." Babata said. "Your strongest golden horned beast hasn't even stepped into the sector lord level. And you wish to try these death traps? Even undyings have fallen. As for you, your death

percentage is over 99%, unless you are truly just simply lucky."

Luo Feng awoke.

The entrance alone was that terrifying, he probably wouldn't be able to deal with and take what was inside.

"You can only do as much as how strong you are! If you are greedy, you will die."

Luo Feng looked at the endless cave head of him. The cold permeated his body, he couldn't help but feel tiny, compared to the many mysteries of the vast universe, his power was simply too weak and small. Even undyings fell all the time, he was only an ant compared to the undying.

"Hard work!"

"Only after becoming a true absolute warrior, one of the many in the vast universe, will I be able to control my own fate and protect my family and home." Luo Feng took a deep breath, "Onwards!"

...

Within the depths of the cave.

A skinny 2.6m tall bamboo like man with 2 long silver horns on his head was present. He almost looked like a mountain goat, and

he seemed cold and old. As he lay on one of the ice sculptures by the side, his eyes gleamed with gold light, as his nose releasing comfortable snorts.

"Harder, harder."

There were two aboriginal youths, one with crossed legs, another one was massaging the shoulders of that old man. Beside them stood 12 either clean cut, or handsome, or simple looking or brave looking youths. There were universe levels and domain lords.

"Hm."

The skinny goat like old man opened his eyes and smiled at the crossed legged universe level youth before him, "Come here."

"Elder." That universe level youth cleared his throat.

"The elder asks for you." A domain lord level man beside ordered.

That universe level youth approached nervously. The old man smiled, extending his skinny hand and grabbing the youth's, complimenting him, "Youth sure is a different thing." The universe level youth seemed completely uncomfortable all over, he shuddered and quickly retracted.

"Interesting." The skinny old man smiled. His powerful world energy pressured that youth, almost like a rope binding him, leaving him unable to move at will, he dragged the youth before

him.

"Just kill me, kill me." That universe level youth suddenly shouted out, tears flowing from his eyes.

"Brave, if you are truly brave, you can kill yourself." The old man suddenly turned and looked into the distant cave. There a black horned youth was walking, he suddenly stopped.

The two of them had a distance of 100km.

However at this time, they could clearly see each other.

"Hm, hehe...another universe level 9 punk, with an alert gaze, reserved, and firm. I can't even feel a sense of fear? Prized goods are what I like the most." The skinny old man smiled. "Kamulu, personally go and catch him for me."

"Yes teacher."

Besides, the strongest domain level 9 man respectfully complied and became a beam of light shooting forward.

...

Luo Feng saw the distant skinny old man, especially the energy he emitted, feeling danger, "Sector lord, about level 6 or 7."

Flee!

Luo Feng turned and fled!

"Whoever my elder likes, don’t think of escaping." The silver horned man’s silhouette was like lightning, swiftly chasing, "Little punk, relax. My elder won’t kill you, he’ll take care of you!"

Luo Feng’s expression changed, his goosebumps stood up.

Perverted!

A punk that liked guys.

In the universe, with trillions of races, there were many that liked men. However the majority of the races in humanity still favored the men and women path...that was the main path! And those that liked men, even though Luo Feng felt uncomfortable with it, he didn’t bother himself with it. However now that it was right before him, how could he not be taken aback?

"Haha, Luo Feng, I didn’t expect you to meet such a situation." Babata said.

"That perverted old man." Luo Feng cursed, "Seeing the universe level 9 youth besides him, he should be one of those captured by him, sick."

Sou!

Behind him the domain level 9 silver horned man swiftly chased.

Hence, even though their initial distance was over 100km, with the chasing, it immediately became a few thousand km.

"Don’t resist, otherwise I might hurt you unintentionally. When that happens, the elder will be upset." The silver horned man immediately rushed towards Luo Feng.

"Go and die!" Luo Feng’s eyes were cold.

Sou!

He swapped his bodies and instantly the mosha clan took Luo Feng’s appearance. Because of this his goosebumps were already standing, hence he was too lazy to use his human body to kill him, his earth body relied on the cloud contact vine, even though he was able to kill a domain level 9, it would still be troublesome and take awhile.

For the Mosha clansman, it was much simpler!

Sou!

Illusionary techniques!

Luo Feng instantly reached behind the black horned man and his blade flashed!

Chi!

It cut right through his chest and split apart the armor, and split right through through the life core. The silver horned man stared wide eyed. "This, this..." The originally weak opponent had vanished and killed him, while he couldn’t defend at all.

"Sick." Luo Feng glanced at the body, he flashed and fled.

...

The old man lay there frowning, "Hm, "Why hasn’t Kamulu returned?"

"Teacher, maybe that universe level 9 refuses to submit and senior has to use some strength." Another domain lord level youth beside said.

"Hmph."

The old man gave a low snort, he extended his world energy a bit more, until it reached the body of the silver horned man.

Rumble! The goat like old man’s eyes raged, he waved his hand violently and the universe level youth he was toying with earlier

immediately exploded, becoming a mess of meat and flesh. This scared the rest of them as they dodged far away.

"My Kamulu, whoever killed you!!!"

"I will kill him!!!"

The old man roared and instantly became a beam of light, extending his world energy out. However with Mosha Luo Feng's speed, he had long fled from the cave, how would the old man be able to find him?

Luo Feng had fled 1 million km away, through 7 pathways before he finally stopped.

"Even though I've heard and seen before. However these warriors that favor men...actually tried to catch me, truly sick." Luo Feng glanced back. "My strength still isn't sufficient, if I have to unleash the golden horned beast. This cave however is only a few tens of km wide, with the golden horned beast's shocking length....it wouldn't be able to move properly at all."

"Forget it."

He shook his head, he couldn't be bothered to think of it anymore.

If he had the strength, he would definitely retaliate and kill him.

...

Half a day later.

Luo Feng sat on the ice to rest, sending a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe network, playing with his wife and children. Primal chaos city's 30 years training (Actual universe 100 years), plus Blood River world's 80 years, the many years had huge changes within Luo Feng's family.

"Luo Feng, 19.2 km ahead, there's a domain lord level 9 man progressing." Babata's voice resounded.

Luo Feng's thread of consciousness immediately returned to reality.

He looked up ahead.

Very quickly, a domain lord level 9 man's silhouette appeared, his body was short and tough, with a couple of black horns.

"Another domain lord level 9?" Luo Feng shook his head.

"Hm?" 10 or so km in the distance, the short man saw Luo Feng, his eyes seem to gleam with ferocity.

Chapter 568: E9 Laser Gun

"Universe level 9?" the short man Pa Tuo looked at the black horned youth ahead of him, immediately smiling coldly, "Punk, it's just your bad luck that you met me!"

Pa Tuo.

He was one of the 6 from the 1,000 star sect, one of the Official 6 that Po Yu picked, amongst which 3 of them were sector lords and the other 3 were domain lords level 9. He even gave them those items... the 3 E9 grade laser guns for the domain lords. Obviously, Po Yu's hopes were on the 3 domain lords, and Pa Tuo was one of those 3.

These past few days, he had been very careful. His only worry was entering a dangerous spot and being hypnotized.

Simultaneously.

All this while, he had been randomly slaughtering many universe levels and domain lords. The moment he met a sector lord however he would flee. However, because one actually chased him down, he didn't hesitate to use the E9 laser on him. It's power was terrifying, instantly killing the sector lord.

"Even sector lords who meet me would die."

"The feeling of having this laser sure is thrilling. It's a pity that I

can only use it for a short time. When I leave demon note mountain I would have to return it to the god." Pa Tuo couldn’t bear to. He was very clear about the value of the laser gun. Even if he sold his entire fortune, he wouldn’t even get a hundredth of it!

Pa Tuo laughed coldly at the black horned youth ahead.

"Punk, if you want to blame anybody, blame the god!"

Sou!

He became a beam of lightning and rushed at Luo Feng, ready to begin his 762nd kill in demon note mountain.

...

Luo Feng, who was walking along the cold ancient cave saw the distant short man. "Domain lord level 9? No threat! Hm? He’s actually rushing over. If you had any warrior honor and didn’t try to bully a universe level 9, I wouldn’t even try to kill you. However now, don’t blame me..."

Luo Feng’s mental state was just as before.

He never placed a domain lord level 9 as a threat. Afterall the cloud contact vine was already domain lord level 9.

"Rumble!"

Luo Feng stomped on the ground and the condensed ice layer split with cracks, he rushed towards the short man.

"Clang!"

He brandished his blade!

...

"Haha, a universe level 9 punk actually making a move against me." Pa Tuo's eyes flashed with coldness. His body engulfed in lightning, he wielded an arc blade, instantly reaching before Luo Feng and the blade became a demonic blood and green colored moonlight.

Hua!

The light flashed at Luo Feng's head.

"Good bladework." Luo Feng smiled. His body floated and he actually got 2 to 3m close to Pa Tuo, the blade flashed gorgeously.

Illusionary 7 blades...Dutchman's pipe.

"Dang!"

As the 2 blades clashed, the originally confident and smiling manically Pa Tuo suddenly changed his expression. He felt an unbelievable force when their blades had clashed! Such a force that even he a domain lord level 9 couldn't withstand, his arm went numb.

"How can that be?"

"He, he..." Pa Tuo's thoughts immediately erupted within. "He's only a universe level 9, how can his blade be so strong!"

Domain level 9 and universe level 9.

The difference was an entire level!

Quantity wise, it would be about 1,000 times in difference. In theory, just a single attack should have destroyed him.

"There's definitely no such sick person within 9 star ocean. Don't tell me he's a person with background from the Virtual Universe company?" Pa Tuo's mind was filled with thoughts. From what he knew, only an assisting life form would be able to help a universe level 9 explode with such power.

Assisting metal life form, plant life form, energy life form etc, these could be equipped.

The moment they were equipped, it allowed the user to unleash extraordinary power.

"Don’t tell me he’s the target of the god, the reason behind his strength is because of the cloud contact vine?" Pa Tuo suppressed his glee within, "Even if it wasn’t because of the cloud contact vine, he definitely has some assisting life form! Within demon note mountain, there are extremely few people with such background. The chances of him being the target is extremely high."

"Kill!"

"I’ll use the laser to kill him!"

...

As the two of them clashed with their blades, many thoughts flashed within Pa Tuo’s mind. He instantly decided to use the E9 grade laser on him. Because from what he saw, even if this wasn’t the target, he was still some big figure.

The 1st thing to do was to create some distance: "Hurry and create distance!"

"Dang! Dang! Dang!"

The moment Luo Feng drew close, with the movement of the dutchman’s pipe, he became extremely terrifying.

The close flashes of the blade were indeed heavy. Pa Tuo wanted

to dodge and flee but Luo Feng's blade was simply too terrifying. Hence, he couldn't afford to be distracted.

In the blink of an eye, the both of them had already exchanged 10 clashes.

"Chi!"

Both of them were separated.

As Pa Tuo retreated, he let out a sigh of relief. "I've finally found a chance to flee. This punk's bladework is like a madman, slashing at super close distance, it's just madness."

Luo Feng however was shocked within. "The cloud contact vine is afterall an assisting life form, adding to my strength when I equip it. However, the strength is after all not mine. When I use it, it's obvious that I cannot use it perfectly. Even my bladework cannot reach the pinnacle effect, otherwise when he fled earlier he would at least be injured!"

A thought simply flashed through his mind.

"You wish to flee?" Luo Feng roared as he rushed forward, "Dream on!"

Pa Tuo became a beam of light swiftly creating distance, smiling manically at Luo Feng.

"Hmph!"

With the cloud contact vine equipped he couldn’t fly as fast. Luo Feng frowned, he waved his hand and 18 thin vines extended from his arm. They grew longer and got thicker. The 18 dark red vines instantly became 10m thick, like 18 terrifying pythons, and on them were several leaves and thinner vines. They headed towards the domain lord level 9 fighter Pa Tuo!

"Die!" Luo Feng couldn’t be bothered to chase.

"Haha, it’s indeed you!!!" While fleeing, Pa Tuo let out a mad laugh. As the 18 thick vines madly rushed over, he brandished an automaton device!

It was a pure silver white item, from a glance, it was like a small cannon.

The barrel had reached a startling 1m!

Its length was 3m, and on it was an energy channel, along with a handle, a little thing that could be operated with one hand. This automaton weapon was obviously much more exquisite and delicate than Luo Feng’s star annihilator, which was a single person’s weapon. However the quality and fear generated from its barrel, the automaton weapon was that terrifying.

"Di!"

There was a warning light on the back groove of the weapon, and the light was already bright red. Obviously it was activated the moment Pa Tuo had taken it out!

...

Luo Feng used the cloud contact vine, its thick vines were like thick pythons wrapping towards the opponent. The automaton weapon the opponent brandished however made him stunned.

"What's that?" Luo Feng was shocked.

Laser gun?

It wasn't that he hadn't seen a laser gun before. Back in the world within a world he had seen one, however the construct was obviously different.

"Flee!!!"

"Luo Feng! Danger!" At the instant the laser gun appeared, Babata's piercing voice resounded within Luo Feng's mind. "That's an automaton E9 grade laser gun, and it's the xth series E9 grade. A top class E9 laser gun, which is able to prepare within a short 0.1 seconds. The moment it's ready, it can instantly unleash a terrifying laser! Even E9 grade alloy materials would instantly be pierced, normal sector lord level 9s without special items would instantly die!"

Luo Feng’s heart suddenly twitched!

His hairs were all standing!

He stared wide eyed!

He stared at the opponent’s automaton metal object. That, that is actually an E9 grade laser gun?

A sense of fear he had never felt before caused his soul to tremble. Even when he met a sector lord before, he had never been such a precarious situation. Even back in the swallowing cave, even if he was swallowed in, he didn’t know if he would die from that. Hence he never felt such fear before!

At this time!

It was a true life or death moment!

The moment the E9 laser gun fired, his 3 bodies, the domain lord level 9 mosha clan and the golden horned beast wouldn’t be able to withstand it. As his body’s strength were far from sufficient! Naturally the golden horned beast was huge, as long as it didn’t hit any vital spots there was still hope of survival.

However the cave as too small, its body was too huge and couldn’t even appear within!

And to dodge that laser with speed?

That was even more unrealistic, because even the fastest of the 3, the Mosha clansman, at its maximum speed, was still very far from light speed. And the instantaneous speed was even further from its own max speed! The laser shot from the gun would instantly reach the limit of the actual universe...light speed!

In such close distance, locked on!

Light speed shot!

One's consciousness wouldn't even be able to react, how could he possibly dodge?

Chi!

Chi!

The domain lord level 9 fighter wielded the E9 grade laser gun, another with the arc blade flashing and dodging and knocking away the cloud contact vine. Even though the cloud contact vine was powerful, it was after all still domain lord level 9. In terms of level it was the same with this fighter, and the opponent was purely defending and dodging.

The cloud contact vine may be able to kill the opponent, but to

kill him within 0.1 seconds was simply unrealistic.

"Di!"

The thick laser gun’s warning light turned from red to green.

0.1 seconds had passed!

Storing complete!

While being chased by the thick vines, Pa Tuo’s expression was struggling. Suddenly, he stopped and faced the barrel straight at Luo Feng. This pinnacle automaton device, the E9 grade laser gun automatically targeted the distant Luo Feng.

"Go and die!" Pa Tuo laughed manically and immediately pushed the button.

Chapter 569: Threat of Destruction

"There’s no other way!"

"I can only risk it all!" Luo Feng’s eyebrows were burning. His eyes filled with madness, "Babata, take out the automaton ship!"

"Understood!" Babata didn’t dare hesitate.

Rumble!

A 1,200m tall silver white pyramid appeared in mid air. In times of such danger, this majestic automaton ship blocked Luo Feng within the frozen cave.

"Hahaha..." Pa Tuo laughed madly, pressing the button!

A glaring light speed E9 laser shot out of the gun. It was extremely glaring, and just the energy alone was higher temperature than a normal star. If it were a normal person seeing it, he would instantly go blind.

Chichichi...

The thick red vines that were blocking, were like tofu being shot through immediately! They didn’t have any chance to block it at all!

"Rumble!"

The super laser hit the body of the automaton ship. This entire ship was made of a peculiar silver white alloy. When the terrifying laser that had enough power to pierce through a planet hit, immediately...chichichi, a dent appeared in the surface of the pyramid, almost like the surface of the alloy was melted. Simultaneously, light flowed continuously throughout the surface of the pyramid, that light energy seemed to be quickly absorbed by the ship.

This automaton ship was a ship ridden by an automaton undying!

It’s body material was made from a pinnacle E grade. This was more perfect than any built by humanity, and it also had auto regeneration! The surface of the ship could absorb attacks. It could be said that...as an e grade pinnacle ship, with its absorption and regeneration abilities.

Unless an undying decided to attack it, nothing else could present a threat to this ship.

Of course Luo Feng had suddenly brought it out without anytime to prepare its energy shield, if the shield was active, it would be even safer.

...

Even though it didn’t pierce through the ship, however...not piercing through was even more terrifying!

Because light was formed from light particles.

And the mass of light particles wasn’t zero! Accurately speaking, light was also a matter. Because normally, light along with the weaker lasers, as long as the particles do not gather and condense together, the mass usually isn’t that huge! However...this was a beam capable of piercing a planet!

A beam capable of killing a sector lord level 9 warrior!

The particles contained in this beam were too huge. Although every particle was extremely light, lighter than a feather, however...when trillions of them gathered together, they had enough power to pierce a planet. Hence, to kill a sector lord level 9, the mass of this beam was terrifying.

"Rumble!"

The beam that was extremely hot and heavy hit the ship but didn’t pierce through!

Hence, the powerful force created by the beam...

Caused the entire automaton ship to immediately fly backwards!

...

The lasers built on earth back then were mostly relying on high temperatures to kill beasts. And the laser guns in the universe etc, as their powers got stronger, tens of thousands, hundreds of millions to trillions of times...continuously rising, resulted in the lasers not only having high temperatures but with high physical force!

Normal laser shots would produce a cavity.

However since the automaton ship blocked it physically, it lead to the ship enduring the entire physical force!

...

As it got hit, it swiftly followed the direction of the shot and flew in that direction!

Just like a billiard ball, after getting hit, it would shoot in the same direction.

The ship was flung in the direction of the laser, and as the laser was originally locked onto Luo Feng, the ship was like a billiard ball flying backwards straight at the target Luo Feng!

"Mosha clansman!"

"Change!"

Luo Feng quickly fled to the wall of the cave for support, simultaneously switching to the Mosha clansman to quickly grow bigger. This was almost like a huge piece of rubber, with a hollow center, the human body stayed within this center. This huge rubber leaned on the back of the cave walls.

Rumble!

The ship hit by the laser crashed into the rubber. That terrifying physical force smashed into the rubber and instantly, the mosha clansman fought hard to make itself incredibly soft but sturdy, but due to the sheer force however, the rubber began to split apart!

Rumble...a portion of the force flowed through the rubber straight into the wall behind, causing the entire wall to tremble and shake.

The ice layer split apart and cracked in all directions, and countless ice shards fell from the walls.

The incredibly solid black stones also began to split apart, and some of them started falling down, as the entire pathway shook. Since the high temperatures generated from the contact of the ultra laser and the ship was something much hotter than even the sun, the ice layers around began to melt, as steam engulfed the area.

Not caring about anything else.

Luo Feng's mosha body had formed into a huge mass of rubber. That rubber was completely torn apart and within the core hollow part of that rubber...the strong vibrations that caused even the space to warp had created a force that hit his earth body!

Rumble!

His earth body was wearing a F grade silver armor! Even if the laser hit him straight on, it wouldn't pierce through.

Weng...

His earth body was hit by the force, his body shook violently. The cloud contact vine on the surface of his skin began to crack apart, after which his skin split apart too. Fresh blood flowed out of his broken bones, eyes, ears, nose, and all his bones were instantly shattered!

Silence!

"Damn it." Luo Feng howled within.

That painful howl!

Why he didn't let his earth body enter the internal world at that critical moment, this was because...the earth body's surface had

the cloud contact vine, and he was wearing an F grade armor. These were all layers of protection! That terrifying force, after passing through the mosha clansman, about 30% of it was wasted on the ship, 30% on the wall and 30% on the huge rubber formed by the mosha clansman.

Only about about 1%, maybe even one thousandth entered the earth body!

Even that was weakened, as it went through the armor!

It went through the domain lord level 9, which was a powerful and yet flexible life form! The remaining force only completely broke the earth body's bones, destroying his organs. But at least it didn't break through the essence like the mosha clansman.

If it weren't for the armor and cloud contact vine weakening it, the earth body's weak and frail body would have had even his cells destroyed! The situation now was still good.

Because...

The mosha clansman's core, the life crystal and Luo Feng's true core were both within the earth body.

The life core was extremely solid.

And the true core was even sturdier. The final force didn't even destroy the earth body, naturally the true core was completely

fine.

"Earth body return to internal world!"

"Mosha clan, gather!"

Instantly, the completely disabled earth body and the heavily injured cloud contact vine vanished and the life crystal released a strong black energy, swiftly forming the Luo Feng body...mosha Luo Feng!

Sou!

Mosha Luo Feng's silhouette flashed and rushed towards the domain lord level 9 enemy Pa Tuo.

"He must have died!" Pa Tuo wielded the E9 laser gun. Seeing how the huge automaton ship had crashed straight into the human silhouette, even though it seemed like he saw a huge mass of rubber appear, but he still deduced...the enemy must be dead!

That was an E9 grade laser gun!

Such a level of weapon, it can't kill just a universe level 9 little punk?

Sou!

Luo Feng appeared right before him.

"You!" Pa Tuo’s expression changed.

Chi!

The blade which was infused with space laws flashed so fast, that he couldn’t even react. It split him straight in two, that blade also hit the life core and instantly broke it.

Pa Tuo died!

"Pa!" The E9 laser gun fell from his hand onto the ground, hitting the high temperature melted ice below.

"Hu!"

Luo Feng stood there, watching the body that was split in two, looking at the water that boiled around from the high temperatures, and the large amount of steam, he couldn’t help but feel fear after.

"It’s simply too terrifying."

"If the automaton ship’s defenses weren’t enough, it would have been pierced and it would hit me."

"Without the ship to cushion the blow, if the laser had hit me directly, my armor, even though its F grade alloys, the force generated from the laser would have still shook me to dust." Luo Feng was very clear the armor didn't have much use.

This was also why the genetic armor was much more expensive, and this armor was cheap!

Just like how a person wearing a solid armor on a highway, if he was hit by a huge car he would still be flung! Maybe the armor would be fine, but the person would be killed by the force!

A person in an elevator, if the elevator suddenly fell and hit the ground, it may be fine but the person would probably be dead.

Same theory.

A solid armor can defend against special situations, however against such terrifying force, it had little use.

"Luckily!"

"Luckily it worked." Luo Feng sat on the ground. The boiling water and temperatures around were at least a few hundred degrees. And this was also only because there were countless ice layers about within demon note mountain, hence the temperatures weren't so high.

Mist engulfed the area.

Luo Feng’s gaze landed on the silver white, simple designed E9 grade laser gun.

"E9 laser gun?" Luo Feng held his breath.

This was a true ultimate killing weapon!

Especially with its 0.1 storage time, it made this laser gun extremely terrifying!

Chapter 570: Fat Sheep

Luo Feng flashed and knelt beside the E9 laser, picking up the seemingly simple automaton piece of work.

He touched it’s peculiar sculpture, this was very similar to his silver white pyramid ship. However, he could feel that this laser gun’s material was somewhat better. It may seem like just a gun, but it felt even more terrifying than the large cannons of earth.

The barrel of the gun was only 1m in diameter. In the vast universe, a few universe ships main cannons, their barrels were at least 100s to thousands of meters.

This 1m in diameter barrel, in the universe, it was indeed considered only a gun.

"Luo Feng, this is an E9 xth 122 series laser gun that only the automatons can build. It’s reputable for its small size and short preparation time." Babata communicated mentally. "You should know, that technological weapons, even though humanity is proficient with it, the most it can create is a weapon capable of killing a sector lord level 9. As for creating one to kill an undying, humanity cannot do it."

Luo Feng nodded.

Indeed, from sector lord to undying, that was an evolution in essence.

Humanity could at most create an E pinnacle grade alloys, and F grades are metals already produced in the universe. Creating weapons are the same too, after reaching E pinnacle, there hasn't been a way to breakthrough to create stronger weapons.

The automatons were different!

Automaton's were the origin for the technology of the universe, and all of its people were Living AIs.

They could even create weapons capable killing of undyings!

They could create F grade comparable alloys! And these alloys had better qualities than the same grade pure metals.

Just like when Luo Feng was in the Yun Mo Ship back then, seeing the automaton undying's corpse, that corpse was a simple alloy body. Even that alloy was comparable to F grade metals, and for an alloy body to reach such level of flexibility and sturdiness etc, perfection, it was indeed an unbelievable thing.

This, was something only the automaton race could do. No other race could do it.

"A weapon capable of killing an undying, only the automaton can build one." Babata continued, "Of course, those levels of weapons are extremely pricey. The automaton undyings, even only a few of them can own such terrifying weapons."

Luo Feng nodded.

His own automaton ship was equipped with an E3 grade laser cannon and a star annihilator. Even though the power of the star annihilator was huge, its preparation time was too long, and definitely not suitable for close combat. As it was so huge, it was not suitable for a person to carry it either.

"Same power, the smaller it is, the more expensive! The shorter the preparation time, the more expensive!"

"This E9 grade laser, it’s so small and its storage time is so short, it can be said to be the bane of sector lords." Babata said, "Even amongst the automaton race, this is rare. Your teacher back then never got such an item."

"How expensive would it be?" Luo Feng asked.

"It’s priced at about 5,000 mixed elements." Babata said, "To undyings, it’s not considered too expensive, the problem is that it’s considered a rare item. Even with money it’s hard to buy, unless one is willing to pay few times the original price."

"So expensive?" Luo Feng stared.

5,000 mixed elements was more expensive than even an automaton ship.

"Right, this laser gun can be considered a family heirloom." Babata said. "Imagine having one of these in the family. If a sector lord enemy every flew into your territory, the moment the galaxy security system picks up on the sector lord, you only need 0.1 seconds to prepare and the moment he gets close, kill him in one shot. The sector lord wouldn't even be able to react!"

Luo Feng nodded.

Right.

The star annihilator was powerful, however it required 60 seconds to store the energy before firing. With the sector lord pinnacle's speed, one second alone was enough for him to fly 10s of thousands of km to reach the territory's headquarters. Hence the star annihilator can only be considered a massacre weapon during an attack! And the E9 laser gun, whether it was carried about or as a treasure for the race, country, it was heavenly!

"From today onwards...." Luo Feng rubbed the gun in his hand, feeling the coldness from the weapon.

"I've got another trump card."

The mosha clansman's instantaneous speed is shocking. With it wielding the E9 grade laser and its shocking speed, surviving 0.1 seconds is too easy, once that passes...I can kill the enemy in one shot!

...

Luo Feng kept the gun in his space ring, after which he checked the frozen body.

Even though the ice around had melted and boiled around because of the high temperatures, this was after all demon mountain! Very quickly the cold from around had reached all about, in 10 seconds, the boiling waters once again froze over and became ice. The vapor around too formed an ice layer.

"Pa!" His one step broke through the ice and he took the space belt from Pa Tuo's body.

"I wonder what he has on him." Luo Feng used his spirit energy to invade it and scan.

With Luo Feng's perspective, normal treasures didn't entice him at all. This Pa Tuo's entire family fortune was far from even 1 mixed element.

"Ah, there are over 3,000 black tags here." Luo Feng was happy with the surprise of so many black tags. The many tags floated before Luo Feng, black and huge, every one of them represented at least a universe level's life.

Over 3,000 lives!

"Demon mountain, indeed stands for a new lease on life." Luo

Feng shook his head. "I hope my tag never becomes another person’s spoils." With a wave he kept all the tags.

Including this unexpected reward.

He had collected a total of 4320 black tags.

...

Sou!

Luo Feng swiftly flew to the distant automaton ship and carefully checked it, the dent caused by the laser shot earlier was already almost gone and looked like it was new again.

"Looks like it’ll be perfect again in awhile. The memory regeneration of this alloy is not bad." Luo Feng complemented within. "Babata, keep it in your storage space."

"Understood."

The automaton ship that had fallen and had its surface frozen over immediately vanished.

Within the caves, Luo Feng seemed like an ant carrying a blade and swiftly making his way forward.

"Even a lion hunting a rabbit has to give its all!"

"If I meet a troublesome opponent, I'll immediately switch to the mosha clansman to settle it." Luo Feng walked and reflected on the battle before. The reason he was in such danger before was because he didn't initially treat the domain level 9 as an opponent, resulting in such danger.

As he walked, he frowned.

"Babata." Luo Feng shouted within. "That fighter that wanted to kill me, he shouted, "It's you. And he even took out an E9 grade laser gun that even undyings rarely own..."

"Firstly, that fighter was only an aboriginal from 9 star ocean. In theory, he couldn't have acquired that gun." Babata said, "To acquire that gun, it probably was an undying. And one with a huge background! And he only said It's you when he saw the cloud contact vine, along with the sector lord that was after you before..."

"From everything, I can deduce, some huge figure is trying to kill you!"

"This person gave the laser gun to the domain lord level 9 and told him about your specialties...having a domain lord level 9 cloud contact vine."

"And the sector lord after you before, guarding that cave, he

should be the same."

"From this I can deduce!"

"This person that wants to kill you, probably arranged for more than 1 person to kill you. There are sector lords and domain lords with laser guns." Babata explained.

Luo Feng squinted.

Who wants to kill him?

He didn't feel like he offended anyone.

"Powerful figures that want to kill you probably have some upper level grudge." Babata explained, "My guess is that there are three kinds, first is a sect battle, second is a personal grudge, and the third is a race battle."

"As the Virtual Universe company's every knight owns his own sect, you would eventually belong to the 9 blade knight's sect. If the sect battles get intense, and someone views you as a potential threat, he would try to take the chance to get rid of you. However...these sort of genius assassinations, are very despicable, the sect feuds must be pretty big."

"The second reason is personal grudge. You are True Yan emperor's disciple. Anybody who has a grudge with True Yan may implicate you. Similarly, those who dare do such a thing must have

huge grudges, otherwise they wouldn’t take such risks."

"The final reason is race battles. The human race has intense battles with other races, a few warriors may have invaded other races to assassinate the geniuses of others, this is common."

Luo Feng nodded.

Three possibilities.

"Luo Feng, as you get stronger and your position rises, unbeknownst to you, you might offend others, or others may want to kill you over nothing. These numbers will keep rising." Babata said, "Hence you have to be more careful."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

He couldn’t die!

The moment he died, the weak foundation of the humans of earth would immediately change. The shockingly rich Ping Hai corporation would quickly gain the attention of others too and their outcome would be unpredictable. Afterall, even though it was within the Virtual Universe company, the company was too huge, it had too many firms and corporations within.

This was a power even bigger than a universe country.

...

Luo Feng was even more cautious as he proceeded. Anybody he met who was a domain lord level 7 and up he quickly settled with the mosha clansman, and anyone below, he used his earth body to swiftly settle.

Even though he was careful, killing others was hard to avoid.

Very quickly, his black tag count reached 4831.

...

On the 75th day of arriving in demon mountain.

Luo Feng who was carrying the blood shadow blade walked along the cold pathways. Suddenly he squinted, staring in the distance, about over 90km ahead, there were two universe level youths lifting a handmade exquisite bench. In it lay a skinny goat like old man, who would occasionally snort, and besides him were another 5 youths who were following him.

"It’s him?" Luo Feng squinted, "That old fart?"

Chapter 571: Elder Jinyang

The skinny old goat man squinted his eyes, lying on the bench and occasionally snorting.

"Ever since Kamulu's death, our days have gotten better." Among the two universe level youths lifting the bench, the one in front who looked resolute with drooping eyes muttered within. "This Elder Jinyang, I've long heard of his bad reputation. I didn't expect to actually land in his hands here. I have to bear with it, just awhile more. He seems to be extremely upset by Kamulu's death, hopefully I can make it through!"

Elder Jingyang.

A reputable sector lord within 9 star ocean. His reputation was mostly due to his preference for men, the disciples in the sect were all his boy toys. And Kamulu was his biggest disciple and most favorite. He had sent Kamulu out earlier to kill Luo Feng, but was actually killed instead, this made him extremely upset.

"Kamulu, my Kamulu." Elder Jinyang sighed within.

"Teacher!"

"Teacher, there's someone ahead!"

A voice shouted from beside.

"Hm?" Elder Jinyang opened his eyes quickly. With a glance, he swiftly saw the silhouette over 90 km away clearly, that short haired youth with black horns, wearing a silver armor.

"It’s him!" Elder Jinyang’s eyes gleamed, the memory from before flashed through his mind. Back then he had casually sent his great disciple Kamulu to capture Luo Feng, but who’d have expected his favorite disciple would never return again. Hatred boiled within his chest, and his expression immediately grew struggled.

"Little thief!"

He roared fiercely, "Return my disciple’s life!!!"

Rumble!

That beautiful well carved bench immediately exploded, causing the two universe level youths to dodge in fear. Elder Jinyang became a beam of golden light and flashed towards the distance, chasing after the hated thief Luo Feng.

...

"I actually met this old fart again." Luo Feng saw the distant silhouette. Without hesitation, he immediately swapped to the Mosha body.

As the elder roared and flew over, Luo Feng fled as well. However

he deliberately slowed his speed.

"Thief!"

The elder gritted his teeth and his voice resounded beside Luo Feng's ears. The surge of world energy pressed down on Luo Feng, "Now that I've actually found you, haha, you'll die. Go and be buried beside my disciple Kamulu.!" The elder roared as he swiftly got closer to Luo Feng.

While fleeing, Luo Feng pretended to be trying his best to flee, his eyes seemingly filled with fear.

However within he was absolutely calm.

"Luo Feng, that sector lord level 7 is 18.2 km away from you." Babata's voice resounded.

"Hm, that's about enough." Luo Feng calculated.

Sou!

In his hand the silver white gun appeared. It was about 3m long, he brandished it and immediately pressed the button, immediately the light at the back turned a bright red.

"That's..." the elder's world energy was spread out, he immediately discovered the gun within the fleeing thief's hands.

Elder Jinyang was afterall a sector lord!

The upper echelons of 9 star ocean all normally had universe ships or some AI's etc to connect to the virtual universe. Through the virtual universe, the elder naturally knew of the value of laser guns. However, he had no way to determine what grade it was.

"This little punk is giving off a universe level 9 energy. However his fleeing speed is comparable to a domain lord level 9, and he killed my domain lord disciple Kamulu..."

"And now he's taken out what seems like a very high level laser gun."

"He's definitely not from 9 star ocean." The elder swiftly deduced, "And the Virtual Universe company frequently sends out a few high position and status people to enter here, and these are all universe level 9s. This punk here may very likely be from the Virtual Universe company."

Elder Jinyang was shocked within.

"Against a sector lord, he actually dares to take out a laser gun. He definitely thinks he can kill me with it, or at least threaten me." He was getting nervous within.

A sector lord level 7, his conscious calculation speed, just how fast was that.

Many thoughts flashed in his mind in an instant.

"Flee!"

He didn’t dare gamble, he turned and became a beam of gold light, swiftly fleeing.

"Trying to flee?"Mosha Luo Feng turned at this point and chased.

Sou!

Sou!

Sou!

In the winding caves, Luo Feng’s speed instantly rose greatly by 10s of times. Compared to the domain level 9 speed before, he reached a speed that exceeded most sector lord’s instantaneous acceleration! Maybe most sector lords, after accelerating to their limit would be faster than the Mosha clansman.

However the instantaneous acceleration was much lower.

"How did he get so fast suddenly?" The elder’s world energy sensed Luo Feng swiftly catching up, immediately his expression changed greatly, "He, he, he was purposely baiting me earlier!"

At this, the elder understood that he fell into a trap.

The opponent could easily use that movement to escape, yet he had pretended to be slow. Without a doubt, this was a trap!

"I can’t run, what do I do?" The elder was panicking.

Chi!

He immediately used his world energy to press the E9 laser gun in Luo Feng’s hand, however he couldn’t activate it.

"Idiot, would the automaton race weapon have such an obvious loophole, to allow the enemy to use his world energy to control their weapon." Luo Feng laughed coldly within. While single handedly carrying the laser gun, higher level energy weapons all normally had their own AI systems. Even the normal ships of humanity had these, much less a E9 grade laser gun.

After taking out the gun, one first had to set one’s authority.

Only after which can it be used.

Luo Feng acquired the gun after killing that domain lord Pa Tuo. He specially got Babata to study it and invade it’s AI, completely changing its authority to himself.

"Lord."

"You, you must be a big figure from the Virtual Universe company. Spare my life, I have offended you!" A sharp voice resounded in Luo Feng’s ears.

Di!

The warning light on the E9 laser gun turned green, the storage was complete.

"Old fart, go and die!" Luo Feng’s movement was demonic. With just two flashes, he closed their distance to about 800m, he gently pressed the button.

The laser gun automatically locked on its target.

Chi!

A glaring white light shot from the barrel. While it shot out, it had already reached the sector lord level 7 elder Jinyang.

"No..." The elder stared wide eyed, the corners of his eyes split, filled with fear, madness and hate. He tried his best to dodge, pouring his world energy into his genetic armor to protect himself, even using the world energy to form a projection around as a shield.

Rumble!

Under the glaring and burning white light, the genetic armor dispersed all of the attack throughout the elder’s body, causing his entire body to instantly crumble. Simultaneously, the armor too burned through, from his neck to his feet, everything was reduced to nothing. Finally the force of the beam caused both his head and feet to burn from the high temperatures, with nothing left behind at all.

The white light continued its path towards the distant wall, immediately the walls shook, countless ice melted and later began to boil, forming white mist.

Hua la...

The space around shook. When the sector lord died, large amounts of items appeared and landed about. These were all items stored within his internal world that crumbled after his death.

"So poor." Luo Feng glanced, "Black tags!"

The black tags were in the distance, and many of them scattered throughout.

"Collect!"

Luo Feng collected all the black tags and valuable treasures. As for the messy remains that were lying about, for a core member

like Luo Feng, with the Virtual Universe company supplying with him so much more, naturally he couldn’t be bothered.

"Killing a sector lord really gives so many more tags. Once I include the batch before, I’ve already exceeded 7,000 black tags." Luo Feng couldn’t help but reveal a look of shock. "I never intended to collect the 10k black tags, however, now I’ve already got over 7000."

The stronger one was, the more tags he would acquire.

Pa Tuo who owned the laser gun before had killed a sector lord and others, hence he had many tags. This Elder Jinyang was strong, hence he had many tags too.

"Maybe I’ll really be able to acquire over 10k black tags." Luo Feng smiled, instantly becoming a beam of light and vanishing.

...

As his days in demon note mountain got longer, Luo Feng gradually realized the danger! One day while he was sitting crossed legged, with his consciousness in the virtual universe studying the 3rd volume of time space scribbles, as he was immersed, he didn’t move for 6 consecutive days in the cave.

Then...

He realized, after not moving for 6 days, he actually was attacked

by 3 terrifying demon notes. These 3 were capable of hypnotizing sector lords, especially one, which was enough for even a sector lord level 7 or 8.

"Luckily my consciousness is strong, and I picked demon note mountain."

"If I had picked Ice mountain, I would have long not been able to withstand anymore." He was shocked within. If it were someone else and not him here, that person would long have become a zombie.

...

On the 109 day in demon note mountain.

Rumble!

A distant rumble resounded from the distance.

Luo Feng who sat crossed legged had become a ice statue, he opened his eyes and the ice layer broke apart. He stood up and turned to look in the distance, "There's someone?" Following the explosion from far, very quickly, a 300m tall gorilla beast was chasing a universe level 9 youth.

That youth was clad in gold armor, his movement was demonic.

"Hm?" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, "Primal region universe level member Mo Luo?"

The Virtual Universe company's primal region universe level member, there were 3 originally, Once the new geniuses Bolan and Long Yun were included, that made 5 of them.

And Mo Luo, was one of the 3 seniors within!

Chapter 572: Mo Luo

Because of the upcoming qualification battles, the universe level primal region members and their specific information had been collected by Luo Feng.

In terms of strength, the 3 seniors of the primal region were much stronger than the Mother Flame race Sa Jin Fire dragon he had defeated before. At least now, within the qualification battles, he had no confidence of defeating any one of them. In reality however it was not definite.

Amongst the 3 seniors, Luo Feng actually had the most respect for Mo Luo.

Mo Luo came from the distant South Fox universe country.

Originally an orphan of a barren planet that was the remains of war, alone without a name or identity, later the Mo family owned over a 1,000 life planets in territory and found a barracks to nurture its own death army. However during the process, Mo Luo displayed unbelievable talent...hence he was quickly absorbed by the family and given the family name Mo.

Since then, his name became Mo Luo!

After receiving the family's full nurturing, his improvement grew even more absurd!

Very quickly, even the elder of the family, a universe level 9 warrior had nothing left to teach him. Not long after, Mo Luo was discovered by members of the Virtual Universe company stationed within his region, and was immediately absorbed in as a special elite by the Virtual Universe company.

The absorbed elites of the Virtual Universe company had to compete amongst themselves too.

Very quickly, he was absorbed as an internal core member. During that same year, he passed the sky mountain and entered the Sky and land region.

After which!

After two qualification battles, he made his way into the primal region! Becoming one of the high and mighty primal region members.

...

Luo Feng and the others were accepted as core members through the genius battles. Mo Luo however was one that gradually rose through the ranks after being absorbed as elites.

Hence he had respect for this Mo Luo.

The first reason was because of his hardship and history.

The second reason was because of his battle techniques, his self created Beast fist!

Fighters mostly use blades, swords, guns, axes, rods etc, all sorts of weapons.

Mo Luo however relied on his body, his fists and feet.

"According to teacher True Yan emperor, most begin by learning techniques used by the earlier generations. As one's law comprehension rises, one will discover parts of the techniques that don't suit himself...hence he would create one. This process was incredibly important." Luo Feng was very clear on this because almost 99.99% of undyings would create their own techniques suited for themselves!

These techniques, creating them as early as possible wasn't necessarily the best way.

When one's law comprehension is weak, it's not wise to create techniques, as the weaker the comprehension, the easier the techniques would stray from the true path.

This Mo Luo however with his Beast Fist, even True Yan had complimented it.

Luo Feng had seen footage of him using the beast fist, he was filled with respect.

Within the icy cold cave, the youth dressed in golden armor jumped from side to side exchanging lightning fast punches with the huge gorilla beast.

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

The cave shook with ice layers splitting apart, as the gorilla beast roared and punched madly, waving his huge palms about. The golden armored youth was incredibly nimble, as fast as lightning, dodging time and again. However in terms of speed, it was obvious that the gorilla was much faster, very quickly, he reached the youth in a big step.

"Big punk!" The golden armored youth looked up.

Howl...

The gorilla slapped violently.

Sou!

The golden armored youth actually stood his ground. As the palm was about to hit, only then did he dodge at the last moment. This made the gorilla immediately stop its wave and flipped his hand for another attack, in that instant, the youth swiftly flew upwards.

"Fly!" The youth grabbed on to the 10m long finger of the gorilla

and violently flung him!

Rumble!

The 300m tall gorilla was thrown off the ground, heavily smashing into the ice ground. Rumble...such a huge thing, almost like a little mountain smashing into the ice layers, breaking through many layers of ice, causing the surface to split apart.

And as the entire beast was flung from one finger, naturally the joint of that finger was broken.

"Pa!" The golden armored youth once again used his strength to sever that finger off.

Howl...

The gorilla roared with rage, climbing back up and waving his palm.

...

The not too distant Luo Feng was shocked as he watched the scene, "While moving, his entire body is like water, wrapping about the finger. The moment he unleashes his strength however, he actually uses the gorilla's strength against him and throws the entire beast. And like adding oil to the flames, breaking off the finger after. How wonderful and unbelievable at the same time."

It looked simple.

However against a mountain like palm, Luo Feng questioned himself, whether he would dare invite the palm in to grab that one finger.

He didn’t have such ability!

"Mo Luo, universe level 9, gold armor. This was a domain lord level 9 metal assisting life form." Babata said, "That beast has an energy level of sector lord level 2. From his combat skills, his body moves as one, he can probably already unleash 100 times his normal force."

The undying altar, was a test of one’s exertion, 100 was the limit.

"However it’s useless!"

"The most terrifying thing about the beasts are that it won’t die even from heavy injuries." Babata said.

Luo Feng nodded, even if the beast was cut into pieces, it would still slowly regenerate. During the battle between Mo Luo and the gorilla, the beast was getting injured constantly, however it still maintained the upper hand.

"I’ll help him out." Luo Feng smiled.

"So troublesome." Mo Luo stood on the gorilla's head and muttered, "No matter how heavy the injury it's still useless!"

PA!

The gorilla's palm waved past and Mo Luo flashed, running around its huge body.

Suddenly...

A silver white pyramid appeared in the distance, a gleaming white light glowed at the top of the pyramid.

"Laser cannon?" Mo Luo stared, so shocked he immediately did 3 flashes and dodged far away.

Chi!

A light beam with a diameter of 200m flashed past the gorilla beast, it's huge body immediately lost half of it, leaving behind only it's head and legs, the rest were completely melted. Half of the light beam too was lost after melting the entire beast, the remaining half landed on the wall behind, melting a portion of it.

Automaton ship...E3 laser cannon!

Whether it was the 9 E3 laser cannon or the 3 star annihilators on

the ship, they all had huge barrels. Like the E3 laser cannons, the light beams it shot out could be controlled from 30m to 3000m.

"Automaton ship?" Mo Luo looked on in shock.

The ship swiftly vanished and a black horned youth walked over, only his facial features had returned to its original appearance.

"Mo Luo." Luo Feng shouted.

"Luo Feng?" Mo Luo looked in shock at Luo Feng, "You've also come to demon note mountain?"

"You are here, why can't I come?" Luo Feng smiled.

Mo Luo was very shocked, since the qualification battles were upcoming, he had done his homework too on who would become his opponent. Naturally he had taken notice of Luo Feng! Because Luo Feng was simply too intrepid. Plus, Even though he hadn't been in the Virtual Universe company for too long, and he had already defeated Sa Jin Fire Dragon! This level of improvement definitely had pressure on the others!

Howl...The gorilla's head on the ground actually still let out a low roar.

Mo Luo looked at the head and his expression changed, shouting, "Luo Feng, let's move quickly! Quick!"

Sou!

Mo Luo swiftly fled!

Luo Feng was suspicious, but he too became a beam of light and swiftly followed.

...

Mo Luo was ahead and Luo Feng followed, the two of them continuously flew through 3 caves before stopping.

"Luo Feng." Mo Luo landed on the ice and smiled at Luo Feng, "I've long heard of your reputation. However I've never met you before, I didn't expect to be able to meet you here in demon note mountain."

Luo Feng nodded, after which he frowned, "Right, Mo Luo, why were you rushing to flee earlier."

"Ah."

He shook his head helplessly, "It's like this, earlier not far from where I encountered the beast, there was a beast nest. For the past two days, I've been chased by the beasts and have been trying to escape. However...relying on myself, I couldn't even settle the beast earlier. Universe ship? The straight flight speed of the ships

are fast, however through the winding caves, having to slow and speed up constantly. It cannot even compare to me relying on my metal life form."

Luo Feng nodded.

The universe ship's acceleration were generally slow and required time before reaching light speed.

Of course his automaton ship was much better with quick acceleration, but it still paled in comparison to the mosha clansman's instantaneous acceleration!

"And my ship doesn't have that kind of fire power like yours." Mo Luo shook his head, "Hence, I've been in a deadlock."

"Beast nest?" Luo Feng nodded.

He had encountered once too, the beast nest was indeed terrifying.

"Anyway, I don't dare enter such a place again." He shook his head and looked curiously at Luo Feng, "Luo Feng, how long have you been here, have you met any dangers?"

"Not even 4 months." He replied, "Not as long as you."

Before he even entered, there were already 2 core members here.

Obviously now he can confirm one of them was Mo Luo.

"Looks like you wish to stay all 3 years too." Mo Luo's eyes gleamed, exclaiming, "This demon note mountain is seriously dangerous, especially the demon notes. Luckily I've found a pattern. Otherwise I'd long become a zombie."

"Pattern?" Luo Feng looked at him.

"To survive this long, you haven't discovered the pattern?" Mo Luo asked.

Luo Feng was stunned.

Other than the terrifying swallowing strength of that one cave, the other demon notes were no threat to him, hence he never noticed a pattern.

"The 1st point, don't stay in a spot for too long. As time passes, the strongest demon note attacks will get even stronger." Mo Luo smiled, "This much you should know already, even the aboriginals know this."

Chapter 573: Roar in the Abyss

"Hm, this much I know." Luo Feng nodded.

Hu!

Li!

The piercing howls of the wind pierced straight into one's heart and soul. Luo Feng and Mo Luo however chatted as per normal.

"The 2nd pattern is also the reason I've been able to survive till now." Mo Luo smiled. "I've separated the demon notes mainly into student, star traveller, star, universe, domain lord and sector lord levels. Luo Feng, you should have realized the main demon notes in this demon note mountain is mainly around the star traveller to domain lord level!"

Luo Feng nodded.

Indeed, rarely would one encounter a sector lord demon note!

"The pattern I've discovered is!"

"Where there's a star level demon note! Then that area would also have a universe level demon note!"

"Where there's a star traveller level, then there would be a

domain lord level demon note!"

"Where there's a student level demon note, that would have a sector lord level demon note." Mo Luo's eyes gleamed, saying with full confidence, "Wherever the demon note is weakest, the higher the chances of there being an extremely strong demon note!"

"Ah?" Luo Feng was stunned.

In his mind he swiftly recalled the many places he had been in the past 100 days. Because these past few days, only the demon notes in the ice forest were actually a threat to him. As for the other places...he hadn't really bothered, from student level to sector lord, these demon notes had no threat to him at all, hence he didn't bother to figure out the pattern.

Now that he thought about it carefully!

With his AI comparable memory and calculation speed, he swiftly recalled the places where he felt the demon notes.

"Right." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

Indeed!

There were some places where the demon note strength was simply just star and universe level. Some were at star traveller and domain lord level. Very few places had student and sector lord level. As time passed, the distribution of the demon notes would

shift, forcing everybody to keep moving.

"However these are all useless to me." Luo Feng thought within. "The demon notes in this mountain, normally reaching the sector lord level is already quite rare. Unless its like that mysterious cave! Hence...other than those places, they have no threat against me."

...

Luo Feng and Mo Luo, the two core members of the Virtual Universe company proceeded forward.

"Luo Feng, we'll split after this cave." Mo Luo said as he flew. "There are trillions of caves in demon note mountain, we'll pick different ones. If we stick together, one would have to yield to the other sooner or later. I believe you won't enjoy that either."

"Haha...alright, we'll split ahead." Luo Feng nodded.

If he stuck with Mo Luo, he would have to be extra careful when using the mosha clansman.

Sou! Sou!

The two of them swiftly flew for a while came out of the pathway.

"Hm?" Luo Feng looked shocked.

Ahead was a vast ice field, and on it were huge pits. Every one of them were different from another, the large ones were up to 100km in width while the small ones were just a few km. However one couldn’t even see the depths of these pits, only that they were endless.

Luo Feng and Mo Luo landed.

"What is this place?" Mo Luo carefully walked to the side of a pit.

"Not clear." Luo Feng walked to the side too. This pit...it may be called a pit but in fact, they were like abyss as one couldn’t see the depths at all.

Luo Feng turned to see.

A vast field!

In this vast ice field, the abyss could be seen everywhere, countless.

"Something’s not right." Mo Luo frowned.

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

The two absolute geniuses of the Virtual Universe company carefully surveyed their surroundings, simultaneously feeling a

strong demon note attack.

"Rumble!" Mo Luo who stood beside Luo Feng, without any warning kicked fiercely. This kick was like a volcano explosion. That golden boot smashed into a shocked and unprepared Luo Feng's waist. Infused with the strength of the domain lord level 9 metal life form, this caused Luo Feng to be knocked like a bullet into the abyss.

Luo Feng only felt an incredible force hit his entire body and even though there was the defense of the cloud contact vine, Luo Feng still spit out fresh blood from his mouth.

Chi!

Fresh blood!

Hua! Hua! Hua! Hua! Hua! Hua!

Thick red vines fiercely extended from his arms, the vines were thinner but quickly grew thick, they madly extended to catch Mo Luo.

Rumble!

The abyss began to produce an unbelievable swallowing energy, just like when Luo Feng encountered that cave back then. Besides the shocking swallowing energy, a noiseless demon note pierced into his mind. At this time, the cloud contact vine, knowing its

master was in danger, couldn’t care less about Mo Luo who had flown far away. It quickly expanded to grab the side walls and ice.

"Ya!"

"Break!"

Luo Feng quickly recovered from the demon note attack. Compared to the last swallowing cave, this demon note was slightly weaker.

"Mo Luo!" The corner of Luo Feng’s eyes split, and his eyes flushed red He roared at Mo Luo who had flown many km above the abyss.

Why?

Why did Mo Luo suddenly attack him?

He had such respect for Mo Luo, and they were both Virtual Universe company members. Also, he had thought that this person had no ability to harm him! Indeed...in a true sneak attack, Luo Feng who had his other bodies couldn’t lose, however at this time...

"Luo Feng, this is demon note mountain, even if I kill you, it isn’t a crime." Mo Luo coldly looked at Luo Feng below, as a sound rang in Luo Feng’s ears. Simultaneously an exquisite looking gun appeared in Mo Luo’s hands.

"Laser gun." Luo Feng's expression changed.

To dare to take out a laser gun, he probably has a guarantee of killing him. Then, this should be an E grade laser gun.

"C6 grade laser gun." Babata's voice resounded.

Chi!

Mo Luo who was high in the air shot a beam down into the abyss. This beam was over a 100m away from Luo Feng, it pierced deep down. After which Mo Luo fled as fast as he could, swiftly disappearing in an instant.

Suddenly kicking Luo Feng into the abyss, shooting a beam of laser deep into it and disappearing.

Describing it slowly, this whole process actually took no more than 0.1 seconds! The preparation time of that C grade laser was simply 0!

Rumble...

The terrifying swallowing energy worked on his body.

Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!

The vines, under the pressure of the energy began to rip apart. Luo Feng however didn’t have a thread of fear within, his eyes were only filled with rage and anger. "That Mo Luo actually, he actually! Since he wants me dead, then I’ll kill you myself!!!" Looking up, such a proud absolute genius actually resorted to such a trick to kill him.

"Mosha clansman!"

"Change!"

Luo Feng instantly vanished and switched bodies, he became a shuttle that tried to fly out.

Suddenly...

Howl...

A roar occurred from the abyss, simultaneously the space about the shuttle began to ripple and the terrifying swallowing energy worked on it.

Its speed decreased.

"What?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"Change!"

The shuttle became a thumb sized awl, yet the energy still remained as strong as ever, pulling it down!

"Change!"

The awl then became a huge stone that filled up the entire pit, however the energy was just as strong, it continued to fall lower, causing sparks as the stone dragged along the sides, large amounts of rubble falling.

"Change!"

"Change!"

...

Luo Feng instantly tried many forms, however no matter what he did, the force exerted on him was still the same. And as he fell, that terrifying howl from below...made one's heart tremble.

"It's him, Mo Luo!" As he fell, he remained calm. He recalled how Mo Luo had shot his laser into the abyss, back then he was suspicious...why would he use a C grade laser to shoot in, it had no power whatsoever.

Now from the looks of it...

Mo Luo’s shot was probably to awaken the spirit of whatever was deep within the abyss. That spirit had a swallowing ability similar to that of the golden horned beast. It now consciously worked on Luo Feng’s body, no matter what form he took, the force was just as strong.

And if it were simply just asleep or dormant, the casual amount of swallowing energy like how it was at the cave before, Luo Feng could have easily become smaller and escape.

"Mo Luo must have been clear on the situations here, hence he deliberately did that." Luo Feng raged within.

"Change!"

Luo Feng who was constantly falling did one final change into an ice bear.

The ice bear fell down and entered the abyss.

"There must be way to survive, there must be." Ice bear Luo Feng instantly disappeared into the depths of the abyss.

...

After a while.

A silhouette flashed and stood at the side of the abyss, gazing

down below, it was Mo Luo.

"Luo Feng!"

His lips curled into a smile, looking at the terrifying endless abyss. "You sure are stupid. Since this is demon note mountain, me killing you...its no crime at all! With your talent, even if during this qualification battle you are no threat to me, however the next time, or in the future, you'll eventually threaten my position."

"It's better with less people who would threaten me."

"This path to the top, I will stop at nothing." Mo Luo said softly. From an orphan in a war ridden world, to the terrifying death soldier training and factions, all these had changed his rules.

Sou!

He swiftly vanished and left the ancient abyss. Just like how it had been for a trillion years, no one knew, that the absolute genius Luo Feng of the Virtual Universe company had been swallowed in!

Chapter 574: Abyss World

Luo Feng was sucked into that abyss and was falling quickly.

Hu!

The air howled in his ears, as the ice bear Luo Feng watched the frozen walls beside him flash past him as he fell. He quickly pondered on what to do within. He's tried all methods to break free. No matter what he changed to, it didn't matter. And as Babata had told him before, "Luo Feng, the swallowing energy is too strong. It's stronger than even what the automaton ship is able to unleash. Even if you use the ship, you wouldn't be able to escape!"

Ice bear Luo Feng looked below at the dark abyss, all he could do now was prepare and gamble for a chance of survival!

He descended!

Non stop!

...

Quite a bit of time had past, yet he was still descending, this made him shocked within.

"Just how deep is this abyss? It's much deeper than the pits in

Blood River world, and was at least 100km deep." The winds howled madly in his ears as he continued to descend. He had no way to resist the swallowing energy, and he could only let himself drop. And as time passed, it made him think of other things, many scenarios popped up in his mind.

"Mum, dad, honey, Ping Ping, Little Hai, Ah Hua..." Luo Feng muttered within.

He looked down at the bottomless abyss below, seeing nothing but black.

"Why am I thinking of my family at this time? Looks like even my subconscious is thinking I might really die here." Luo Feng was clear that ever since he was kicked into the abyss by Mo Luo, he understood that he was in big trouble. Especially when the Mosha clansman was unable to break free of the swallowing energy, when he fell in,

This time's danger was much worse than that of Blood River world!

Deathtrap!

Some death traps in the universe secret regions, Babata had told him earlier, he too was extremely clear...

"My chances of survival this time must be very low." The ice bear Luo Feng took a deep breath, his eyes solemn.

Facing death itself, Luo Feng had no fear!

Maybe since the day he chose to become a warrior...

Or the time he chose to sacrifice his life together with the golden horned beast...

Or the time he chose to leave the safety of earth, or become an absolute warrior of the universe...

He had long prepared for death!

"There are countless warriors risking it all in the universe. Yet, only 1 out of a trillion make it to undying!" Luo Feng looked at the darkness below, "Ever since I began this journey, I've long made preparations for my death. However...if there's any chance of survival, I will fight hard to make it!"

"Mo Luo!" Mo Luo's appearance flashed in his mind.

"Indeed I didn't think of you as a threat, or as an enemy, because I respected you and didn't wish to be your enemy. Also, I thought that you wouldn't be so stupid as to make a move on me. Not only that, because of my self confidence, I believed you weren't a threat to me." Luo Feng thought, "However I now understand...There is no way to find what's in a man's heart, I cannot easily trust others or be too self confident, allowing myself to be arrogant!"

Yes!

In Luo Feng's heart, Mo Luo's actions before were stupid.

Maybe...relying on such methods he thought he could get rid of Luo Feng, getting rid of one less genius that was a threat to him. This way, he would have more time to remain in the throne of the primal region! However from Luo Feng's point of view, this was simply stupid, this was simply his own mental state wavering.

Because he had trained his mind, Luo Feng was very clear.

The truly strong had to have confidence in themselves! Only with that would they be able to stand at the pinnacle. If one didn't even trust themselves, by using such devious plans to blackmail or harm others, just how many could they get rid of? The path to becoming strong, the ones competing weren't simply Luo Feng and the newbies, there still were the other sector lord pinnacle geniuses, and the trillions of races in the universe...

Countless geniuses, how many could he eradicate?

One had to believe himself!

Strengthen himself, that was the path of the strong!

Getting rid of enemies, that was simply stupid, that was already a fault in his own thinking.

The moment one wavers...

Then he was set to never become truly strong!

"Mo Luo, if I don’t die from this, you’ll regret this for the rest of your life." Luo Feng looked down below.

Sou!

The ice bear Luo Feng descended with shocking speed down the dark abyss.

After quite awhile...

"Luo Feng, there’s a rock ice layer below!" Babata’s thought reached Luo Feng.

Rumble!

Ice Bear Luo Feng was as fast as a shooting star, in less than 0.001 seconds he closed the distance of 20 km. The two thick paws smashing into the ice layer, caused it to shatter and split apart, the distant ice layers too shattered. Below the ice layer, the thick rocks however simply shook, without a trace of damage.

"Howl..."

"Li!"

All sorts of ear piercing howls resounded from all directions.

After descending fast, he finally reached the bottom, and the seemingly silly ice bear sat on the broken ice layer and looked around. In all directions, as far as he could see...be it big or small, human shaped or beast or plant forms etc, there were many beasts, he couldn’t see the end of them!

Countless beasts all on a winding ice mountain.

The silly ice bear slowly stood up, seemingly stupid but filled with fear and shock.

"My god, there are so many beasts. I can’t even see the end of them, this endless mountain range probably has over 10,000 beasts." Luo Feng was shocked within. He didn’t expect that there would be a beast nest at the bottom of the abyss. "Right, how was the swallowing energy produced earlier?"

"Luo Feng! Be careful! 6.1 km ahead there’s a beast, it’s energy is comparable to an undying!" Babata warned him in shock.

"Undying?" Luo Feng was shocked.

The silly bear looked around.

"Where is that beast, 6.1km distance? There's no beast in my 6.1km area, in the distance there's only a mountain, and on it are countless beasts." Ice bear Luo Feng communicated with Babata.

"Stupid! That ice mountain is a beast." Babata said.

"My god."

Luo Feng was shocked.

The silly bear maintained its silly composure, following the other beasts and casually walking along the ice layer. However it clearly saw this continuous mountain range ahead.

"The ice mountain is a beast? This ice mountain, just from a glance, is at least 1,000km." Luo Feng muttered.

Damn.

In terms of size, this ice mountain was probably not smaller than earth, however, it was actually a beast?

...

The ice bear continued to walk in this vast abyss world, it was incredibly vast. The number of beasts probably ranged in the trillions. If the first nest he discovered earlier was a river, than this

deep abyss world’s beast nest was like a vast ocean!

Beasts in the trillions!

He frequently bumped into sector lord level beasts. Even occasionally bumping into huge beasts with energies comparable to undyings! These undying beasts were all extremely huge. The smallest was at least a few thousand km, the largest couldn’t be seen end to end.

"Phew!"

From an ice tree that was a few hundred km thick with the diameter of the top being a few thousand km, suddenly countless branches shook, producing a terrifying swallowing energy, causing some of the holes above to madly swallow.

After awhile!

A black horned man fell through and immediately caused the large amount of beasts to howl, up to tens of thousands of beasts roared and rushed over, "Ah!" A piercing scream resounded as the man fought for a few seconds before being trampled and smashed into nothing.

Howl...

The beasts all roared excitedly, amongst them an ice bear roared too.

"My god." Ice bear Luo Feng glanced at the remains, shocked within, "Luckily I became the ice bear and descended. If I came down in my human form and surrounded by so many beasts, how would I survive?"

Even sector lords that came here would die without a doubt!

In the dark abyss world, Luo Feng roamed for over 3 days. He had discovered the trillions of beast, and among them were many sector lords and huge undying level beasts, and there were over 20 of them!

"Luckily right now I'm a beast too." Ice bear Luo Feng shook his bottom, amongst the countless beast, he slowly roamed.

He didn't dare do anything out of character, following the other beasts about, because he didn't know...in this abyss world, whether there were any other great beings undercover.

"Careful!"

"I cannot be careless."

"I rather waste more time and slowly progress than make a wrong move." Luo Feng wandered about slowly within the abyss world. However even slowly, he actually travelled over 100k km in a day.

...

In the blink of an eye, two months had passed and Luo Feng had survived over two months in that abyss world.

"It’s really boring here in this abyss world. Only beasts live here, and the more peculiar thing is...there aren’t even any demon notes." Ice bear Luo Feng roamed helplessly. Demon mountain was split into demon note mountain and ice mountain, and for this demon note mountain to have such a vast area without any demon notes, that was indeed strange.

"What’s that?" Luo Feng gazed into the distance.

There, a glow of gold light could be seen.

As it was too far, he couldn’t see it clearly.

"I’ll head over!"

Luo Feng continued to move slowly forward. After a few thousand km, amongst the beasts, he looked up into the distance. There were many floating palaces. While he seemed stupid in appearance, Luo Feng was actually shocked within.

"Floating palaces? Palaces that emit gold light?"

"Within this vast abyss world there’s countless beasts, which

makes sense. But now there are even floating palaces?" Luo Feng looked on carefully, and with a glance there were about 32 floating palaces. Every one of them was about 10km in diameter, and every one of them glowed gold.

Amongst them, about 23 of them were covered in white light, like a net, completely engulfing the 23 palaces.

"Ang!"

"Wang!"

Weak and little sounds emitted from the floating palaces ahead, without any attack prowess. This however made Luo Feng’s soul feel extremely comfortable.

Chapter 575: Undying

32 palaces were glowing gold, and were floating in the endless abyss world. Among these palaces, 23 of them were covered in white light barriers, but the rest of them did not have these barriers.

"Howl."

"Ao!"

The beasts everywhere all looked up at the floating palaces, almost as though they were attracted by them. Sou! Sou! Sou! The many beasts all flew into the sky towards the palaces.

Peng! Peng! Peng!

The beasts clashed into the white light that enveloped the palaces and fell straight down, smashing into the ice layer and splitting it apart. These beasts then stupidly stood back up, and a group of them actually jumped up again and flew towards the white light.

Clash! Fall! Stand back up and jump again! Clash! Fall again...

Some of the stupid beasts seemed to have only muscle in their brain, only after consecutively failing many times did they finally give up.

...

Ice bear Luo Feng too looked up at the 32 palaces.

"32 palaces, 23 of them have white light." Luo Feng looked up. The beasts were attracted toward these 23 lit palaces, like moths to a flame. As for the other 9 that didn't have a protective layer over them, the beasts that flew towards them easily passed right through.

"I'll give it a shot!"

Luo Feng prepared his fat and bulky ice bear body and jumped.

Sou!

One could only see the gold light within the palaces covered in white light, one could barely see anything else within.

"Peng!" The ice bear clashed into the light and fell, landing with a crash into the ice layer, before slowly climbing back up.

"The strength of the barrier is shocking, my clash didn't even affect it at all." He was shocked within, "Even when the sector lord level beasts crashed into it, it didn't even affect it."

Sou!

Luo Feng once again jumped up, his one jump was a few hundred km high. This time however, he headed towards one of the 9 palaces that wasn't enveloped in white light.

Resplendent gold light!

Hu!

Ice bear Luo Feng headed straight into that majestic floating palace.

The entire palace was built simply.

At the center was the majestic palace, and around it was a rock plaza, where beasts were casually lumbering about, some even standing within the plaza.

"Hm?"

As the ice bear Luo Feng landed in the plaza, he immediately felt the temperature change. "The temperature is changing? The temperature here...is definitely not as cold as before." Simultaneously he observed the construct of the floating palace, which was separated into the palace and the plaza. And both of them were built with the black stones. There wasn't a hint of ice within.

The surface of the black stones even had strange engravings within them, these engravings were all in gold!

Countless gold engravings were imprinted within the walls of the palace and the plaza.

The glaring gold light shot out from these engravings.

"What mysterious law engravings!" Luo Feng looked at them and felt a sense of wonder, "Babata, record them."

"Understood."

At this time...

All the walls of the palace and the plaza suddenly shot out a dreamy light, countless amounts of light passed Luo Feng and swiftly gathered within the palace, forming an incomparably mysterious engraving picture. After it had completed, it became a layer of white light.

This white light enveloped the entire palace.

"What." Luo Feng was shocked as he turned to look.

"Peng!"

"Peng!"

He saw a few beasts jump at the light from outside and crashed into it before falling.

"Before, there were only 23 of the 32 palaces that were covered in light. All of a sudden, this palace has been covered too?" Ice Bear Luo Feng looked about, the beasts in the plaza were either still roaming about, sleeping, or just messing around, they didn't seem to even notice the suddenly light.

"Hm?"

Ice Bear Luo Feng carefully headed towards the light and reached the side of the plaza, extending his claw in.

Chi!

His claw passed right through without any resistance.

"Ah?" Luo Feng relaxed within, "It stops outsiders from getting in, but there is no resistance from within, I seem to be able to leave without any resistance."

Luo Feng kept his claw and turned to look at the huge palace.

The plaza was about 10km in length and width, the palace was about a quarter of the plaza.

Howl...

A translucent flying beast with 8 wings was casually flying towards the entrance of the palace. This beast was about domain lord level 8 in strength, formed completely from ice, it looked beautiful under the gold light. As it reached closed to the entrance.

A black shadow flashed!

"Boom!"

Something smashed onto the beast's body, this over 100m long beast was knocked so hard it immediately exploded. Countless ice shards scattered all over, while some bits passed the light barrier before flying back out.

"Hm?" Luo Feng was shocked as he held his breath and watched.

There at the entrance stood a gorilla beast that seemed to be formed from the black stone. He wielded a similar black long rod, on it were mystical gold engravings. The gorilla wielded his rod and glanced outside, his gaze sweeping past the beasts before he turned and returned into the palace.

"Stone life form?" Luo Feng was shocked.

There were many life forms in the universe.

Metal, plant, flesh and blood, energy, what was life? Anything

with intellect was considered life. And these beasts...the special beings produced in demon mountain's environment, couldn't even be considered life forms. Because they had no ability to think at all.

"There are stone life forms in the palace. However, from the information the Virtual Universe company provided, they said there were only beasts here. That stone gorilla beast however, that gaze...it's definitely a proof of intelligence?" Luo Feng was shocked. One could easily tell intelligence from a simple gaze.

...

Luo Feng observed patiently within the plaza, not daring to barge in.

Within 3 days time, he had seen 18 beasts attempt to enter. However at the entrance, that stone gorilla would knock and break them apart.

"I have a feeling there should be a big secret within the palace." Luo Feng thought.

The gold light!

The mystical gold engravings he didn't understand!

The mysterious stone gorilla guarding the door!

And this palace that floated within a nest of countless beasts!

Everything all hinted at the palace having a huge secret, any fool would be able to deduce at least that much.

"However, how do I enter?" Luo Feng looked at the entrance. "If I just go, what happens if I get killed just like that?"

Rumble!

The entire abyss world shook violently. A terrifying ripple spread in all directions, hitting the white light that covered the palace Luo Feng was in.

"What's going on?" Luo Feng turned to look outside.

Howl...

Howl...

Ga...

Tens of thousands of beasts roared, the powerful explosion caused an entire uproar.

"Haha, you low level beings dare mess with me?" A voice like a god resounded throughout the space.

"Senior, even though these undying beasts aren't much threat, if they stick together it's too troublesome. Let's hurry and enter the inheritance palace." Another explosion, another booming voice.

"Alright!"

"Ah, out of the 32 inheritance palaces, only 8 are empty, the rest all have people in them?"

"Hm? That's strange, The Great Union's information stated that 9 were empty. Hm, doesn't matter, anyway there's just 2 of us. Whether it's 8 or 9, we are ok."

The two voices resounded from 2 different places.

As the land and skies boomed, the countless beast's roared and howled. The two powerful silhouettes rushed towards 2 palaces without white lights from 2 different places.

"Hm?"

Ice Bear Luo Feng stayed in the plaza. The howls and roars from outside slowly grew weaker, quickly silencing completely, everything returned to its original calm state. However...Luo Feng was uneasy within.

"There's actually people." Many thoughts flashed in his mind,

"Inheritance palace? 8? 9?"

The 2 voices earlier...should be 2 absolute warriors!

At least undyings!

"Great Union? What organization is that?" Luo Feng was shocked. "The information the Great union gave was that there were 9 empty? When I came earlier, there were indeed 9 of the 32 that weren't enveloped in white light. Don't tell me...the moment someone enters, the palace will immediately raise a white light?"

Indeed.

Just as he had flown into the plaza earlier, only then did the white light envelope the palace.

"Is the palace able to recognize the difference between me and the other beasts?" Luo Feng looked shocked at the palace ahead.

Even undyings and even more powerful beings.

If they didn't directly scan Luo Feng, they were unable to tell the difference of a mosha clansman's transformation. However...this peculiar inheritance palace, was able to detect the difference and raise the barrier.

...

Luo Feng calmly stood in the plaza.

Obviously!

He had arrived at the mysterious core of demon mountain... inheritance palace! And this place...accurately speaking had 32 inheritance palaces. Then, at this time, including himself, there should be 26 with people in them.

"Looks like this inheritance palace hasn’t been a secret amongst the upper echelons of the universe. They actually send undyings here to accept the inheritance." Luo Feng thought, "However to accept it, it seems like not anyone can simply enter. Afterall, even my teacher Hu Yan Bo hadn’t heard of its existence."

Indeed!

These sort of universe secret areas, to just come across once, undyings had to pay a hefty price, much more than even primal chaos city!

"I must be lucky to have been able to get here."

Luo Feng looked at the palace before him.

"How do I enter?" Luo Feng pondered for awhile before swiftly making a decision.

Hu!

A human Luo Feng appeared before the ice bear.

"My mosha clansman will carry the core and remain outside while my earth body will enter!" His eyes gleamed, in a flash he rushed towards the entrance.

Howl...

When the beasts in the plaza saw the human Luo Feng, they immediately roared.

Chapter 576: Forbidden Inheritance

The beasts' had extremely low intelligence, something that only the special environment of demon mountain could create. They only existed to kill the intruders! Hence, when they saw a human suddenly appear in the plaza, they naturally went into a frenzy.

"Howl..."

"Ang..." The beast's became blurred images and rushed towards Luo Feng, wanting to tear him to shreds.

And the human Luo Feng that appeared beside the ice bear had rushed straight towards the entrance the moment he appeared. His domain lord level 9 cloud contact vine covered foot stomped the ground and with a bang, the ground around the plaza shook, and he became a shooting star that rushed towards the entrance.

Sou!

As he rushed, a large group of angry beasts howled and chased behind him.

Rumble!

The black long rod suddenly appeared, just that one!

At the entrance, the tall and sturdy stone gorilla wielded the

thick black long rod like a baseball player, he created whirlwinds as he waved it. Peng! Peng! Peng! Powerful ice beasts were immediately shattered, as large amounts of ice shards scattered far into the distance and knocked right out of the white light.

Howl...

Ao!

The beasts all stared fiercely at Luo Feng, madly rushing towards him.

However, the stone gorilla stood at the entrance, his aura strong and firm, no matter how many came, it didn’t matter.

"These beasts are really stupid." Standing there and gazing at the large amounts of beasts rushing over, Luo Feng exclaimed. "The moment they saw me, they all madly rushed over! Even after knowing there’s no hope they still try. Luckily the light protects the palace, making the trillions of beasts outside unable to enter."

At that time!

The plaza was left with nothing but broken ice shards, with only one beast remaining...the ice bear!

All the other beasts were smashed by the stone gorilla after they madly rushed the entrance!

The palace was tall and majestic, almost like a mountain, Luo Feng seemed small within.

"This is the inheritance palace, where do I accept it?" Luo Feng was dressed in the silver armor outside and cloud contact vine armor within, he carefully treaded within and examined the huge palace, there was a large amount of black fog, in the distance, the black stones occasionally condensed and then melted and dissipated.

The stone gorilla looked at Luo Feng, hugging his black long rod and stopped moving in his corner.

"How strange!"

Luo Feng looked at the scenery filled with black fog, "Babata, have you discovered the mystery of this place?"

"Unable to detect!"

"My scanning signal has been completely jammed." Babata said.

"What?"

Luo Feng was shocked.

Babata’s scanning device was extremely expensive, even though

its area was small, at only 20km! It was something Hu Yan Bo had used in dangerous secret regions. It was usable in many secret regions. However within this inheritance palace...the signal was jammed?

"Rumble..." A booming sound could be heard.

Within the palace, rumbling occurred within the black fog area, after which a mysterious sound could be heard, "Ang...Chang... Wu..." The combination of the sounds formed a very mysterious noise, making Luo Feng feel incredibly comfortable.

"This is it!" Luo Feng thought, back when he saw the 32 palaces, he heard this sound.

The sound reverberated throughout!

The palace changed greatly!

A broken piece of black stone suddenly floated before him with peculiar words, the strokes were similar to the engravings earlier, Luo Feng didn't recognize the words at all.

"This, this..." He was shocked as he looked at the mysterious words on the stone, "I've never even seen these words before, yet I can clearly understand what they mean, it's unbelievable."

The words continued to appear and disappear.

After awhile, Luo Feng finally understood all of what it said.

"Demon note general?"

"Inhertiance?"

"157,672?"

His eyes were filled with shock.

The mysterious words that appeared on the stone, in summary, said this...

"Since the birth of this demon note inheritance forbidden land, you are the 157,672nd who has come to receive this, those that have the right to receive the demon note inheritance ...

Any life form with a soul can receive it.

However since the birth of this place, none have ever completely received the full inheritance, receiving the title of demon note general. Demon note general, be it flesh and blood life form, energy, metal etc, the main thing is that life must have a soul, anyone can become a valuable demon note general!

Demon note general, unique and unmatched!

Since the birth of the universe, it’s been set that there would only be 1. When the time actually comes that one is able to completely receive the full inheritance, becoming a demon note general, this entire forbidden land will crumble.

Puny life form...

Work hard!

Work hard to become a demon note general, follow the inheritance steps on the side, slowly climb the path to becoming an absolute warrior in the universe..."

...

In the palace.

The black mist rumbled about, that mystical sound reverberated throughout the huge palace, simultaneously, the changes that kept occurring within the palace produced a 3 li wide black stone staircase at the end of the black mist, every flight had peculiar engravings, glowing gold.

Human Luo Feng stood before the stairs and was silent for awhile.

"Demon note official?"

"Any life form, as long as he has a soul, has the right to become a demon note official?" Luo Feng looked at the mysterious stairs that formed from the parted black mist, feeling awe within.

The universe was mysterious.

This, Luo Feng had known before.

The human race, had a total of 1008 universe countries, every one of them incredibly vast, the leaders of these countries were invincible and eternal beings...and there were even more powerful beings that created the virtual universe.

However...

Humanity was but 1 of the trillions of races in the universe, however, it was one of the top!

There were a few pinnacle races.

And also some that may not be considered pinnacle, but were in fact very strong, like the Mosha clan, in terms of clan strength...it was probably in the top 10,000. Like the golden horned beast, in terms of strength it ranked one of the top. However their numbers were simply too little, but that didn’t mean they were weak!

Trillions of races!

Endless universe!

Countless secret areas!

"Demon note inheritance? Who left it?" Luo Feng looked about, seeing the words of that displayed earlier, "The touch of humans here is very obvious, obviously it was left behind by some great being! From what I know, demon mountain had been here long before the virtual universe company had taken control of the absolute beginning region!"

Demon mountain's history was extremely ancient, just like blood river world.

The universe secret regions were very mysterious.

Some were naturally formed environments, however absolute beginnings would leave behind their palaces and training grounds etc. These beings may have controlled parts of the entire secret region even before the virtual universe had taken over. Only against the might of the virtual universe, they chose to back off!

Any resistance would be crushed by the huge power of the virtual universe!

However...

The absolute beings of the universe, even though they back off before the virtual universe company, it didn’t meant they were weak!

"From what I heard from the 2 undyings earlier, the virtual universe would arrange for large amounts of undyings to be stationed in demon mountain." Many thoughts ran in his mind, "Even Babata didn’t even know anything about the mysteries of demon mountain. Obviously, this secret belongs only to the upper echelon of the universe, even more mysterious than primal chaos city."

"Demon note general?"

"This inheritance forbidden land, the moment one life form completes the inheritance, the entire space would crumble? Demon note general, there’s only one in the universe?" Luo Feng nodded, from what it sounded like, there would only be 1 in the entire universe...he would indeed be an absolute warrior in the universe.

"There’s actually been 100s of thousands who’ve come before, yet no one has actually completed."

Luo Feng shook his head, not thinking anymore.

Sou!

With a step, he reached the mysterious staircase.

When his boot landed on the 1st flight, immediately the surrounding scenery grew hazy, Luo Feng couldn’t see the scenery around him anymore, only the never ending staircase ahead. Simultaneously, mysterious information began to permeate his mind.

"Accept the inheritance!"

"Train in the inheritance!"

"Every level will bring new information, when you reach the end of the stairs, you’ll become a great being of the universe...demon note general." The voice rumbled in his mind, the mysterious training methods continuously flooded in.

In an instant, Luo Feng was subdued by the techniques.

This was a soul technique, one needed a soul to train in, in terms of its wonders, compared to the soul imprint his teacher Hu Yan Bo had left behind for him, it was many times clearer, the 2 couldn’t even be compared.

"I feel that this nameless inheritance technique is comparable to the 9 universe tablet, the tablet entices people to study it, and this...is a completely detailed technique. Just this one technique alone is priceless." Luo Feng was excited.

His eyes gleamed strongly!

In his mind he had the golden horned beast's inherited memories, and he had seen the treasure trove of the virtual universe company, countless techniques from everywhere.

And because his perspectives were wide, he could instantly deduce...

This mysterious technique definitely belonged to the highest of inheritance, an inheritance along with the universe laws and paths itself!

In an instant!

He was completely immersed in the training of the technique...

...

It wasn't just his earth body, the golden horned beast in the internal world too began to train simultaneously. Only the Mosha clan remained helpless and silly, because this belonged to a kind of soul special technique, and the Mosha clansman was unable to train it.

"Just who left behind this technique, such a terrifying technique, if I can make progress in it, becoming an eternal and invincible being in the universe definitely wouldn't be an exaggeration!" Luo Feng didn't think much more about it, he suppressed his mad glee and completely immersed himself in the training.

Chapter 577: Execution

Virtual universe, a specially opened space.

"Howl..." Completely green dragons snaked through the space, "Ang!" The beautiful 7 colored wings could be seen everywhere, within this huge space, with a glance, one could spot tens of millions of different types of mystical beasts, some beautiful, some violent.

Tens of millions of beasts flew about.

A completely red majestic group of palaces floated in mid air, within one of them.

"Pa!" A tall and sturdy man with a single silver horn covered in purple armor fiercely slammed the wine glass in his hand, the translucent glass flew hard onto the floor and burst apart, the man’s expression was struggled, his eyes like 2 eternal burning stars, he raged and roared, "How, do they think that I’m a pushover, I’ve waited so long for the demon note mountain inheritance, for my student Mist emperor to get a chance, and you are telling me it’s gone?"

"Knight!"

An old white haired man bowed and said, "It’s not that it’s gone, but he’ll have to wait for the next batch!"

"Next batch? Bull shit!!!" The silver horned man roared, "Each batch of the demon note mountain inheritance is 10,081 eras apart! And every batch has at most 32 people, I spent so much treasure and invested so much. Finally I got picked and acquired a slot! But you are telling me...there's an anonymous unknown life form that took one of the 32 palaces, and you lack one slot."

"How is it my business there's 1 lacking, why take away my student's chance? Why not take away others?" The silver horned man was incomparably angry.

"Knight!"

The white haired old man bowed, "When the ballot was cast, Mist emperor was the 32nd, right at the back, hence the people above decided..."

"Get out, get out!" The silver horned man violently waved.

The white haired old man bowed, not daring to speak anymore, he turned and left immediately.

The silver horned man's expression was struggled.

For a knight like him, one of the great eternal beings of humanity, there was hardly anything that made him feel cheated, but this time...

"The great union those bunch of punks, they took my gifts and

favors, and now they all act all righteous, taking away my student’s opportunity." The man was filled with hatred, however he was clear that since they made the decision, there was no use in him raging.

"Just who is it!"

"Who took my student’s slot?" The man raged.

Demon note inheritance!

It was tens of millions of times more valuable than the chance to study in the primal chaos city, because the primal chaos tablets were after all for people to study and comprehend the laws. The demon note inheritance however was a solid incredibly detailed training method, as long as one followed the training, his powers would grow by leaps and bounds.

"Wait till the next batch? 10,081 eras later?" The silver horned man got angrier the more he thought about it.

His disciple Mist emperor was an emperor undying.

To become a knight was extremely difficult!

However through the demon note inheritance, on a certain level of degree, it would greatly increase his chances of becoming a knight. Right now he didn’t know who took his student’s chance, making him wait over a hundred million years.

The pinnacle beings and their matters, Luo Feng definitely didn't know.

He only knew he had to grab his opportunities and go train.

...

Within the inheritance palace, inheritance staircase.

Luo Feng had been standing on the 1st level for a day already, he closed his eyes and stood on the black stone stairs, in his mind his spirit energy constantly training the inheritance technique, this nameless powerful technique shall be temporarily called the Supreme Demon note manual.

This Supreme Demon note manual, according to the information that Luo Feng received from the 1st flight, was mainly split into 2 parts.

1 was basics.

2 was the demon note technique.

Of which the basics portion's 99% was mostly making a solid foundation, once that was done, the demon note technique would be easy to train.

The basics here referred to spirit energy amplitude!

For example when Luo Feng controlled 1 flying blade, his strength in attacking with that blade could reach a certain number. And his limit was...simultaneously controlling 78 blades, all 78 of them reaching max power, this made his amplitude 78! Back when Luo Feng was on earth and he was still weak, he could simultaneously control about 10 or so blades at max power.

Soul, had the spirit energy amplitude!

Body, had the strength amplitude!

The undying altar measured the strength amplitude, normal strength amplitudes could reach 100, that would be perfectly controlling one's every bit of energy! When one reaches 100 in that aspect, that would be the normal limit!

Same theory.

The spirit energy amplitude, to be able to control 100 flying blades with every one of them reaching max power, that was the normal limit too!

However!

These are under normal circumstances.

Like the golden horned beast and it using its body to attack, its normal strength amplitude could also reach 80-90. However the moment it unleashes its ability strengthen! Immediately it would jump several times making the amplitude go over a 100. Like Deities of the world, the body's strength would rise a few times too! Reaching a few hundred! And the golden horned beast's right claw, the moment it triggered the blood river energy, it's power would greatly increase!

The body's strength could be risen multiple times!

In theory, 100 was the limit, however that was the normal limit. Through special techniques, treasures, all these could raise that limit! And these additions were incredibly valuable in the universe.

...

Natural ability strengthen affected the body and soul, basically everything.

The golden horned beast's soul amplitude was currently 78, however once it used its natural ability, its power would rise a few times over!

And this Supreme Demon note manual, was something like Deities of the world from its memories, and even more powerful... once one had great progress in Deities of the World, it would raise one's powers by 27 times. However, Supreme Demon note manual was much stronger.

This was an extreme inheritance that aimed at breaking all limits!

...

"What a mysterious anomaly!"

"Even stronger than Deities of the world, this is heavenly!" Luo Feng opened his eyes and looked at the many levels of steps ahead of him, with a glance, they reached into space itself, he took a deep breath, with a step, he flew to the 2nd flight.

When he landed on the 2nd flight, incredibly detailed technique immediately poured into his mind.

Continue training!

Day after day!

Level after level!

In this inheritance staircase that stretched to space, Luo Feng progressed.

Actually when he first began the process, he received information...that once it started, it couldn't be stopped! He had to continuously proceed forward, the training itself was actually a torture of one's willpower and consciousness, the moment one was

unable to withstand it, then...the inheritance would automatically end!

In the vast universe, over a trillion years, 100s of thousands of different life forms had all come to receive the inheritance.

However...

Not a single one of them could finish the entire process!

"Who knows how long this thing will take!"

"Hm, opportunities like these don’t come easy, I cannot miss it."

Luo Feng was almost like a starving beggar eating a meal in a long time, madly immersed in his training, the more he trained, the more he felt his consciousness amplitude rise, quickly exceeding 100, this normal limit continued to rise further.

It was heavenly.

The more he trained, the more he understood that if this technique were to be exchanged for in the treasure trove of the virtual universe, it would be an exorbitant price! The treasure trove may not even have such a technique within.

"I only have this one chance to train."

"I'll train as much as I can, maybe I'll make great progress! No matter, if I don't give it a shot, how will I forgive myself?"

When Luo Feng was within the core of demon note mountain receiving the inheritance, the assassins sent by Official Po Yu from the 1,000 star sect were troubled.

6 months later.

Virtual universe, on an island specially for the 9 star warriors to stay.

On that island, a group of palaces took up an extremely large space, it was the reputable headquarters of the 1,000 star sect in the virtual universe.

In a particular palace.

"God!"

2 sector lords and 2 domain lords bowed respectfully.

The shockingly beautiful Po Yu's long hair flowed, an absolute beauty, she sat in the throne, leaning on the back and looking below, "You 4 haven't discovered the target?"

"Yes, god."

The 4 were nervous.

The 4 were from the initial 6 sent, the other 2...had already died within demon note mountain!

"Useless things!"

The absolute beauty snorted coldly, "I'll give you another half a year of time! I hope, you won't disappoint me!"

"Yes."

The 4 had cold sweat beading from their foreheads.

...

Time passed and in an instant, they had already spent a year within demon note mountain and in that year, another domain lord of the group died, because he was hit by demon notes...he unconsciously became a zombie.

The final 3 survivors all left demon note mountain.

...

"Congratulations, you 3 have survived for a year within demon note mountain, you have the right to enter our virtual universe

company." The troops stationed at demon note mountain from the virtual universe company, the lowest status of the group swiftly went to receive the 3 survivors.

Ba Yan and the other 1,000 star sect warriors glanced at each other, helpless.

They came to demon note mountain only on Po Yu's orders, in truth the 3 of them had no wishes to join the virtual universe company and become a lackey for others.

"Bring the 3 of them here." A voice resounded in that staff's ears.

"Yes, Official Po Yu."

The staff immediately brought Ba Yan and the others to her shrine.

...

Deep in the shrine in a hall.

Po Yu lay in the throne, her jade green tail meandered about in the throne, her eyes gazing down below at the shifty trio.

"God."

The 3 knelt down.

Po Yu waved her hand and immediately forced the space ring off the domain lord’s fingers, forcefully breaking the soul imprint and retrieving the e9 grade laser gun.

"God, the target is only a universe level 9, and we haven’t discovered him in a year, and he hasn’t come out. It’s very likely he was killed by others within. Or he was hit by the demon note and turned into a zombie." The strongest of the lot, sector lord level 9 Ba Yan spoke.

"Let’s hope so!"

Po Yu nodded, her gaze sweeping past the 3.

Their eyes immediately became rigid!

After which, Pu tong, Pu tong, Pu tong, they fell on the floor, dead.

"However, you all know too much, you have to die." Po Yu said coldly, sending people to kill an important genius of the virtual universe company, the moment she was discovered, she, an Official level undying...even if she wasn’t killed, she would be locked in the space hell.

"A year."

"That punk should be 80 to 90% dead. Po Yu muttered softly, after which she smiled charmingly, the space around seemed to burst in colors suddenly.

Chapter 578: Beginner

Po Yu was lazing about entirely on in the throne, her white jade like fingers gently tapping on the arm rest, her gaze fixed on the 3 bodies below her, the space slightly warped and a space ripple with the power of origin laws of an undying covered the 3 bodies, with several cracks, they immediately became dust.

"That punk, he should be dead, however, he’s only the interest." Po Yu muttered softly.

Suddenly, hurried footsteps came from outside.

"Teacher!"

"Teacher!"

Worried shouts came from outside the palace.

"Come in." Po Yu gently frowned, speaking.

The one leading that rushed in was one dressed in purple decorative armor, a handsome youth, his eyes were sunken in, pupils green, on his forehead there was an engraving. This handsome youth’s expression was filled with pain and rage,he rushed in and knelt hard on the floor, shouting, "Teacher, please save my hometown...Mo Cha planet!"

"What's going on?" Po Yu frowned, "Your hometown Mo Cha planet is a powerful planet with quite a few undyings, why do you need me to save it?"

"Teacher, some of my clansmen unintentionally offended Mist emperor's people, who'd expect the powerful Mist emperor to come out personally and use his space techniques to place my entire planet...the entire planet, forced into his god country!" The handsome youth was about to cry.

"Planet, the entire planet was forced into the god country?" Even Po Yu was shocked.

God country.

That was the soul location of an undying, sector lords had their internal world, undyings had their god countries, the moment their internal worlds collapsed, the sector lord would definitely die!

The moment the god country collapsed, the weaker undyings would die. And some with techniques and treasures may survive, however their powers would be greatly reduced. To a point where they'd have no future! It could be said that...the god country was half of the undying's life!

The god country had many uses, the reason the undyings were powerful was because the god countries were powerful.

In there, the undying's power would greatly rise...even though one could force an enemy into his god country, having his power rise much greater, it also however gives the enemy the chance to attack his god country. Hence, unless one had 100% guarantee, or was forced into a corner, very few would actually force an enemy into his god country.

To force an entire planet in?

"Your planet, in Mist emperor's god country, will have a very tragic end." Po Yu sat high in the throne looking down on her disciple, "If it were simply destroying, he could easily use one punch to destroy it. However he actually took the effort to place your planet into his god country, unless he tortures it enough, he won't be satisfied."

"Just what did your clansmen do to offend him?" Po Yu frowned.

"A small matter!" The handsome youth knelt there and shouted tragically, "There's always been some friction before, however the underlings of Mist emperor would usually handle these small things. Who'd expect him to personal make a move, forcing the entire planet into the god country."

"Teacher, please save my planet." The handsome youth shouted.

"I cannot do anything!" Po Yu shook her head.

"Teacher!" The handsome youth's eyes were filled with tears.

Po Yu looked at her disciple kneeling below, saying softly, "I'll try."

After which she closed her eyes, sending a thread of her consciousness into the virtual universe network, she looked for a good friend to speak to Mist emperor...

After awhile.

"Leave." Po Yu opened her eyes and said.

"Teacher?" The handsome youth looked up at Po Yu in the throne, his expression filled with hope.

"It's your clansmen's fault they offended Mist emperor when he's in the worst mood." Po Yu frowned and ordered, "No one can save them."

The handsome youth gripped his fist.

"Leave!" Po Yu ordered coldly.

"Yes." The handsome youth didn't dare speak another world, he feared offending this cold teacher of his, thus he left respectfully.

Only Po Yu was left in the huge palace, she frowned, muttering to herself, "No wonder he's so angry, his powerful teacher actually

got a slot in the Demon note mountain inheritance for him, and someone else actually took it...hehe, this wait, will be another 10,081 eras before he gets another chance. If it were me, I'd be angry too. Only thing is...just who was it that took his slot!"

...

Within the god country.

An endless ocean, within were fragments of ice, there floated dark green majestic palaces, in the center of them was a million km tall dark green statue...Mist Emperor's statue!

In the ocean over a hundred million km away from the palaces was a planet with a diameter of over 30,000 km floating.

From it flew out many silhouettes that knelt in mid air, constantly begging.

"Mist emperor! Spare us!"

"Mist emperor! Spare our Mo Cha planet!"

"Mist Emperor! We have wronged! We have wronged!"

A few undyings and sector lords were kneeling in mid air, their voices booming all about. At this time, within their home...Mo Cha planet, there would occasionally be lightning flashes or flames

about, sometimes snow and blizzards or even hail that dropped like countless blades shooting down, it was simply a nightmare.

Mist emperor!

With dark green floating long hair, a square face, his eyes even madder than a space beast, he wore an exquisite long robe and stood in mid air, coldly looking at the torture he was dishing out to Mo Cha planet.

"Spare you? Wronged?"

He laughed suddenly, "It’s too late!"

"Too Late!" "Too Late!" "Too Late!" "Too Late!" his voice echoed constantly through the ears of the Mo Cha warriors, the undyings and sector lords were all in extreme pain, regret and hatred! However they couldn’t do anything...Mist emperor, as an emperor level undying, was too powerful.

The power his god country held was even more shocking.

Just the god country pressure alone made the undyings unable to resist.

"10,081 eras, over a hundred million years! From my birth till now, this entire long period has only been 12,000 eras. To make me wait so long..." The more he thought about it the more he raged, he gripped his fists even tighter, causing the space to tremble so hard

it felt like it was about to split apart, "Just who is the bastard that took my slot!!!"

"Who!!!"

Mist emperor raged within, and that planet floating in mid air, had an even more tragic fate ahead.

In the vast universe, within the virtual universe company controlled Absolute beginning region, Demon mountain.

Within one of the 32 inheritance palaces of demon note mountain.

Luo Feng was focused on receiving the inheritance, how would he know he'd taken Mist emperor's slot, even to the emperor level undying's...10,081 eras was a very long period of time. He had only lived for a total of 12,000 eras. It was akin to a 30 year old preparing to get married, however god ordered...don't rush, wait another 30 years, marry when you are 60.

Who wouldn't be anxious? Who wouldn't be angry?

...

Within the inheritance palace

Black mist engulfed the area, the many layers of stairs extended

upwards...

In theory, a space like this with only a few tens of km in length and width wasn't shocking, however the distance Luo Feng saw far exceeded over 1,000km. This effect of having a world within a grain of sand didn't really shock Luo Feng. Afterall, something a sector lord was capable of, it wasn't strange the absolute being that left behind the inheritance palace couldn't do.

"Finished another part!" Luo Fe ng opened his eyes, face filled with glee, he became a beam of light and headed to a higher level.

Pa!

the moment he stepped on the flight of stairs...the deeper training methods once again poured in, simultaneously a voice resounded within the space.

"Hm?" Luo Feng turned to look.

Mysterious words appeared in the space beside, similar to the style of words on the stone tablet before, even though Luo Feng didn't recognize them, he instantly understood their meaning.

"Beginner?" He was shocked.

The summary of the words were...

"Life form that have chosen to receive the inheritance, you've already received 1/10th of the 1st part of the demon note inheritance! The demon note general inheritance has a total of 3 parts, to be able to completely finish the 1st part will earn you the beginner title, and receive the beginner reward!"

"The end of the 1st part is in that distant temple, the beginner reward is right there!"

"Work hard!"

Rumble...

The stairs in which he stood on extended far away, and at this time it was still endless, level after level, finally....far far away, at the end of it, in that distant space, there was a temple of which was hard to see clearly with the naked eye.

"The end of the 1st part? Beginner reward?" Luo Feng looked at the distant temple, thinking, "I've only been receiving the inheritance for about a year, about 300 levels of it. And I've only completed 1/10th of the 1st part. Then this 1st part, wouldn't it have over 3,000 levels?"

The 1st part had over 3,000 levels.

A total of 3 parts.

If the 2 later parts were the same, there would be over 10k levels!

"To finish all the stairs and finish the inheritance, how long would that take?" Luo Feng couldn't help but be shocked.

Saying is one thing.

However in truth...over a trillion years since demon mountain existed, with 100s of thousands receiving the inheritance, yet none had ever fully completed it!

"Thinking so much is useless, I'll first complete the 1st part and become a beginner, then I'll receive the reward in that temple." Luo Feng was anticipating, "This inheritance palace sure is something, the prize definitely wouldn't be bad. Who knows what it is, treasure? Weapon? Armor?"

He didn't think anymore, continuing to immerse himself in training, 1 year's worth of work...even just a part of the inheritance alone made him feel that his power had risen greatly already.

This inheritance was indeed a heavenly technique!

If Luo Feng were to give it a price...it would truly be a priceless treasure! More than even the entire Time space scribbles!

"I really have to thank Mo Luo for that kick!" Luo Feng exclaimed within.

Chapter 579: Panic

When he had first entered the inheritance palace, the mosha clansman had entered his internal world, the core resided within his earth body.

Within Luo Feng's internal core.

His soul which had already condensed into a crystal ball, was engulfed in mist floating about this was Luo Feng's spirit energy, countless amounts of energy condensed into engravings, large amount of them were permeating the crystal ball. Almost like venom infecting it, causing the ball to have slight changes as it absorbed the engravings.

Even though the changes were little, it was constant and kept changing!

Not even for a moment!

Luo Feng's earth body and golden horned beast controlled the spirit energy to train their souls.

...

It takes time to be tempered into steel.

A piece of metal requires being broken down time and again and

molded over and over to become steel, at this time, Luo Feng's soul was going through this process, in training the Supreme demon note technique, his soul was constantly changing and evolving, almost like a piece of metal being molded into steel...such was the process his soul was undergoing.

Similar to Deities of the World, that too was a change in the body too! Unleashing it would shrink the body, causing the muscle and bone density, scales etc to raise at an extreme rate.

99% of the basics of the Supreme Demon note technique was on changing the soul.

Unleashing this would make one's soul control amplitude rise greatly!

A normal sector lord's soul, using maximum power on assassination weapons, normally would able to control up to 100 of them..

A normal sector lord's body amplitude was at most 100 times.

When Luo Feng stood on the 100th level of stairs, his spirit energy amplitude had already reached 100, this, under the normal circumstances would be a sector lord's perfection!

And now that he was over the 360th level, his spirit energy amplitude had already reached over 360!

What did this mean?

When he first arrived here, his amplitude was only 70-80, right now it was over 360!

It had jumped 5 times!

A simply comparison, when he first began he only had 1 gun! Now he had 5!

His spirit energy usage speed was 5 times from before!

"It’s akin to 5 against 1!" Luo Feng looked at the stairs that extended forever, looking at the distant space and the shrine at the end of it, he couldn’t help but get excited.

Virtual universe, Yu Xiang mountain public region, within a quiet loft of a hotel.

A golden armored True Yan emperor lay on the sofa, his eyelids drooping, he gave off a powerful angry energy, filling up the entire room, even the staff were all scared as they stood in the corner not daring to make a sound, they cleared their throats and held their breaths.

"Cackle, True Yan emperor!" A strange piercing cold laughter resounded within the room.

2 people walked up from the stairs.

A skinny skeleton like human with eyes like 2 balls of flames, his chin with a goat's beard, he donned a golden robe and held 2 golden round balls that he fiddled with. Behind him was a handsome youth...Mo Luo!

Mo Luo, even though he was already old, because of his bloodline, he would still look like a youth.

"You've come, True Yan shot a glance.

"Cackle, True Yan emperor, you are looking for my disciple this time, it means you need a favor from me. Before me, don't be ugly." The golden robed skinny old man cackled, lying in the sofa beside and ordering, "Staff, leave us!"

"Yes!"

The staff all obediently left, leaving only 3 in the room...True Yan, Mo Luo and Mo Luo's teacher.

"If it weren't for my disciple Luo Feng, I'd be too lazy to meet you, seeing you disgusts me!" True Yan laughed coldly.

"Cackle, what an honor." The old man mocked.

This old man was also a very powerful man within the virtual

universe company, he too had passed the 20th level of the heavenly bridge, close to becoming a knight, his name was Prison emperor! The 2 had always been rivals, extremely talented!

Of which True Yan was direct and straightforward, intrepid in reputation.

Prison emperor was more known for being evil and treacherous.

As their characters clashed, True Yan did things openly while Prison emperor was sinister, the 2 had always disliked each other. Prison emperor had deemed True Yan as his rival but True Yan had always despised him, however, even so...in terms of strength, the 2 were close!

These 2!

Were both incredibly close to becoming knights! Amongst the emperors, they were amongst the pinnacle! They were strong in their own ways! Naturally True Yan was able to use his strength to suppress his enemy, but it would be hard for him to actually kill him.

"Speak!"

True Yan glanced at Mo Luo behind Prison emperor, "You said your disciple Mo Luo went to Demon mountain and even met my disciple Luo Feng! Tell me, when did they meet? Under what circumstance?"

"Anxious?" The strange old man looked at True Yan.

"Hmph!" True Yan snorted coldly.

He was indeed anxious.

This was because the virtual universe company had informed him earlier that Luo Feng had been in demon note mountain for over a year but he hasn't answered or given any notice, and the impossible level missions were extremely dangerous, the moment they were hit by the powerful demon notes, they would unconsciously become zombies. Under normal circumstance... these geniuses would occasionally enter the virtual universe network.

However, over this year, Luo Feng hadn't entered once!

This made the virtual universe company suspect...

Was he dead?

Naturally they informed his teacher who was closest to him... True Yan emperor! True Yan knew that Luo Feng had gone to demon mountain, after receiving that notice from the company, he immediately sent a mail and call request to contact Luo Feng, however there hadn't been a response. It was almost like Luo Feng was dead.

Under such circumstances, there were 2 answers.

1, Luo Feng was dead! Naturally he couldn’t answer.

2, he was immersed in training and shut off all communication to not be distracted by anything.

"Anxious?" The golden robed old man mocked, "Looks like your disciple has yet to reply to you. Actually, not having a response... doesn’t mean he’s dead, he might be locked in training or something."

"Ah!"

Prison emperor slapped his head, "I must be old and senile, your disciple is in demon note mountain. In that place, there’s demon notes everywhere! There’s no place to stop and train at all, much less immerse himself in training. Since he cannot train...then, he should be dead!"

True Yan’s expression grew heavy, his eyes shot golden light, roaring, "Prison emperor, I wished to speak to only your disciple and you are forcing your way in. I’m showing you respect by speaking to you. Don’t push it!"

"Cackle, you must be anxious." The old man waved his hand, "My good disciple, tell him."

"Yes." Mo Luo bowed respectfully.

"True Yan emperor." Mo Luo bowed.

True Yan looked at the respectful Mo Luo, he couldn’t help but glance at prison emperor, "Such a good disciple, he’ll be a wreck under you!"

"Hmph." The golden robed old man couldn’t bear to smile.

"Speak." True Yan looked at Mo Luo." When did you see Luo Feng?"

"True Yan emperor." Mo Luo said respectfully. "1 year ago."

"1 year ago?" True Yan frowned.

The notice the virtual universe company gave was also about a year ago, that Luo Feng hadn’t entered the virtual universe since.

1 year!

With True Yan’s long life span, 1 year was simply too short. However in such an environment such as demon note mountain...1 year was indeed too long.

"I’m currently still in demon note mountain." Mo Luo said respectfully, "However, I haven’t seen Luo Feng since."

"Ah?" True Yan’s frown grew deeper.

"Hmph, True Yan True Yan, you may not know...your disciple actually tried to sabotage my disciple before in demon note mountain." Prison Emperor said.

"Sabotage?" True Yan stared hard at Mo Luo, "My disciple Luo Feng tried to sabotage you?"

Mo Luo was somewhat nervous.

"Don’t be afraid." Prison emperor sat in the sofa, lifting a wine glass and casually waving his hand, "Your teacher is hear, that ape man cannot touch you, say the entire story."

"Speak honestly!" True Yan stared at Mo Luo.

Mo Luo took a deep breath, speaking, "True Yan emperor elder, it was like this. I was in demon note mountain earlier than Luo Feng, in there I discovered the patterns to the demon notes...hence I stayed for long periods in a place close to where the beasts were, even though I was close to the beasts, and the demon notes were constantly changing, it was a spot where I could easily predict."

"One day!"

"I heard a beast howl and I knew someone had encountered a

beast." Mo Luo took a deep breath, obviously he was nervous, "I had encountered this many times, this time I carefully sneaked over to observe."

"However..."

"The person I saw was actually using a cloud contact vine! I immediately guessed...that this person definitely wasn't an aboriginal, a universe level 9 aboriginal definitely wouldn't have a domain lord level 9 assisting plant life form." Mo Luo said, "Hence, I helped, with the 2 of us combined, we defeated the beast and we fled from the scene. When he saw me, he immediately recognized me..."

"And he changed to his original form! It was actually Luo Feng!"

"To meet our own people in demon note mountain, I was very happy, I chatted with him for awhile as we fled as the beast would regenerate and chase after us. However I didn't expect...I didn't expect..." Mo Luo was shivering.

True Yan frowned.

"While my guard was down, while we were fleeing together, he suddenly attacked me, at close distance, I couldn't defend in time, I was instantly heavily injured! And I fought hard to protect myself after." Mo Luo shook his head, "Actually in that instant I was attacked, I understood...he was probably thinking of me as an opponent in the qualification battles, getting rid of me would mean he would have a greater chance of entering the primal region."

"Cackle, True Yan, you've heard it." The golden robed old man laughed coldly.

Chapter 580: Luo Feng's Limit

True Yan looked at the obedient Mo Luo standing before him, he actually had a good feeling about this primal region genius. However the story he told earlier made True Yan frown, he ordered, "What you said is true?"

"True Yan emperor elder." Mo Luo bowed, "Under my teacher's questioning, only then did I reveal this story. Other than you 2, I haven't told anybody else."

"Hmph!"

True Yan snorted coldly, "Go, all of you!"

"Cackle, angry, True Yan, you are raging, cackle..." The golden robed skinny old man laughed arrogantly.

Mo Luo remained bowed.

True Yan squinted, gold light glowing.

"Cackle, let's go!" The skinny old man laughed and vanished. Mo Luo too vanished, leaving only True Yan in the room.

His expression was cold, speaking softly, "If I hadn't known my disciple for so many years, I would really have suspected! However...Luo Feng that punk, is definitely, amongst my disciples,

the one with the strongest beliefs, he does things the most straightforward and cleanly, the one with the most principles!"

After being with his disciple for so long, he really respected this student.

Heart like a mirror, seeing through everything!

Heart like a blade, slicing through illusions!

Anyone who's able to reach such a stage would do things with the most principles. Such a person would have the pride of a warrior, even if he wanted to get into the primal region, he would do it with his own strength. He definitely wouldn't try and secretly kill or back stab another to attain victory.

"Student, I believe you are still alive, there must have been something special that's happened in demon note mountain that's held you up." True Yan said softly, in his mind a thought flashed through his head...of the 32 inheritance palaces in demon note mountain, he had just come to know that there was one that had an unknown life form.

If that unknown life form was his student then that was the best outcome.

"Haha...I really know how to ponder." He shook his head, "My student was able to reach fantasy ocean's 10th island before failing. If that Mo Luo could survive till now, he definitely can too."

Time passed.

Day by day, year after year...

Luo Feng was completely immersed in the inheritance training, step by step, his soul evolved constantly. A few special techniques could only be unleashed after evolving the soul, just like his teacher Hu Yan Bo's soul imprint, it required altering the soul!

Only when the soul had special qualities would he be able to unleash those special techniques.

...

In the blink of an eye, 3 years passed.

In an underground ice cave below demon mountain, a massacre had just ended.

"Hehehe." Mo Luo gently flicked off the blood from his fingertips, looking at the body below, you are only an aboriginal, dying by my absolute genius hands is your honor. If it weren't for the 10k black tags reward, I wouldn't bother to attack you."

Mo Luo swiftly took the space belt and scanned it with his spirit energy.

"31 black tags?" He immediately revealed a look of mad glee.

"Haha...my luck is really good!" He gripped his fists excitedly, "I lacked only 30 tags and this aboriginal had 31,the automaton weapon I specially bought for this demon mountain was indeed a worthy investment. Even though I can only use it once. However I successfully killed 2 sector lords and made my black tags acquirement much easier."

"10,000 black tags, it's finally enough!"

Mo Luo's eyes gleamed.

"It's been 3.5 years since I entered demon mountain!"

"I could have left half a year ago, only because of the black tags did I stay till now, thinking of ways and means to set traps etc." Mo Luo smiled, his smile was proud and satisfied, he was very satisfied with all that he had done throughout his entire demon mountain mission.

Whether it was checking out the structure and environment of demon mountain, ensuring he stayed in the safest regions.

Or backstabbing Luo Feng.

Or assassinating the sector lords, everything was perfect.

"No one can stop me." Mo Luo muttered softly, "My teacher is stupid, treacherous and evil? If you let others know you are treacherous than that wouldn’t be treacherous anymore, that’s simply stupid."

After which, he turned and swiftly began his route back.

The way back was easy!

Because during his time in demon note mountain, whether it was the aboriginals or the virtual universe company majesties, they would swiftly record down their paths! With a warrior’s memory and calculating abilities, following the paths they had taken before, intersections etc, they can all swiftly form an incomparably clear map in their minds!

With this map, they can find a safe and close way to return swiftly!

...

When Mo Luo flew out of a particular cave, there were staff there immediately awaiting to welcome him.

"Your majesty Mo Luo!"

"Your majesty Mo Luo, this way!"

The staff accompanied Mo Luo and quickly a white robed youth came to welcome him, it was the Yi Chang that had welcomed Luo Feng.

"Your majesty Mo Luo."The white robed youth smiled and led the way, "You've spent over 3 years in demon note mountain, Yi Chang respects you."

"Hm." Mo Luo smiled and nodded, "Thanks for leading the way, I've already collected over 10,000 black tags..."

"10k,000 black tags?"

The white robed youth was greatly shocked.

My god.

Collecting 10,000 tags was simply too difficult, because even those that spent on getting E grade lasers would find it hard to achieve. As the E grade lasers usually had preparation time, and in that instant, that was enough for a sector lord warrior to kill them easily.

Sector lord and universe level 9, the difference was too much!

Hence collecting the 10,000 tags was a lot harder than surviving for 3 years.

"Congratulations your majesty." The white robed youth immediately felt like this Mo Luo before him had a huge future before him, immediately he was incredibly passionate and respectful, "It’s been very long since we’ve had anyone collect 10,000 black tags. I heard, the prize is shocking."

"Shocking prize? What treasures?" Mo Luo was interested.

"I don’t have the authority to know." The white robed youth said softly. "However I’ve heard it is shocking."

"Hurry and lead the way." Mo Luo was anxious after hearing it.

"Yes."

When Mo Luo left demon mountain to acquire the treasure. Luo Feng was in the greatest treasure of demon mountain itself... receiving the demon note inheritance!

...

Inheritance staircase.

The many levels of stairs extended into space, all the way to that tiny little shrine.

"What do I do? I’m reaching my limit?"

Luo Feng stood on the 1,129th level of stars, looking back at the little blur of steps behind, and looking back up at the distant stairs ahead, he couldn’t help but frown.

"According to the Supreme demon note technique information, I can probably at most accept another 1 to 200 levels and that would be my limit!" Luo Feng was helpless.

When he first began, he came to know of many things.

The inheritance, belonged to one of the more mysterious inheritance in the universe, one of the pinnacle that had harsh requirements on the soul, right, incredibly harsh, so harsh that over a trillion years, with batch after batch of life forms receiving, yet none had completed it.

To reach such a stage, 99% of them were undying!

The many undyings couldn’t even succeed, just how hard was this?

The demon note inheritance, had harsh requirements on the soul!

And the absorption of blood river crystals had harsh requirements on the body. In blood river world...it was hard to find anyone able to absorb 10 crystals. And the golden horned beast actually absorbed over 90 ! This was because of the special properties of its cells in the body.

…

The demon note inheritance was looking for an absolute genius with a soul capable of completely absorbing it, if such a genius was able to complete it, he would become a unique and all powerful demon note general.

The inheritance had high requirements!

And the soul of undyings, had all gone through the evolution of breakthrough from sector lord to undying. Hence almost every undying had souls stronger than Luo Feng's, much much stronger!

…

Many undyings were stuck at the end of the 1st set!

Some of them were stuck at the 2nd!

Very very few actually made it to the 3rd.

There wasn't a life form that had completed the 3rd yet.

And Luo Feng?

With a soul of only domain level 9, not even experiencing the

greatest evolution of soul, from sector lord to undying. Hence, his soul was simply too much weaker than the undyings. Luckily he had gone through the primal chaos city's true spirit absorption, hence his consciousness and spirit energy control was very strong...thus he was able to make it to level 1,129.

However...

The moment his soul felt fatigued, it would mean his absorption limit was almost at 90%, this was the information provided.

"I've already felt it, I'm reaching my limit!"

"My limit should be between about 1,200-1,300." Luo Feng thought, "And this 1st level should still have about over 3,000 levels."

His limit could only withstand 1/3rd of the 1st part.

There was no way.

This inheritance was intended for undyings, his soul was only domain level 9 and he rushed in...if he could take more that would be absurd.

"What do I do?" Luo Feng looked up and ahead.

In the distant depths of space, that tiny shrine was the end of the

1st part, reaching there would make him a Beginner, allowing him to acquire the Beginner reward. This demon mountain that had been here for who knows how long, and the treasures left behind by that being definitely wouldn’t be inferior.

However one had to finish the 1st part to acquire it.

"I’m still over 2.000 levels away from the shrine!"

"And my limit can only take 1 to 200 more levels." Luo Feng pondered as he trained. To do so only slowed his training down slightly.

"I can't accept this!"

"Such an encounter!"

"The virtual universe has so many undyings stationed here, and this place has trillions of beasts gathered. This inheritance...is so heavenly! I definitely cannot ever get such an chance again." He quickly calculated in his mind, seeing if there was a way to accept more of the inheritance.

Accepting the inheritance to levels 1,200-1,300, reaching his limit and leaving, this was something he couldn’t accept.

However, how could he change the limits of his soul?

Chapter 581: Loophole

The soul, as a flesh and blood life form's core, for it to suddenly evolve, it was something the current Luo Feng was unable to do.

"Slowly!" He gritted his teeth and continued to receive the demon note inheritance.

1 step, 1 level at a time!

Only with constant work everyday could he improve!

In the blink of an eye, several months passed again, on the 1,236th level, Luo Feng who was in full armor knelt on the floor, gasping softly, the pain and fatigue from the soul was making him about to crumble.

"I'm almost saturated." Luo Feng's eyes had a sense of being undefeated, he felt the sharp pain in his soul, almost like someone attacking his soul, that incomparable fatigue...made him feel like he was about to fall asleep anytime. According to the information about the inheritance, this represented that Luo Feng's soul was already almost full from receiving the inheritance.

Even if he forced his way through, he could at most progress another 1 or 2 levels.

"Is this the end?" He looked up and ahead.

The many levels of stairs continued on, on into the distant space.

"Pa!"

His body shuddered, simultaneously as he stepped on the 1237th level of stone stairs, feeling the inheritance pour into his memory, he still didn't stop...taking another step trying to get to the 1238th level.

The moment he landed on it.

"Wang...Chang..."

The strange demon note pierced straight into his consciousness.

"Break!" Luo Feng's incomparably solid willpower roared within!

However that gentle and non offensive like demon note actually permeated into his willpower and consciousness, "Get out!!!" He condensed his willpower, wanting to expel all of the demon notes out against his powerful willpower and consciousness, the demon note didn't even seem to fight back.

Gradually...

Luo Feng had a memory of when he was young, listening to his mother sing him to sleep.

"Trouble!"

"No!"

"No!!!" Luo Feng knew he was falling in, barging forward without accepting the inheritance had resulted in the strongest of demon notes attacking him.

Sleep!

Sleep!

"No!"

Sleep...

Luo Feng felt his consciousness sink more, slowly, sinking...it was a bottomless abyss!

...

Luo Feng stood on the 1238th level, his eyes shut, his face revealed a simple smile. After which, he behaved like a robot, flying back and landing on the 1237th level.

"Mang...Jian..."

The demon notes changed.

Luo Feng’s consciousness rose from the bottomless abyss, almost like returning to reality from the darkness.

"Hm?" He opened his eyes quickly.

He awoke!

"Phew, phew..." He gasped for breath, sweat beading from his forehead profusely, his face pale.

"That was too dangerous, too dangerous, against that demon note earlier, I had no way to withstand it." Luo Feng who had always confident in his willpower and consciousness strength felt like he just received a new lease of life. One had to know that those that came to the demon note inheritance palace were all mostly undyings.

Just how strong were their defenses?

If the demon notes could affect these beings, how could it not affect Luo Feng?

"Luckily, I guessed earlier that the demon note shrine was specially built for the inheritance, it shouldn’t have any threat to the inheritors." Luo Feng felt his mind constantly receiving the 1237th level of information, lifting his head once again to look at the endless space and that shrine.

He couldn’t accept it!

He just couldn’t accept it!

"The cloud contact vine can at most extend 3,000km, I don’t know if it can reach." He thought, even though he felt like the design of the palace wouldn’t have such a loophole, he couldn’t resist not giving it a shot, he immediately extended his right arm and from the sleeves shot out a thin vine.

Chi chi chi...

It extended and quickly grew longer and thicker, heading towards the shrine.

When the cloud contact vine had just reached universe level, with 72 vines, every one of them had already reached 300km long. The domain lord level vine now could reach up to 3,000 km...its structure could be said, if placed in the center of china, it could cover the entire territory!

"There’s actually no resistance!"

"No resistance at all?" He couldn’t believe it, watching the vine extend towards the distant space.

"Shrine!"

The vine pierced into the shrine!

Chi!

"Hm?" His expression changed.

The shrine which he could see was simply like air, the vines that grew there couldn’t even touch anything.

"What’s going on?" Luo Feng controlled the vine to sweep about.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

The air swiveled about.

However no matter how the vines swept, even against the stairs that led there, it couldn’t touch anything at all.

"This, this, this..." Luo Feng was shocked, after which he sent another vine from his right arm towards the stairs he was on.

Chi!

The vine passed right through the stairs, almost like there was nothing there.

"How can this be?" He frowned.

"Luo Feng, I think I understand it. Take out a robot, try again." Babata's voice resounded within Luo Feng's mind, he nodded and the 1,000s of km cloud contact vine shrank back, simultaneously he retrieved a robot from his space ring.

This robot was completely gold, it was a robot guard he had gotten from the virtual universe company. These guards were similar to the liquid silver guards, but more durable. These robots were provided by the company.

It floated in mid air and bowed respectfully at Luo Feng, "Master!"

"Step on the stairs." Luo Feng ordered.

"Yes!" The guard immediately landed and stepped.

Hu!

Similarly, it was like he stepped on air.

"Di, di, di..." The guard's red crystal eyes immediately had large amounts of words flashing through them, as though it was swiftly calculating things after which he turned towards Luo Feng and said, "Master, these stairs cannot be stepped on. However, master you are standing on them...there's no logical explanation in my information database."

Luo Feng nodded, with a wave, he kept the robot back into the space ring.

"Just as I guessed, it shouldn’t be wrong." Babata’s voice sounded.

"What’s going on?" Luo Feng asked even though he roughly began to understand too.

"Luo Feng, this mysterious inheritance palace, all the treasures etc, only the inheritors can receive them!" Babata said, "Just like the inheritance your teacher left behind, like when I accept the disciples. The bank accounts he left behind, only the disciples that pass through the inspection can retrieve them."

"1 theory!"

"To be able to build such a terrifying inheritance palace, existing for a trillion years, with even undying beasts. The virtual universe company even sends so many absolute undyings to be stationed here. Obviously..." Babata said confidently, "That being...belongs to the most pinnacle of eternal beings, far exceeding your teacher."

Luo Feng nodded.

Right.

That being that left this behind, he abilities were far beyond his imagination. After all the demon notes he left behind...could easily overcome undyings, if he came out personally, how absurd would that be?

"Hence, this great being, the palace he built, the treasures can only be retrieved by the inheritors." Babata said, "Whether you use a supporting plant life form or machine, ships etc. As long as it's not the inheritor themself, they wouldn’t even be able to touch the stairs, shrine etc, almost like they are all in a different space altogether.

Luo Feng nodded.

They couldn’t even touch it, the use of space far exceeded Luo Feng’s imagination.

"You are an inheritor, only you can touch the stairs and shrine." Babata said, "Every inheritor must have to be able to receive the inheritance. However, the life forms with souls...obviously cannot withstand the demon notes he left behind. They can only take one step at a time."

"If they can withstand it?" Luo Feng smiled.

"If they can, that would mean that inheritor is also a great being. It would make sense they can retrieve the treasures." Babata said.

Luo Feng nodded.

Looking up at the distant shrine in space, while receiving the inheritance, he pondered.

"The design is indeed perfect."

"Inheritance palace, only a life form can receive the inheritance and they must have souls." He exclaimed, "And the life form with a soul will definitely be affected by the demon notes. This way...they really have to follow the great being's plan of taking one step at a time, until they reach the shrine."

"However!"

"There are life forms that defy logic in the universe." Luo Feng stared at the shrine in space.

Sou!

In mid air, another black clothed Luo Feng appeared, his life energy was identical to his earth body, it was Mosha Luo Feng!

"My mosha body, can completely clone its energy to my earth human body." He stood there, Mosha Luo Feng too began to descend and land on the stairs.

Pa!

He landed on the stairs!

Standing on the solid stone stairs.

"Very good!" Mosha Luo Feng smiled, immediately taking a step to the next level.

"Wang...Chang..."

That terrifying demon note pierced into Mosha Luo Feng.

However...

Demon note, accurately speaking was a form of soul hypnotism, it was a terrifying super hypnotism. Those that were affected would lose their sense of reason and become zombies!

However...

The Mosha Luo Feng didn't carry the core. The core remained with the earth human body.

The Mosha Luo Feng without a core...was simply like a real Mosha Clansman!

It wasn't affected at all by soul attacks!

As long as any attacks were linked to the soul, it had no effect whatsoever on it!

"Right, just like this." Mosha Luo Feng smiled and walked on the stairs, heading to the next level, the demon notes piled on, however the seemingly celebratory Luo Feng was celebrating as he proceeded upwards.

Another step after another.

More steps.

The great being that left behind the inheritance would probably never had guessed that, a life form with a soul and another soul less life form...could actually be the same person!

Chapter 582: The Treasure of the Shrine

The demon notes sounded, if one couldn't see the effects of the demon notes, just listening to them alone, they were wonderful

On the stairs in space, the many levels extended upwards.

Mosha Luo Feng became a beam of light passing through the many levels, quickly reaching the 3,333th level, this was the final level of the 1st part. And before him, was a 1,000m tall shrine with the outerwall filled with peculiar statues, there stood 2 huge gold doors.

The door was open.

"Shrine!"

Luo Feng looked at the huge gold door that exuded shocking pressure, before this door that was at least a few hundred meters tall, he was like a small ant.

"I'm here." Luo Feng flew straight in.

Mist covered the entire shrine, there floated a stone tablet amidst the mist, on it mysterious words appeared, after awhile, the meaning of the words were... "You are the 61,201th inheritor who's come here, you have the right to obtain the title Beginner, receiving the beginner reward.

The moment the words finished.

Luo Feng looked all about, wanting to find the treasure, however suddenly...

"To be able to get here, 1 is to finish all 3333 levels of inheritance stairs, the 2nd is like you, forcefully withstanding the demon note until you reach here." A complex mysterious voice resounded within the shrine, the language as something he had never heard before, yet Luo Feng understood everything it said.

He was shocked when he heard the words.

Demon mountain had existed for over a trillion years, that great being should have long left the place.

"To be able to withstand the demon note, you must at least be a universe knight! Simply being a universe knight means you already are an absolute being in the universe, yet you till eye the little treasures I leave behind. Haha...since you've personally come, take the little treasures I've left." After the voice finished,2 energy balls floated there.

1 golden energy ball.

1 grey ball.

Mosha Luo Feng stood in the shrine, looking up at the distant floating energy balls, laughing within, "That being must have left

behind a warning in the shrine. He must have discovered I didn't receive the 3,333 levels of inheritance and barged my way here, he must have thought I withstood it all."

"However, still truly powerful."

"According to what he said, those able to withstand it must at least be a universe knight." Luo Feng exclaimed within.

Knights, they were split into space or time knights.

In the universe they were definitely absolute beings, to be able to build a universe country, dominate over trillions of galaxies and countless lives. Even amongst the pinnacle of races, humans, the universe country leaders were huge figures. Amongst the weaker races in the universe, a knight...would most probably be the ultimate power.

"From the looks of it!"

"The one who left behind the inheritance should be stronger than a knight." His gaze fell on the 2 energy balls.

In the mist, 1 ball of gold and another of grey floated.

Rumble!

Rumble!

The grey energy ball exploded open and within it floated a grey stone board, it was about 3m long, half a meter wide and on it were incomparably complex naturally formed engravings, the center complex engravings actually formed a bird like creature.

The gold energy ball exploded open and revealed a crystal like gold fruit.

From the 1st glance, it was similar to the cantaloupe melon Luo Feng ate on earth, however even though this floating fruit was gold, it was translucent, one could faintly see the insides of it, and it was surrounded by gold energy.

A stone board.

A fruit!

These were the treasures the inheritance palace left behind.

"Luo Fu Liu board!" Babata was shocked, "The punk that left this behind sure is generous, the 1st part and he actually leaves behind the treasure Luo Fu Liu board!"

"What's that?" Luo Feng asked.

"This board is similar to your dark cloud shuttle." Babata said, "It is a flying weapon to be stood on."

"Flying spirit weapon?" Luo Feng was curious.

The spirit weapons in the universe, to Luo Feng were considered cheap. The level 5 weapons...may be expensive to the sector lords but they didn't matter much to Luo Feng. This naturally formed board before Luo Feng however, was something he had never seen or heard of.

"Is this board very expensive?" Luo Feng asked.

"What a joke!" Babata said, "Luo Feng, those level 1 to 5 spirit weapons are for beings under undyings to use! Undyings can't be bothered to use such weapons. Even one of the 9 god weapons the Nan Shen Armament...unless its an average undying, otherwise any others with strength would switch for something better."

Luo Feng nodded, this he knew.

"The origins for the weapons used by undyings come from many places."

"And the Luo Fu Liu board is considered an exceptional flying spirit weapon even amongst the undying weapons. Only few Official levels have it. Most of them are emperor level at least." Babata said. "It is a naturally formed stone board from the universe, its power is shocking!"

Luo Feng was stunned.

"Only few Official level have it. Then my teacher?" Luo Feng asked.

"Which?" Babata asked, "If it's True Yan, then he'll definitely be able to acquire it. My master... was weaker. The flying spirit weapon he used was much weaker. After all the price of the Luo Fu Liu board is 1 to 2 million mixed elements, and even so, very few people sell it!"

Luo Feng took a deep breath.

Calm, he had to keep calm.

1-2 million mixed elements?

"Sick, really sick!" He felt that he was very poor already, 1 million mixed elements, just what was that? Back then when Luo Feng joined the auction, the little starfield Da Na starfield was sold for only 1,000 mixed elements. Of course that was still a small starfield.

And the black dragon mountain star field was a big one, its galaxies were 20 times that of the Da Na starfield! As the galaxies were gathered together and easy to govern, its price could be at least 10 times, however even so its price was still only 300,000-1 million mixed elements.

Usually with 500,000 mixed elements, one could already buy the

black dragon mountain star field. 1 million was the absolute maximum.

"Just this stone board is comparable to the black dragon mountain star field?" Luo Feng took a deep breath.

"If you brought this stone board to that undying in the sacred land black dragon, that undying will definitely be more than willing to exchange you for it." Babata said, "No matter what, the black dragon mountain empire is only 1 undying's entire wealth."

Luo Feng nodded.

He had to look at this problem from a different angle, it was different than on earth, there were many countries that were personal wealths! Like the Ganwu universe country was that leader's entire wealth. If it were said... that there were treasures able to raise the Ganwu universe country leader's power to that of the primal chaos city leader level

The ganwu universe country leader would definitely be more than willing to give away his country and exchange for the treasure.

"What's that fruit?" Luo Feng asked.

"That I don't know, I've followed your teacher for over 60 million years, i've seen and heard a lot, this gold fruit, I've never seen before. I only know... another special gold fruit." Babata said,

"But it’s obviously different from that one."

Within the shrine.

Luo Feng looked up at the 2 floating treasures, even after talking so much with Babata, that had only been an instant.

Suddenly!

More words appeared on the stone tablet floating in the mist, "Beginner reward, the 1st is the Luo Fu Liu board, flying weapon for a spirit reader, with it, survival chances in the dangerous universe greatly rises. The 2nd is the Gold soul fruit, a mysterious fruit that forms only once every 3,000 eras, it has a special quality that can change the soul, making it able to accept more inheritance! This 1st and 2nd part will both have soul changing treasures. Yet, still none have been able to fully accept it completely."

Luo Feng realized.

He immediately extended his arm and grabbed the 2 treasures, swiftly keeping both treasures in his space ring.

"Gold soul fruit, so it can change the soul." Luo Feng nodded.

"Seems right!"

"If I were a being that leaves behind an inheritance, I will leave some treasures to try and aid the later generations in completing it." Luo Feng thought, "It's a pity, even with the being's help, the 100s of thousands of life forms that have been here, even the undyings haven't been able to succeed."

...

Mosha Luo Feng swiftly left the shrine after acquiring the 2 treasures and flew down.

Sou!

He flew from high above in the shrine down to the 1237th level, standing beside the earth body, passing him the space ring and vanishing into the internal world.

Luo Feng stood there, looking at the shrine, smiling.

"Haha..."

"I got really lucky this time." He smiled, "The universe is incredibly vast and mysterious, with many miracles, but only through acquiring them would it be a success. This is considered a success."

With a wave.

A translucent gold fruit appeared, gold energy visible to the naked eye surrounded it.

The gold soul fruit, a fruit formed once every 3,000 eras.

"According to the information from the shrine, it can change my soul, making it better suited to accept the inheritance." Luo Feng didn’t hesitate and took a bite, as he broke through the skin of the fruit, the meat from within flowed like energy and permeated into his body.

Chi chi chi...

Even the skin outside became like an energy flow, permeating his body.

Luo Feng could only feel a cold rush through his body, and that energy later swiftly entered his core, permeating through the condensed crystal soul The dark gold energy continued to flow in, his soul swiftly began to undergo changes, the blood color of his soul before now had hints of gold.

"How comfortable!"

"The piercing pain from before is completely gone, there isn’t a hint of fatigue, and my attention has risen a hundred times." Luo Feng could clearly feel the evolution of his soul, "Even the drag from before is all gone."

His eyes gleamed brighter.

"Hahaha..."

"I can accept more of the inheritance now!" Luo Feng was extremely excited.

"Luo Feng, with regards to the Luo Fu Liu board’s training, let me warn you." Babata’s voice resounded within Luo Feng’s mind.

Chapter 583: Qualification Battles Begin!

The soul kept evolving, Luo Feng spoke to Babata simultaneously, "The training of the Luo Fu Liu board, what's there to warn about?"

"Using that board and normal spirit weapons are definitely different!" Babata said, "The Luo Fu Liu board...already has a thread of its own life. The training would be pretty close to that of the cloud contact vine."

"Slit my wrist?" Luo Feng laughed.

"Anyway, you have to let it suck your blood first." Babata said, "Even though it has a hint of life, it's not considered a life form. The cloud contact vine however is a life form. The training of the vine is easier, the Luo Fu Liu board is a little more troublesome."

"First it'll have to suck your blood!"

"After which you'll have to bring it about and use spirit energy on it for long periods of time to appease it, it's like water seeping in and molding stone. It requires a long period of time for your spirit energy imprint to seep in! The moment it succeeds...the board will meld with your skin and take form." Babata said.

Luo Feng was surprised, "Change? Is it the same as wearing a genetic armor?"

"Even though it can take the shape of armor, the board doesn’t have the auto defensive ability! It’s armor form will at most be similar to your outermost armor right now, only taking the brunt of impact." Babata said, "It’s proficiency is in flying, how fast it can fly will depend on you. Of course it's definitely a lot better than the dark cloud shuttle."

Luo Feng nodded!

He immediately brought out the peculiar stone board and slit his wrist, fresh blood staining the stone, the stone board swiftly drank the blood, especially in the center where the engravings formed the bird picture, it seemed to move a little.

...

After feeding it once, he used it as a cushion and sat crossed legged on it, sending spirit energy into it gradually and simultaneously accepting the inheritance.

The gold soul fruit was incredible.

The fruit had the ability to affect undyings, much less Luo Feng, the lower the basics, the more obvious the effects! After eating that one gold soul fruit, Luo Feng felt an incredibly obvious change in his soul, the color of his soul became a mix of blood red and gold.

"I’ve been accepting the inheritance for over 3 years, my survival mission in demon mountain is completed. If I don’t leave now, my

teacher will be worried." Luo Feng ordered, "Babata, open connections to the virtual universe network."

"Understood." Babata answered.

Just like when a person was focusing on something important and didn't want to be disturbed.

When Luo Feng was receiving the inheritance, he didn't want any calls to come through. After all if he didn't close communications...his family and friends would all call once every few days.

"Connect to the virtual universe!"

He sent a thread of consciousness into the virtual universe network, arriving at Yu Xiang Mountain.

Absolute beginning district, Luo Feng's villa.

"Shua!"

He appeared out of thin air.

The guards and staff were all shocked from his arrival, after which they all regained their senses and bowed respectfully, "Your majesty."

"Your majesty, Your majesty" The leader sector lord Ao Duo who was lying in the distant chair and sipping wine immediately swiftly stood up, his face full of glee and surprise as he rushed over, "Your majesty, there hasn’t been any news from you the past few years, we’ve been all very worried."

Luo Feng laughed.

"The news of you accepting the impossible level mission has long spread. Within Yu Xiang Mountain...there’s been a rumor that you died at demon mountain." The bald old man Ao Duo said.

"Died?" Luo Feng frowned, "Who spread this rumor?"

"No idea." Ao Duo shook his head.

Luo Feng looked in the south east direction, there stood the primal region, he muttered, "Mo Luo, I don’t think you were the one who spread this rumor right. However...don’t worry! I’ll surprise you very quickly."

After which, Luo Feng swiftly walked into his villa and entered his study.

Sitting before his desk, he opened his laptop and swiftly sent a mail to his friends, family and teacher, letting them know he was fine.

At that moment...

Many calls came!

"Luo Feng, you are too vicious, you've disappeared for over 3 years! And in the impossible level mission, you really scared all of us, we really thought you died there in demon mountain." The manka prince Wuka shouted excitedly, "Immediately come over! We haven't seen you in years."

"I knew you definitely wouldn't have died!" On the screen, Rong Jun smiled at Luo Feng.

"Father!"

"Grandfather! This is my great grandson..."

"Luo Feng!"

Luo Feng looked at his huge family on the screen, he couldn't help but recall that reason behind the human race becoming one of the pinnacle races was due to its numbers. He had left earth for about 200 years, and in these 200 years, his family had grown so much.

The initial few, his parents, brother's family and his family.

Now?

The entire Luo Family had become a huge family. If a 1,000 years, 10,000 years, 1 million years had passed, the family members would range up to the millions and more, that would indeed be normal.

"You, get back now!" On the screen Xu Xin was happy and yet angry.

"Hm!" Luo Feng nodded.

...

However, just as Luo Feng was about to leave immediately for his wife, his teacher True Yan emperor personally came to the absolute beginning region.

Absolute beginning region, Luo Feng's living room.

True Yan sat in the sofa staring at Luo Feng. Luo Feng stood obediently.

"No news in 3 years." True Yan's gaze was like lightning, sweeping past Luo Feng, "And in that demon note mountain... speak, why did you close all communications in demon note mountain."

"Teacher."

Luo Feng bowed respectfully, "This was my mistake."

To True Yan, he was extremely respectful, unlike Hu Yan Bo of which he never truly met, he had been with his teacher True Yan for too long...over long periods of contact, he was very clear on his teacher's character, straightforward and strong, the way he treated his disciples like his own children.

Extremely protective!

One can pretend easily for ten to hundreds of years, however for a trillion years...that definitely wasn't pretending anymore.

True Yan's character was publicly known in primal chaos city.

Over a hundred years of interaction with him, Luo Feng was able to feel his concern towards himself, he immediately bowed respectfully, "Your student has had a miraculous encounter this time."

"Encounter?" True Yan's eyes gleamed, "Inheritance palace?"

Even though Luo Feng was shocked, he didn't hesitate, "Right!"

There was no other way to explain, because in demon note mountain...it was either training or dead, otherwise there was no reason to shut off communications. And training in demon note mountain, unless it was the safe inheritance palace, there wasn't any other place to really train.

"Really?" True Yan fiercely stood up, he looked at his student in disbelief, "How can that be, how did you enter?"

"Coincidence." Luo Feng smiled helplessly.

"Pretending to look innocent." True Yan couldn’t suppress a smile, staring at Luo Feng, "However you shouldn’t have the ability to enter that at all, speak...how many palaces are there."

"32." Luo Feng said.

"Hahahahaha..." True Yan couldn’t help but laugh loudly, "I didn’t expect the punk Mist Emperor to actually lose his slot to my student, unlucky."

"What?" Luo Feng was curious.

True Yan smiled and looked at his disciple, explaining, "The demon note inheritance was long discovered...and there are many with the ability to enter. However the slots are limited! Your entering of the palace naturally took up one slot. And this slot was Mist emperor’s.

"His slot?" Luo Feng realized.

He really didn’t know...

That the slots were all pre set early on.

"The ignorant are not guilty, you entered through the impossible level mission, even if the news is public later on, no one can find a fault with you." True Yan laughed, "What's more, Mist emperor and his teacher aren't people from the virtual universe company. Hence there's no need to fear...what's more, if I keep the secret and you remain silent, they wouldn't necessarily find out it was you."

Luo Feng nodded.

Right.

As long as he remained silent, even if people suspected, they would never believe that a universe level 9 was able to enter the inheritance palace. Afterall even after he admitted, his teacher didn't fully believe him.

"There's also one more thing." True Yan looked at Luo Feng, the little genius Mo Luo from the primal region told me some news about you."

"Mo Luo!"

A glint flashed in Luo Feng's eyes, he snorted, "That punk is incredibly vicious, he may seem righteous on the outside, in truth...hmph, if I wasn't lucky this time, I would really have been killed by him."

"So he actually backstabbed you." True Yan nodded, "He said before that it was you who did so."

"What? I backstabbed him?" Luo Feng felt rage and unfairness, he couldn’t help but curse, "This Mo Luo, shameless!"

"Haha...the qualification battles, do you have confidence if you meet him?" True Yan said.

"Of course!" Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

"Hm." True Yan nodded, "You encounter this time is indeed a miracle. Only a pity your soul is still weak, you can only take so much of the inheritance! However...even so, that inheritance technique should be enough for you for a trillion years already."

Luo Feng nodded.

After training, he knew the value of the technique.

Raising his spirit energy amplitude from 70-80 until over 1,200, that was over ten times! What treasure or weapon could have that kind of terrifying effect!

...

After which True Yan left, after knowing his student was safe, he

relaxed.

Luo Feng felt gratitude as he watched his teacher vanish, as his teacher didn't pry into the details, asking just how he entered the palace...as for the golden horned beast identity, Luo Feng really didn't dare reveal it. Even his own parents and brother he didn't say.

How could he?

saying that he wasn't exactly a human but a golden horned beast? He had always regarded himself as human!

"It's time to meet the wife!" Luo Feng immediately teleported to black dragon mountain island 9 star bay.

...

A thread of his consciousness was in the virtual universe appeasing his family and friends, in reality, he was still in demon note mountain's core...inheritance palace.

In space, Luo Feng stood on the inheritance stairs, progressing through each level!

The gold soul fruit's effects were indeed strong, it made his soul go through a huge evolution. Even if I trained there for over 5 years, he still wouldn't feel any sense of fatigue. And at this time... the once every century virtual universe company universe level

qualification battles were about to begin!

Chapter 584: Qualification Battles

Floating in the depths of the absolute beginning region, the majestic demon mountain had the one particular inheritance palace that had levels of stairs that extended into space, up to the 3,333th level.

On the 1,916th level.

Luo Feng who was dressed in silver armor was like a statue sitting with his eyes closed on the stairs, his soul however was constantly evolving, countless engravings permeating his soul. Suddenly the statue stood up and his eyes opened, a glint in his eyes, "Today is the day of the qualification battles!"

"I'll have to slow down on the inheritance!"

He looked down at his feet, beside them was an ancient peculiar stone board, the Luo Fu Liu board.

"Meld!" With a thought, the board swiftly shrank and melded with his feet. His 2 years of training had finally successfully left his spirit imprint on the board, the board could change its size accordingly, it could take any form and meld with his skin or muscles, even his bones etc.

Luo Feng sent out 90% of his consciousness and swiftly entered the virtual universe.

He left 10% to continue receiving the inheritance, the speed of his training would decrease greatly, it normally took a day for one level before, right now it would probably take 10 days for 1 level.

"Your majesty!"

"Your majesty!"

In the virtual universe absolute beginning region, the universe levels, domain lords and sector lord guards including the staff all bowed respectfully!

"Hm!"

Luo Feng nodded and flew into the sky heading towards Wuka's villa.

...

Wuka's villa had become Luo Feng's, Jiang Mo, Qian shui, Rong Jun, Lancelot, Ao Pat Te La, Ai Chen and Wuka's gathering spot.

"Hm?"

Gazing from above, he saw that there were already 7 people gathered there.

"Luo Feng!"

"Hurry over!"

The tables and chairs in the villa were already filled and the people there all looked up and shouted, obviously spotting Luo Feng.

"I’m here!" He smiled.

Sou!

He rushed over and instantly closed 10km and landed on the grass, walking towards the table and sitting in an empty seat.

"Luo Feng, today is the beginning of the qualification battles. We’ll probably be gathered in a while, and yet you still took your time to get over, look, everybody else is here. Only you...the slowest! Are we not good enough for you." Wuka lifted a 1m long piece of barbecued meat and ate, while speaking, Luo Feng didn’t know what kind of meat that was.

"Eat finish before speaking." Luo Feng sat and lifted the wine before him, opening the cork and drinking, immediately feeling refreshed.

Beside, the Dream clan beauty Ai Chen too lifted her glass and smiled, "The one with the least pressure among us is probably Luo Feng, the rest of us all have a chance of being kicked into the Sky

and Land region. Only Luo Feng definitely won't be kicked out."

"Right."

"That group of seniors have all passed the heavenly bridge's 6th level, our hopes aren't too good."

The group of geniuses from all different races all chatted.

"You all..." Luo Feng put down his wine and forced a smile.

"Hence the latest person here is because he's the most relaxed." Rong Jun chimed in and said.

"You too?"

Luo Feng shook his head, the competition within the absolute beginning region, he was 100% sure he wouldn't be eliminated. However different strengths meant they had different targets. Wuka, Jiang Mo and Qian Shui with the others were worried about being kicked into the Sky and land region, Luo Feng's aim however was to make it into the primal region, and making it there...

Was extremely hard!

Even with his current strength, he didn't have too much guarantee.

"Luo Feng!" Wuka looked at him.

"Luo Feng!" Jiang Mo looked over too.

"Luo Feng!"

"Luo Feng!"

Rong Jun, Lancelot...the rest all put down their food and drinks and looked over, 7 of them looking at him!

Luo Feng was stunned.

"Madman." Wuka emphasized, "You should know the situation of us newbies, as we just joined the virtual universe company. Hence the difference between our strengths and the seniors is pretty huge, even compared to the seniors of the sky and land region's top fighters amongst the 300 seniors, we are still much weaker."

"Among us 8, Rong Jun may be able to fight to stay in the absolute beginning region, however, no matter how he fights...he would still be amongst the bottom here. The rest of us don't even have a hint of hope!"

The group was silent.

Right.

No hope at all!

The seniors of the absolute beginning region and sky and land region had about ten of them that all passed the 6th level of the heavenly bridge! Their level in origin law comprehension, battle experience was the pinnacle amongst the seniors. The newbies were all set to be eliminated. Without a trace of hope. The couldn’t bear with this helplessness.

"Among the 8 of us, Luo Feng!" Rong Jun said solemnly, he stared at him, "Only you, only you can rush to the top!"

The 8 of them.

6 didn’t have a hint of hope, Rong Jun too only had some chance to remain, but he’d have to give it his all.

Luo Feng looked at the group of geniuses, they were all proud, however they all didn’t have a glimmer of hope, only unwillingly accepting the outcome. However suppressed and angry they were within, they could only send their hopes with their fellow newbie Luo Feng!

"Relax!" Luo Feng nodded.

...

After about half an hour, a rumbling sound could be heard within the region.

"The absolute beginning universe level qualification battles are about to begin, all gather!"

30 seniors and 8 newbies all looked up, the sound resounded from the skies itself, visible to the naked eye a purple armored silhouette stood there. Immediately the 38 universe level members all rushed into the skies and all flew before that man.

"Look, that's Ke Luo Fu! The strongest amongst the 30 seniors."

"Chemist Yu Feng!"

The group of geniuses in mid air all observed their opponents, because they would all soon clash!

Luo Feng too was observing 5 people...

The 5 strongest of the absolute beginning seniors, from weakest, Sa Jin Fire dragon, Ge, Ni Nan and the 2 strongest Chemist Yu Feng and Wolfman Ke Luo Fu.

Sa Jin waved his tail, his eyes burning as he stared at Luo Feng, filled with fighting spirit, he communicated, "Luo Feng, I lost last time but this time I will win!" He lost in terms of willpower before, he couldn't withstand Luo Feng's consciousness pressure.

The moment he could withstand it, then his black hole evolution

could truly be unleashed, Luo Feng of back then would definitely not been able to fight back, after all Sa Jin had passed the 7th level of the heavenly bridge much much earlier.

"I won last time, I'll win again!" Luo Feng looked back and replied.

"Ge!" Luo Feng looked at the other man.

Ge was a battle crazy person. Even though he was the latest to pass the 7th level amongst the 5, he was more like Rong Jun, his battle talents were extremely high...similar comprehension levels but the strength he could unleash was incredibly powerful.

He had messy yellow hair and he squinted his eyes as he stood in mid air, there were a set of little ears behind the 2 normal ones, he seemed dejected but he still gave off the aura of a wild beast. The other geniuses of the region all stood further away from him, obviously not daring to get close.

Ge glanced at Luo Feng and a glint flashed through his droopy eyes, after which he returned to his original dejected state.

"Ni Nan." Luo Feng glanced at the silver armored youth.

That youth was smiling, he was the easiest to get close to amongst the 5, when Luo Feng looked over....he too smiled back.

"Yu Feng!"

Chemist Yu Feng!

He was the most peculiar of the 5, he was completely draped in a black robe and one could only barely see his eyes.

"Ke Luo Fu!" Luo Feng looked at the strongest of the 5.

Ke Luo Fu!

Dressed in grey armor with yellow fur on his face, his brown eyes gleamed with green light, his fangs poked through the corners of his mouth, he made Luo Feng feel as though he was almost like a wolf! The wolfman seemed to notice Luo Feng looking over and he turned, suddenly smiling.

"Rumble!"

Almost like a huge beast staring over, Luo Feng couldn't help but feel his hairs stand.

"Haha..." Ke Luo Fu chuckled lightly, "Interesting punk."

The wolf man's words immediately made the rest of the seniors look over, everyone including chemist Yu Feng all looked, while looking, they couldn't help but feel nervous! Luo Feng too stared back at the wolf man, even though he had met the primal region's Mo Luo before, his subconscious still felt...

The absolute beginning region's strongest Ke Luo Fu, was more terrifying than the primal region's Mo Luo!

This group of absolute geniuses came from many races of humans, 38 representing 38 different races, their dressings were different too. Some were in green, others in flame robes, others giving off chilly vibes, they were all noble, but 6 of them were strongest!

The 5 of the seniors and the strongest newbie Luo Feng!

6!

All passed the heavenly bridge's 7th level!

"The qualification battles are very simple!"

"You 38 will battle the other 37 each 1v1. The winner will get 1 point! The loser and draws will get 0! The top 3 will be picked according to the scores and they will have the right to challenge the slots in the primal region." The purple armored skinny man said with a hoarse voice, even his lips were purple. "The primal region has a total of 5 people, they will have their own qualification battle. Their bottom 3 will fight our absolute beginning strongest 3. A total of 6 will vie for that one slot of the primal region.

Silence.

Luo Feng, Ke Luo Fu, Sa Jin, Chemist Yu Feng, Ni Nan, Ge, the 6's eyes gleamed.

"3 of our absolute beginning against 3 of their primal region members, only one victor!" Luo Feng's gaze swept past the 5, "The 5 of them, along with 3 from the primal region, I must defeat all of them! Only through that will I become a primal region member!"

Chapter 585: White Dwarf Star

There was one messy yellow haired decadent looking man with 4 ears and droopy eyes, he gazed at the other 5: "Sa Jin, Ni Nan and Luo Feng aren't too much of a threat! My true opponents are Yu Feng and Ke Luo Fu! In the previous qualification battles, my move wasn't perfect, hence I didn't unleash it. This time...I will shock everybody! And rush into the primal region!

Ge was filled with ambition, and his improvement speed was indeed shocking.

...

"Defeating the other 4 will be simple, only that wolf." Yu Feng who was draped in a black robe looked at Ke Luo Fu, the medicine I specially made for him this time, as long as it works...I have a guarantee of making it into the primal region!"

...

Wolf man Ke Luo Fu floated silently in space, "I'm currently in an impossible mission, I have to keep alert with part of my consciousness. The other part to participate here! Under normal circumstances, I can only use about 70% of my power...hm, 70% is enough."

...

The group all had their own thoughts.

And the purple uniformed skinny man who represented the virtual universe company continued, "The absolute beginning's last 18 will battle with the top 10 of the Sky and land region, these 28 will battle for the 8 slots in the absolute beginning region. The losers will be kicked into the sky and land region."

Luo Feng was shocked within.

The chances of getting kicked out was simply too high.

However, it was right!

The primal region normally has 3 slots for universe level!

The absolute beginning should have 30 universe levels!

Any excess would naturally be kicked out, as long as they weren't strong enough, they would be kicked!

"Rong Jun may be in trouble this time." He looked at Rong Jun beside, Rong Jun however was smiling, filled with confidence.

"The qualification battles are just about to begin!" The skinny man looked at the group of youths, "The battles will take place in special locations, at that time, the virtual universe system will automatically send you over. Also, you can watch other battles

through the screens!"

"Get ready!"

He vanished right after he finished.

The group of geniuses in mid air then opened their screens, at this time...almost 38 of them simultaneously heard a ringing in their ears, Sou! Sou! Sou! Sou! They all were teleported out of Yu Xiang Mountain.

Qualification battles!

It’s begun!

"Luo Feng, the absolute beginning qualification battles, your 1st match is about to begin, your opponent is Moshka." The sound he head in his ears had this content, simultaneously, an arm bracelet screen appeared on his wrist, on it the battle details displayed.

Sou!

Luo Feng was already transported, to the location where he would face the senior Moshka.

...

38 people, 19 battles began simultaneously!

Yu Xiang mountain primal region, every primal region member's villa was 1,000km in area, larger than any territory on earth!

Mo Luo was dressed in long pants, standing in his vast grass field and practicing his attacks.

"Your majesty is too crazy."

"He trains non stop."

"Most of his training time is spent on his fist work, the Beast fist's wonders don't pale in comparison to some undying's techniques." The group of sector lord guards all discussed in hushed voices from a distance, large amount of staff too were filled with respect and shock, they worshipped this Mo Luo.

Mo Luo knew how to win people's hearts.

At least amongst the over 10k personnel in his villa, they all respected and worshipped him.

...

"Howl..." He roared almost like a wild dog instantly becoming a beam of light and rushing 10km ahead, 2 claws tearing fiercely ahead, causing huge tears in the grass that stretched over 100km,

almost like 2 canyons.

"Di!"

"Received mail, the absolute beginning qualification battles have begun." A voice resounded.

Only then did Mo Luo stop.

"It ain’t living if it ain’t crazy enough!" Mo Luo took a deep breath, from his beggar life when he was young, death warrior training in the factions, and his competition among the elites of the virtual universe company, he had fought non stop, finally becoming a core member of the company, and even after he still had to fight to rise and stay.

From the last phase region to sky and land region, from there to the absolute beginning and finally to the primal region.

This way.

He rose from an orphan beggar to the top, becoming a pinnacle genius of the universe!

"Even an undying is only my guard!" Mo Luo gazed at the distant sector lord guards and the leading undying, he smiled and nodded, inside however he roared, "Why, it’s because I fight for it! Using any means, as long as I win, that is the best way for success!"

"The way for an absolute warrior to survive! It ain’t living if it ain’t crazy enough!"

Mo Luo lifted his finger and tapped gently.

Chi!

A screen floated there.

"Watch Luo Feng’s battle." Mo Luo ordered.

Primal region, absolute beginning region, sky and land region, last phase region, the battles all took place at different times. As the lesser the number of people the less time and other preparation it took. Hence the last phase region with the most number of members, just the members alone was about 10,000!

The sky and land had over 300.

Absolute beginning had over 30.

Primal region only had 5!

Hence, naturally the last phase had the most details to prepare and was the earliest to begin. And the primal region with only 5 members would be the last.

...

The broadcast of the battles were open to any core member. Naturally the undyings with high authority could all watch too.

"I don’t believe that Luo Feng is still alive!" Mo Luo stared at the screen, "I personally kicked him down into that terrifying abyss, according to the data I’ve collected, anyone who falls into the abyss won't be able to survive."

Mo Luo was a senior, hence his interaction with others made his knowledge and experience of the impossible missions more than the newbies. Also, he was a primal region member with high authority, he could search for more information online.

Luo Feng simply relied on only searching, his information definitely couldn’t compare to Mo Luo’s.

"He’s definitely dead!"

"There’s actually a rumor in the absolute beginning region that he’s alive!" Mo Luo’s eyes were cold, as Luo Feng had sent out that mail to his friends and gone to visit Wuka and the others. However as he was still receiving the inheritance, his time was critical... hence he only showed himself for a brief moment before returning to the palace.

And only Wuka, Rong Jun and the others had seen him.

The other seniors, those that attended the classes hadn’t seen him since then...hence the news of him being alive wasn’t confirmed publicly.

Of course...

The gathering for the battles earlier, was considered Luo Feng’s 1st public appearance. However this gathering...Mo Luo didn’t personally witness.

"If he’s alive, then I’ll be able to watch the broadcast. If he’s dead, there wouldn’t be his battle at all, naturally I won't be able to see it!" Mo Luo stared at the screen, "Rumors are just rumors, I kicked him into the abyss personally, I can definitely confirm his death!"

A prompt appeared on the screen.

Di!

"Luo Feng’s battle with Moshka is currently going on, connecting to broadcast!"

The information in the prompt was very clear.

Mo Luo was stunned.

He stared at the prompt for awhile before frowning, saying

softly, "He’s not dead? He’s actually not dead? How can he be alive after falling into that abyss?"

Rumble!

Luo Feng felt the space around him warp, and later he landed in a desolate surface of a planet, the ground was a dark red, searing temperatures caused his vision to slightly warp, also the extreme gravity made him slightly tremble.

The terrifying magnetic field made him uncomfortable!

"What place is this?" Luo Feng was shocked, he looked down at the screen on his wrist.

On it the detailed information was already translated into earth language...

Battle: Absolute beginning death qualification battles (Universe level)

Opponents: Luo Feng (0 wins 0 loss) against Moshka (0 wins 0 loss)

Location: White dwarf star (Diameter 3,200km, surface gravity 361,000,000g, temperature 21,000 degree Celsius)

"White dwarf star?" Luo Feng smiled, "No wonder the gravity is

so shocking!"

White dwarf star was a forbidden region to the weaker humans.

Universe level 9!

It normally took countless planets to produce 1 universe level, 1 universe level 9 warrior had a punch that could destroy a large continent of earth, if he attacked the pacific ocean he could create a tsunami that could engulf the entire planet! Flying speed in space could reach up to 1,500km per second!

A universe level 9 was already enough to rule a galaxy! Some low level civilizations' strongest was probably at most only a universe level 9.

3 hundred million times the gravity of earth, over 20k degrees in temperature, white dwarf star's terrifying magnetic field was indeed nothing much to a universe level 9.

Of course...

If it were Neutron star.

A universe level 9 would instantly crumble, however white dwarf star was something they could easily withstand.

"Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!"

The land shook.

Luo Feng looked over, there a silhouette was running fast, every step shaking the ground, causing the solid surface to crack with every stomp, in an instant he stopped before Luo Feng, he stared at him filled with fighting spirit.

This person was about 2.2m, skinny, bald, without a single hair on his body!

Dressed in silver armor with a black belt, black boots and a wrist screen, he carried a strange shaped blade on his back, a proper universe soldier get up! The universe soldiers that went to battles outside the starfields would dress this way.

He stared hard at Luo Feng without blinking, as if he was looking at a huge enemy, his voice was shrill as it resounded, "You are Luo Feng!"

Chapter 586: That Claw

Moshka had purple eyes, a high nose bridge, no eyebrows, his lips were very thin and his gaze was like a venomous snake, cold.

"Moshka!"

Luo Feng raised both hands above his chest, other than his head, the rest of his body was covered in armor, "Stop wasting time!"

"Crazy!" Moshka was riled by Luo Feng's words until his face was flushed red, in a flash, he brandished his blade and with a clang, he was ready!

"Newbie, I'll let you know...that even the normal seniors aren't something you can look down on!" Moshka roared and with a fierce stomp, the incredibly solid ground was smashed into pieces, his mini galaxy within his body fiercely exploded, causing him to rush over in a terrifying speed even on this white dwarf star that had 3 hundred million times the gravity of earth.

A streamlined spirit weapon appeared below Luo Feng's feet... dark cloud shuttle.

Standing on it and floating in mid air, he gazed at the raging Moshka rushing over!

"Hmph!"

The instant Moshka drew close to Luo Feng, he instantly stomped hard on the ground, using the force to fly up and rush towards him, his right arm wielding the blade...

"Die!"

Mosha's purple eyes gleamed!

As he got close! He swung his blade!

Rumble!

In the instant he waved his blade, it was almost like a volcano erupting, tearing forward with terrifying destroying intent towards Luo Feng! And as it slashed...the surrounding temperature soared to a shocking level. The flash of the blade slashed past Luo Feng's body, the slash followed forward onto the ground ahead.

Chi!

The slash immediately left a great canyon in the ground, countless tons of the surface ground was slashed into rubble, flying in all directions. The strong gravity pulled everything back down. Dark red liquid even poured out of the canyons, burning and hot.

"Hm?" Moshka who was floating in mid air after slashing looked, his expression changed.

"Your bladework is not bad, however it’s a pity your speed is too slow." A voice resounded.

Moshka turned quickly.

In the distance, Luo Feng stood on his dark cloud shuttle and looked calmly at Moshka.

Controlling a spirit weapon was greatly linked to one’s spirit energy strength.

Similarly in terms of law comprehension, a universe level and a domain lord level, their speed using the spirit weapon definitely had a huge difference! Even though Luo Feng only used 90% of his consciousness to enter the virtual universe, his spirit energy amplitude was after all over 1,900, much more than the 70-80 from before the inheritance palace, it had risen over 20 times!

Even at 90%, it was still over 20 times!

This made his usage of the dark cloud shuttle, under extreme circumstances, much better than before.

"Your blade work is not bad, seeing that move of yours has made this worth it." Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and said, simultaneously the dark golden long rod on his back shot out countless gold lights, they swiftly gathered and finally formed an ancient long blade, it floated in mid air, causing the space about to shake.

Nan Shen Armament’s 5th level...space slicer!

"Use the 6th level!" On the distant ground, Moshka roared with rage, "Luo Feng, are you shaming me!" The group of seniors all knew Luo Feng could already use the 6th level, Blade world.

"The 5th is enough!" Luo Feng said in mid air.

Xiu!

The dark golden blade instantly tore through the 100m in distance, as it flew the surrounding space all came under its pressure, so powerful one could visibly see the warp in space...it instantly reached before Moshka, Moshka, under the pressure of the space roared while struggling, "Luo Feng! Use the 6th level!!!" Simultaneously he used all his strength to wave his volcano like blade!

The dark golden blade was simply too fast, and with the space being pressured, it made the strength of Moshka’s blade diminish further.

Chi!

The dark golden blade was incredibly piercing, piercing straight through Moshka’s armor through his body!

"Explode!"

Luo Feng muttered softly in the distance.

The dark golden blade that pierced into Moshka’s body automatically dispersed within, becoming countless little golden blades that decimated his body, with a rumble, countless blades shot out of his body and the genetic armor that was Moshka’s energy had a great loss in defensive ability.

Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi! Chi!

Countless gold lights shot out from his body, fresh blood spurted out too, with the terrifying gravity of white dwarf star, it all quickly landed on the ground. A universe level 9 warrior’s blood, through many times of evolution, had undergone a shocking change. Even with the powerful gravity here, it still couldn’t make the blood droplets crumble.

Moshka’s body fell heavily on the ground.

"Similar space slicer, different people unleashing it will have different power." Luo Feng landed beside Mosha’s body and looked at the shredded body, his eyes clam, he said quietly, "The current me is much stronger than before, this space slicer is much stronger than before too!"

He looked at his wrist screen, on it his name had the words "1 win 0 loss, points 1."

...

As time passed, many battles went on!

The internal qualification battles of the virtual universe was actually a distribution of resources for the company, everybody wished to make it into the primal region, because...

The resources a primal region was given was very shocking.

Just the universe level, these members had undying teachers, that taught according to how they wanted, if they wished, they could change their teachers anytime. The teachers...were normally Official level too! And they could take more missions too, Luo Feng was very clear, every training mission had a secret hidden within them.

Like blood river world's beast god secret or demon mountain's inheritance palace.

During the domain lord level, primal region members would get even higher authority and status! Extremely high position...meant shocking authority, it allowed them to have great power from the virtual universe company, with many benefits.

During sector lord level, the benefits get even more shocking, the cost the virtual universe company puts into nurturing every sector lord was comparable even to an emperor level undying!

Universe level, domain lord, sector lord!

The further back, the more the resources the virtual universe company would pour into the genius.

A sector lord's life span was very long, with tens of millions of years...within ten million years they could organize 10,00 star level genius level competitions and 1,000 universe level genius level competition. And many sector lords only get stronger later...like the Light sector lord Luo! A few other strong sector lords, probably only bloomed when they reached domain lord or sector lord level.

Long life span!

With 1,008 universe countries in the universe and the virtual universe company absorbing from all of them, why are there only a total of 100 sector lords in the primal region?

Expensive!

Even the virtual universe company couldn't madly go nurture everybody.

Hence...

1 was for glory and honor! 2, was because as one travelled further down the road, everybody would wish to enter the primal region!

"The benefits in the primal region would constantly increase." Luo Feng sat in his study within the absolute beginning villa, a screen floated before him, on it broadcasted the chemist Yu Feng's battle, "Universe level, the status and resources of the primal region members in universe level is already plenty."

"Domain lord level primal region members would become Governors of territories. I heard that when these members go out as governors, they have shocking amounts of authority. That means wealth! Opportunities! Power!"

"Sector lord primal region members' benefits are even more shocking!"

Luo Feng muttered to himself.

The greater the resources, the higher the difficulty! A sector lord entering the primal region was hundreds to thousands of times harder than an universe level!

"Hence, I have to lead from the beginning!"

"With a head start, I'll lead all the way!"

Luo Feng looked at the screen, the battle of Yu Feng, he couldn't help but frown, "This Yu Feng is actually a spirit reader, chemist... those opponents have no resistance against him at all." On the screen, the fighter wielded 2 axes, he wanted to wave them to

battle but he lost control of his muscles as they twitched.

If a fighter was unleashing his move and his muscles twitched...

Naturally there was no way to fully unleash it.

Chi!

His head was cut off.

"The chemist, belongs to a very specialized path, and a very hard setup to actually make progress in." Luo Feng searched on information about chemists, looking at Yu Feng's every battle.

...

"Ha!"

Ke Luo Fu roared, his expression struggled, he immediately flew through the skies, his right hand lifted high like a claw, fiercely slashing down!

Tearing through!

A visible huge golden claw immediately appeared in the land and skies, a claw formed from pure energy and origin laws...the entire space seemed to be torn apart, Sa Jin, one of the top 5 seniors

roared and even though he fought hard against it, he was torn apart completely, almost like a laser blade cutting right through!

Rumble...

The golden claw seemed to land heading towards the developed city, it was instantly torn right through, leaving behind a huge canyon. The entire continent seemed to have been sliced, leaving behind deep canyons!

...

Looking at this battle, Luo Feng's expression was heavy.

This was the 1st battle between 2 of the top 6 (including Luo Feng), he had seen Ke Luo Fu's battles before, he had won instantly without showing his true strength. And this time...he actually used one of his moves.

Yet it was so powerful and intrepid!

A claw that tore through space!

Tearing through Sa Jin, through the continent!

"This one claw, in terms of law comprehension, it exceeds my gold and space comprehension." His expression was heavy, "Even compared to my golden horned beast's Tearing Sky claw...it may

be much weaker. But it’s law comprehension has already exceeded mine, and the usage was perfect, the energy was condensed, it tore through the continent without creating a huge explosion, powerful!"

Chapter 587: 3 People

In the blink of an eye, 3 days had passed.

Virtual universe, black dragon mountain 9 star bay, in a quiet wooden pavilion, the black haired man Hong was dressed completely in black, he was there with the white robed bald thunder god, the 2 sat in the chair drinking some of the rare teas of Ping Hai company and chatting.

"Big brother, I haven’t seen you in a long time, I haven’t seen third brother too." Thunder god exclaimed.

"What difference does it make, as long as we keep each other in our hearts, what does the distance matter?" Hong gently sniffed the tea in his hands, "Good tea! In terms of enjoyment, the virtual universe pales in comparison to reality."

Thunder god looked speechless at Hong, "Big brother..."

"Haha!"

Hong put down his cup and smiled at thunder god, "Under my teacher’s instructions, i've been training these few years, hence I don’t want to be distracted by the virtual universe. Ah...the letter you sent to me earlier said that 3rd brother is in the qualification battles within the absolute beginning region?"

"It’s already ended, just ended today actually." Thunder god

looked at Hong, "Hence 3rd brother should have time today, I've already arranged for both of you to come. The 3 brothers should have a good meeting!"

Among the 3 brothers.

Even though Thunder god was exploring the universe too, it was mostly within the milky way, he stayed on earth.

Hong however followed his teacher Luo, the time sector lord who didn't have much of his life span left, wandering the universe.

As for Luo Feng, he was being nurtured as the pinnacle of geniuses within the virtual universe company.

"Ended?" Hong's eyes gleamed, he smiled, "My teacher said that those able to be accepted into the virtual universe company's absolute beginning region are all pinnacle geniuses, and 3rd brother hasn't been in there for too long, he would be disadvantaged...how's the results?"

"There are 38 in the absolute beginning battles, the top 3 will have the right to challenge the primal region." Thunder god revealed a smile, 3rd brother made it to the top 3."

"Ah?" Hong nodded.

"How's the result?" Hong asked.

"According to my conversation with him earlier, it should be 36 wins, 1 loss and 0 draws, he ranked 2nd." Thunder god said.

"2nd?" Hong revealed a smile, he complimented, "Very impressive indeed, you should know, I'm now a part of the huge axe dojo."

"Hm." Thunder god nodded.

Hong's teacher, the time sector lord was one with the huge axe dojo domain lord medal. Hence Luo was accepted much earlier into the dojo...of course, now he didn't have much of his life span left. Hence his position in the dojo wasn't too high. However to get them to nurture his disciple well wasn't a problem.

Hong, was being nurtured by the huge axe dojo.

Of course as it hadn't been long, he still hasn't been absorbed into the core.

"Virtual universe company, is another one of the 5 great leviathans of humanity along with my huge axe dojo." Hong smiled, "And every genius battle, only the top 1,000 of the trillions of geniuses from the 1,008 universe countries would get accepted into the core. Hence getting into the core is extremely hard! Even I...right now I don't have the ability to get into the core of the huge axe dojo."

"Big brother, you can definitely get in!" Thunder god said.

Hong didn’t care and smiled, "There’s level differences even within the core! The absolute beginning region 3rd brother is in is considered the innermost core of the virtual universe company, to be able to get in there, those are all the pinnacle of geniuses of humanity...haha, honestly speaking, our gap with 3rd brother is getting bigger and bigger!"

Thunder god twitched his lips.

Hong however smiled, even though they were both considered geniuses, the current stage Luo Feng was on was where the pinnacle of geniuses stood on.

"Why are you twitching." Hong looked at thunder god, "As long as we remain grounded and keep improving. Even if we are currently lagging behind, there will come a day we too will stand at the pinnacle!"

"Big brother you can chase up to 3rd brother, I have confidence in you. However for myself...he, depends on luck." Thunder god laughed.

"3rd brother is here." Hong looked at the distant entrance of the courtyard.

At the exquisite entrance of the courtyard, dressed in simple wear, sporting short black hair, Luo Feng walked over and smiled,

with a flash, he arrived at the pavilion 100m away from the entrance and sat at the only empty seat, smiling as he shouted, "Big and 2nd brother, it's been awhile! I heard big brother you've joined the huge axe dojo?"

"My teacher gave me a referral!" Hong nodded, "He has some connections within the dojo, it made it easier for me."

"The huge axe dojo is not bad." Luo Feng complimented.

The huge axe dojo, according to what Luo Feng knew, belonged to one of the 2 stronger leviathans of the 5, next to the virtual universe company. The other universe mercenary alliance, universe 1st bank and universe galaxy bank were somewhat weaker in power.

"From the looks of it, your mood is not bad." Hong smiled at Luo Feng.

"He made it into the top 3." Thunder god teased.

Luo Feng could only smile helplessly.

Right, he made it into the top 3.

Through the inheritance palace in demon mountain, his power had grown at an absurd rate, he had full guarantee of the absolute beginning region battles.

The battles also went exactly as he had expected.

He won the 1st 12 matches! It was simple and easy, he didn't have to use much of his strength to win. However, the seniors had all discussed...that since he had passed the 7th level of the heavenly bridge early on, winning them was normal, but he would be in trouble the moment he met the 5 strongest.

In his 13th match, Luo Feng finally met one of them!

The 1st was...wolf man Ke Luo Fu!

The strongest Ke Luo Fu!

"Ke Luo Fu!" Luo Feng muttered within.

Ke Luo Fu was the 1st of the 5 strongest Luo Feng encountered in the battles, this match had attracted a lot of attention! And Luo Feng was extremely prudent and cautious, the location of that battle was in the air above an ocean, the 2 said a couple of words before clashing immediately.

Once they began, it was vicious!

Luo Feng first used his consciousness pressure and relied on the Nan Shen Armament, using his strongest move...

Using power to pressure him!

Under the consciousness pressure, Ke Luo Fu was indeed affected a little, however it made him go into a frenzy. The frenzied Ke Luo Fu was extremely fast, especially his instantaneous acceleration, even Luo Feng, on his dark cloud shuttle had difficulty keeping up.

In just 3 moves!

The 1st claw, blocked Luo Feng's blade world attack.

The 2nd injured Luo Feng.

The 3rd killed him immediately!

Clean and simple! No resistance!

Stunned!

The loss made Luo Feng completely stunned, as he had defeated Sa Jin before, and acquired the demon note inheritance after. This made him extremely confident in himself...but who would have thought the strongest of the 5, Ke Luo Fu, could end the battle so fast!

He lost too badly!

As he felt bad about his loss, the group of seniors were all cheering away, they thought that Luo Feng's strength was just that weak. Even though he defeated Sa Jin back then...they thought that Sa Jin was probably just over confident before! Now that he met Ke Luo Fu, wasn't everything revealed?

The seniors all thought that Luo Feng would first lose to Ke Luo Fu and subsequently to the other 4!

...

16th match, Luo Feng against Sa Jin!

The moment the Nan Shen Armament was unleashed, with his power to control the Nan Shen Armament, he completely suppressed Sa Jin.

This match made his confidence grow by quite a bit.

It wasn't that his difference from the top 5 was that huge, it was only that Ke Luo Fu was absurd!

And this match stunned all of the seniors too...Sa Jin lost really badly, he was disadvantaged from start to end.

...

20th match, Luo Feng against Ni Nan!

Ni Nan was a very sinister person, it was a pity his speed couldn't match up to Luo Feng's.

When a fighter's instantaneous acceleration cannot catch up to a spirit reader, they he would only become a target. He lost without a chance at all!

...

28th match, Luo Feng against chemist Yu Feng!

Luo Feng was very worried about this match, because according to the footage he had seen, Yu Feng's ability was simply too sick, and the peculiar drugs he used was undeniably powerful and hard to defend against, being extremely cautious...the moment the battle began, Luo Feng created a huge distance from him and unleashed his blade world.

Using the world energy to pressure the opponent and kill him!

However, unknowingly he was still attacked by a special drug on his soul, luckily his willpower was incredibly solid, he withstood it without any reaction, thinking of ways to kill his opponent.

Winning through the dangers!

When he won, Luo Feng received a mail from Yu Feng, "Newbie, I

didn’t expect you to be able to withstand my Cast number 6 drug. However…next time you won't be so lucky!"

This victory completely stunned the group of universe level seniors in the absolute beginning region.

Wolf man Ke Luo Fu, chemist Yu Feng, these 2 were the strongest amongst the seniors.

For Luo Feng to be able to defeat Yu Feng, it proved his strength.

…

35th match, Luo Feng against Ge!

Ge’s ultimate move, Luo Feng had seen it much earlier in his Ge’s match against Ke Luo Fu, hence he was prepared. He didn’t give Ge the chance to get close at all, using the Nan Shen Armament to kill him.

…

A total of 37 matches!

Luo Feng won 36 and lost 1, 0 draws!

Ke Luo Fu had 37 wins!

Chemist Yu Feng had 35 wins, 2 losses, 0 draws!

According to the points, Luo Feng and the other 2 were naturally the highest. As such, the chance to challenge the primal region was given to the 3 of them.

The 3 of would now have the right to enter the primal region battles!

"Ke Luo Fu." Luo Feng recalled the many battles from 3 days ago, finally, that battle made him shudder, "His strength far overpowers the rest of the 5 strongest! My Nan Shen Armament already used that much power, and he blocked it easily."

"Haha, still thinking about the battle before?" Thunder god laughed under the pavilion.

"Only an addict will get high achievements." Hong smiled.

Only then did Luo Feng awake from the memories.

Chapter 588: Primal Region

"My bad." Luo Feng shook his head, "I haven’t been able to forget my battle with Ke Luo Fu earlier."

"Lost badly?" Hong asked.

"Do you still need to ask!" Thunder god teased.

Luo Feng lifted his tea cup, sipping gently, the tea leaves used were specially produced by the Ping Hai company within the virtual universe, the fragrant taste swirled within his mouth, he exclaimed after the sip, "Indeed, I lost really badly, it made me feel like there’s no hope in making it into the primal region!"

Before the battles began, Luo Feng was filled with ambition to make it into the primal region!

"He had acquired a part of the demon note inheritance, his spirit energy amplitude had jumped by leaps and bounds, he had a definite confidence in making it into the primal region...however after the battle with Ke Luo Fu, it was like he was drenched in cold water from above!

Difference!

The difference was huge!

"Losing is fine." Hong smiled, "The only problem is whether you have the confidence."

"Big brother?" Luo Feng looked at Hong.

"When I was young and training at the assassin camp." Hong's eyes gleamed with memories, "In terms of physical ability, we chinese compared to the whites and blacks had a huge difference... even though I was lagging behind, I kept progressing, until I became the most terrifying assassin! And those who initially had greater talents and were stronger, I exceeded them."

Luo Feng quietly listened.

"Hence!" Hong smiled at Luo Feng, "3rd brother, talent is important but it isn't absolute, you have great talent and you train fast. No problem...you'll train for 10,000 years and become undying! Me? I'll just train for 100,000 years, 1 million years to become undying, wouldn't that work too? Who knows...those with greater talents may even fall first!"

Luo Feng realized.

Right.

His teacher had once mentioned that absolute genius who could kill an Official level undying at his sector lord level, didn't he fall too? He didn't even become undying!

"Hence, shocking improvement during a certain period isn’t that important, the most important thing is stability and longevity!" Hong looked at Luo Feng, "The most important thing about training is not comparing yourself to others, but only with yourself! As long as you keep improving, keep exceeding yourself, then you’ll ultimately get stronger and stronger...one day, you’ll realize...you won't be able to find another opponent in the entire world. You’ll become number 1!"

Luo Feng listened quietly.

He was filled with great respect towards his big brother Hong.

In terms of strength he was much stronger, however in mental state, his big brother was comparable to the saints of the chinese history.

"Haha, big brother, was this how you became number 1 back then?" Thunder god smiled at Luo Feng.

"Right!" Hong’s eyes were calm, he nodded and smiled, "Back then I only had my loyal pike, with that I worked and trained! Exceeding myself one step at a time...I didn’t even realize that during the great nirvana I had already become the number 1 person on earth. Luo Feng, do you understand what I mean?"

"Understood, I cannot rush! I have to remain grounded and chase my own limits." Luo Feng said.

Hong nodded satisfied.

...

After chatting with them for about over 3 hours, the 3 brothers finally separated. Big brother went on to continue his training, 2nd brother was busy with his own matters, Luo Feng returned back to continue his inheritance training.

He realized one thing.

Everytime he gathered with them, he would gain some form of realization, seeing the road ahead somewhat clearer.

"Mental state! In terms of mental states, 2nd brother is stronger than I am, and big brother is already in a different place altogether." Luo Feng felt that even though his big brother hadn't fully excelled yet, a day would come where he would definitely be able to shine in the vast universe. This feeling was completely from his instinct.

Even though he spoke calmly, one could feel his complete self confidence within his bones.

On the 2nd day after the absolute beginning battles had ended, the primal region battles began.

As there were only 5 universe levels in the primal region, all their battles would end in a day. And obviously, the battles of the primal

region had drawn the attention of many of the other geniuses from the other regions, countless numbers of them watched their battles.

...

Absolute beginning region, Manka prince Wuka's villa.

Luo Feng, Rong Jun and Wuka had gathered in the living room, drinking wine and watching the screen, the many battles of the primal region geniuses.

"Ah, my villa!"

"I'll have to leave here soon, to the sky and land region." Wuka sat in his sofa and exclaimed loudly, he glanced at Luo Feng and Rong Jun, "You 2 punks, our absolute beginning heroes should be together, 1 of you have made it into the top 3 and the other will stay here!"

Luo Feng and Rong Jun laughed.

The qualification battles, Luo Feng ranked 2nd and Rong Jun ranked 19.

Rong Jun managed to scrape off and rank in the top 20...that way he didn't need to compete in the sky and land region. It could be said that it was set in stone that he would remain in the absolute beginning region.

Wuka however was in the bottom 6 without a surprise.

The other 6 newbies, Wuka, Ao Pa Te La, Lancelot, Ai Chen, Jiang Mo and Qian Shui were the 6 from the back! For Wuka to be the 6th from the last was already not bad. However they were about to battle the top 10 of the sky and land region...other than the 6 of them, the others had all passed the heavenly bridge 6th level.

They were set to go into the sky and land region!

"Hmph!"

Every batch of newbies go through the same time, they would be disadvantaged and sent back one region. We are newbies after all." Wuka stared at Luo Feng and Rong Jun, "You 2 wait for me, I'll quickly return to the absolute beginning."

"Alright, we'll wait." Rong Jun laughed.

"Work hard Prince Wuka." Luo Feng teased.

After they finished the match being broadcasted on the screen, that of Fei Tuo and Long Yun had already ended.

"Long Yun sure is pitiful." Wuka exclaimed.

"Right." Rong Jun nodded, "He really isn’t on the same level as the other members of the primal region."

Luo Feng nodded too.

There were a total of 5 in the primal region, 3 seniors and 2 newbies.

The 2 were of course from the genius battle, Bolan and Long Yun, after Bolan was spurred by Luo Feng, he finally realized that we wasn’t an invincible genius, that wasting his talents on overdoing it was a stupid thing to do, hence he changed to having space as his main law.

2 years ago, he had already passed the heavenly bridge’s 7th level!

The 3 seniors were Fei Tuo, Simayan and Mo Luo, of which Fei Tuo was the only virtual universe company universe level member to pass the 8th level of the heavenly bridge! Simayan and Mo Luo had passed the 7th...of course, they had passed it long ago.

"Long Yun is pitiful, he loses to everyone he meets, if it were me, I’d long have given up, what’s the point." Wuka shook his head, "They are not even close."

Of the 5, 1 had passed the 8th level, the other 3 had passed the 7th, only Long Yun had just passed the 5th.

"Don’t look down on him." Luo Feng looked at Long Yun’s body

in the screen, "Those that know they will lose and still fight, they aren't normal people."

"Hm." Rong Jun nodded.

"Look! Mo Luo against Bolan!" Wuka shouted.

Luo Feng and Rong Jun gathered their attention and stared at the screen, of the 2 newbies in the primal region, only Bolan had some resistance ability, however when he met the strongest of the seniors Fei Tuo, he lost really badly.

"Both he and Mo Luo had passed the 7th level!" Rong Jun emphasized, "And both are close combat fighters, this battle... maybe Bolan has some hope!"

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

Right, there was some hope.

Only some!

The battle began...

Bolan's bladework was incredibly incisive, and his movement was absurd. Mo Luo however stood his ground, using his Beast fist to block Bolan's many attacks. The scene of them clashing caused the mountains and forests about to be destroyed completely,

Bolan’s every blade caused great canyons on the surface of the planet, and Mo Luo’s every punch and kick caused great damage to the land.

In an instant they exchanged over ten times!

Mo Luo grabbed the chance and sacrificed one leg, closing in and killing Bolan!

"Roar!" Mo Luo’s eyes gleamed with wildness, his right arm became like a winding snake and extended, grabbing Bolan’s neck!

Ka Cha!

In an instant he broke his neck, he fingers piercing through Bolan’s head.

Bolan, dead!

…

Silence!

Luo Feng, Rong Jun and Wuka who were watching were silent for awhile, Bolan’s strength wasn’t weak at all, however he was still killed by the seniors of the primal region.

"What terrifying close combat." Wuka said softly.

Wuka was a close combat fighter too, however, the difference between him and Mo Luo was huge.

"Terrifying." Rong Jun too frowned.

Luo Feng held his breath and watched, in his mind he recalled the instant where Mo Luo grabbed Bolan and killed him, replaying it over and over, the more he thought about it, the more his expression grew heavier...that Mo Luo's beast fist is truly remarkable, like a fox, python, wild wolf, tiger...

Intrepid! Cunning! Sinister!

It was completely natural!

"This beast fist is something he created, and others are simply learning from others." Luo Feng thought within, "Using one's own created technique, would be easier to unleash greater strength! Mo Luo is very strong..."

"However..."

"Why do I feel that Ke Luo Fu is still stronger?" Luo Feng frowned, "And Ke Luo Fu is only from the absolute beginning region...peculiar!"

Mo Luo’s strength, Luo Feng was cautious.

Ke Luo Fu’s strength however made him feel despair!

"No hope." Wuka shouted out in the sofa, "Bolan lost to Mo Luo, he would probably lose to the fighter’s bane hypnotist Simayan... then he’d be set to become the primal region’s bottom 3 with Long Yun."

The virtual universe company’s rules were...

The bottom 3 of the primal region, along with the top 3 of the absolute beginning region will fight for the 1 primal region slot.

Now from the looks of it!

Long Yun and Bolan! They would be in the bottom 3.

"That Fei Tuo...as the only one to pass the 8th level of the heavenly bridge, an obviously exceptional being, would get 1st place without a problem.

"Primal region’s bottom 3, 1 would be Bolan, another Long Yun. Who would be the last?" Wuka frowned.

"It’ll definitely be either Mo Luo or Simayan." Rong Jun said, "Luo Feng, who do you think it’ll be?"

Luo Feng frowned.

Who?

Mo Luo!

It had to be him, as long as he was in the bottom 3, then Luo Feng would get the chance to fight him!

"I definitely have to personally defeat him, and step on him, definitely!" Luo Feng had long had this grudge he had to settle, the qualification battles was the chance he got to vent it out on...even if it were in reality, Luo Feng wouldn't be lenient. Since Mo Luo's kick back then...he had decided...

The 2, one of them had to die!

Chapter 589: The Dust has Settled

Luo Feng, Rong Jun and Wuka sat in the sofa and watched the screen, on it the battles of the primal region was going on.

"Half of the battles are already over, it'll soon be Mo Luo against Simayam." Wuka lifted his wine and crossed his legs, "Whoever loses of the 2 will have to battle to stay after!"

"Hm." Luo Feng stared at the screen.

It definitely, had to be Mo Luo who lost!

Within Mo Luo's huge primal region villa, in the vast grass field, he sat there cross legged, he enjoyed quietly pondering about the earlier battles.

"I didn't expect that Bolan to be so strong, he had just passed the 7th level of the heavenly bridge not long ago...but he actually injured me heavily before I could kill him." He didn't expect any of the 2 newbies to give him any trouble, just like the absolute beginning's seniors Sa Jin, Ni Nan and the others who had just passed the 7th level.

Mo Luo could easily kill them all!

However, he had to sacrifice one leg to kill Bolan, what did that represent? It meant that their strengths were close!

"His strength, even amongst the absolute beginning region, would only be a little weaker than Ke Luo Fu." Mo Luo exclaimed, "A newbie that just passed the 7th level 2 years ago, that strong..."

He didn’t know.

Bolan’s talent in the space law was terrifying, it was only because he was prideful and chose to study the universe tablet with both time and space simultaneously, hence he wasted so much time. Now that he had his focus on space laws, his improvement was shocking!

"Bolan is already defeated, he’s no longer a threat...I now have to defeat Simayan." He frowned.

The 3 seniors of the primal region.

Fei Tuo was the absolute number 1, he had long passed the 8th level, obviously exceptional.

Mo Luo and Simayan were close in strengths!

"In the previous battles I defeated Simayan. And in the battles after...he defeated Ke Luo Fu!" Mo Luo pondered, "He is a hypnotist, strong against Ke Luo Fu! However...Both Ke Luo Fu and I are fighters! And his improvement in these past couple of hundred of years has been shocking!"

"It was very dangerous the past qualification battles, however

last time, he was only close to me in strength."

"However now...from the footage of him against Luo Feng, his strength has already exceeded mine." Mo Luo frowned, troubled.

Wolfman Ke Luo Fu!

His rise in strength was in mostly in the recent 200 years, even though he was strong before, he was only comparable with chemist Yu Feng! Now however, he had completely taken the lead...a sort of different level altogether! Even Luo Feng was completely subdued by him!

Mo Luo knew from watching the footage that Ke Luo Fu had already exceeded him!

"The moment I'm defeated by Simayan, with 6 people fighting for the primal region slot, and with Ke Luo Fu in the 6...I won't have any hope!" Mo Luo shook his head, "No matter, I must stay in the primal region!"

"How?"

"How?"

His expression was complex, even though he was shocked by Luo Feng's power, it was obvious he was currently more worried about Ke Luo Fu!

"Only one way!"

"Defeat Simayan!"

"That way, I'll remain in the top 2!" Mo Luo took a deep breath, "Once I'm in the top 2, I won't have to contest with the others. I'll let Simayan go fight it out with Ke Luo Fu..."

"Against Simayan, I have to win, I have to win!!!" He thought.

In a moment...

The virtual universe system's voice ringed in his ears, "Mo Luo, the primal region universe level battles, your 3rd match is about to begin, your opponent is Simayan." Simultaneously, the screen on his wrist immediately displayed information and he was transported into the arena.

The cold winds howled, snowflakes as big as goose feather's flew about, the ice was incredibly thick.

2 silhouettes appeared above the ice.

"Mo Luo!" A roar resounded.

"Simayan!" Mo Luo smiled, in the distance a black robed purple haired youth standing on a flying spirit weapon flew into the sky,

on his forehead was a complex purple engraving, his purple eyes had a peculiar demonic energy.

This purple haired youth was Simayan, a hypnotist.

The hypnotist Jia Lai Xi from the genius competition was also a hypnotist, however compared to Simayan, he was much weaker.

"Mo Luo." Simayan's eyes were cold, he stood on his flying weapon and gazed down, "You should be clear that this battle, whoever loses will have to contest to stay. And that Ke Luo Fu is obviously much stronger than 1000 years ago. Even though I'm his bane, I don't have much of a chance! As for you...I'm sorry but you'll definitely have to lose here!"

Mo Luo's expression immediately grew heavy.

Pressure.

All the absolute geniuses of the primal region all had pressure, the moment they were careless, they would be knocked out of their place. Just like Ke Luo Fu's explosion in strength...it made their 2 positions at risk.

"If I meet Ke Luo Fu, I would probably lose, however I don't have to fight him at all. Because...you'll definitely lose here!" Mo Luo roared and fiercely stomped the ground.

The thick ice layer was immediately shattered and countless ice

shards dropped into the ocean, many more dispersing in all directions. He flashed like lightning and rushed before Simayan, his fists like a flaming shooting star.

Rumble!

1 fist was like a shooting star punching towards Simayan, the surrounding space warped around it.

"Haha, you are too slow." 10km away, Simayan laughed on his flying weapon, "Can't you see that that was my illusion?"

"Hm?" Mo Luo fiercely retracted his fist and landed on the ice, gazing at the distant Simayan.

"I was lenient just now, now however, no more." Simayan laughed and a formless spirit energy pierced straight into Mo Luo’s soul, the hypnotism had already seeped in...

...

This battle was being watched by over tens of thousands of geniuses in the core of the virtual universe company, of which included Luo Feng, Rong Jun and Wuka.

On the screen.

The 3 stared hard.

"Powerful, Madman, Savage, who do you think will win?" Wuka said casually, Rong Jun too was smiling, only Luo Feng was glued to the scene, his consciousness like an AI swiftly calculating the outcome of the battle, how would he deal with each move.

Without a doubt, he wished for Mo Luo to lose!

However from the battle scene, even though Simayan's hypnotism was terrifying, when Mo Luo battled, it was indeed like a wild beast attacking, even though he was affected by the hypnotism, he quickly broke through it and once again chased Simayan.

Simayan did his best to create distance, and unleash his hypnotism, the moment he succeeded he immediately used his arc blade along with his spirit weapon to attack!

...

"Rumble!"

The skies and land immediately became an endless sea of flames, and within were many Simayans, with a glance, over a trillion of them stood about.

"Mo Luo! Mo Luo! Mo Luo! Mo Luo! Mo Luo! ... A trillion Simayan's simultaneously spoke and Mo Luo who was in the center frowned as he gazed about, he calmly analyzed it, thinking

of which of the trillion was the real Simayan.

"This is the newest hypnotism!"

"Named the flame world illusion."

"Die!"

Mo Luo actually closed his eyes and didn’t look, focused as he waited.

"Over here!" Mo Luo flashed like lightning, his legs like blades flashing forward to kill!

Pu Chi!

Mo Luo opened his eyes, he saw Simayan with a gaping wound in his chest, fresh blood spurting out, he could even see his internal organs.

"Hmph!" Mo Luo smiled, however his smile quickly disappeared.

His head was split in 2 and his body fell.

Mo Luo, dead!

"The truth is fantasy, and the fantasy is real!" The distant heavily

injured Simayan stood on his flying weapon, his face pale as he smiled at the body, "You think closing your eyes is enough?"

Primal region, Mo Luo’s vila.

"I actually lost, I actually lost." Mo Luo sat in his study and gripped his fist hard, he nails pierced into his palm, his eyes still unable to accept his defeat.

"I still succumbed to his move!"

"I thought that I had already broken through the illusion to his real body, I didn’t expect…he used his real body to take the damage and place another environment to attack. Truth in the fantasy, fantasy in the truth." Mo Luo shook his head, indeed, that Simayan’s fire and space law melding had reached an unbelievable level.

"This is troublesome."

He frowned, "I have to contest for the slot now! Me, Bolan, Long Yun, Ke Luo Fu, Yu Feng, Luo Feng…the 6 vying for one primal region slot. The other 5 will fail and re-enter the absolute beginning region."

"Ke Luo Fu…I have no guarantee at all."

"Hmph, I didn’t expect Luo Feng to make it to the top 3 too."

"I can't be bothered with him. My greatest opponent is still Ke Luo Fu!"

Mo Luo didn’t think anymore, he swiftly found Ke Luo Fu’s previous battle footages and seriously studied them.

...

Absolute beginning region, Wuka’s villa.

Luo Feng and the others sat in the sofa watching the footage of Mo Luo and Simayan’s battle.

"Hypnotist mixing real attacks perfectly, truth in the fantasy, fantasy in the truth." Rong Jun complimented, "I heard the highest level of a hypnotist...is to make the person think of the illusion has reality, living his entire life within."

Luo Feng nodded, his eyes gleaming with glee.

Very good!

The dust had settled, the people for the contest for the primal region slot from the primal region were, Bolan, Long Yun and finally...Mo Luo!

"Heaven has given me the chance, Mo Luo, I’ll first step on you

here and settle you in reality in the future." Luo Feng squinted.

Chapter 590: Contest

Yu Xiang mountain’s public region had a spacious ancient pathway, the entire pathway was made of black stone, Luo Feng walked along it alone casualy.

After awhile.

Bayan Villa!" Luo Feng looked up at the several km in area luxurious restaurant, outside its huge hall were beautiful and handsome staff welcoming people.

"Right here!" Luo Feng walked in.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, please follow me!" a sector lord lady with a furry tail smiled and led the way, Luo Feng followed this lady and stood on the escalator, swiftly reaching the highest level, only then did it stop.

The highest level of the restaurant had a man made river, surrounding it were ancient trees.

There was an exquisite dark gold dining table there, around it were 7 chairs, sitting in the chairs allowed one to fully gaze at the surroundings, fish in the high level, swim, dine, within this Yu Xiang mountain countless geniuses gathered, it was indeed an extravagant place.

Hence...

Those able to book this highest level were at least primal region members or powerful undyings, the upper echelon.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, I'll leave first." The sector lord lady bowed and left.

Luo Feng looked at the river side, surrounding the dark golden table were 7 chairs, only 1 was filled. This intrepid man with yellow fur was dressed casually, his mouth revealed fangs.

Wolfman Ke Luo Fu!

"Ke Luo Fu!" Luo Feng smiled and walked over.

The man turned to look at Luo Feng, revealing a rare smile, he lightly toasted with his cup and didn't speak again.

Luo Feng entered and sat down!

He grabbed a glass and poured himself a drink from the side rack which had many flavors of wine, he sat patiently in the chair on the side, in the distance the door once again opened and the furry tailed sector lord lady smiled and brought a youth in.

He, was strong and sturdy, he looked like a mountain, with a bull horned helmet, his eyes seemed deep and profound.

The moment he entered his gaze landed on Luo Feng!

"Long Yun." Luo Feng sat and toasted him.

"Luo Feng!" Long Yun’s eyes gleamed as he squinted.

Back then from the same batch of geniuses, he was one of the top geniuses and entered the primal region. However after joining the virtual universe company, within the past couple of hundreds of years, he was left far behind by Luo Feng, he was very clear...this contest battle, he was the one with the least hope.

Long Yun had arrived!

Very quickly, Yu Feng arrived too, then followed by Bolan and finally Mo Luo!

"Everybody’s earlier than me!" Mo Luo was dressed in a simple golden armor, he smiled as he entered, simultaneously waving, "Ke Luo Fu! It’s been awhile! Yu Feng!"

Ke Luo Fu and Yu Feng slightly nodded.

"Bolan, Long Yun!"

He smiled as he shouted, sitting in a chair, finally his gaze landed on Luo Feng, he smiled as he said, "Luo Feng, of the newbies, the one I most respect is you, your improvement is shocking, being

able to meet you makes me really happy."

"Ah, really?" Luo Feng sat coldly, muttering.

Immediately, Ke Luo Fu, Bolan and the rest all turned to look at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng reacted to his passionate greeting coldly, this made them feel...Luo Feng was colder than before.

"Hua!"

Another door of the level opened fiercely and a silver white robed bald man walked over, the land and skies about him seemed much brighter, he smiled as he walked over and said, "Everybody's here!"

Shua!

Ke Luo Fu, Luo Feng and the rest of the 6 all stood up, bowing respectfully, Lord!"

"Since everyone's here, I'll explain everything that needs to be said." The bald man stood beside them, not sitting down, he stood and smiled at the 6, "The absolute beginning universe level top 3 Ke Luo Fu, Luo Feng and Yu Feng, primal region last 3, Mo Luo, Bolan and Long Yun."

"You 6 will have a contest for the final slot!"

"The rules are simple, everyone will fight once against the other 5, the winner will get 1 point, otherwise you'll get 0 points! The final tally will determine the winner."

"The 1st warrior will get the only primal region slot and become a primal region member. As for the other 5, you'll enter the absolute beginning region!" The bald man smiled at the group, :Everybody understand?"

"Understood!"

The 6 replied respectfully.

"Very good!" The bald man nodded, "Now I'll begin to arrange the order of your battles!" Following which he pointed in mid air ahead and a screen automatically appeared, there floated Luo Feng and the rest of their names, after which they moved about.

In an instant.

The battle proceedings appeared.

"These are your battles!" the bald man said, "Everyone will have to fight 5 battles, a total of 15 matches! Look closely at your own battles."

Luo Feng quickly looked at the screen.

3 matches occurred simultaneously at any time, obviously that was the greatest efficiency, and his own order was...

Luo Feng against Bolan 1st match!

Luo Feng against Mo Luo 2nd match!

Luo Feng against Long Yun 3rd match!

Luo Feng against Yu Feng 4th match!

Luo Feng against Ke Luo Fu 5th match!

"Have you all seen it clearly?" The bald man looked at the 6.

The 6 nodded.

"Official matters have been settled, everybody can enjoy this lunch and get to know each other." The bald man smiled and sat, "Tomorrow the battles begin! Everything will be settled in a day."

The 6 sat down.

Very quickly, all the delicacies prepared earlier were sent in, wine and food etc, all luxurious foods, everybody ate and chatted, of which Mo Luo was the most passionate, Long Yun too

occasionally smiled and talked, as for Bolan, Ke Luo Fu, Yu Feng and Luo Feng, they hardly spoke.

Theoretically, Luo Feng wasn’t an unfriendly person, however after seeing Mo Luo, he had lost all mood to socialize.

Mo Luo however didn’t seem to mind, he was a lively person, it was mostly him talking, it made the entire atmosphere of the table liven up. Even the bald undying upper echelon from the virtual universe company would occasionally smile and talk.

"Come, Luo Feng, let me toast you." Mo Luo smiled and lifted his wine glass, looking anxiously at Luo Feng.

Silence!

The group had long felt Luo Feng was especially cold today, they all looked at him. The table after all had the undying there, everybody had to show respect and not make it rigid.

"My apologies, I don’t wish to drink." Luo Feng muttered as he held his glass.

Mo Luo who was standing there and frowning seemed disturbed.

"We’ve both shared a tough time together, won't you show me some face with this toast?" He frowned, "Once we drink this, shall we forget all our grudges before?"

Forget it?

Luo Feng looked up at Mo Luo before returning to eat his meal, not caring about him at all. Even though his grudge with Mo Luo was huge, however he couldn’t kill anyone in the virtual universe, and the undying was sitting there with them, he couldn’t be bothered at all.

"Not even 1 drink?" Mo Luo said solemnly.

The rest around the table felt something wasn’t right.

Luo Feng continued to ignore him.

"Pa!" Mo Luo fiercely slammed the glass on the table, his expression ugly, pointing at Luo Feng and roaring, "Luo Feng, I see you for how evil you are. In demon note mountain, your backstab almost made me lose my life, I hated you to the bone! However, since we are all members of the virtual universe company, I don’t wish to hold grudges, I showed you respect by toasting you...to forget our grudges. I didn’t expect you..."

"Backstab?" Beside, Bolan, Ke Luo Fu and the rest were shocked.

Luo Feng looked up fiercely, his expression ashen, staring hard at Mo Luo!

Mo Luo seemed to be enraged as he smiled coldly at Luo Feng, within however he was satisfied, "From the footage of the battles earlier, this Luo Feng is indeed very strong. Stronger than Yu Feng! He might be some threat to me...I'll take this chance to enrage and drive him crazy. When the time comes for us to face, I'll only have to use a few words to make him explode from rage within! Once he's in that state, he'll only be able to use 70-80% of his strength, I'll win that much easier! As long as I can beat him, then I won't have to worry about any others, just Ke Luo Fu."

Mo Luo Feng had completely calculated Luo Feng's mental condition.

As there was absolutely no way to take revenge in the virtual universe, and Luo Feng didn't have any proof, recording? It may have been taken. However with the advanced technology, with games being able to 100% simulate reality, what footage couldn't be faked?

Those couldn't be used as proof at all!

"Get angry!"

"Rage!"

"Rage until you explode, however in the virtual universe network, you cannot do anything to me. When we battle tomorrow and your emotions get the best of you, you'll definitely lose." Mo Luo was confident within.

"Bang!!!"

Luo Feng who sat there initially with his expression enraged and silent jumped up and violently punched him! With only a few meters in between, Mo Luo couldn't react to Luo Feng's punch that smashed his face, his nose immediately broke, his teeth smashed and falling to the floor, there was an dent in his face.

Bang!

Pa! Pa! Pa! Pa!

Mo Luo's 4 limbs were instantly broken!

Luo Feng's move was instant and fast, just like when Mo Luo back stabbed him, at extreme close distance!

"Rumble!" Mo Luo smashed into an ancient tree behind, with a rumble, the tree tore apart and Mo Luo landed on the ground. His limbs completely broken with his muscles torn apart, he had no way of resisting at all.

Luo Feng then sat on his body and his 2 fists became blurs as he madly pummeled his face in!

Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang! Bang!

Each punch connected! The sound was shocking!

Luo Feng punched his face as he cursed, "You shameless sinister little person, I’ve never ever seen someone as evil as you, what’s wrong with my punches, how do you like them, if I don't punch you this bad feeling won't go away!"

Chapter 591: Luo Feng Against Bolan

Back when Mo Luo backstabbed him in demon note mountain and he even twisted the story after, Luo Feng didn't have any proof, he didn't have anyway to vent his anger within! Every heavy punch was filled with his rage, this made him a lot more carefree.

"This punk, this punk actually..." Mo Luo who was instantly heavily damaged and was getting punched in the face, he couldn't even defend as his limbs were all broken.

He struggled for a few seconds before realizing there was no way to resist, just laying there and letting Luo Feng punch him.

"Luo Feng!!!"

Mo Luo roared within, simultaneously he swiftly left the virtual universe network and immediately his body vanished.

"Bang!" Luo Feng's punch hit the air and landed on the stone below, splitting it apart, only then did he stand up.

Beside the dining table.

Wolfman Ke Luo Fu, Yu Feng, Bolan and Long Yun were all shocked from the scene, even the undying bald man slightly frowned.

"My bad!" Luo Feng stood up, turning and revealing a happy and bright smile to the group, "I was too crude earlier!"

"This punk." The bald man shook his head.

Luo Feng had indeed made a move earlier, however the virtual universe company were very lax with these group of geniuses, once the path was chosen, everything was allowed to be chosen solely by their wills. As for the battling within the virtual universe network? That hardly meant anything to them.

As no matter how you fought within the virtual universe, no one could die.

Hence the virtual universe company didn’t even care or manage such things.

The only thing was...

Subconsciously, these groups of geniuses were after all peerless talents, hence they usually cared about their appearances. Even more so when an upper echelon from the virtual universe company, an undying actually comes, he represented the upper echelon of the company, naturally people wouldn’t do such things.

However Luo Feng still went ahead with it!

"So what if I beat him up, I’m crude, so what?" Luo Feng thought.

...

The bald man beside the table shook his head and got up, looking at Luo Feng, "Indeed a disciple of True Yan emperor, exactly like your teacher, explosive and fiery! However you have you control yourself sometimes, hm, I'll take my leave." After he finished, he left.

Only Ke Luo Fu, Yu Feng, Bolan, Long Yun and Luo Feng were left at the table.

"Vicious." Bolan said.

"You actually made a move." Long Yun said as he looked at Luo Feng, from that attack earlier, he could see that Luo Feng had a wild mad streak deep within his bones.

"If I don't beat him, it would be unbearable, after doing so, it felt great!" Luo Feng laughed loudly as he walked to his seat and sat down, lifting his wine and downing it in a gulp, "I feel much better now, that Mo Luo's shamelessness, if I didn't vent it out, I couldn't take it."

"Shameless?" Long Yun frowned.

Bolan and Yu Feng had curiosity in their eyes, from the information they had gathered and their short interaction with him, Mo Luo should be a nice guy.

"Hm, that Mo Luo is very scheming." Beside, Wolfman Ke Luo Fu suddenly said.

The rest all looked at him.

"I've suffered a little from it." Wolfman Ke Luo Fu looked at Luo Feng, "However from the looks of it, Luo Feng must have lost more."

"I almost lost my little life." Luo Feng teased.

Mo Luo quickly returned to the virtual universe primal region, within his own villa.

"This Luo Feng actually made a move, he dared to make a move? Before the upper echelon undying he dared to make a move?" Mo Luo was aching to fight, attacking someone in the virtual universe couldn't kill anybody, however Luo Feng was simply too vicious and devious with his attack, he actually instantly broke his 4 limbs.

Thus he had no way to fight back, Luo Feng even sat on him and violently smashed his face in!

Rage!

There were no injuries on his body, however the shame was a lot

more unbearable than the damage. Shame, humiliation!

"This Luo Feng, this Luo Feng..." Mo Luo gritted his teeth wanting revenge.

There was no way at all!

This attack was completely one sided, and he was helpless!

...

After the gathering ended, Bolan, Ke Luo Fu, Yu Feng and Long Yun could be said to have watched a good show. Mo Luo held the rage within, Luo Feng however was carefree and happy.

2nd day!

Contest battles were officially beginning, Luo Feng's first opponent was...Bolan!

"That Long Yun is indeed not a threat at all, I'll settle him in an instant." Mo Luo sat in his dark quiet study, opening a screen and swiftly selecting Luo Feng and Bolan's match to watch, Mo Luo was previously heavily injured by Bolan before he killed him, hence he didn't dare be little Bolan.

To Luo Feng, he naturally knew how strong he was.

As Luo Feng had defeated the 4 warriors that had passed the 7th level of the heavenly bridge, hence he had the right to participate in this contest battles. His strength was definitely strong!

Mo Luo recognized the importance of Luo Feng and Bolan's fight.

"Who's stronger?" He stared at the screen, "Let's hope Bolan teaches Luo Feng a good lesson."

The scene on the screen was the air above an ocean.

Luo Feng and Bolan's fight was very exciting, 1 used the blade world while the other had space as the main and time as the support, his attacks were terrifying and unpredictable! The flow of time constantly changed as the 2 battled non stop without a clear advantage in either!

"Hm!"

"This Luo Feng can actually match up to Bolan?" Mo Luo frowned, "Not good! Luo Feng is about to win!"

The vast skies above the ocean, had completely become a blade world!

The skies and land warped!

Countless amounts of blade energy revolved about, Luo Feng

stood on his dark cloud shuttle in mid air, before him, 2 powerful threads of blade energy had condensed, in the distance, the white robed and blood red bleed wielding Bolan was obviously fatigued, there were many heavy wounds on his body, from his chest down to his legs, fresh blood stained the white robe.

"Luo Feng, you are much stronger than back then." Bolan stared at Luo Feng.

"You are very strong too!" Luo Feng looked at Bolan, "However, let’s end this battle now!"

"Bring it!" Bolan stared at him.

Actually when Luo Feng had heavily injured Bolan earlier in the fight, the end of the battle was already set.

Xiu! Xiu!

2 threads of blade energy tore through the skies, infused with gold origin laws and space origin laws, plus it was 2 threads of condensed blade world energy, it attacked swiftly from 2 sides at Bolan. And the heavily injured Bolan swiftly dodged, he was however affected by his injuries, barely blocking one thread of blade energy, the other pierced right through his forehead!

"Rumble..." The blade world dispersed and countless gold lights swiftly returned to the dark golden long rod on Luo Feng’s back.

Bolan’s body fell from the skies, landing in the endless ocean.

Luo Feng looked at the body fall from mid air, shocked within.

Actually he had treated Bolan with respect, he didn’t instantly take out all his strength and wipe him out, but only used part of it to enjoy a good fight with him. However even so, he was shocked at Bolan’s improvement speed!

Before!

When he unleashed about 300 times of his spirit energy, along with the Nan Shen Armament’s Blade world, only then could he unleash 2 threads of blade energy to kill Bolan!

"I passed the 7th level of the heavenly bridge much earlier than Bolan!"

"However, if I didn’t receive the Demon note inheritance, if I didn’t have my soul pressure advantage, then I wouldn’t even be his match." Luo Feng was shocked within, Bolan’s strength was actually so much stronger than Sa Jin, Ge and Ni Nan. He was probably comparable to chemist Yu Feng!"

Bolan’s improvement was too shocking.

He had only passed the 7th level 2 years ago, his strength was already close to the primal region’s Mo Luo. This forced Luo Feng to have to amplify his spirit energy to 300 times before he could

win!

Of course...

If Luo Feng had used his soul pressure, and amplified his spirit energy to above 1800, the battle would have ended instantly.

"Teacher was right." He thought, "Bolan's talent in space laws are incredible, the moment he focuses on it, his improvement speed would be shocking! And combined with his partial comprehension of time laws, the 2 melded together, they are indeed a troublesome and dangerous combo."

The universe primal chaos tablet, it was the hardest one of all and also the strongest.

Sou!

Luo Feng was teleported out.

His first battle, Luo Feng against Bolan, Victory! Results, 1 win, 0 draw, 0 loss!

...

Within the quiet study, Mo Luo had finished watching the footage of the battle between Luo Feng and Bolan, he couldn't help but nod.

"This Luo Feng is indeed strong, comparable to Bolan." He revealed a smile, "However, I have a guarantee of defeating Bolan! Even though it may be troublesome against Luo Feng, I'll still win without a problem!"

"Hm!"

"The 2nd match is about to begin, my opponent is Luo Feng." Mo Luo's eyes gleamed with wildness, "Luo Feng, I'll make you taste despair with this match."

Absolute beginning, Luo Feng's villa's study, he was watching the 2 other battles that had occurred.

Mo Luo against Long Yun, instant victory! Ke Luo Fu against Yu Feng, it was slightly troublesome, but Ke Luo Fu still won!

"Wolfman Ke Luo Fu is simply too strong." Luo Feng instantly let go of his feelings of relaxation, his own strength, he was very clear. As he had received the demon note inheritance, his spirit energy amplitude had been raised over 20 times, it made him leave Sa Jin, Ge, Ni Nan and the others far behind!

Chemist Yu Feng, as a chemist was simply too peculiar, it was a little troublesome, but he still won.

Only wolf man Ke Luo Fu, no matter how hard he tried he couldn't win.

"Even though my spirit energy amplitude is strong, my comprehension isn't enough, I still cannot reach the Nan Shen Armament's balde world's 2nd level, Omnipotence." He thought, "Right now I can only be considered at the pinnacle of the 1st level."

Nan Shen Armament's 6 th level blade world could be split into 3 levels.

1st level, gathering 1 thread of blade energy, condensing more of the blade energy allowed one to form 2 threads, 3 threads...the distance used could be increased and slowly one could gather more threads further.

The 2nd level, one could swiftly condense the blade energy anywhere. For example condensing it suddenly behind the opponent's head, instantly killing him.

The 3rd level was even more absurd. It could condense the entire blade world into 1 blade, that one blade infused with all the world energy, instantly killing the opponent!

Currently, Luo Feng was only at the pinnacle of the 1st level.

This was relying strongly on his spirit energy amplitude, in terms of law comprehension, just these few years of work had a limit on his improvement.

"Luo Feng, your 2nd primal region contest battle is about to begin, opponent Mo Luo!" The virtual universe system’s voice rang in Luo Feng’s ears.

Shua!

He was already teleported.

Luo Feng’s 2nd battle, began!

Chapter 592: Luo Feng VS Mo Luo

Luo Feng felt the land and skies warp before stepping on the ground.

"Hm?" He looked around, this was a desolate world, with a glance, if it weren't ditches in the ground, it was many tall and short dark red mountains, he looked up in the distance...there he saw the vast space, even a close by planet.

"Planet environment, it feels like the air is incredibly thin here, probably a place where life cannot be supported. The planet's gravity was only two thirds of earth's gravity!" Luo Feng immediately deduced.

On the desolate planet, Luo Feng was dressed in a dark red armor, carrying a dark golden long rod on his back and standing on the dark cloud shuttle, he instantly flew into the sky!

"He!"

"Over there." Luo Feng could clearly feel a huge energy in the distance, he immediately stepped on the dark cloud shuttle, swiftly passing the many mountains and chasing down his target.

After a few seconds.

The flying Luo Feng spotted a gold silhouette below standing on the peak of a mountain.

"It’s him." Luo Feng swiftly slowed down and floated above in mid air.

"Luo Feng!" Mo Luo who was completely covered in gold armor, his eyes filled with flames and rage, "Today I’ll let you know that the primal region members are stronger than the absolute beginning members, and much stronger! Anyone who dares challenge the position of the primal region members will be decisively put down!"

Mo Luo who had entered his battle mode was no long his usual meek self, what he was was a madness like a wild beast.

"Ah, really?" Luo Feng smiled coldly at the distant gold silhouette, "A shameless punk like you, you sure have grandeur about you!"

"You are the shameless one!" Mo Luo roared.

Luo Feng’s expression grew heavy.

After everything, Mo Luo still shamelessly kept up his shameless act.

"Make your move, otherwise you won't even have the chance to do anything." Luo Feng looked coldly at the distant Mo Luo.

Arrogant!"

Mo Luo looked up at Luo Feng in mid air on his dark cloud shuttle, he roared as he rushed into space instantly, his stomp caused the stone mountain to shake, after which it began to crumble, countless stone fragments rolling and flying in all directions.

Mo Luo instantly reached Luo Feng.

"Ya!"

Rumble!

A punch that was almost like a burning meteorite, even the space surrounding it had ripples, he aimed it straight at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng stood on his dark cloud shuttle and coldly looked at everything, as Mo Luo's powerful punch was reaching him, Luo Feng's initial cold eyes instantly gleamed, a terrifying consciousness pressure attacked Mo Luo! That pressure comparable to an early stage sector lord, made even Sa Jin back then completely stunned.

Rumble! Mo Lo's face instantly went pale, the wonders in his origin law infused punch was affected.

"What, his consciousness pressure is that terrifying? Just what miraculous encounters has he had, to have such terrifying

consciousness! Consciousness strength represents the strength of his soul, and the soul is the core of the life...if his soul is that strong, wouldn't walking the path of a spirit reader make him even stronger?"

"Impossible!"

Mo Luo fiercely roared, his expression struggled, his eyes bloodshot, he looked up and stared at Luo Feng.

"Luo Feng, die!!!"

He rushed into the sky, both his hands forming claws, one slight ahead of the other, in an instant the entire space was affected, after which as his claws warped before his chest, immediately "chi chi chi..." The law energies about were all affected.

Rumble... A 4 clawed ferocious beast image that was over 30m long appeared outside his body, the beast was skinny, from a glance it was similar to a ravenous wolf, only peculiar thing was that it had 2 black horns on its forehead!

Both his claws was where the fangs were on this fierce beast!

"Howl..." Mo Luo's expression was struggled, he rushed into the sky and straight at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng who was high in the sky gazed down below at Mo Luo who was rushing over, he revealed a cold smile and ordered softly,

"Blade world!" The dark golden long rod on his back immediately shot out countless little golden lights, they in turn shot out countless golden threads that interconnected, every one ever so fine and thin.

The land and skies changed abruptly, into a vast blade world.

Blade world!

"Howl..." Mo Luo's energy soared as he rushed at Luo Feng.

"Die!" Luo Feng said coldly.

Immediately, he gathered threads of dark gold blade energy before him, when the 1st was condensed, it swiftly shot at Mo Luo! Afterwhich the 2nd condensed thread of blade energy followed behind! Simultaneously, the 3rd was already in process of gathering...

"Child's play!" Mo Luo roared, he moved his right claw, making the beast image look like it fiercely opened its big mouth wide.

Rumble!

The right claw slashed at the 1st blade energy, the entire beast image slightly shook, the blade energy however was dispersed.

"Haha, I'll definitely win!" Mo Luo's eyes were filled with

madness, while he was normally meek and calm, during a true battle, he was a living beast, without any humanity.

"Hm?" Mo Luo’s expression changed.

Rumble!

The 2nd thread of blade energy pierced at him, he once again blocked it.

Rumble!

The 3rd thread of bade energy!

The 4th thread of blade energy!

The 5th thread...

...

Almost like continuous bullets, wave after wave.

Mo Luo used his technique and fought with his life to defend against the 4th thread, the wood, fire and space laws that his technique used to form the beast image had completely been dispersed, when that was gone, he naturally couldn’t block anymore.

"Chi!" The 5th thread of blade energy pierced right through Mo Luo’s palm and after that straight through his chest, revealing a bloody cavity. Simultaneously, the force of the attack knocked him fiercely downwards.

Chi! Chi! Chi!

The many threads of blade energy rushed and pierced right through his body one after another, causing him to fall further.

"No!" Mo Luo’s eyes were bloodshot, his mouth filled with fresh blood.

Chi!

Another thread of blade energy pierced right through his face, immediately destroying his consciousness.

Rumble!

Mo Luo’s body that was already filled with holes and injuries was finally knocked back down onto the surface of that stone planet, with a huge rumble, a huge ring shaped ditch with a diameter of about 10km was formed, there in the center was where his body landed.

The blade world automatically dispersed, countless gold lights

returned to the dark golden long rod on Luo Feng's back.

Luo Feng slowly descended, he gazed at the huge ring shape ditch and the tattered and torn body of Mo Luo in the center, "You are only a little stronger than Bolan, if I simply used 3 or 4 threads of blade energy together, I would have killed you instantly. However I didn't do so...I used them 1 at a time and you were still guaranteed death!"

2nd battle, Luo Feng against Mo Luo, Luo Feng won! Results 2 wins, 0 draws, 0 losses!

Sou!

Luo Feng was teleported out.

During the absolute beginning matches earlier, Luo Feng had noticed that he was already too much stronger than Sa Jin, Ge and Ni Nan. He wasn't weaker than them before the demon note inheritance. Now that his spirit energy amplitude had risen over 20 times, it was simply decimation. The chemist Yu Feng was hard to deal with mainly because he had mysterious drugs.

Chemists were very special.

A strong warrior may not necessarily be more durable than a weak person! It only meant that in terms of possibility, those able to withstand the chemists were usually stronger.

Other than chemist Yu Feng being hard to deal with, he had no way of dealing with wolfman Ke Luo Fu!

Bolan, he used only a portion of his power and settled it! To display his respect, he didn’t over power him too much, that would be bullying.

Mo Luo? He bullied him all the way!

...

Within the quiet study, Mo Luo was curled up like a cat, he grabbed his head as he muttered, "How can this be, I actually lost without any ability to defend, killed by the wave after wave of blade energy. He can already simultaneously unleash 4 to 5 threads of blade energy..."

"How can his improvement be that huge?"

"Back during his fight with Sa Jin, he could only condense 1 thread of blade energy. And he only recently passed the 7th level of the heavenly bridge!"

"It’s only been 6 years since he passed the 7th level!"

"6 years!!!"

Mo Luo’s expression was filled with pain, he closed his eyes and

muttered, "His improvement in 6 years is so huge! That Bolan only passed the 7th level 2 years ago, but I've checked his information before. I've seen his footage from the genius competition, very obviously back then he could already unleash over 10,000 images in movement, just in terms of space laws, he was already terrifying back then."

"The only thing was he tried to focus on both space and time! Hence he lagged behind and his improvement was slow."

"Right now he's focusing on space as his main, the reserves and training from the recent 200 years have come to fruit, hence he very quickly passed the 7th level. He quickly comprehended and turned all these 200 years of training into strength."

"His shocking improvement, I understand!"

"But Luo Feng, what's going on with him?"

"In the vast universe, everything has a reason, he cannot be absurdly strong for no reason at all." Mo Luo closed his eyes in pain as he curled there, muttering non stop, "Luo Feng was still very weak during the genius battles, but he kept improving. Every bit of his training he had already turned into strength! He shouldn't have had such a sudden jump in improvement."

"Why?"

"Why?"

Curled up in his study, Mo Luo fiercely opened his eyes and used all his limbs to slam the ground, his eyes bloodshot, expression struggled.

"Haha..."

"I’ve lost!"

"I’ve lost! Losing this round means I’ve lost the entire contest battles. I’ve been kicked into the absolute beginning region. I’ve been kicked out." Mo Luo fell on the floor helplessly, almost lying flat in the study, he talked while his eyes filled with tears, almost like a madman.

The contest battle had 6 participants, and only 1 slot, only the strongest would acquire the slot.

Hence, the moment one lost a match, there was no more hope.

...

After a while.

Mo Luo stood back up, almost like a wolf licking its wounds and fully recovered, his eyes were filled with endless ambition, "I’ve only temporarily been kicked into the absolute beginning region, there’s still the next qualification battles! If I can't make it in the

universe level, there’s still the domain lord level!"

"I, Mo Luo, will definitely become the strongest!"

"No one can obstruct my path, no one!" Mo Luo roared softly.

At this time, Mo Luo didn’t even know that the reason behind Luo Feng’s great rise in strength was because of his kick back then.

His kick was intended to rid himself of a threat, however it resulted in him making Luo Feng becoming his greatest obstacle.

Chapter 593: Threat

The virtual universe company's universe level core members' qualification battles happen every hundred years, the battles that draw the most attention were without doubt the contest battles for the primal region slot. Firstly, there was only 1 slot every time allowing one member to enter. Secondly, the title primal region member was something that every core genius fought hard for and wished they had.

"Beautiful victory!"

"The Ganwu universe country's Luo Feng won again!"

"His record is already 3 wins, 0 draws and 0 losses!"

Within a restaurant of Yu Xiang mountain's public region, many geniuses had screens opened up before them, on it displayed Luo Feng's match against Long Yun, they all discussed loudly. To these geniuses that faced their contest battles in the last phase and sky and land regions, the primal region slot contest battles were definitely the pinnacle of matches, of course they all anticipated them and wished to see who actually made the breakthrough.

Before this match had even begun, about 100% of the core members had already determined Luo Feng would win without a doubt, and the result was just as they had expected. Luo Feng very cleanly won the battle easily.

"Luo Feng didn't even need to unleash the blade world to defeat

Long Yun, just the Totem pillar would have been enough, Long Yun is simply too much weaker than him."

"This batch's 6 people in the contest battles, the weakest is Long Yun, Luo Feng had indeed expected too much from Long Yun earlier."

"What do you know, Long Yun and Luo Feng are from the same batch of genius competition, they were comrades then and maybe even good friends normally. Even if he was 100% set to win, giving the opponent respect is also a form of grace." Sitting around the dining table, a silver skinned youth with a few hundred pigtails said.

Others within the restaurant all suddenly made a noise.

"This contest battle, up till now, within the 6, only 2 have not had a loss!"

"Luo Feng and Ke Luo Fu, they both haven't lost!"

"The one entering the primal region this time should be from the 2 of them, everybody guess, who will be the one to get that primal region slot?" The restaurant grew even rowdier as the geniuses from the many universe countries all discussed fervently, obviously most of them favored the Wolfman Ke Luo Fu.

Sitting right in the center of the restaurant, a shockingly fat red eyed man with a huge mouth laughed loudly, "Luo Feng? He'll

definitely lose to Ke Luo Fu. What's more, he may not even get past Yu Feng!"

Luo Feng's 4th match, was against the chemist Yu Feng.

"Chemist Yu Feng?"

The restaurant instantly got silent.

It wasn't that Yu Feng's power was huge, but the chemist power was something that made the geniuses shudder within.

3 battles, 3 wins, at this point, Bolan, Long Yun, Mo Luo and Yu Feng all had losses, only he and Ke Luo Fu were still winning.

"I have to beat Yu Feng!"

"After I defeat Yu Feng, I'll have 4 consecutive wins." Luo Feng thought. "Then I'll fight it out and give my everything against Ke Luo Fu, if I lose I'll stay in the absolute beginning region, if I win I'll enter the primal region!"

"Yu Feng?"

Luo Feng sat before his desk and looked at the screen on his laptop, on it displayed large amounts of information on chemists. Actually, there were many special routes and paths within the vast universe for humanity, the known fighter and spirit reader was

simply the most basic and most common of all.

There were specialists that controlled puppets, a puppeteer, beast tamers that used strong beasts to battle, chemist that studied the many peculiar materials in the universe...

These were all special professions that allowed the weak to battle the strong, for example, if one tamed an extra powerful beast, naturally his power would be strong too. However the development pathways for such specialists, were a lot more narrow and tougher to reach the top, many warriors that had poor comprehension of the laws would rather try these specialization.

However these may not be the right path!

The percentage of failures exceeded over 99.99999...%, it could be said that rising up from these specialization paths was simply too hard!

The chemists, named the universe researchers.

They would study the many peculiar and strange materials in the universe, their many special properties and dissect them, later using their own methods to go through their many and infinite details, finally creating drugs that suited their style of attack! These drugs were all forms and styles, be it powder, a grain of sand, a flower, a tree or even a blade.

Anyway, the chemist’s drugs were extremely peculiar and

unpredictable.

As for strength, they varied.

Due to their life evolution, the universe level warriors could fight even on white dwarf stars, ignoring cosmic rays, the strong magnetic field, the extreme high temperatures and the destruction from the high gravity. It could be said that their life force was extremely tenacious! Hence to actually harm a warrior of that level with drugs was a very hard thing to do.

However...

There's ultimately people who succeed! There may be some universe level chemist who managed to create a drug that was a threat even to undyings! There were such cases in the history of the universe! Of course these were rare and hard to find.

Even if one knew the way to create the drugs, simply following the steps was still very hard to succeed.

The process for making the drugs was simply too complex. Even to the point where the creator of the drugs may not be able to replicate their own results a 2nd time.

A chemist, in summary: A research type warrior that studies and creates drugs!

Just like several natural occurrences like some mists in the

universe secret regions that can even put an undying to sleep, these mists were like natural drugs, as long as one studied and the storage and release techniques, it could be used in battle. However the danger of containing and controlling it was harder.

"The chemist's strength lies in his drugs." Luo Feng frowned, "I beat him before, but that doesn't mean I will definitely win again, I have to be alert."

"Luo Feng, your 4th contest battles for the primal region slot is about to begin, your opponent is Yu Feng!" The virtual universe system's voice rang in his years, a powerful energy immediately engulfed Luo Feng.

Sou!

He was transported to the arena!

In an extra huge laboratory that took up over 30,000 square meters, automaton laboratory, living laboratory, energy region, nurture region...many different regions, with all sorts of apparatus about, millions of pieces of equipment, Yu Feng's eyes were filled with excitement and anticipation, his spirit energy was controlling and mixing the drug.

"Luo Feng's consciousness pressure is shocking, hence the best way to deal with a spirit reader normally, which is to use a drug that invades his soul, that would have poor results with him."

"Then, I'll affect his soul through his body!"

"I've already failed 1,892 times! I have to succeed this time!"

Yu Feng retrieved his drug's most basic ingredient, the Fish crystal liquid and swiftly mixed it, actually since his loss to Luo Feng earlier in the qualification battles, he swiftly understood the mistake from that battle! According to his deduction, with the fish crystal liquid, he should be able to produce a stronger drug than before.

The previous battle, he used fish crystal number 18 and successfully defeated Bolan!

Right now he was studying fish liquid 19.

"Only 0.0001 seconds, if I miss the timing, it will disperse." Yu Feng didn't even hesitate, continuing like lightning, or slow like a breeze as he mixed the drugs, it required genetic energy and spirit energy to mix, these were also the reasons why the drugs from a chemists weren't something normal people dared to mess with, if they didn't know the technique and used the drugs, they may affect themselves.

"Chi!"

Suddenly a shade of pink appeared in the air ahead, the pink slowly returned to colorless, almost like there was nothing. Simultaneously, a black round ball on the table changed in an

instant into a pink ball.

"I've finally succeeded!" Yu Feng extended his hand and grabbed that pink ball.

"In reality, I've actually long succeeded in making this fish crystal 19. However the rules in the virtual universe system are troublesome." He shook his head, a fighter and spirit reader could retrieve whatever weapons and armor they needed easily, however a chemist had no way to request for drugs like that.

They could only request the ingredients and materials, and each of the materials had to be below 1 mixed element!

Whatever drugs he wanted to use, it had to be something he could create within the virtual universe, otherwise he wouldn't be allowed to use it. This was to guard against cheating.

"Yu Feng, your 4th contest battle for the primal region slot is about to begin, your opponent is Luo Feng!" The virtual universe system's voice rang in his ears, only then did Yu Feng let out a sigh of relief, he had just finished this drug 19 a moment before the battle was about to begin, his luck was indeed good.

Sou!

He was transported away.

The winds howled like demon cries, sand flew about in the skies,

the land and skies were vast and blurry.

Luo Feng stood in the sky, dressed in dark red armor, the extreme wind and sand in the skies blew hard at his hair.

"Newbie!"

A black silhouette appeared in mid air in the distance, he too stood on a flying weapon.

Luo Feng stood on the dark cloud shuttle and looked at the black robed Yu Feng, he could only see his incredibly calm eyes, any chemist was either extremely calm or extremely passionate, otherwise they wouldn’t be able to deal with the many many failures while researching their drugs.

"You won the last time, back then I sent you a mail... saying you wouldn’t be so lucky the next time!" Yu Feng’s voice was agitated, "Indeed, at the last moment before this battle I finally finished my drug 19, it's my luck and your downfall!"

"Cut the crap!" Luo Feng’s eyes were excited.

Chemist?

His experience with chemists were few, Luo Feng did have a sense of respect to those of the profession, to be able be a chemist and lead, they were all incredible people.

"Let’s fight!" Luo Feng howled.

Rumble!

Immediately countless gold lights shot in all directions, immediately the sand in the skies all vanished, becoming an endless blade world, the white vast blade world had countless blade energy that were like fish revolving within, and Luo Feng was the god of this blade world! The only ruler!

"Condense!"

In an instant 5 threads of blade energy had condensed before Luo Feng, every one of them taking the shape of a blade.

"Hahaha..." The black robed Yu Feng laughed loudly, simultaneously countless black threads shot out in all directions from his body, he used his spirit energy to control the countless threads to form a net that aimed to wrap about Luo Feng.

"Go!"

Just as Luo Feng was about to send his blade energy to attack, he suddenly felt piercing pain throughout his body...

Chapter 594: Shock

Even though the pain was still within Luo Feng's threshold, that sort of piercing pain swiftly permeated into his head, even his brain felt the effects of it, waves and waves of radioactive piercing pain, almost like countless ants biting within his brain, even a universe level genius whose willpower wasn't strong enough wouldn't be able to withstand it.

These were all secondary, the most important thing was...

Consciousness!

One's consciousness was deep within the brain, a universe level's soul too was within that consciousness. A body simulated within the virtual universe was naturally a typical normal body, hence in the network...Luo Feng's weak point was his consciousness!

The pain had spread throughout his brain and permeated into his consciousness, causing it to shudder within.

"Even though drug 19's attack on the body is weaker, it is stronger against the brain and its mental effect reaches an absolute level, naturally it can affect the consciousness and once that's done, a spirit reader will definitely fall!" Flying in the distance on his weapon, Yu Feng's eyes gleamed, he pointed straight at Luo Feng.

"Go and die!" Immediately countless threads were like sharp blades rushing at Luo Feng, no matter how much of a genius one

was, this body was a normal universe level 9 body simulated by the virtual universe company. It would definitely be instantly destroyed.

Against the overwhelming number of blades, Luo Feng's eyes went cold!

"Subdue!"

His powerful willpower caused his soul to become like a rock, even if his consciousness was shaken, his used his willpower and consciousness to forcefully control his spirit energy. Almost like a general using his ability to direct his soldiers to steady a ship in turbulent waters. Simultaneously controlling his genetic energy and spirit energy to madly enter his body and destroy the poison.

"Even if the skies and lands are destroyed, nothing will affect me!"

Rumble!

Luo Feng, on his dark cloud shuttle, left behind an image and swiftly dodged, simultaneously controlling his blade world to attack, affecting the countless black threads, his eyes raging as he shouted: "Yu Feng, die!"

Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble! Rumble!

5 translucent dark golden blade shaped condensed blade energys,

like 5 golden rainbows tore through the skies and shot at the black robed man. While it shot out, the 5 rainbows melded with the universe space laws, visible ripples could be seen by the naked eye in the surroundings, the blade world formed in the space had formed an incredibly powerful pressuring effect.

Blade world, it was that shocking!

"How could he get over it so easily? Just how terrifying his is willpower and consciousness?" The black robed Yu Feng's eyes stared, filled with disbelief.

The threads of blade energy, like lasers shot through his body over and over, fresh blood stained his black robes.

His body fell directly from mid air, his eyes still filled with disbelief, as a chemist, researcher and creator, he was very clear on his drugs' effects, even to the point where he tested the drugs on himself. He couldn't even suppress the effects of drug 18, much less drug 19.

Luo Feng however suppressed it completely!

"Chi!" That torn and tattered body landed in the sand, Luo Feng landed beside, "Unless your drugs are able to pierce right through my mental state and make my consciousness rumble, they can never affect me."

Sou!

The virtual universe system transported Luo Feng out.

Luo Feng’s 4th match, against the chemist Yu Feng, victory! Result 4 wins, 0 draws, 0 losses!

...

In the universe, it was indeed possible for a drug to completely pierce through one’s mental state and make one’s consciousness crumble immediately, to reach a stage where it can make a universe level 9 warrior’s consciousness crumble, the process of creation was extremely difficult, and it must be a contraband drug. If one could produce it on a large scale, then there would be no point in having the universe soldiers in the wars outside the star fields.

The universe was after all fair.

It gave chemists the ability to create heavenly drugs that were extremely powerful, yet it also made their path extremely difficult.

The overpowering drugs were set to be hard to produce in numbers, even to the point where the creator may not be able to use it himself safely.

"I’ve lost, that would be my strategy’s fault." Yu Feng was dressed in a white robe in his lab, swiftly pondering the reason for the loss, "He’s a spirit reader, his attack methods use spirit energy, then no

matter how much I harm his body, with his willpower, he can still use spirit energy to control the Nan Shen Armament and attack me."

"Hence, my initial path of attack was right."

"I first have to affect his use of the Nan Shen Armament."

"1 is to immediately use soul affecting drugs, however my Kasiwo number 6 drug also failed. 2 is to pierce his mental state and affect his consciousness, affecting his control of the Nan Shen Armament from deep within." Yu Feng frowned and pondered, "My thought process wasn't wrong, hence, there's only one reason!"

"My drugs aren't strong enough!"

Yu Feng didn't think anymore, he immediately tapped in mid air ahead of him and an extra huge screen appeared, on it were a blur of words, he then immersed himself back into his drug research...

Chemists were lone warriors, they had to endure this loneliness too.

Rather, in the vast universe, just the number of life forms alone was countless, much less the types of materials, like plants, just that name alone, even if one recited for up to a hundred million years, he wouldn't be able to recite all the types of plants in the universe. The many types of plants, metal, liquids, gas...

Everything that could be discovered in the universe.

Whether it was stars, planets, black holes and even microscopic life forms, everything was within a chemist's field of research. If a chemist was able to produce a black hole through his own methods, then that black hole would be one of his drugs. Naturally that's an exaggerated example.

Before a black hole, even the universe space would crumble, even an undying would sucked in and destroyed.

Creating a black hole?

The path of the chemist, till date there hasn't been one who's accomplished it.

The universe was incredibly vast, with many generations of chemists one after another, however, they still felt as though... there were countless paths for them to proceed on.

Maybe there would come a day where some chemist would have some shocking discovery.

He won!

Luo Feng had defeated the chemist Yu Feng and acquired 4 consecutive wins. Ke Luo Fu too had completed his 4th battle and defeated Long Yun!

Hence, the 2 of them had 4 consecutive wins!

...

The tens of thousands of core members in virtual universe company's Yu Xiang Mountain were all paying close attention to the upcoming match, even the domain lords and sector lord level members were all awaiting this match. Because usually, halfway through the contest battles, they would be able to tell who would get the slot already.

This time however, it was actually up to the final match.

"This punk from the Ganwu universe country, he just joined the virtual universe company not long ago, only 200 years and he's actually able to attempt to enter the primal region?"

"However from the footage, Ke Luo Fu is indeed very strong."

After Luo Feng defeated Yu Feng, he sat quietly in his own study, 4 consecutive wins, it made him have the highest chance to enter the primal region.

"Wolfman Ke Luo Fu!"

"A majestic battle to settle this!"

Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, almost like a mad golden horned beast.

"Luo Feng!" A voice suddenly rang in his mind, making him stunned as he swiftly ran downstairs, there in the living room, True Yan Emperor stood in a simple golden long robe.

"Teacher!"Luo Feng quickly bowed respectfully.

True Yan emperor carefully observed Luo Feng, a smile appeared on his face as he nodded, Not bad, you’ve done very well this time."

"Your student hasn’t entered the primal region, there’s still one more battle." Luo Feng revealed helplessness, "However this last battle, he doesn’t have any guarantee at all."

"You’ve done well enough." True Yan immediately sat in the sofa and gazed at Luo Feng, "You’ve had 4 consecutive wins this time, 1, the win over Bolan has proven you are the most exceptional in the batch of the genius competition. 2, the win over the primal region member Mo Luo has proven your strength is already primal region level. 3, the win over Yu Feng has proven that even such an exceptional chemist cannot find your weakness."

Luo Feng stood at the side without any sense of pride.

True Yan was surprised as he saw the situation, normally when a teacher teaches a disciple, he worries that his student would get arrogant. But this disciple of his...had been perpetually humble. Even when he complimented him, Luo Feng remained the same.

"But I don’t have any guarantee of beating Ke Luo Fu." Luo Feng was still completely immersed on his upcoming 5th match.

"Beating?"

True Yan laughed out loudly, his laughter rang out throughout the entire living room.

"Teacher?" Luo Feng asked curiously.

"I’ve watched your entire qualification battles this time, hence I’ve seen the battle between you and Ke Luo Fu." True Yan emperor was filled with smiles, "I dare say, he definitely has the ability now to pass the 8th level of the heavenly bridge!"

"What?"

Luo Feng stared wide eyed, "Pass the 8th level?"

Passing every level of the heavenly bridge was incredibly difficult, within the entire virtual universe company’s universe level core members, only the strongest Fei Tuo of the primal region had passed the 8th level. Fe Tuo, the one and only!

Wolfman Ke Luo Fu could pass the 8th level too?

If others had said this Luo Feng would have taken it as a joke, but

this coming from his own teacher, the undying being closest to becoming a universe country leader.

"I've seen the footage of the previous qualification battles of Ke Luo Fu, he wasn't that strong before, his strength exploded within the past couple of hundred of years." True Yan sat there and gently sipped his tea, "Passing the 8th level of the heavenly bridge, other than Fei Tuo, there's no other universe level core members that can be his match."

Luo Feng went silent.

The news his teacher had brought was enough to shock him.

"Don't be dejected." True Yan emperor laughed, "This battle has already attracted the attention of many of the upper echelons of the virtual universe company. The wolfman Ke Luo Fu is very exceptional, your improvement is very shocking too. Hence the 2 of you both have gained great recognition and attention. Even if you simply lose this round, I believe the next qualification battles you'll be able to make it into the primal region."

"Is it impossible this time?" Luo Feng took a deep breath.

Right.

His own strength, was already considered the pinnacle of the 7th level. The wolfman Ke Luo Fu was still able to completely suppress him, he indeed had the power to pass the 8th level.

"The final battle of the contest battles!"

"Looks like I have to use that move!" Luo Feng thought within, "Maybe I'll still have 30% chance to win!"

He had never used that move before, the 'cheating' move of his.

Chapter 595: Luo Feng and Ke Luo Fu, The Final Battle

Luo Feng and Ke Luo Fu, The Final Battle

As one only sends his consciousness into the virtual universe network, the geniuses battling in the virtual universe all had the same universe level 9 bodies simulated by the virtual universe network, everybody had the same structure and physical bodies.

Then, any way to increase Luo Feng's strength would have to rely on one's consciousness!

How would he get stronger?

The Mosha clansman was a favored child of space, the golden horned beast's right claw was its strongest trump card, even his earth body was a blood warrior, however these were all useless! Because the body Luo Feng used in the virtual universe was simply a normal body, it didn't have the Mosha clansman's specialties and no blood river power!

And Luo Feng's true cheating method was...

The natural ability...strengthen!

Back then when the golden horned beast had its head blown off on earth, it raged and unleashed its natural ability...strengthen...

its offensive powers not only exploded, even its flying speed grew by a lot! Later after Luo Feng repossessed it, it had once let the golden horned beast unleash its natural ability strengthen while he controlled the hybrid copper essence shard, destroying the group of elites from the Nuo Lan Shan family.

Natural ability, it strengthened everything, body, soul, everything!

Instantly doubled!

Under the effects of strengthening, one’s speed, strength and consciousness etc would all increase one entire time, doubled altogether!

Doubling one’s consciousness strength would allow Luo Feng’s consciousness within the virtual universe network to naturally double!

"At the time of battle, I’ll let the golden horned beast in the real world unleash its strengthening ability, immediately my soul within the core would strengthen and my consciousness would double! With a stronger consciousness...firstly it’ll make my strength higher. Then my control and power of the Nan Shen Armament would be stronger." Luo Feng thought.

Stronger consciousness pressure!

Stronger Nan Shen Armament!

It indeed made Luo Feng's strength grow by a lot.

"However this move is considered 'cheating'. Luo Feng thought, "The battles within the virtual universe all use the same body structures! It's mainly to test one's law comprehension and technique strengths, along with battle experience etc. And through the golden horned beast's natural ability Strengthening, using my stronger consciousness to add to my strength, it is considered cheating."

"However!"

"My miraculous encounters should be considered a type of strength too right." Luo Feng thought.

Luo Feng may seem like he was cheating, however as he could use it while his consciousness was in the virtual universe made it so that it wasn't forbidden and naturally not considered cheating. It could only be considered suspect to cheating!

...

Within the living room, True Yan Emperor saw that Luo Feng seemed to be deep in thought, he laughed, "Don't stress yourself out, losing this match isn't a big deal! Who hasn't encountered setbacks and difficulty, what's more I'm already very satisfied with your performance this time. And that Ke Luo Fu is indeed much stronger than you, even if you lose, no one will say anything."

Luo Feng nodded.

"Calm yourself and maintain your pinnacle condition." True Yan suddenly stood up, saying, "Even though you don’t have much hope of winning, this battle has attracted the attention of many people, even the upper echelon beings are noticing this battle. Hence, you have to give your all before you lose, then you won't have any regrets."

"Yes teacher." Luo Feng nodded.

"Hm, calm down and rest!"

True Yan nodded, after which he left the virtual universe network.

Seeing his teacher leave, Luo Feng then sat down quietly, staring at the table and muttering, "Ke Luo Fu, no matter what, I will use my greatest strength to fight you! I cannot simply hide my power and just hand the primal region slot to you!"

"Who will finally win, we’ll see at the final battle!" Luo Feng closed his eyes and collected himself.

Mental state was indeed a great influence on one’s strength.

Hence calming himself and maintaining his pinnacle condition

was a very important preparation.

Absolute beginning region.

"That Yu Feng gave me a minor problem." Ke Luo Fu sat in his own wine cellar, it was filled with large amounts of many types of alcohol, he lifted a huge glass cup and took a big sip, his eyes filled with anticipation, "No one else was even a threat."

"That punk Luo Feng, he indeed has amazing potential."

"If it weren't for 100 years ago when I did the Dangerous level mission and discovered that mission world's huge secret, allowing me to gain a miraculous encounter, with my basic foundation strength rising greatly. I wouldn't be able to defeat him." Wolfman Ke Luo Fu thought within.

He recalled the great encounter he went through over 100 years ago, he was still very excited.

That encounter gave him a true chance to rise up, the current him indeed had the power to pass the 8th level of the heavenly bridge, but he didn't rush over to attempt it. Because he was preparing to do it only after the qualification battles, it wouldn't be late then.

"As for now?"

"Defeating him won't be hard at all." Wolfman Ke Luo Fu's eyes

gleamed with a sense of wildness, "If I’m able to make it into the primal region this time, then, I’ll get one more chance to take on another impossible level mission. And more dangerous level missions. I think I’ll be able to get the big secrets from those missions."

...

The most awaited battle of the qualification battles, the final battle between Luo Feng and Ke Luo Fu was about to begin. This battle had attracted the attention of many, everybody wished to see just who would finally get the primal region slot.

Amongst those spectating, there was one very special person.

"Feng!" Xu Xin sat in the corner of a noisy bar, within it floated 4 enormous screens, they were playing the many battles of the qualification battles, the moment the most exciting match of all, Luo Feng against Ke Luo Fu began, they would all be able to watch it.

The bar was filled with discussions, be it complimenting Ke Luo Fu or shocked at Luo Feng’s strength.

Xu Xin was in the corner silently listening to the group of geniuses from the many universe countries all discussing her husband, she couldn’t help but feel proud within.

"I believe you’ll definitely win." Xu Xin thought within.

Silently sitting in the sofa, Luo Feng suddenly heard a familiar sound in his ears, "Luo Feng, your 5th contest battle for the primal region slot is about to begin, your opponent is Ke Luo Fu!" This made Luo Feng instantly open his eyes, they gleamed with an unstoppable resolve.

Sou!

Luo Feng was transported into the arena.

...

And in reality, within the core of demon mountain in the absolute beginning region, on the inheritance steps of the inheritance palace.

Within his internal world as he sat crossed legged.

The golden horned beast which was like a huge black mountain range, its huge dark golden eyes gleamed with anticipation, it had already prepared, ready to unleash its natural ability strengthen. The moment the battle began, it would unleash it.

...

Virtual universe, contest battles, Luo Feng Vs Ke Luo Fu.

Within the arena, Luo Feng felt the sky and land warp, after which he stood on the ground, he looked around, with a glance, he saw the endless primal forests, the air was somewhat moist.

"The gravity here is about 12 times that of earth."

"The air temperature is about 82 degrees." Luo Feng instantly did the calculations within, the dark red armor on his surface had long formed a perfectly fitting armor, even forming a helmet on his head, the dark golden long rod on his back, the screen on his wrist, on it information appeared.

Luo Feng looked around, the primal forest was extremely dense and hard to see through.

Sou!

He swiftly rose into the sky and flew a 1,000m up, in the air above the forest.

"Ah, where is he?" Luo Feng frowned, after which he carefully tried to sense him.

The virtual universe system would normally transport both exponents pretty close to each other, they would normally feel and sense each other clearly. This time however...Luo Feng realized he couldn’t feel a sense of life or energy within the area.

Luo Feng stood in the air above the primal forest and roared, "Ke

Luo Fu! Come out!"

"Come out! Come out! Come out!" ...His voice resounded over and over within the space, strongly creating ripples through kilometers about the forest.

Yu Xiang mountain public region.

Many restaurants and bars, along with many living quarters of the core members, many had opened their screens to spectate the battle.

"Yu Feng against Mo Luo, battle ongoing, able to watch footage soon!"

"Bolan against Long Yun, battle ongoing, able to watch footage soon!"

"Luo Feng against Ke Luo Fu, battle yet to begin, please wait!"

This was the information shown on the screen about the 3 matches, the other 2 matches were displayed easily, they even began already, only the most exciting and most crucial of battles... Luo Feng against Ke Luo Fu, the battle had yet to begin!

"What's going on?"

"Shouldn't the 3 matches all began simultaneously? Why hasn't

Luo Feng against Ke Luo Fu’s battle begun yet?"

"What’s going on?"

The bar was bustling with shouts and noise.

Xu Xin who was sitting in the corner too frowned as she looked at the huge screen, the words displayed on the screen were very clear, "Luo Feng against Ke Luo Fu, battle yet to begin, please wait!"

"Yu Feng has lost, Mo Luo has won."

"Long Yun has lost, Bolan has won."

The other 2 battles have ended.

However the screen that was connected to Luo Feng’s battle still showed the same prompt as before... "Luo Feng against Ke Luo Fu, battle yet to begin, please wait!"

"Has something happened to the screen?"

"I’m looking at me?"

The group of core members in the bar all stood before the screen in mid air, the one connected to Luo Feng’s match against Ke Luo Fu, the screen still showed the same prompt, "Luo Feng against Ke

Luo Fu, battle yet to begin, please wait!"

"Please wait my ass!"

"This is the most crucial match."

"What's going on?"

The group of core members were all anxious, Xu Xin was anxious too, Wuka, Rong Jun and the others were all anxious too as they held their breaths.

Even Luo Feng's teacher True Yan emperor, along with the upper echelon of the virtual universe company, they were all suspicious too.

In the arena, in the air above the primal forest, Luo Feng looked about.

"What's going on, why hasn't Ke Luo Fu appeared?" Luo Feng frowned.

"Luo Feng!"The virtual universe system's voice rang in his ears again, "Since the beginning of the 5th match till now, Ke Luo Fu's consciousness has yet to enter the virtual universe network, hence we've been unable to transport him here! The verdict is...Ke Luo Fu has forfeited!"

Luo Feng stared wide eyed.

Forfeited?

Chapter 596: Declaration

There were a total of 5 rounds in the contest battles, every round had 3 battles that had fixed timings.

The virtual universe company would definitely never delay or postpone the matches just because of someone who didn’t enter the virtual universe network. The match timings are all released much earlier, if one party fails to enter the virtual universe network at the time, then they would immediately be deemed as forfeiting, simultaneously, the other party would automatically achieve victory from that match.

Hence, this battle, Luo Feng won without even fighting.

Consecutive 5 wins!

5 points, 100%, acquiring 1st place.

"How can this be?" Luo Feng’s expression while he stood in the primal forest was complex, for his last battle he had prepared to fight it out with all he had, even though he didn’t have any chance for victor for this battle, even if he failed, he wanted to have a thrilling battle all and all.

Who who had expected such an outcome?

Sou!

Luo Feng was transported out of the arena!

In that bar in Yu Xiang Mountain, the screen on it still displayed... "Luo Feng's battle against Ke Luo Fu has yet to begin, please wait!" However it quickly followed up with another prompt... "Luo Feng's match against Ke Luo Fu, since Ke Luo Fu has failed to enter the virtual universe network within the set time, he's been deemed as automatically forfeiting, Luo Feng wins this battle."

The bar was chaotic.

Those that were discussing why their battle had yet to begin saw as the words on the screen suddenly changed, it however made the initially chaotic bar grow silent.

Pure silence!

The geniuses from the many universe countries gathered in the bar were all completely stunned, almost like back on earth many years back during the world cup, when everybody was highly anticipating the finals, the most anticipated match of all, suddenly one team met with a vehicle accident right before, with many of their players heavily injured and crippled etc, making them have no choice but to forfeit.

This was simply fate's joke!

"What's going on?"

"What joke is this?"

"Is it true?"

After the silence, the entire bar erupted in chaos.

"The final battle is the one that will determine the slot of the primal region. Why hasn't that Ke Luo Fu entered the virtual universe?" No one doubted the words on the screen, as these were generated by the virtual universe system, after all this system...

Within the entire humanity, it was never, ever, wrong!

They'd rather believe that trillions of people had made a mistake before even suspecting that the system would make one.

Even Xu Xin who was in the corner of the bar paying attention to all this was stunned, she had thought about Luo Feng winning or losing, however she never expected he'd win like that.

...

Primal region contest battles slot (Universe level) has ended, 15 matches all ended.

Luo Feng consecutively won 5 matches, he won 1st place and acquired the primal region slot!

The others, Mo Luo, Ke Luo Fu, Yu Feng, Long Yun and Bolan were all set to enter the absolute beginning region.

...

The outcome of the contest battles naturally spread fast, as for Luo Feng entering the primal region, it was actually still something the core geniuses could all accept. As even though he won without fighting that last battle, Luo Feng had indeed won all 4 of his previous matches.

To be able to defeat Mo Luo and Yu Feng proved that he already had the strength of a primal region member.

Secondly, Luo Feng's time in the virtual universe company was extremely short, his 1st qualification battles and he still provided such a shocking performance against the seniors that had trained for thousands of years. Lastly, his talent...from the perspectives of the groups of geniuses, was probably even more absurd than Ke Luo Fu.

All it took was maybe 1 or 2 more qualification battles and Luo Feng's place in the primal region would be definitely secured, that was a given.

Hence...

For such an absolute genius like Luo Feng making it into the

primal region, everybody could accept it. However, what everybody couldn't accept the most or was dumbfounded by was... why did Ke Luo Fu not enter the virtual universe in the most critical time. If he wanted to forfeit, there were many geniuses that knew or regarded their own strengths as too weak, forfeiting long before their battles, Ke Luo Fu's situation was rare.

Luo Feng's entry into the primal region spread fast, there were many different reactions.

Some were incredibly happy, like his teacher True Yan emperor, he laughed carefree, "Haha, my good disciple made it into the primal region in his first qualification battles, good..."

Others were gritting their teeth and clenching their fists, like the primal region member Mo Luo who was now reduced to an absolute beginning member. He grit his teeth in hate, "This Luo Feng actually got stupid lucky, that Ke Luo Fu must be an idiot too, not showing up in the critical time. Did he really die?"

Some were shocked, like the undying stationed at demon note mountain Official Po Yu, she frowned, "This puck is actually alive? And he made it into the primal region? The 1,000 star sect and their idiots, they are all simply useless."

Others worshipped him, like the same batch of geniuses in the last phase and sky and land regions, they all said excitedly, "Who says the newbies are weak? Luo Feng from our batch still made it into the primal region? What are you saying, that it's only due to Ke Luo Fu's forfeiting. Rubbish! Even if Ke Luo Fu defeated Luo Feng this time, he'll quickly be exceeded by Luo Feng in the

future!"

...

To acquire the primal region slot was simply an incredible cause for celebration. Rong Jun, Wuka and his other friends, his own brothers Hong, Thunder god and his family, parents, wife and children, younger brother etc, they all congratulated him. Even the people from the black dragon mountain empire and ganwu universe country had sent congratulations and presents to his family.

Celebration?

"It is a good thing, however I’m not excited by this." Luo Feng sat in his study, his emotions mixed.

The most critical battle of the contest battles, Ke Luo Fu actually forfeited and didn’t show up, this was like a thorn that constantly reminded Luo Feng that this name slot wasn’t acquired properly. Of course, the chance to enter the primal region was incredibly valuable, since he had it now, he wouldn’t automatically give it up.

Luo Feng wasn’t that rigid.

"Luo Feng, don’t trouble yourself. For such miraculous encounters, people go through all means to find ways to get them. Be it gambling, or killing, like that Mo Luo backstabbing you. They do everything they can for victory. That Ke Luo Fu not showing up

is his own failure to grab the opportunity, who can you blame?" Babata said, "Don’t think about it, those with poor resources and low opportunities would all use their lives to fight for such chances. Your teacher back then too fought through all this one step at a time, why are you still thinking about this."

"I understand."

Luo Feng nodded, "An encounter that enters my palm, I naturally won't give it up. It’s only there’s this thorn in my mind...why didn’t Ke Luo Fu show up?"

"1, he died. 2, he was held up by something. 3, it may be due to some special reasons. There’s only these 3 circumstances, why are you thinking so much about it." The fist size Babata on his shoulder said.

Luo Feng nodded.

However, within he still felt uneasy...why did Ke Luo Fu not show up at the critical moment?

Did he really die?

On the 2nd day after the battles ended, Luo Feng had to move out of the Absolute beginning region and move to Yu Xiang mountain’s primal region.

Within his villa in the absolute beginning region.

Luo Feng, Wuka, Rong Jun, Ai Chen and Qian Shui and the others had gathered, as a form of celebration and sending off of Luo Feng into the primal region. After the many friends left, Luo Feng sat alone in his living room, on that exquisite sofa, he looked about.

This place, he had lived here for very very long.

"I have to leave." Luo Feng muttered.

"Di!"

"Luo Feng, there’s a letter from the virtual universe company." Babata shouted on his shoulder.

"Ah?" Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed, he swiftly tapped and opened a screen in mid air, swiftly opening the newest mail there.

The mail opened.

"Declaration

During this time’s universe level qualification battles for the primal region slot, the final battle was forfeited by Ke Luo Fu, during the entire proceedings of the competition, he was engaged in an Impossible level mission. The impossible level missions have a death rate of up to 90%, they are extremely dangerous. From the

fact that he’s failed to log into the virtual universe since then, it’s very likely that he may have fallen in that impossible mission.

We once again strongly advise.

The training missions are very important to every universe level member, but you must pick those that you are capable of, exceeding one’s limit might cost your life.

There are many absolute geniuses who’ve fallen in the history of the impossible level missions, about half of the deaths for the universe level primal region members are all from the impossible missions.

Once again we emphasize the same words.

The company has prepared all the resources for everybody, the path however is chosen by yourself."

"What!"

Luo Feng was shocked at the mail, "This Ke Luo Fu was actually in an impossible level mission during the entire qualification battles?"

Impossible level mission!

It was extremely dangerous, even now in the only one he’s been

in, demon note mountain. The only reason why he could safely survive was due to his willpower that far exceeded the other geniuses, along with his Mosha clansman body, they had an interlinked dependency.

If it weren't for the Mosha clansman, Luo Feng would have long lost his life.

And it was usually very hard to find a safe spot in the impossible level missions, like Luo Feng, he relied on the mosha body and got lucky, reaching the inheritance palace and core of demon mountain. Only then could he safely send a large part of his consciousness to enter the virtual universe network.

"If it weren't for my trump cards, which are suitable for demon note mountain. I would most probably have died in the impossible level mission." Luo Feng thought, "That Ke Luo Fu, even though he was taking part in the qualification battles, he probably had to maintain a high level of alertness with a large part of his consciousness outside, just like what the company had said, he could very likely have fallen."

Whether he was dead or live, it was very hard to determine even by the virtual universe company in a short amount of time.

As the world in which the impossible level mission was on was usually very dangerous, for the virtual universe company to be able to confirm his situation was very hard to do in a short amount of time. Just like how Luo Feng disappeared for a few years, the company had no way to confirm.

...

Luo Feng was shocked by this declaration, many core members still unsatisfied by the result of the competition were all completely shocked after reading this too.

Chapter 597: Dylan

Wolfman Ke Luo Fu was participating in the qualification battles while in the impossible mission zone? The primal region, absolute beginning region and the elites of all 4 regions were all shocked that Ke Luo Fu actually was so daring, doing such a dangerous thing. The impossible level missions were considered forbidden areas to the universe level members of Yu Xiang mountain.

Impossible level, 90% die there, who would still dare send such a large portion of their consciousness into the virtual universe network?

"Your majesty!"

"Your majesty!"

The leader sector lord Ao Duo bowed from the courtyard, he was followed by a group of guards along with the rest of the staff as they all bowed, Luo Feng walked out of the living room, looking at the group of guards, he was somewhat sad, as he was about to move to the primal region, naturally he had to separate from this group that was under him, he immediately said, "Ao Duo, you and your group have been with me for close to 200 years. Even though we part now and you'll no longer be my guards, we'll still always be friends."

"Your majesty." Sector lord Ao Duo and the rest were moved by those words.

The position of a primal region member was extremely high. Much higher than Ao Duo and the others, yet Luo Feng still spoke those simple words, even if he only said it to appease them, it made their hearts warm anyway.

"You all seem like you don’t want me to leave, haha, you never know, I might get kicked out of the primal region some year." Luo Feng laughed and joked, "When that happens, I’ll need you all to be my guards again."

"How can you say that, since your majesty could make it into the primal region, you won't get kicked out ever." Ao Duo said.

"The competition will always be there, there is no absolute." Luo Feng laughed and shook his head, "Alright, all of you, our adventure together ends here."

After he finished, Luo Feng rushed into the sky.

Ao Duo and the over 100 guards along with many more staff members all watched as his silhouette disappeared into the endless skies, they all sighed. Their strength and position was low, they could only be guards and staff. Luo Feng however was a true absolute genius favored by the upper echelon members of the virtual universe company.

Some normal undyings, to these upper echelon members, do not even compare to these absolute geniuses.

After saying goodbye to Lady fox and leaving absolute beginning region, he arrived shortly after at primal region.

The main entrance of the primal region was much more majestic, using grey ancient stones to make the shocking entrance.

"Your majesty Luo Feng." A white bearded old man in a white robe waved at him, he gave off an aura that brightened up the entire area, making people feel warm and comfortable, he was like a sun, "Welcome to the primal region and congratulations on becoming a primal region member."

"Thanks." Luo Feng smiled and nodded.

"I am Ai Tuo, the manager of the primal region." The white robed man’s white beard floated gracefully in the wind, "Please follow me."

Luo Feng followed Ai Tuo and flew in mid air.

And the group of sector lords that were originally following behind Ai Tuo and bowing began a hushed discussion about the new member Luo Feng.

...

In mid air.

Luo Feng and Ai Tuo were flying, while flying, Luo Feng gazed down below and was shocked as he felt a powerful ripple of origin law rippling over from somewhere far away.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, "Ai Tuo saw what happened and smiled, "The greatest difference between the primal region and the absolute beginning region is that there are more undyings living here.

"Firstly, every primal region member would be given a guard team!" Ai Tuo said, "They will have an undying lead the team. And every primal region member can pick their own undying teacher that will stay long term with them in their villa. Hence, the number of undyings here is much higher than that of any other region.

Luo Feng couldn’t help but nod.

It was indeed so, with an undying in the guard team, and another as his teacher. Every member would at least have 2 undyings sticking close to them.

"The entire primal region has a total of 113 villas." Ai Tuo pointed down below at the continuous never ending row of villas, "There are 100 Sector lord members, 10 domain lord members, 3 universe level members. Every member is our virtual universe company’s most valuable treasures."

Luo Feng nodded.

Right.

A sector lord's life span reached up to 1,000 eras, in that 1,000 eras, out of the entire 1,008 universe countries, the virtual universe company only absorbs 113 members. This alone showed how high these 113 were in position! It far exceeded the normal undyings, of course...the difficulty for remaining within the primal region was definitely the highest for the sector lords.

The 2 tore through the skies.

They flew past the many 1,000s of li villas, finally after a while, Ai Tuo began to slow down.

"That villa 113, is your majesty's villa." Ai tuo pointed at the spacious villa.

"Hm." Luo Feng looked down and gazed at it.

The villa's walls were like a continuous mountain range, extending on forever, until the end of one's vision. Just in terms of surface area, this villa was larger than any of earth's country's territories. Of course within the vast universe, using an entire planet as one's home territory was a common thing.

Undyings had their god countries, and these were extremely vast.

Hence to the undyings, using an entire planet as a villa was considered simple living.

...

Sou! Sou!

Ai Tuo and Luo Feng landed at the entrance of the villa, and there, lined up in an orderly fashion were groups of his guards and staff, with one glance, they easily reached up to 10,000 people, at the front of them all stood a bald man dressed in a black exquisite looking robe, this man had a silver scale and some engravings on his forehead.

"Your majesty!" The bald man slightly bowed.

"Greetings your majesty!" Over a thousand of his soldiers behind him all knelt down on one knee and shouted respectfully, their energies united as one.

"Greetings your majesty!"

The ten thousand staff members all knelt down, incomparably humble and respectful. These staff were all specially picked and nurtured by the virtual universe company, they were used to service the virtual universe company's true core members. To these staff, being able to work for a primal region member was of the utmost honor.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, this is the leader of your guards... Dylan!" Ai Tuo pointed at the bald man and said, "Dylan is an

undying specializing in soul attack and defense, he is extremely strong. Amongst the many guard team generals, he is considered of the top class."

Luo Feng was shocked within.

As he was close to his teacher True Yan emperor, he was very clear on the strength distribution.

According to position, general...Official...Emperor.

And under the virtual universe company, Official level undyings could easily kill a group of normal undyings, hence in truth, the most normal undying...compared to the official level undying had a great difference in between. This made the difference between a general level undying and a normal undying extremely huge too.

The stronger generals are even close to Official level.

"The highest, doesn't that mean he's close to an Official?" Luo Feng was shocked, "And he specializes in soul attack and defense. Such a powerful general, why would he become my guard leader?"

"Your majesty, my teacher is Bloodthirst emperor." The bald man bowed slightly.

"3rd senior?" Luo Feng was shocked.

True Yan’s life span was incredibly long, at least Luo Feng still wasn’t clear on just how long he had lived. But it was definitely much longer than Mist emperor’s. And he was very cautious in accepting disciples, he had to be good in character and temper or he wouldn’t be accepted at all, however the path to undying was extremely tough, becoming an emperor was even harder.

Amongst True Yan’s disciples, only his 3rd disciple became an emperor.

"The grandmaster is very concerned about you, his disciple." A voice resounded within Luo Feng’s mind, "He’s worried that when you reach domain lord level and you go out to explore. Hence he arranged for someone he trusted to become the leader of your guards! I sent out my request and the other generals aren’t as strong as I am, hence naturally I passed."

Luo Feng looked at this bald man, a smile appearing on his face.

He was actually the senior in terms of hierarchy of this undying?

"With this relationship, Luo Feng opened up a lot easier to this bald man, however Luo Feng decided at the time too...when he got back, he would contact his teacher True Yan Emperor.

"Mr Dylan, I’ll be in your hands in from now on." Luo Feng said.

"This is my job!" Dylan bowed.

"Haha, your majesty Luo Feng, Dylan is the leader of your guards, he is also the manager of your villa. I'll let him tell you about the other matters, I'll take my leave first. If you have any need of my help, please feel free to look for me." Ai Tuo smiled.

"Thank you Mr Ai Tuo." Luo Feng expressed his gratitude.

After which, the white haired old man became a beam of light and swiftly left.

"Your majesty, please follow me." The bald Dylan led the way and brought Luo Feng on a tour of his villa to get used to it.

...

Within the training grounds of the villa.

Luo Feng stood there respectfully, a screen floated before him, there stood the golden armored apeman True Yan emperor.

"Teacher." Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

"You've met Dylan." True Yan laughed loudly.

After hearing those words, Luo Feng knew immediately that Dylan was indeed sent by his teacher.

"In the future when you enter the domain lord level, you'll be placed outside with great authority." True Yan said on the screen, "The power will affect you in many ways that you cannot imagine, and while you'll have glory on one hand, you'll face dangers on another. Many of them you won't be able to imagine now. Some of these dangers are even more dangerous than what you may find at the impossible level missions."

Luo Feng was shocked.

"And because of my temper, it's made me have many enemies outside." True Yan said, "Of course those rubbish bugs do not dare come mess with me. But I'm worried they may come mess with you!"

"Enemies?" Luo Feng was shocked.

"Once you are placed outside, you won't be as safe as being here in the core of the virtual universe company." True Yan Emperor said, "Of course they wouldn't dare openly attack you, because the moment I discover them...they would be dead without a doubt!" True Yan's natural strength and brutality didn't make others feel like it was tyranny, rather, more of a natural thing altogether.

"Teacher, if you have enemies, why don't you go kill them?" Luo Feng asked.

"Ah..."

True Yan seemed rather embarrassed about it, he said, "My student, your teacher’s way of doing things usually doesn’t beat aroundthe bush, I say whatever I want do and do whatever I want to. Back then I killed many and scolded many, in an instant, I made many enemies too. Just who I’ve offended and all, actually I’m not very sure myself, anyway there are many little matters that others might hold grudges to."

Luo Feng couldn’t help but be speechless.

"However no one dares to openly come attack me. Those that have are all dead." True yan smiled as he said, "Let’s not talk about this, there’s one more very important thing...now that you are in the primal region, you have the right to pick an undying teacher to stick with you for a long time and teach you. This is a rare opportunity."

Chapter 598: Undying Teacher

"This I know." Luo Feng nodded, to have one that stayed and taught him, even if one had a teacher, that teacher would rarely follow him around all the time, this was definitely a rare opportunity, Luo Feng naturally knew of this.

"Everybody knows this." True Yan couldn't help but say on the screen, "However there is a trick to picking your teacher."

"Trick?" Luo Feng asked curiously.

According to what he knew, wasn't it simply sending out a request saying you'd prefer one proficient in gold and space laws, or spirit weapons etc as your teacher! And the teachers they gave to the primal region members were at least Official level undyings.

Even though emperor level undyings and universe country leader level undyings could be one's teacher too, they had to be willing to do so, the virtual universe company had no way to force them.

And these huge figures, like True Yan emperor, had no way to always stay by Luo Feng's side.

Hence, the teachers were normally Official level undyings.

"Of course there's a trick." True yan smiled on the screen, "I know you wish to find an undying teacher proficient in gold and space, and the fusion of these 2 laws."

Luo Feng nodded.

"However there are many undyings like that! The virtual universe company will send one over and you'd just have to accept him." True Yan emperor smiled, "How do you find the most suitable teacher for you, that's where I'll have to make a move."

One could have many teachers.

However their positions might be different.

If one truly personally went to look for a teacher, the relationship would be much closer and real. Like True Yan emperor. And those teachers who purely taught the public classes that Luo Feng attended, those were much more distant than others. The teacher that the virtual universe company would arrange to stay in his villa and teach him, they would have a close relationship, but Luo Feng wouldn't have to personally go request him.

"When you get back, send a request in the mail, add this one line!" On the screen True Yan smiled, "Say you highly respect the undying Bubulu, and you really wish for him to be your teacher."

"Bubulu?" Luo Feng understood when he heard, he should be some very powerful person.

"If I write it, it'll go through?" Luo Feng was suspicious.

Whether or not the undying comes or not was totally up to that undying himself.

"This I will settle!" True Yan laughed loudly on the screen.

"Thank you teacher." Luo Feng felt gratitude within.

This was a true teacher.

In the universe, the relationship between a teacher and his student exceeded even that of blood ties, as the longer one lived, like for trillions of years. Even if their families could live up to 1,000 eras, they would still eventually die one day. When one's family dies, those later generations that came many years later, one either has never even seen them or they died much earlier.

How could that relationship compare to that of a student and teacher?

Student and teacher, the teacher instructs the disciple, when the student gets stronger, he may even someday become a right arm to the teacher!

Just like how True Yan seriously instructs his students step by step, it was almost like pampering his disciples altogether.

...

That day, Luo Feng immediately sent out the request, following what his teacher had instructed, he first keyed in his request and then added the line of respecting the undying Bubulu. In truth...he had never heard of this Bubulu before his teacher mentioned him.

"Bubulu?"

"According to what his teacher said, even though this Bubulu was an Official level undying, in truth his battle abilities could almost reach Emperor level already." Luo Feng thought, an undying that was almost Emperor level, he was considered a huge figure in the universe already. Back then the undying that killed his teacher Hu Yan Bo was also a being close to emperor level.

Such a being, staying in his villa and teaching him?

...

The 3rd day, Luo Feng received a mail, in it the contents said the undying Bubulu was willing to be his teacher.

...

About 10 days later, Bubulu finally arrived at Luo Feng’s villa.

At the entrance of his villa.

Luo Feng walked side by side with the bald man Dylan, quietly waiting for Bubulu to arrive.

"He’s come." Dylan said softly.

"Ah?" Luo Feng looked carefully, in the distance a gold light instantly tore through the skies, after which he landed right before Luo Feng, revealing his silhouette, this was a 1.6m tall messy haired dwarf on his body one could smell alcohol, his gaze was reserved, occasionally revealing a flash of madness.

Luo Feng pondered within.

Bubulu?

This dwarf that wasn’t even 1.6m?

Even though he thought so within, he still maintained absolute respect, a teacher and the leader of his guard were completely different. Even though an Official level undying was high in position, Luo Feng’s primal region position allowed him to talk on even terms with Dylan, without any sense of pressuring him.

"You are Luo Feng?" The dwarf glanced at Luo Feng.

"Luo Feng greets teacher Bubulu." Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

"Hm, respectful." The dwarf looked at Dylan beside, Dylan too

bowed respectfully, "Greetings Lord Bubulu."

Dylan was indeed very strong and very close to an Official, or could be said to almost be an Official.

Bubulu however was almost an emperor. Their strength difference was like sky and land.

"True Yan really knows how to spoil his disciples." The dwarf took a few big steps and entered the villa, Luo Feng and Dylan followed behind.

"I don’t know much about teaching disciples." The dwarf took a few strides and said loudly as he walked, however much his voice boomed, it only reached Luo Feng and Dylan, the distant large group of sector lords, domain lords and universe level guards couldn’t hear a single sound.

"I’m most proficient in using claws!" The dwarf spoke loudly, "Hence I’ll use my claw methods and help you comprehend the space and gold origin laws. It’ll also help you learn how to fuse them."

"Yes." Luo Feng listened intently.

Claws?

The golden horned beast’s most proficient trump card was the Tearing sky claw, according to its inheritance memories, this

move, combined with the ancient pictures he studied, and with the Beast god statue that held within the ancient energies from before, claw techniques could be said to be Luo Feng's most powerful and proficient attacks. Even more so than his spirit weapons and blade moves.

Of course, using his human body to unleash the claw techniques was much weaker. However the foundation itself, he was still proficient in claw techniques.

"Ah?" The dwarf glanced at Luo Feng, finally revealing a smile, "Hm, not bad, quite obedient, I like obedient and smart students. Go, let's go to your training grounds, I'll first get a grasp of your skills, and see how's your comprehension of the laws, whether you've made a wrong turn in comprehension. Of course you are a student of True Yan emperor, even if you've taken a wrong turn, it probably wouldn't be too bad."

"Yes." Luo Feng immediately walked towards the training grounds.

...

Within the training grounds.

The dwarf Bubulu and Luo Feng stood within.

"Simulate a space location." Bubulu ordered, Luo Feng immediately complied and the entire scenery in the training

grounds warped, changing into a vast and endless space. Of course the space within the training grounds was only that big, hence this universe space, Luo Feng could only move within several hundred km in area.

The dwarf Bubulu and Luo Feng stood in the space.

"Go!"

The dwarf Bubulu ordered, "Go unleash all your origin law comprehension, whether its spirit weapon or close combat, it doesn’t matter. Your little bit of comprehension...no matter how you unleash it, I‘ll be able to see everything clearly."

"Yes teacher." Luo Feng immediately became a blur and unleashed his claw techniques in space!

Hu! Hu! Hu!

His fingers bent, almost like a beast claw, his entire being like a demon, almost like a wild beast displaying its claws, that claws tore through the universe space, so sharp and piercing it produced a glaring golden huge claw, the gold claws howling through the space.

"This..."The dwarf Bubulu was initially very casual, however as he looked on, his face revealed a look of shock.

After a while, Luo Feng became a gold light and landed beside

Bubulu.

"Awaiting your guidance teacher." Luo Feng said respectfully.

"You know claw techniques too?" the dwarf Bubulu looked at Luo Feng, his eyes already filled with more joy than before, to such powerful warriors, to be able to find a suitable disciple was extremely hard. From the information Bubulu had gathered on Luo Feng earlier, he knew Luo Feng was a spirit reader, hence he wasn't too excited.

However, True Yan Emperor asked himself...

Even though Bubulu was proud, before this emperor level undying, the pinnacle of beings, an ancient being incredibly close to becoming a universe country leader. He didn't dare be proud at all. What's more, he was requested by True Yan emperor himself this time, hence after some discussion, he immediately accepted.

Even if Luo Feng was a spirit reader, he would teach him too!

However after he discovered Luo Feng was proficient in claw techniques, the dwarf Bubulu was truly excited from within.

"In terms of close combat, I've spent some time." Luo Feng said.

"No wonder True Yan emperor favors you, it hasn't even been 200 years and your improvement is that shocking. And you've even trained in close combat?" The dwarf Bubulu laughed, "Your

claw techniques are not bad."

"Much weaker than Ke Luo Fu's." Luo Feng said.

"Not the same!"

Bubulu shook his head, "I've collected information and seen some of your footage. I know about that Ke Luo Fu too...his claw techniques are very powerful. But it's headed towards a dead end!"

"Hm?" Luo Feng was curious.

"Your claw techniques however are powerful and limitless." The dwarf Bubulu looked satisfied at Luo Feng, "I don't see anything I need to even fix. Since you know claw techniques, then it'll be much easier to teach. From now on, I'll begin to teach you a claw technique "3,000 space", it's a technique I created myself, through studying this technique, it'll help you comprehend the gold and space laws."

"Yes!" Luo Feng said respectfully.

"Hm!" The dwarf Bubulu nodded satisfied.

It was initially only because of True Yan emperor that Bubulu thought he just needed to be somewhat serious about the job. However after seeing a genius so perfect in his claw techniques, he was moved too. He was prepared to immediately pass down his self created "3,000 space" technique.

Bubulu didn’t seem to know…

Luo Feng’s claw techniques were from the beast god statue, of course it was a true path!

…

From that day, Luo Feng sent out 50% of his consciousness to study and train with Bubulu. From learning with him, the golden horned beast within his internal world would then study it and train too. This made Bubulu discover that…Luo Feng’s comprehension speed was simply too shocking.

The other 50% of his consciousness, he used to continue receiving the demon note inheritance.

Chapter 599: End of the Inheritance

Demon note mountain, all of the 32 inheritance palaces had people in them receiving the inheritance, the main thing was that back then, Luo Feng had snatched away Mist Emperor’s slot, this had shocked many other undyings supposed to receive their slots, they all strongly requested from the Great Union to enter the palace earlier.

32 inheritance palaces, a total of 31 undyings and 1 universe level 9 youth.

...

Within the palace.

The many levels of stairs extended continuously upwards, deep into space above, there lay the shrine.

On level 2,316.

Luo Feng sat there like a statue on the black stone stairs, half of his consciousness was in the golden horned beast, combining his teacher Bubulu’s "3,000 space" technique while studying the beast god statue’s wonders, whenever he had any problems he didn’t comprehend, he could ask his teacher Bubulu.

"Level 2,316 complete!" The statue Luo Feng suddenly opened his eyes, filled with glee.

"Even though the qualification battles were going on before, that didn't really affect my acceptance of the inheritance." Luo Feng was joyful within, suddenly the silhouette of Ke Luo Fu appeared in his mind, just like himself, Ke Luo Fu was doing an impossible level mission while he took part in the qualification battles.

However, Ke Luo Fu wasn't as lucky as himself.

"2 years!"

"It's been about 2 years since the qualification battles passed, there still hasn't been any news of Ke Luo Fu." Luo Feng frowned, "There's no way to determine if he's actually alive or dead!"

"Whether he was alive or dead was hard to determine.

Especially in the impossible level mission's special locations, if Luo Feng were to be killed within demon note mountain, even having his body destroyed and hidden, and robbed after. If that ever happened, how would the virtual universe company every determine if he was alive or dead? The more special the location, the harder it was to determine the status of a person.

"It's been about 2 years, Ke Luo Fu hasn't entered the virtual universe network since then, he only lost that battle back then because he didn't show himself. If he's still alive, he should enter the virtual universe network. At least explaining to his friends. Don't tell me...he's really dead?" Luo Feng frowned, suddenly thinking about it made his heart skip a beat.

"Risky!"

"Consecutively taking on missions has given me lots of benefits, it’s also made me proud with greater ambition. Luckily I just realized."

A sense of fear flashed in his eyes.

From the blood river world mission, he had gotten a huge benefit. After which, the other dangerous level missions he did, Luo Feng only completed the basic requests, he didn’t search the worlds’ for their hidden secrets. And since he acquired the demon note inheritance from the impossible mission, he excitedly deduced back then...

That the special mission worlds should all have some secrets!

Those secrets could very well be miraculous encounters!

Once he understood that theory, Luo Feng was somewhat regretting that he didn’t properly search those dangerous level mission worlds. However at this time...while he thought of Ke Luo Fu’s incident, it made him awake with a shock.

"I, I’ve been too blinded!"

"Every mission’s request is already extremely dangerous. Like

acquiring 3 blood crystals in blood river world, absorbing them and becoming a blood warrior. To a universe level 9 genius, that is something extremely dangerous and difficult, afterall the moment one is careless, they would meet a domain lord aboriginal and get attacked, and they cannot use any technological weapons etc." Luo Feng thought, "If I go search through the Ancient god ruin's secrets, search for the beast god statues' secrets...one would definitely be killed without a doubt!"

"And demon note mountain, surviving here for 3 years is already an impossible level mission, within these 3 years, even if one could hide from the demon notes, they might unexpectedly meet a sector lord aboriginal, or a sector lord level beast, surviving here for 3 years is indeed an impossible level mission."

"And to actually acquire the demon note inheritance, that is a suicide mission." Luo Feng's forehead was filled with beads of cold sweat.

The place in which the demon note inheritance palace was in, even sector lords would die without a doubt!

Even undyings, they too had to be stronger than the average undyings to be able to dodge all the terrifying huge beasts blocking the path.

"If it weren't for my Mosha body, I'd definitely be killed!" Luo Feng's forehead was perspiring profusely, "My luck this time was good, next time however, it may not be so...the other impossible level missions would probably have some huge secrets too. And to actually search for them and acquire the benefits. The danger

would probably be no less than demon note mountain's!"

"Demon note mountain has the wild beasts! And their intellect is extremely low..."

"However the other impossible level missions' secrets, the danger that accompanies them may not be just beasts. If it were some undying guard with intellect, they would immediately kill me then." Luo Feng felt a wave of fear, the secrets hidden within these training mission worlds were like drugs!

After tasting them once, it would make them addicted, however the moment one slips up it would cost them their lives.

"I have the mosha clansman and the golden horned beast body. My survival ability is indeed stronger than the other geniuses. The usual requests of the impossible level missions, as long as i'm cautious, I'll be able to complete them. However if I get over ambitious, and blindly search for the huge hidden secrets, I might very well lose my little life." Luo Feng thought.

"Right!"

"According to what teacher said, that Ke Luo Fu's strength only exploded within the past couple of hundred of years." Luo Feng's eyes gleamed, "Don't tell me...that he discovered some huge secret encounter during one of his missions?"

According to Luo Feng's guess, every mission may have some

hidden secret.

However he didn’t think that he’d be the only one to discover them.

"It could very likely be that way."

"Because of the encounter he had a couple of hundred of years ago, he knew the flavor of such an encounter, hence during this time’s impossible level mission, he probably consciously observed and searched for the secret. However because of that it may have invited danger...finally losing his life." Luo Feng’s eyes gleamed.

It was likely that it happened this way, he too had guessed that every mission had some secret behind it, hence his ambition grew.

Others may have been that way too!

"These sort of super encounters, the risks that accompany them too are just as super!"

"I was able to dodge the dangers this time because of my Mosha body, what about next time?" Luo Feng immediately grew more cautious.

Sou!

With a stride, he became a blur and landed on the 2,317th level of

stairs, immediately, incredibly mysterious techniques began to pour into his memories, he once again began to accept more of the inheritance, causing his soul to change through the training.

The training of these techniques, was a lot like the Soul Imprint his teacher Hu Yan Bo had created back then, it too caused one's soul to change and evolve, to finally be able to use the technique. This Supreme Demon Note Inheritance had gradually changed the foundation of his spirit energy.

Luo Feng's soul was a domain lord level 9 soul, it took the form of a condensed crystal ball.

And at this time, that crystal ball had gold markings throughout, countless gold markings filled the soul crystal ball, they were mystical. As he continued to train the techniques, it caused the soul's gold markings to gradually increase, as they grew more and more...it made his spirit energy amplitude get stronger as well!

...

However, there was an end to this demon note inheritance.

On the 3,211th level.

"Hu!" Hu!" Hu!"

Luo Feng knelt down on the stone stairs, his skin soaked from perspiration, his face pale, his eyes bloodshot, he couldn't help but

hold onto his head, his soul incredibly fatigued...it made Luo Feng feel like he would fall asleep the moment he gave in. The piercing pain of the soul made him want to crumble.

"Persevere!"

"Persevere until this step of the inheritance, I have to accept all of it." Luo Feng roared within, almost like hypnotism as he constantly told himself within, convincing himself.

He knelt down on the stairs on the verge of collapse.

In theory, the time spent on each step wasn't long, however Luo Feng already felt like every second was even longer than a year, his soul was incredibly fatigued...it made him go into a semi conscious state, to the point where he had no way to even think anymore. His thinking ability was now probably not even comparable to a normal child of earth.

Thinking speed, incredibly slow, it could stop at any time.

The fatigue of the soul decreased his control of his body to its limit, he knelt on the floor, about to fall anytime.

Finally...

The transfer of the 3,211th level finally reached an end.

"I’ve finally succeeded!" Luo Feng relaxed within, after which the fatigue immediately buried his consciousness, and he fell into a state of trance.

Rumble!

He fell on the stairs, not moving as he completely lost consciousness.

...

After sometime, he finally opened his eyes.

"Hm?" He fiercely jumped up, surveying his surroundings, he was actually in the plaza of the inheritance palace, and the entrance door of the palace was shut.

"Luo Feng, about 5 hours after you fell asleep, you were sent to this plaza by a formless energy. And the doors of the inheritance palace automatically closed. Meaning...the inheritance has ended." Babata’s voice resounded within his consciousness, Luo Feng regained his calmness after.

"It’s ended?"

Luo Feng laughed and looked about.

There wasn’t a single thing in the plaza, the white light still

engulfed the outside of the plaza. This white light prevented any beast from flying in.

"How long have I been asleep?" Luo Feng asked.

"31 days." Babata said.

"It’s been long enough." Luo Feng exclaimed.

He had been accepting the demon note inheritance for close to 12 years, within these 12 years his soul had been in constant training and evolution , it had never gotten the chance to rest! Hence the fatigue kept growing and collecting...

"I’ve been extremely lucky this time, I originally thought I’d reach my limit at the 1,200th level." Luo Feng laughed and exclaimed, "I didn’t expect to get the gold soul fruit with the mosha clansman, changing a special property within my soul and allowing it to accept more of the inheritance, this allowed me to reach the 3,211th level."

The first part of the demon note inheritance had a total of 3,333 levels, in the trillions of years it has been there, over 100,000 life forms have accepted the inheritance, almost all of them had been undyings.

However many undyings usually only reach the 1st part’s later stages before ending.

Luo Feng, relying on the gold soul fruit actually got a result comparable to an undying.

"Inheritance end!" Luo Feng stood in the plaza, there was only him there.

"During these 12 years, 5 years ago I tried letting the golden horned beast absorb the 98th blood river crystal and it was a success. Now I feel like im much stronger than 5years ago. Maybe the 99th crystal will succeed too." Luo Feng was filled with excitement, whatever he wished to do, he just did, immediately attempting to let the golden horned beast absorb the 99th crystal within the internal world.

Chapter 600: Leaving

Back then on blood river world, the mosha clansman relied on the automaton ship to decimate the blood river world, wantonly raking in close to 10,000 blood river crystals.

Even though the golden horned beast's body was much bigger than the wild beast Qi Niu, it barely managed to absorb up to 97 blood river crystals, the killing intent from any crystal absorbed after was simply too terrifying, Luo Feng's willpower had no way to withstand it. Hence, back then he had to stop temporarily and quietly wait till a breakthrough occurred in the future.

"Demon note inheritance, during its training it constantly tested my withstanding ability, it's been a huge training factor for my willpower."

"And this inheritance is used to change one's soul, it's already increased my soul's control by over 10 times." Luo Feng thought, "Plus these 12 years, my mental state training has never stopped."

Mental state training was completely different from training other things.

Like origin law comprehension and studying techniques, those require a large amount of focus and energy etc.

Mental state however, didn't require so much, it was more of placing oneself in the right state of mind.

For example during battle, one had to collect oneself, otherwise losing control of one's emotions during the battle would result in only 70-80% of strength.

And like Thunder god and Hong, their mental state training has reached an extremely high level, no matter how complex a situation, it wouldn't affect their state at all. Their battle abilities would in fact still shine through it! Others may exceed their usual abilities through special circumstances, and people like Hong however were able to unleash 200% of his power at any time!

This was was with the right mental state, allowing one to release his strength at an extreme level.

Of course...

In terms of mental state training, Hong had already reached a super level of sainthood in china's history! Even Thunder god, his mental state was only slightly weaker than Hong's. And Luo Feng...was weaker than Thunder god by a little.

Luckily, Luo Feng had Hong and Thunder god, the 2 great figures to teach and guide him, hence his mental state had always been improving.

Mental state training didn't have much relation to the amount of time spent.

And some warriors training, wanting to reach undying had to train for at least a few tens of thousands of years, some requiring millions!

However in terms of mental state training, just a short 10 years was enough to reach an extremely high level. After all, the ancient people of china didn't have life spans over 100.

12 years!

Over these 12 years, Luo Feng had improved quite a lot. It was a pity in the 3 great mental states, he was still only at the pinnacle of the 1st level, of course in terms of willpower alone he was already incredibly strong.

...

Luo Feng stood in the quiet plaza.

Within his internal world.

The enormous mountain range like golden horned beast, its huge golden eyes bigger than 2 ponds stared at the right scaled claw, the blood river crystal lay within.

"Number 99!"

The right claw clenched and a sharp claw slashed through the

palm, immediately the scales tore apart and that little tiny blood river crystal was controlled by the beast's spirit energy into the wound, from the touch, a formless energy immediately poured into the golden horned beast's body.

"Howl..."

It raised its head and let out a pained howl.

This was a clash of killing intent and willpower!

An endless amount of killing intent engulfed it, almost like countless war vehicles howling and forcing its way through, Luo Feng's willpower was condensed and sharp like a blade, defending against the many attacks. This pure clash of willpower, even if one had lots of strength and power, it wouldn't help this situation at all.

"I definitely must win!"

"I definitely can win, this killing intent cannot defeat me, it cannot get through!" Luo Feng's willpower roared.

Time and again, persevering...

Suddenly, the originally incredibly fierce killing intent backed away like a river, swiftly retracting,. Simultaneously the blood river crystal lying in the golden horned beast's right claw began to flow with blood river energy, the energy continuously entered the

right claw, once again changing the beast's terrifying right claw.

The pain, once again attacked!

One could only imagine the amount of pain the 99th crystal brought with it, it caused the golden horned beast to madly clash against the land, tearing through the mountain ranges, however painful...it could only bear with it.

Finally, the pain subsided.

The 99th crystal had completely fused with its right claw.

Howl...The golden horned beast raised its head and howled happily, its howl reverberating throughout the endless internal world.

It slightly raised its right claw, triggering the powerful blood river crystal within it and immediately the claw began to undergo a change, its bones, scales and muscles etc, up to the finest of its cells began to evolve from within, it immediately formed the dark gold claw and on it were many little complex blood red engravings.

The engravings covered the entire right claw, they joined to form a picture, one of a beast howling.

"What a peculiar picture!"

Before, when he successfully absorbed the 98th crystal, the right claw's blood red engraving picture that appeared didn't at all look like this beast howling, however when the 99th went through, it added up to a hundred other engravings that combined and made the originally scattered engravings much more complete than before.

The engravings formed a complete beast, a lot like the beast of the beast god statue.

The only difference was...

It doesn't have the single horn like the beast god statue! And because it's missing the horn...it looks like this blood red engraving picture is yet to be complete.

"I think when I successfully absorb the 100th, it'll be complete."

"Hm, I'll try and see if I can successfully absorb the 100th blood river crystal." The golden horned beast once again retrieved another crystal, trying once again to absorb it...

******

Within the plaza.

Luo Feng stood in the plaza, the stone ground beside was covered in fresh blood, it was blood that the earth body spit out in pain while absorbing the 99th blood river crystal earlier.

"Hu!"

"Absorbing the 100th crystal was a failure." Luo Feng rubbed the sweat off his forehead, "The final absorption of the 100th crystal was indeed very difficult, I think it'll take a few more years after my willpower rises more before it'll succeed."

Absorbing the 99th crystal was a success, the 100th was a failure, Luo Feng however was still very excited.

Because according to the red engraving showing on its right claw, it was that of a beast howling, and that beast was almost completely similar to the beast god statue, only it was missing a horn.

"Blood river crystal," it's indeed linked to the legendary beast god of blood river world." Luo Feng thought, "Whether it's a blood warrior, black warrior, or the blood river energy the golden horned beast triggers, they are all linked to the beast god."

"Hm."

"And I think, after I successfully absorb the 100th crystal, the horn will appear. And after the entire picture is complete...there may be a huge surprise." Luo Feng was elated, he looked around the plaza, there weren't any other life forms but him there, below however in the deep abyss world there were trillions of beasts.

Countless beasts, even undying level huge beasts, there were many of them.

"Time to go back!"

Luo Feng’s body warped.

Sou!

He switched with the mosha body and it instantly became an ice bear. A simple cute ice bear that looked about and rushed fiercely forward.

Hu!

The ice bear immediately passed through the white light barrier, it glanced down at the endless abyss world below with countless beasts, with a plop, it landed in the ice below, standing back up stupidly. The surrounding other stupid beasts all didn’t even seem to notice this ice bear.

"Hm?" The ice bear looked up at the 32 floating palaces above, "Ah, all 32 of them have the white barrier?"

Following which, the light that protected Luo Feng’s palace slowly began to dissipate.

"Looks like the other 31 palaces all have life forms accepting the

inheritance." The ice bear glanced, "Anyway, I've already accepted what I could, and I cannot get anymore. Hm, time to grasp the time and leave!"

The ice bear looked about.

In the vast cold deep abyss world, no matter which direction he looked, it seemed endless, it was littered with endless beasts, and the number of beasts was simply unbelievable."

"How...how do I get out?" Ice bear Luo Feng was stunned.

"How did I enter and how do I go?"

Back then it was due to Mo Luo's kick that he entered the hole and fell into the deep abyss world. However, flying out of the hole to leave?

"The deep hole region has many huge undying level beasts. Everyone of them simultaneously watches over many holes, just the undying beasts alone, their swallowing energy is terrifying. I'd best not mess with them." Luo Feng recalled.

The entire region below the holes were all undying beasts.

And while Luo Feng was in ice bear form, he didn't see any other beast fly into the holes.

"Even the other beasts don’t fly into the holes. Whatever they are not doing, I cannot do." Luo Feng thought.

...

Then, the ice bear immediately began to explore the deep abyss world, however after 3 days, it still hadn’t found a way to leave the area, it was getting anxious.

"I’ll just follow one direction and keep walking!"

"I don’t believe I won't reach an end!"

The ice bear began to proceed in one single direction, occasionally running and flying millions of km, occasionally stumbling and walking about, just like that, it walked further and further, gradually, the beasts it could see also got lesser.

"When will I actually walk out of this place."

Ice bear Luo Feng muttered, it continued to proceed in one direction, the beasts within its view got so little that he would only occasionally spot one.

"Howl!"

Terrifying demon note instantly swept past the area, ice bear Luo Feng only slightly shook.

Even though it was a transformation of the mosha clansman, the core within the ice bear was still afterall Luo feng, and the core was hidden within the soul, naturally it would be affected by the demon note.

"This demon note, should be able to affect a lower level sector lord warrior."

"Demon note?"

The ice bear suddenly stopped, it’s eyes staring wide, filled with human emotions, "There’s finally demon notes!!!"

After walking about in the deep abyss world for so long, it hadn’t discovered a single demon note.

"Damn!"

"I’ve finally encountered a demon note."

Ice bear Luo Feng was incredibly excited, so excited he felt like crying.

"Discovering a demon note here, looks like I’m just about almost out of the deep abyss world." The ice bear was so excited it immediately became a blur as it flew, with 1 breath it flew several hundreds of thousands of km, finally seeing the vast stone ice

walls, there stood many caves.

"The familiar caves, the caves that I adore so."

The ice bear waved its huge paws excitedly and immediately flew through one of the caves.

Chapter 601: Forcing One's Way into The Gates of Hell

Within the deep ice cold cave, the ice bear walked alone, feeling gleeful.

"No matter what, I've finally left the deep abyss world area." To the ice bear Luo Feng, the rest of demon note mountain, except for the deep abyss world, had no threat to Luo Feng, he proceeded forward and maintained a quick pace, after awhile he already reached the end of a cave.

There the caves all intersected, a total of 395 cave pathways.

"Ah..."

The ice bear looked about stupidly.

"Big trouble!"

"I'm in trouble now." Ice bear Luo Feng suddenly realized a problem, "The only memory I have is of the path I took to get here! And now I have now way to follow that way back..."

In demon note mountain, a cave connected to hundreds of others, any single one would connect to many others.

The path was incredibly complex, it could be said to be a super

maze.

Even the normal warriors that came to explore demon note mountain would usually memorize their old paths back, if they didn’t, and explored randomly...it would take many years before they actually managed to find their way out of the maze.

"What do I do?"

"I’ve never been in this area before! The other 394 caves ahead, which should I choose?" The ice bear stared at the huge caves ahead, some bent about, some straight, some bent to the sides, he didn’t know what to do at the moment.

Paths he had never explored.

And he couldn’t backtrack.

Luo Feng swiftly pondered within, "There’s no other way, just one...I have to find other humans!"

The other humans should know the way out! After all under normal circumstances, those able to get over here are able to get back! People that have such bad experiences like Luo Feng which forced them to end up in different places are extremely rare.

...

Ice Bear Luo Feng randomly picked a cave and entered, half a day later.

"So unlucky, I actually met a beast blocking the way. Luckily, it's only a stupid universe level beast." An incredibly skinny yellow robed man with 2 white horns on his forehead gazed at the ice bear before him, after which he casually brandished 2 large hammers from his back.

2 red hammers!

"Stupid beast, die before me!" The skinny man instantly became a demonic blur and rushed at the ice bear.

Hu!

The ice bear waved its ice huge paw, fast as lightning.

"How can that be? A universe level beast, how can it move that fast?" The skinny man stared wide eye in shock, that huge bear paw was so fast he couldn't dodge it, it smacked right into him, smashing him into a mess and knocking him hard into the side walls.

The tattered body fell on the floor.

The ice bear looked at the body on the ground, after which it walked up to it and began to search for items.

"There’s actually no AI or quantum computer, so unlucky."

The ice bear instantly became a blur, transforming back into Luo Feng’s earth body.

Luo Feng looked at the body, frowning, "I need to find a map out of demon note mountain, and maps...are normally stored in the warriors’ memories. Also, they would normally carry a quantum computer to record the paths. However this punk doesn’t seem to have one."

"Right, the 9 star ocean place, even though some upper echelons have quantum computers. But this place is afterall an aboriginal place, those that have quantum computers are few!"

Luo Feng was troubled.

Those aboriginals indeed had the pathways memorized in their memories, however searching through memories was indeed troublesome.

Normally hypnotism through the soul was easy, the easiest was to forcefully wipe a portion of their memories, the hardest was to dissect and search through...even a master of soul techniques could easily wipe a person’s memory. However to actually search through the mysteries and recover specific information was still extremely hard.

And these aboriginals were all at least universe level.

Universe level warriors, their soul strength was already very strong.

Luo Feng was able to easily hypnotize them, but to wipe their memories alone was almost impossible already, to search through was a definite impossible thing to do! Probably only undyings could directly search through a universe level warrior’s memories.

"Hypnotizing the opponent, making him tell me the way?" Luo Feng shook his head, "This demon note mountain is a super maze, the paths are incredibly complex, just the number of pathways alone are countless."

"Capturing a universe level punk and making him lead the way?" Luo Feng shook his head, "Still no! My movement speed is very fast, I don’t have to care about the demon notes...these universe level aboriginals however have to be incredibly careful about them, because the moment they meet a stronger one they would become zombies."

No matter how he thought, Luo Feng still felt searching for a quantum computer or AI was still better.

No matter, those able to come to demon note mountain were all strong warriors of 9 star bay. A small portion of them should have quantum computers.

...

Luo Feng disguised himself as an aboriginal and proceeded.

Those within demon note mountain were indeed mad, as long as Luo Feng encountered anyone in the caves, those that thought themselves stronger than Luo Feng would immediately make a move and try to kill him.

...

Luo Feng spent 4 days, killed 9 aboriginals, after killing the 9th, he finally acquired that aboriginals arm quantum computer.

"Babata! Hack in and find the way out." Luo Feng ordered.

"Understood!"

Babata swiftly hacked into the average quantum computer.

"I've already found the path." Babata said excitedly, "We'll be able to leave soon."

"Ah?" Luo Feng revealed an expression of glee.

Finally!

He was finally able to leave demon note mountain, and it really wasn’t easy.

Rumble...a strong formless energy swept past that region, Luo Feng himself didn’t realize anything, Babata however immediately shouted out, "Luo Feng, becareful, it’s a world energy scan. There should be a sector lord warrior nearby!"

"Sector lord?" Luo Feng frowned.

Against sector lord warriors, Luo Feng wasn’t too afraid.

"19.3 km! 10km, he’s here!" Babata shouted.

Luo Feng however only frowned as he looked in the distant spacious ice cave, a silhouette swiftly appeared, it was a silver skinned man with no hair at all, 2 curved horns on his forehead. He gazed at Luo Feng, like a lion hunting its prey, he gave off a powerful evil energy.

"You, a universe level 9 punk, you are actually able to kill a domain lord level 3 fighter!: The silver skinned sector lord said coldly, "Looks like you have some treasures on you."

Luo Feng continued to look coldly at him, suddenly he turned and fled.

Sou!

Luo Feng fled incredibly quickly.

"You wish to run?" The silver skinned sector lord swiftly chased.

"Babata, how strong is this punk." Luo Feng swiftly swapped to the mosha clansman while fleeing. The mosha clansman took on the form Luo Feng had of an aboriginal immediately.

"Sector lord level 5!" Babata said.

"Ah, only level 5?" Mosha Luo Feng's face revealed a smile.

"Little punk, you can't get away!" That cold voice resounded in Luo Feng's ears as the silhouette almost instantly reached before Luo Feng, mosha Luo Feng however flashed in a peculiar movement, he actually turned and fled in the direction he came from, simultaneously a seemingly simply built laser gun appeared in his hands.

e9 laser gun!

This laser gun had the style of the automaton race...simplicity!

"That's the weapon you used to kill a domain lord level 3? Looks like a laser gun, haha, that's a rare valuable." The silver skinned sector lord's voice resounded in the caves, he however continued to rush Luo Feng, his speed was shocking.

Sou!

Mosha Luo Feng fiercely turned and flashed, easily dodging the attack.

"What!" The silver skinned sector lord’s expression changed greatly.

Mosha Luo Feng’s sudden turn and flash, the instantaneous speed it displayed...it was simply unbelievable! It actually left the sector lord level 5 behind in speed.

"Di!"

The e9 laser warning light turned from red to green.

0.1 seconds had passed!

The storage was complete!

"Chi!" Luo Feng gently pressed the button, he coldly looked at the raging sector lord, his lips gently mouthing the words, not making a sound as he said, "Go and die!"

The extremely glaring white pillar of light instantly pierced right through the sector lord and later into the frozen stone walls of the cave, the ice layer melted and steam filled the air. The black stone

instantly split apart and the extreme low temperature in the cave suddenly shot up to extremely high temperatures.

The huge change in temperature made even more steam rise up within.

Very quickly, everything began to freeze back up.

Ka cha! Ka Cha!

Luo Feng stepped on the broken ice and walked to where the almost completely disintegrated body was, at that time, only the remains of the armor were left.

"There’s no entrance to hell but you forced your way in to die, who can you blame?" Luo Feng knelt down and swiftly found the sector lord’s space ring, he used his spirit energy to pierce right in and with a scan, he revealed a smile.

"Haha!"

"Not only did you come here to die, you even come with gifts! A sector lord is indeed a sector lord, so many black tags." Luo Feng was incredibly gleeful, he kep the large amount of black tags in his space ring, "With this new batch, the number of black tags I’ve collected have reached over 9,800. I just need a little more to hit 10,000."

Before he started the demon note inheritance, Luo feng had

already collected close to 8,000 black tags.

Plus the new batch, it was really close to 10,000. He just needed a little over 100!

"100 plus black tags should be easy to collect. I just have to meet a domain lord level 8 or 9, and I'll probably have enough." Luo Feng was extremely gleeful, he began to follow the path out.

On the way out, he met 10 others.

With the universe level 9 strength his earth body exuded, it indeed had attracted many domain lord level aboriginals to attack him, naturally they were all easily killed by Luo Feng, this made his total count of black tags naturally rise up to 10k.

"Haha, I'm finally out, I've finally left the demon note mountain super maze!" Luo Feng smiled as he immediately flew out of demon note mountain's most outermost cave exit.

Chapter 602: Huge Reward

It was perpetually the same ice stone, as Luo Feng flew out of the outermost cave, with a glance he saw the endless space, within he felt comfortable and free.

"I'm finally out!"

"My trip here in demon note mountain has come to an end."

Luo Feng turned to look at the huge endless demon mountain, he exclaimed within, his reward from his trip to this mountain had indeed been shocking. The demon note inheritance had made his spirit energy amplitude rise up to over 3,200, many spirit readers, under normal circumstances, only reach up to a 100.

Making progress in Deities of the world only at most increased one's strength up to 27 times.

"This inheritance was a priceless treasure!"

"It's a pity I was too weak, my soul could only take so much of it. If I were at the sector lord pinnacle level, and I used the gold soul fruit, I probably could have made it into the 2nd part, and once I step on the 2nd part's stairs, I would probably be able to see the end of it, the shrine of the 2nd part." Luo Feng was filled with anticipation within.

Back then when Luo Feng stood at about 10% of the 1st part, he

could already see the shrine of the 1st part!

According to his guess, he had to reach about 10% of the 2nd part for the shrine to appear. Once it showed itself, only then would he be able to acquire the treasure within.

"It’s a pity, I only made it to the late portion of the 1st part.

"If I can make it to 10% of the 2nd part, I’ll be able to use the Mosha clansman to retrieve the treasure in the 2nd shrine, and after using it, I’ll once again be able to go much further."

...

As Luo Feng looked at demon note mountain and exclaimed, from the distance, a team of silver clothed staff swiftly flew over.

"Your majesty!"

"Your majesty Luo Feng!" The team of silver clothed staff flew over and bowed respectfully, of which there were some that kept saying, "Congratulations on leaving Demon note mountain."

"Hm." Luo Feng nodded.

"Please follow us." The team didn’t seem to dare to hesitate, there were 2 royalties within demon note mountain at the time, one was Luo Feng and the other a member of the last phase region. In terms

of status...Luo Feng was naturally much higher.

The staff respectfully led Luo Feng towards the palace at the foot of demon mountain.

"Your majesty Luo Feng!" A white clothed silhouette swiftly flew over.

"Ah, it's you, Yi Chang?" Luo Feng immediately recognized the white clothed youth, it was the one that led him 12 years ago when he arrived.

"Your majesty still remembers my name." The white clothed youth seemed very moved, simultaneously, he said, "For your majesty to stay a total of 12 years in demon note mountain and come out safely, it's really impressive." Even though he said so, the white clothed youth was shocked within...if Official Po Yu found out Luo Feng came out, she probably wouldn't be too happy.

Within the cold palace.

Po Yu sat in her throne, her undying energy swept past Luo Feng and the white clothed Yi Chang without them even realizing, with her ability, even Babata's scanning device couldn't detect it. After All in terms of strength...Po Yu was slightly stronger than than Hu Yan Bo back then, what's more she focused on soul techniques.

"This Luo Feng is actually still alive, staying 12 years in demon note mountain...he really has some ability!" Po Yu said softly, her

eyes gleamed coldly, Ka Cha...her right hand that was like an exquisite jade stone immediately crushed the right arm support and reduced it to dust.

"However, there will be a day..." Po Yu said softly.

"What!" Po Yu's expression changed greatly.

"10,000 black tags, that Luo Feng actually collected 10,000 black tags?" Po Yu wasn't as sure as before, all she was left with was shock and rage.

...

Luo Feng was chatting while walking with the youth Yi Chang.

"10,000 black tags?" The white clothed Yi Chang was filled with shock as he looked at Luo Feng, "Your majesty Luo Feng, collecting these 10,000 black tags is even harder than the survival mission. It's been a long time since anyone collected the 10,000 black tags. Only Mo Luo from before completed it."

"Mo Luo?" Luo Feng frowned, "He completed it too?"

To collect 10,000 black tags, the quickest way was to kill sector lord warriors. And for a universe level 9 to kill sector lords, how impossible was that?

Simply relying on strength was impossible, they would have to rely on assisting life forms, technological weapons etc.

He relied on the mosha clansman body and the e9 laser, the combination of both, what did Mo Luo use?

"Right."The white clothed youth nodded, "His majesty Mo Luo did indeed complete it, however he only stayed over 3 years in demon note mountain before leaving."

"His speed sure was fast." Luo Feng laughed indifferently, "To collect 10,000 black tags alone is extremely hard, I took up to 12 years to actually complete it. This Mo Luo, did indeed collect the black tags a lot faster than I did."

The white clothed youth said, "Your majesty Luo Feng, to persevere 12 years to collect the black tags, your willpower is shocking.

Even though he spoke the words, he was uneasy within.

This absolute genius Luo Feng was too suicidal, to collect enough black tags, he actually stayed in demon note mountain for 12 years, that was a impossible level mission place, staying 12 years, even if one’s luck was good, he would still ultimately meet sector lord aboriginals and sector lord beasts...

"I really don’t know how he managed to survive." The white clothed youth Yi Chang muttered to himself.

After a while.

Yi Chang brought Luo Feng to a palace.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, as you acquired 10,000 black tags, you are naturally able to receive the huge reward. This huge reward, will be personally presented to you by Sky feather emperor who's stationed here by the virtual universe company." Yi Chang smiled, "Please wait a moment, I'll go inform them...please wait for Sky Feather emperor to come see you."

"Understood." Luo Feng nodded.

As he watched Yi Chang leave, Luo Feng was shocked within...

Sky feather Emperor?

After following his teacher for so long, Luo Feng had heard of a few absolute beings, the difference in levels between the emperor level undyings, and of which the beings that were extremely close to the level of universe country leaders.

Just like his teacher True Yan emperor!

And Sky feather emperor was one that his teacher had mentioned before, he even specially complimented this name. Among the emperor level undyings...there were very few that True Yan could

not deal with, and Sky feather emperor was one of them.

"According to what teacher said, this Sky feather emperor is proficient in space and time laws, he is an absolute being that practices the universe primal chaos tablet. Even my teacher cannot deal with him, he has an extremely high position in the virtual universe company." Luo Feng was filled with anticipation within, he really wanted to meet such a legendary person.

Like True Yan emperor, Sky feather emperor was another legendary level being, Mist emperor was far below.

After a while.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, Lord Sky feather Emperor is currently in his Feather palace waiting." The white clothed Yi Change smiled and said, "Please follow me."

"Hm."

Luo Feng nodded, he immediately followed the white clothed Yi Chang and flew into the many palaces at the foot of the mountain, after flying for about 2 minutes, they arrived at a majestic 100km tall enormous palace, the entire outer walls of this palace had strange bird like creatures engraved all over.

These bird creatures, had 3 wings and 3 eyes, at the top of their heads they had feathers that were like a crown.

What was special was one of their vertical eyes, even though these were only huge engravings, that one eye of the birds still gave off a bone chilling feeling like it could see through space and time.

"Your majesty, please enter, I'm not allowed to follow you in here." The white clothed Yi Chang stood outside the palace.

The gold armored guards standing in an orderly fashion outside opened a path for Luo Feng to walk through, there were over a 1,000 guards there, of which there were 10 undyings.

"Undyings standing as guards?" Luo Feng felt like this was unbelievable, his teacher True Yan emperor wasn't as extravagant...and the undyings were normally proud warriors, even if they submitted to a strong being, to be ordered to watch the door, they wouldn't normally agree. Unless it was for some special reason.

Luo Feng immediately took a big stride into Feather palace.

Feather palace's 1st level was the main hall, it was incredibly majestic, a dazzling sight, the entire hall was gold and black, 2 colors matching each other.

Sou!

Luo Feng became a beam of light and flew into the hall, after awhile, he saw a glaring silhouette in the throne above, and below

at the 2 sides sat many other silhouettes.

"Greetings Sky Feather emperor!" Luo Feng bowed respectfully.

"True Yan has collected a good disciple." In the throne above, a voice resounded from the glaring silhouette, his voice boomed throughout the entire hall, this hall alone was close to 100km long and wide, in theory the amount of time needed for his voice to travel was very long, however the moment he opened his mouth, it resounded throughout.

Luo Feng only looked up then, he saw the glaring silhouette in the throne.

He, had golden yellow long hair, or which his eyes had a hint of jade blue, at his forehead his vertical eye was the only golden one! He had a high nose bridge, thin lips, however as he gazed down below...it made Luo Feng feel as he looked up, there was a sense of an endless space before him.

That natural power! It unconsciously made others submit.

"What a terrifying being, indeed a being on par with my teacher." Luo Feng was shocked within, when one reaches the level of True Yan and Sky feather emperor, the beings closest to becoming universe country leaders, even in the virtual universe, they wouldn’t be underlings of any country leader or knight anymore, they were already extremely close to that level, they no longer needed to rely on such other beings.

"Beside..."

Luo Feng’s gaze turned.

On the 2 sides below the throne sat a total of 24 people, they all had different appearances, some tall and sturdy, some beautiful, others cold, however according to Luo Feng’s long time in primal chaos experience with his seniors, he could deduce that these 24 before him...were probably all undying level.

"Take out your 10,000 black tags." The glaring silhouette in the throne said.

"Yes."

Luo Feng waved and immediately a bunch of black tags appeared.

"Hm, according to the demon mountain rules, you’ve collected 10,000 black tags, hence you are eligible to receive a huge reward." Sky feather emperor gazed below at the tiny silhouette, he said indifferently, "I’ll now give you 3 prizes to choose from, you can only pick one."

The moment he said that.

The 24 undyings below seemed to change their expressions slightly, however they all didn’t dare make a sound, of the 24, Official Po Yu thought within, "What’s going on with Lord Sky Feather, doesn’t he normally just give one treasure, why is he

giving this punk a chance to choose?"

Po Yu was extremely unsatisfied within, yet she didn't dare make single sound.

Sky Feather emperor's word was law, the moment one defied him, the result was very possibly death!

Chapter 603: 3 Rewards

Luo Feng didn't know himself that normally only one reward was given, to him, being able to pick from 3 different prizes was normal.

"3 rewards?" Luo Feng looked with anticipation at Sky Feather emperor up in the throne.

"The 1st treasure is the Chrysalis Armor." Sky feather emperor said slowly high in the throne, "The chrysalis armor is one of the more favorite armors amongst the undyings, it's defensive abilities are not bad, if a sector lord level 1 or 2 uses it, it can completely defend against any attack under undying level unless it's a soul attack, you are a spirit reader, all the more you should focus on defense, this armor will suit you well."

Luo Feng was shocked within as he heard, if a sector lord level 1 wore that armor, it was akin to having complete defense against anything under undying level, unless it was a soul attack? It was indeed a favorite armor amongst the undyings.

Babata too shouted within his consciousness, "Chrysalis armor, Luo Feng, your teacher only didn't need all these armors back then after he evolved his cloud contact vine to undying level. Otherwise...even for you teacher, this chrysalis armor is not bad. Its auction price usually reaches 800,000 to 1 million mixed elements."

Luo Feng was shocked as he heard.

800,000 to 1 million mixed elements?

The entire price of the black dragon mountain star field was only about 300,000 to 1 million mixed elements. And an armor was actually worth more than the vast starfield?

"The 2nd reward is a palm size Flame void gold, it's weight is about 3.1 tonnes." Sky feather emperor continued, "The flame void gold is an extremely valuable weapon material. Before you reach undying level, you may purchase some spirit weapons etc. However after you become undying, you'll need to build weapons that fit the techniques you create, the flame void gold...belongs to an extremely rare class of materials for building weapons."

Luo Feng blinked.

Palm size of material?

"The 3rd is cash." Sky feather emperor said in his throne, "That chrysalis armor and flame void gold are both worth about 500,000 mixed elements, hence, the 3rd prize is 500,000 mixed elements cash. If you are dissatisfied with the previous 2 choices, you can pick cash, and you can buy whatever you need after."

"You can only pick one of the 3." Sky feather emperor gazed at Luo Feng, "Choose."

The other 24 official level undyings under him all changed their

expressions, they were all shocked within.

They had followed Sky feather emperor for extremely long, it had been very long since they saw him speak so much, the huge reward was actually simply something fixed within the virtual universe company's choices, usually they would casually pick a prize that was close to the amount just to satisfy those that collected the 10,000 black tags.

However this time...

Firstly, Sky feather emperor took out 3 prizes, that was shocking enough.

The chrysalis armor, even the undyings would all vie and fight for it, if Luo Feng used it, he could use it all the way till he reached undying level.

The flame void gold, that was even more rare and valuable, even Sky feather emperor himself said it was rare and very valuable. Just a palm size of it alone was that valuable.

Finally, the cash.

Actually, in comparison, the cash was the lousiest of the 3, however...Sky feather emperor had said if Luo Feng was dissatisfied with the 2 choices, he could use the cash to buy what he truly needed. This was completely all for Luo Feng's sake. They had rarely ever seen Sky feather emperor treat someone so

courteously.

"Babata, which should I choose?" Luo Feng asked within.

Even though he had some idea within, his experience and perspective was indeed weaker, Babata had seen and experienced a lot more.

"The chrysalis armor is not needed at this time, as we can quickly nurture the cloud contact vine to sector lord level, nurturing it to sector lord level 9 isn't hard... as for becoming undying! Once it becomes undying, with your background and the level of favor from the virtual universe company, it'll probably be even better than the chrysalis armor! And the moment you find a way to evolve your cloud contact vine to undying, there'll be no more need of the chrysalis armor."

"As for cash! You don't need it anyway!"

"Because your teacher's entire account is in the bank, as long as you go there at domain lord level, to any of the universe galaxy banks in any starfield, you can retrieve his inheritance. Hence... you don't lack cash."

"Right now, the most important thing to you is the Flame void gold!"

"Even though that Sky feather emperor said that both the chrysalis armor and the Flame void gold are worth 500,000 mixed

elements, I have to say...Sky feather emperor's position is extremely revered, hence he can acquire those items at 500,000 mixed elements. In truth, like I mentioned earlier, the chrysalis armor auctions at 800,000 to 1 million mixed elements, and the flame void gold...auctions at 1.5 million to 2 million mixed elements." Babata said.

"Why is the flame void gold so much more expensive than the chrysalis armor? And Sky feather emperor...why can he buy them at only 500,000 mixed elements?" Luo Feng was curious.

"Because!"

"The flame void gold is extremely rare and few, almost all of it has been taken by the absolute beings." Babata said, "The rarer a material is, the more expensive it gets! Maybe Sky feather emperor may be able to buy it, but other undyings...even if they are willing to fork out twice the amount, they wouldn't be able to buy it. In comparison, there's a lot more of that chrysalis armor around."

"Also!"

"Luo Feng, you'll eventually need to create your own suitable techniques, this is a path any strong warrior will have to walk, and normally at the pinnacle of sector lord level, you'll begin to create your own techniques. During that time, you'll begin to search for materials to build your own weapons." Babata said.

...

The 3 rewards that Sky feather emperor displayed had indeed made the 24 official level undyings suspicious...just what background did this Luo Feng have to make him that way.

True Yan emperor’s disciple?

It couldn’t be just that.

After all, in terms of status, Sky feather emperor was almost equal to True Yan. There was no need to be on good terms with him. And Sky feather’s character was extremely prideful, he didn’t even really care too much about some of the universe country leaders. Even if they were stronger than him, when Sky feather emperor unleashed his greatest technique...

If he truly wished to flee, even the universe country leaders would find it hard to kill him.

Actually in the vast universe, the group that were deemed extremely close to becoming universe country leaders, the emperor level undyings, they may not be a match for the universe country leaders in an all out fight. However, they all had their own great abilities that allowed them to rule over the universe, they still definitely had the ability to survive the fight.

This was also the reason why they didn’t need to rely on the universe country leaders.

"Lord Sky Feather, I’ll pick the 2nd reward, Flam void gold." Luo

Feng said respectfully.

"Hmph!" Below the throne, Official Po Yu frowned, she snorted coldly within, "This universe level 9 punk actually knows that the flame void gold is the best choice of the 3, hmph, he must just be extremely lucky." Po Yu seemed to completely dislike Luo Feng.

"Haha..."

In the throne above, Sky feather emperor laughed out loudly, "Very well, this piece of flame void gold is yours."

With a toss, the completely transparent piece of crystal with a hint of gold glowing within passed through space instantly and appeared before Luo Feng.

"My god, teleportation?" Luo Feng was shocked.

He saw it very clearly, that crystal vanished from Sky feather emperor's hand and appeared right before him. Even though he could resonate with the universe space, he could only faintly feel its ripples.

"After completing the demon mountain mission, you should be returning to the primal region." Sky feather emperor said.

Luo Feng couldn't care about observing this piece of flame void gold, he immediately kept it in his space ring and replied respectfully, "Yes, even though I've entered the primal region for a

few years, I've spent all these years in demon mountain. Hence I haven't once entered the primal region."

"Hm, I'll arrange for a universe ship to send you directly there."

After he finished, Sky feather emperor vanished from the throne.

After a while.

Luo Feng sat in the universe ship that Sky feather emperor had specially arranged for him, as he left demon mountain, not too far away in a space region specially cleared, it began to accelerate and enter universe transfer.

"This sky feather emperor sure is courteous." Luo Feng sat in the cabin and flipped his hand, revealing the 3.1 ton palm size transparent metal, the entire metal was like a clear crystal, even more transparent than a crystal! If one didn't take notice...it was almost like air itself, only it had very fine hints of gold within.

He rubbed the flame void gold, even then he could feel the space about it slightly ripple.

"What a peculiar metal." Luo Feng was shocked within.

He immediately sent a piece of his consciousness into the virtual universe network, sending a letter to his teacher True Yan Emperor, telling him everything about him acquiring the flame void gold and the rewards choices etc, naturally he explained the

entire process...because he felt that Sky feather emperor was incredibly friendly.

After awhile, he received a reply from his teacher.

Luo Feng opened it to look...

"Your teacher had once saved Sky feather's life, however very few in the universe know about this. Don't spread it...Reputation is very important to Sky feather emperor. If you respect him, he will return it 10 fold."

"Teacher, you are vicious!"

Luo Feng starred.

So it was that way, normally the more proud a person was, the more he couldn't owe debts. What's more, the debt of having his life saved by another?

"This teacher of mine is explosive and straightforward, I heard he's offended many. He even told me to be careful and prudent when I become domain lord level and become a governor of a territory. However from the looks of it now...even though he indeed has enemies, he also has friends all around. And very powerful friends." Luo Feng sighed and smiled.

...

Time passed, after 3 months, the universe ship finally entered the primal region.

After the ship went through universe transfer and re entered the actual universe, it flew for half a day before reaching the core living area of the primal region geniuses.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, ahead lies the 113 villas where the geniuses live." A tall and sturdy man with 3 pairs of silver wings pointed ahead, the external simulation also allowed Luo Feng to see the distant 136 stars.

The enormous 136 stars revolved constantly in the space, it was incredibly mysterious.

Luo Feng watched on, suddenly the image of the leader of Tian Shi palace demonstrating the 9 black flame planets and the space laws appeared in his mind.

"It’s quite similar." Luo Feng felt the movement of the 136 stars revolving, feeling them resonate with the wonders of the space laws.

"These 136 stars, naturally form their own space, the geniuses that live here are incredibly safe. Even universe country leader level warriors have no way to barge into this space." The silver winged man laughed and explained, "This is also something the virtual universe company has spent a countless amount of energy and resources to prepare for its later generation."

Luo Feng was shocked within.

136 planets, forming their own space?

Chapter 604: Luo Feng's Plan

The 136 planets in space revolved ever so mysteriously about, it weaved through the 2 greatest laws of the universe...Time and space, allowing just these 136 planets to exist in their own time and space altogether, even though they were visible to the naked eye, in truth, what the eye could see was simply an illusion.

Rumble...The space rippled, a beautiful gold 1,000m long universe ship appeared in mid air.

"Thank you all, and help me thank Lord Sky Feather emperor too!"

At the cabin door of another universe ship, Luo Feng bid goodbye to the silver winged man and the others, after which he became a beam of light and flew towards the completely gold universe ship.

The 2 ships were over 10,000 km apart.

With a breath, Luo Feng had already reached that beautiful golden ship's entrance, there stood 3 powerful warriors giving off amazing energies, Luo Feng only recognized one of them...the bald man Dylan!

"Your majesty!" Dylan shouted.

"Dylan." Luo Feng smiled and nodded.

"Your majesty Luo Feng, welcome to the primal region's 9th space." One of the other 2 undyings, with silver long hair and silver eyes, the beautiful barefoot lady smiled, "The 9th space is also named the Black Period space, it's the place where all the geniuses stay. Please enter the ship...we'll send you to your living quarters."

Luo Feng smiled and nodded, entering the ship.

This ship was specially used just for welcoming and sending, hence the design and interior were all extravagant and luxurious, the level of luxury was something that couldn't be seen amongst the normal wealthy in the universe, and people like Luo Feng who've had seen the inheritance memories, seen the treasure trove, only they could understand how luxurious the design and interior of the ship was.

Within the welcoming hall of the ship.

Luo Feng and the others stood there, looking at the external simulation.

Rumble!

The ship activated and quickly flew through the 9th space.

"Ah?" Luo Feng was shocked to realize, before, he could only see the constantly moving 136 planets, however when the ship began to enter this space, Luo Feng could clearly see...these 136 planets were revolving within this space, and at the center of them all was

an incredibly glaring enormous continent!

This floating continent had many beautiful palaces.

"How mysterious." Luo Feng exclaimed.

"This is called Black period space, that huge floating continent is also called black period continent." The silver eyed lady smiled and explained, "From the outside world, we can only see the 136 planets. One would be unable to see the most important black period continent...all of the geniuses stay on that continent."

"Of course!"

"This space, the construction that cost the most came from the 136 black period planets." The silver eyed lady smiled and explained, "Those 136 planets are all man made, they are all formed from the virtual universe company spending huge amounts of wealth and treasures to construct, after all the many generations of geniuses stay here, their safety is extremely important, we need to prevent the warriors from other races barging in here to kill them."

Luo Feng held his breath.

Man made planets? This wasn't too hard.

But something that the virtual universe company regards as a huge amount? That was crazy.

"These 136 black period planets automatically revolve and form this area's space." The silver eyed lady had a sense of pride on her face, "Anyone who tries to attack and barge in, will be blocked by the space here, all attacks would be deflected towards the 136 planets and dispersed! An undying's attack has completely no effect on this space, even a group of universe country leaders has no chance of getting in here."

Luo Feng was shocked when he heard.

The strength of the virtual universe company, as his own strength and position rises, interacting more with others, he slowly got a clearer idea of just how powerful they were.

Like the powerful beast god from blood river continent, didn't it finally fall too? Wasn't the entire blood river continent under surveillance?

Like demon mountain, the demon note inheritance was indeed very powerful. However, the powerful ancient being that left it behind, didn't he too back off against the virtual universe company?

The many universe secret regions, all taken over!

Humanity, was still one of the pinnacle races of the universe! As one of the 5 great leviathans of humanity, the virtual universe company was indeed an unbelievable power.

...

The primal region's 9th space black period continent was extremely vast, every genius had close to 1 million km in area. Naturally, Dylan's guard team stayed on Luo Feng's territory with him.

As Luo Feng entered the area, he sent a thread of his consciousness into the virtual universe.

Virtual universe, Yu Xiang mountain primal region, Luo Feng's training grounds.

"Rise!"

Luo Feng stood in the vast training grounds, behind him the dark golden long rod shot out countless gold lights, simultaneously Luo Feng controlled his spirit energy to an unbelievable level, as a spirit reader controller whose spirit energy amplitude had reached over 3200, using the Nan Shen Armament was much easier than before.

Rumble!

The surrounding sky and land changed, it became an endless blade world.

"Condense!" Luo Feng said softly.

Immediately, a thread of condensed blade energy swiftly formed before him, after which it dispersed and simultaneously 500m away, another formed there, after it successfully formed, it dispersed. Then, 1km away, another formed.

Within the blade world area, threads of blade energy condensed throughout before dispersing.

Blade energy, omnipresent!

The blade world's 2nd level...Omnipresence!

"Haha..." Luo Feng smiled, immediately the blade world dispersed and countless gold lights swiftly returned to the dark golden long rod on his back.

"12 years in demon note mountain, even though my law comprehension has improved quite a bit, it's still not enough for me to reach the omnipresence level of the blade world!" Luo Feng was happy within, "With my spirit energy amplitude over 3,200, it's 32 times the normal limit of 100! This 32 times of spirit energy is the only reason I can easily reach the level of omnipresence."

"If I go attempt the 8th level of the heavenly bridge, I can probably succeed already." Luo Feng thought.

Currently, there was only Fei Tuo, the one universe level genius

who had passed the 8th level of the heavenly bridge. And he had just come back from demon note mountain...the fact that the slot of the demon note inheritance was stolen made it really bad timing for him to attempt the bridge, as everybody would immediately know if he passed the 8th level.

Also!

Just because he had the strength to pass the 8th level didn't mean he should immediately attempt it. Even with enough strength, passing both the 8th, and 9th consecutively would be better. Just like how the wolfman Ke Luo Fu had the strength to pass the 8th level but never once rushed to attempt it.

"To the study!"

Luo Feng swiftly left the training grounds and became a beam of light, entering his study through the balcony.

Sitting before his desk, he looked at his laptop, flipping through some dangerous level missions, impossible level missions and their information. As a primal region member, the authority he had to search was much higher than before...before, he couldn't see much of the secret information, right now much more was available to him.

"I can only take 10 missions every 100 years."

"And the 100 years here refers to the 100 years in between the

qualification battles." Luo Feng thought, "After the battles, within the next 100 years, I can at most take on another 10 missions. Hm, after these 10 missions...I think my core would have broken through to sector lord level. When that time comes...my earth body will break through to domain lord level!"

To Luo Feng, the earth body could break through to domain lord level at any time! However the moment he broke through...he would be sent out by the virtual universe company, they would normally be placed as governors in their own universe countries. Even though there were many benefits to have such power, however the special privilege of the universe level geniuses of taking missions would no longer be there.

Staying in the universe level?

Luo Feng had never ever considered staying as long as the others.

"With the golden horned beast's evolution speed, I have no need to drag it out." Luo Feng thought, "And the comprehension of origin laws is easiest during the sector lord level! The moment the golden horned beast breaks through to sector lord, my law comprehension speed will explode and rise extremely quickly..."

Sector lord level was the easiest period of time to study the laws.

In the vast universe, normal domain lords who comprehended the laws were already considered not bad geniuses.

However Sector lords were able to comprehend the laws, that was a natural order of things. Even in the black dragon mountain starfield, within those tiny little starfields, there were many sector lords who have been recognized by the laws themselves. Needless to say...the sector lord comprehension speed was indeed very fast!

Sector lords comprehension of the laws, that too had many beneficial conditions, this was also why the time sector lord chose to stay at that level for so long, with no rush to break through to undying.

Hence...

The moment Luo Feng stepped into the sector lord period, that was truly his time to explode.

Obviously with the internal world constantly swallowing metal and evolving, he was only about 60 to 70 years away from reaching the sector lord level.

"Hm!" There are a total of 6 dangerous level missions within the primal region, I'll finish them in one breath." Luo Feng was very confident, with the e9 laser gun and the mosha body, golden horned beast...completing the dangerous level missions was definitely no problem unless he chose to find danger himself.

"Once the dangerous level missions are done, I'll do the impossible levels after!"

"However!"

"There may be some special encounters within these missions, however every one of these encounters may be extremely dangerous. The last time I was lucky enough in demon note mountain...the next time may not be so." Luo Feng warned himself within, he had to act according to his strength and not be blinded by his greed.

Luo Feng had accepted the impossible level mission before, hence he was very clear there were a total of 18 of them.

Within the secret regions of the virtual universe company, there were a total of 4 of them, of which 2 were in the primal region.

1 was the 1st of the missions, Purgatory Abyss, the reward for the mission was 1 million points, highest of the lot, similarly it was the most difficult one.

The other was the 6th mission Confusion Galaxy, it's reward was 500,000 points, a bit more dangerous than demon mountain.

"Within the next 10 years!"

"I'll first complete the 6 dangerous level missions and then go on to the impossible level mission Confusion galaxy, that's only slightly more dangerous than demon mountain." Luo Feng sat in his study and clearly made his plan, "After this series of missions my strength should rise by quite a bit. The best time to attempt

Purgatory abyss would be when the golden horned beast and the mosha clansman breaks through to the sector lord level, I'll attempt the hardest mission then."

Luo Feng nodded.

Once all these were complete, that would be the time he would be sent out to be a governor by the virtual universe company.

Chapter 605: Unexpected News

Luo Feng's method of doing things was very straightforward, once he decided on a path, naturally he didn't waste more time. He immediately applied that day for the dangerous level mission.

The many dangerous level missions, Luo Feng completed them one after another.

6 dangerous level missions, all within the primal region, hence the amount of time wasted sitting in the ships was shorter, he swiftly completed them at different speeds, these 6 dangerous level missions, Luo Feng discovered traces of big secrets from 2 of them.

It couldn't be helped!

The dangers were too much!

These 2 dangerous level mission worlds, one was Waze planet and the other was Ancient God shrine, Luo Feng found traces of big secrets and carefully went to investigate.

The most mysterious and important Ancestor god tomb on Waze planet was guarded by a large group of undyings, it scared Luo feng so much he didn't even dare go near it, lest he was discovered by any of the undyings. No matter how much he struggled...with the domain lord level 9 golden horned beast, an undying would still probably kill him in one strike.

The outermost dangers of Ancient god tomb were low, it made Luo Feng easily complete the mission requirements, however the big secret within, as Luo Feng investigated had many dangers lying within.

Luo Feng later used the mosha clansman to carefully invade and search.

The mosha clansman's natural ability of cloning was indeed very heavenly, just using that one move, Luo Feng's main body stayed outside while the mosha body would enter the danger zones, almost like looking for food before the tiger's mouth, there he managed to obtain an extremely valuable peculiar Artery leaf that's worth was no less than the Flame void gold.

This leaf was called the Purple 100 net leaf, it had many special uses. The best usage was to feed it to an undying level plant life form, it normally auctioned for 2 million mixed elements.

Of course, it was extremely dangerous and risky for him to acquire that one single leaf, Luo Feng was afraid of stirring up more trouble, hence he immediately left the ancient god tomb.

A total of 3 years and 6 months, he finished all 6 dangerous level missions, discovering just the tip of 2 huge secrets within, he acquired a total of 95,000 in points and a purple 100 net leaf.

...

The more benefits one got from the missions, the more one began to feel greed and ambition within.

As he had worked hard to finish the 6 dangerous level missions, however that was still only worth 95,000 in points! Even at the highest exchange rate...1 mixed element for 1 point, that was akin to only 95,000 mixed elements. However just one big encounter alone, acquiring the purple 100 net leaf, that was worth about 2 million mixed elements!

Enough to buy a few black dragon mountain star fields!

"Luo Feng, big earnings!!! The purple 100 net leaf was something your teacher wanted to buy back then, but couldn't find a place to buy, when the cloud contact vine evolves to undying, letting it eat it will make its power surge! If the cloud contact vine eats it at sector lord pinnacle level, there's 10% chance it'll break through to undying!" Babata was extremely excited, "The reason why the probability isn't high is because the purple 100 net leaf's effect is mainly change the structure of the body."

...

After finishing the 6 dangerous level missions, Luo Feng rested for about 3 months, before he began his impossible level mission, Confusion galaxy!

Any primal region member could at most take up to 3 impossible level missions, Luo Feng had already done the demon mountain mission, hence he was left with 2 more, according to his plan, he

was to first take the easier Confusion galaxy. Saying it was lower in difficulty was naturally in comparison to the hardest impossible level mission, Purgatory abyss.

Purgatory abyss, that was simply too dangerous.

The death rate of the impossible level missions were 90%, however the purgatory abyss had a percentage of 99%! Hence over the many generations of geniuses...very few actually attempted it.

Even one as confident as Luo Feng.

He decided to wait till the Mosha clansman and the golden horned beast reached the sector lord level before he would attempt it!

...

Confusion galaxy, this was a small region within the vast primal region, it was about the size of the milky way.

The mission in confusion galaxy was very simple, a search mission.

1, to find 39 crystal stones, (Details of the stone were in the attachment.) Reward 500,000 points.

A simple search mission.

Actually, the requests for the impossible level missions were all very simple, some as simple as survival, others a search mission. However, in the dangerous level missions and the difficult level missions, the requests often seen in them were hunting, requested slaughter for items, they encouraged killing more.

"In the impossible level missions, if one still dared to kill openly, that was simply suicide."

Luo Feng carefully began his impossible level mission ... Confusion galaxy!

Confusion galaxy, just like its name was a super maze itself, because it was about the size of the milky way, it was much bigger than demon mountain, even undyings would spend 100,000 years and only have walked a portion of the maze.

A very mysterious place.

The secrets it held, according to what Luo Feng investigated, shouldn't just be one!

He spent a total of 5 years and 7 months before he finally collected the 39 stones, completing the mission. However he wasn't in a rush to leave...but he hid his core and body in a safe place and allowed the Mosha clansman to investigate the dangerous locations. The mosha clansman had the ability to transform into anything and was very suitable for recon.

It had been close to 11 years since Luo Feng finished the demon mountain mission and acquired the demon note inheritance.

Virtual universe, Black dragon mountain island, 9 star bay.

"I don’t believe that I can't find the big secret and encounter of Confusion galaxy! My body is currently in the automaton ship and stopped in a safe place in the outer regions of confusion galaxy, the mosha clansman is deep in the galaxy searching some secret places, if I can't find it in 1 year, I ‘ll use 10 years, if that doesn’t work, I’ll use 50 years!" Luo Feng walked along the quiet pathway, pondering on his situation on confusion galaxy.

Confusion galaxy was indeed a maze.

It was also filled with dangers all about!

The Mosha clansman thus lost its life 6 times, however, Luo Feng simply had to use some energy everytime and reform the body in his internal world. As long as the main core was fine, his 3 bodies wouldn’t die.

"Thirdie, Thirdie!" Thunder god’s anxious voice resounded, "You’ve finally come."

"2nd brother, why the rush in meeting me." Luo Feng smiled and gazed in the distance, there a white robed bald thunder god was rushing over.

"What's the matter, your mail to me said it was an extremely urgent matter. It scared me so much I came here immediately." Luo Feng smiled and walked towards thunder god, the 2 walked in the pathway and quickly entered the yard beside.

"It's truly an urgent matter." Thunder god's expression revealed that of worry.

"Speak!" Luo Feng sat on a chair in the yard.

"It's concerning big brother!" Thunder god said.

"Big brother?" Luo Feng was shocked.

In terms of fixing problems and dealing with matters and people, Luo Feng was extremely respectful of his big brother Hong. From his point of view...even if thunder god or himself made a mess of things, Hong wasn't the type to create such trouble.

"Speak, what's going on?" Luo Feng's expression grew serious.

His big brother was the type to not have any problems for an extremely long time, however the moment there was something, it would probably be something huge!

"It's sounds like a joke when said." Thunder god shook his head and sighed, "Right, you should know that big brother has been the

Ganwu universe country the past 10 plus years right."

"I know."Luo Feng nodded.

When he was participating in the qualification battles, his big brother had already returned to the Ganwu universe country with his teacher the time sector lord Luo.

"These 10 years he's been stationed here within the Ganwu universe country, he was in one of the 9 great 1st class administrative planets, the Jade dome planet." Thunder god said, "But who would have thought that because he was stationed there, he would actually develop feelings for a girl there."

"Are you joking?" Luo Feng was startled.

His big brother Hong had a relationship with a girl?

During the great nirvana period, Hong's wife had already passed away, even with her early death...he brought up his 2 daughters alone.

With his status and power on earth, who knows just how many women wanted to marry him, what type of woman has he not seen? What's more...with his mental state level, at that absolute level, for a girl to actually make him fall in love with, that was simply an unbelievable thing.

This was simply an extremely rare occurrence!

"I’m not too clear myself, but it’s a fact." Thunder god exclaimed, "You should know big brother’s character, the moment he decides on something, even everybody in the world or universe objects, it wouldn’t affect him one bit."

Luo Feng nodded.

Many illusions couldn’t even affect his own beliefs, much less Hong.

"After Hong and that girl began their relationship, something happened... Jade dome planet, as one of the 9 great administrative planets, was a powerful and luxurious gathering location. Just the number of families with undyings stationed there range over the hundreds." Thunder god frowned, "And this girl’s background is huge, her family forcefully denied Hong from being together with her."

"What joke is this?" Luo Feng questioned.

Cowherd and the Weaving maid?

In the universe, even within those super families that were high up normally didn’t care much about relationships below.

The opposite.

If one met an absolute warrior, they would rather send their daughter to marry. Because the bloodline of a strong warrior... would normally be powerful. This resulted in the universe's powerful men marrying many women, and the powerful women marrying many men! Unless there were special circumstances...

Like, an undying suddenly falling for a girl, and declaring he liked her. Therefore, because of fear for this undying, the family would naturally stop the girl from being with others.

However these sort of situations were extremely rare.

"Why did they stop them?" Luo Feng asked suspiciously, "Has some powerful being fallen for the girl?"

"No." Thunder god shook his head, "I didn't find such a level of problem, Big brother didn't say himself either, it's purely the family stopping them."

Luo Feng frowned, "I understand what you mean, you are saying...there's no other obstructing force, simply just that the family doesn't want them together?"

"Right!" Thunder god nodded.

"What's the reason?" Luo Feng asked.

"No idea." Thunder god shook his head, "That girl's family doesn't want to give us an explanation."

"What family is it? Who’s the undying behind the family? Tell me." Luo Feng frowned and prepared to investigate properly, since this matter involved his big brother Hong, he had to help no matter what.

Chapter 606: Luo Feng's Decision

"I really don't know." Thunder god shook his head, "I want to help big brother, but big brother only talks a little about it when we drink and he's frustrated. Afterall our path together, we aren't real brothers but are akin to one, and when I actually questioned him in detail about it, he wasn't willing to say."

Luo Feng frowned.

"I'll look for him." Luo Feng gently tapped the air before him, there a screen appeared, Luo Feng tapped and sent a mail to his big brother."

After a while.

A simply dressed Hong in black walked over, smiling as he said, "You are both here, 3rd brother, why the rush in looking for me?"

"Big brother, sit." Luo Feng said.

Thunder god stared at Hong.

Hong looked at their expressions and frowned, while he sat, he said, "3rd brother, you know too?"

"Hm!" Luo Feng nodded, looking very seriously at Hong, "Big brother, you are serious?"

"Hm." Hong nodded without any sense of hesitation.

When one reached Hong’s level of mental state, he saw through things extremely clearly.

"Haha, I never expected there to be a woman capable enough to attract big brother in the entire universe, I really want to meet this woman and see what magic she has." Luo feng smiled and said, of course as Hong nodded, he understood immediately...Hong seemed to have truly fallen in love.

As to why and how that woman attracted Hong and how their relationship began, these were things that Luo Feng definitely didn’t pursue.

"Is the problem big?" Luo Feng looked at his big brother.

"Somewhat." Hong seemed to frown a little.

"Big brother, tell me what family it is and who the undying behind the family is?" Luo Feng looked at Hong, "Tell me the situation and I’ll help you."

Hong looked at Luo Feng.

Luo Feng looked at Hong too.

"I'll have to trouble you this time now 3rd brother." Hong didn't reject either, the 3 were all outstanding individuals, even Luo Feng whose mental state was the lowest between the 3 had long reached a state where he saw through things clearly...they were straightforward in almost anything they did and couldn't care less with the formalities.

And they all understood each other's thoughts.

"The family is the Jishi family, it's one of the 300 aristocrat families of the Ganwu universe country, the girl is called Ji Qing." Hong said directly.

Luo Feng nodded.

He immediately opened a screen that floated before him, beside, Hong and Thunder god looked at it.

"Search!" Luo Feng entered the Jishi family of the 300 aristocrat families in the Ganwu universe, the undying being and information on Ji Qing.

With Luo feng's authority as a primal region member, the amount of information he was able to pull up was extremely detailed.

Hua!

Many articles and lots of information immediately appeared on

the screen, they covered the screen completely.

"Ah, why can't we see all this?" Thunder god asked curiously.

"Amongst the information here, there are parts which are confidential, hence you all can't pull up such information." Luo Feng laughed, "These are also part of the authority barriers of the virtual universe network." While he said so, Luo Feng gently tapped the article right at the top.

Once he opened it.

It was a compiled list of information according to Luo Feng's search on undying within the Jishi family.

"Ah?" Luo Feng revealed a look of shock the moment he opened it.

"What's the matter?" Thunder god asked, Hong's eyes too were filled with anticipation.

"The authority required for the information here isn't high, I can tell you here in the virtual universe." Luo Feng laughed and said, "You all should know that there are a total of over 13,000 star fields in the ganwu universe country, just the undyings under the country leader alone range in the tens of thousands. Of which there are some with great contributions and are powerful, those naturally have been given the titles Official and Emperor!"

A country level emperor or official was completely different from an official or emperor level undying.

Like some beginning level universe civilizations, the strongest may only be a universe level, however they are still emperors, or princes etc.

Hence...

Being an emperor or official of a small country wasn't worth it, being one in a universe country was much bigger. Like the virtual universe company and Huge axe dojo, their emperors are the true pinnacles of strength and wealth!

Like True Yan emperor, he was at the emperor level!

However, he was much, much higher in position compared to the emperors of the Ganwu universe country!

An official or emperor level undying, was something only the super powers like the huge axe dojo or virtual universe company could bestow! What's more...amongst the many universe countries, a lot of them didn't have any emperor level undyings.

"The Ganwu universe country has a total of 32 emperors and 268 officials! Also called the 300 emperor and officials." Luo Feng said, "their power is extremely huge, they are well known amongst the over 10,000 undyings, almost all of them are official level undyings."

Hong and Thunder god listened intently.

"The Ji Shi family, their territory is the Snow border star field, their family ancestor, the 1st ancestor to establish the family name, the undying is called Ji Tian Cang, his Official level name is Silver snow official." Luo Feng said, Silver snow official belongs to the 300 emperor officials, he's one of the longest officials to follow the country leader, he's very well favored by the leader."

As Luo Feng spoke, he began to frown more.

This Ji Shi family wasn't easy to deal with, their background involved the Ganwu universe country leader! Of course...the leader that was high above wouldn't be bothered to mess with this little girl's matters.

"So powerful?" Thunder god muttered.

"Hm." Hong seemed pretty calm.

"Ji Qing." Luo Feng continued, "Universe level 9, a rare absolute genius over countless years, now a core member of the universe mercenary alliance."

"What!" Hong stood up fiercely.

Thunder god stared wide eyed too, he opened his mouth wide, it

took awhile before he actually muttered, "My god!"

The 5 great leviathans of humanity, the virtual universe company and huge axe dojo were slightly stronger, the others, the universe mercenary alliance, universe 1st bank and universe galaxy bank were slightly weaker. However no matter...the 5 were all on equal levels, the core members of the universe mercenary alliance still required absolute super geniuses to enter!

"She actually is..." Hong's expression was complex, he shook his head.

He hadn't joined the core of the huge axe dojo currently, he never expected that the seemingly normal girl he liked was actually a core member of the universe mercenary alliance.

Amongst the 5 leviathans, only the virtual universe company and the huge axe dojo would organize the genius competitions.

Hence, the other 3 powers mostly absorbed geniuses in the dark online, resulting in those absorbed to not have much reputation.

Luo Feng, Hong and Thunder god, the 3 earth brothers sat together.

"I was affected, whether she's a core member of the universe mercenary alliance or not, it has nothing to do with my relationship with her." Hong looked at Luo Feng, "3rd brother, you've seen the information...this Jishi family is stopping my

relationship with Ji Qing, do you have any way to solve this problem?'

"Yes I do." Luo Feng nodded without any hesitation.

"Thanks." Hong's eyes were filled with gratitude.

Luo Feng laughed, "Big brother, you've been helping me these many years, it's now my turn to return the favor, no need for thanks."

In terms of the mental state training, Hong had never once found it troublesome, but simply guiding Luo Feng...

"Haha..." Hong suddenly laughed.

Because deep within, Hong always remembered his 1st meeting with Luo Feng back then, his age was probably even older than Luo Feng's grandfather, hence within, he always felt like he was caring for his younger little brother from a later generation, his doing so was a completely natural inclination, he had never once thought of Luo Feng reciprocating.

...

Yu Xiang mountain, within Luo Feng's primal region villa.

Luo Feng quietly sat before his desk.

"Trouble?" Babata teased, sitting on his shoulder, "Do you feel that the situation is troublesome now?"

"What trouble, big brother has never once asked for my help before, with his personality, for him to actually ask this time...no matter what, I have to do something!" Luo Feng smiled, "What's more, this matter to me, is indeed not too difficult, it only requires me to make a choice."

"Choice?" Babata was curious.

"Hm."

"I have 2 ways to solve this problem now." Luo Feng said, "The 1st, is to ask my teacher True Yan! With his status...even the Ganwu universe country has to show him respect, that Silver snow official naturally wouldn't dare act any less, as long as the problem isn't too huge, the moment my teacher appears, the issue would be solved."

This was the easiest and most direct method.

However...

Luo Feng didn't wish to trouble his teacher every time, his teacher was indeed protective and partial to him, and he had never once asked his teacher for help before, occasionally asking...Luo Feng believed, his teacher wouldn't reject.

However, within, Luo Feng felt that unless there was truly no other choice, otherwise it was best not to trouble his teacher.

"The 2nd?" Babata asked.

"The 2nd is for me to break through to the domain lord level now!" Luo Feng said, "The moment I breakthrough, I will immediately be sent out as a governor by the virtual universe company, and in my home place the Ganwu universe country. According to the rules...I'll be within the virtual universe company's Ganwu department's upper echelon, one with the highest level of authority. As the bridge between the virtual universe company and the Ganwu universe country...the moment I take on the position, the group of undyings in the Ganwu universe country, those with power will still all have to respect me! Showing respect to the virtual universe company!"

Luo Feng was a primal region member with extremely high authority.

When a primal region member was sent out, the governor position he took on was extremely high.

Because within the virtual universe company, the primal region member position was akin to an official level undying, the governor position too...reflected this, naturally he would be amongst the highest in authority within the upper echelons of the Ganwu universe country's department.

"Are you ready to breakthrough?" Babata was shocked, "Werent you intending to attempt the purgatory abyss before breaking through?"

"Hence, I'm pondering!"

Luo Feng frowned as he sat at his desk and pondered.

Actually, there was a 3rd method...that was for him to go meet the silver snow official Ji Tian Cang in the virtual universe now. However he was after all only a universe level primal region member...and the percentage of primal region members falling was extremely high, only few actually become undying. Even if they did become undying, they would normally only become official level undying, only very rarely would an emperor level undying appear.

Ji Tian Cang was an official level undying, existing for trillions of years, an old official highly respected and favored by the Ganwu universe country leader.

To a small kid like Luo Feng...to a kid that may fall at any time, plus this kid didn't have anyway to influence him, he would at most treat him with some respect...however with regards to the problem, he probably wouldn't give way!

"There's no guarantee in the 3rd method."

"The 1st method has the highest guarantee, Teacher True Yan

emperor can befriend the universe country leader and is among the upper echelon of the virtual universe company. The moment he appears, that Silver snow official wouldn't dare deny him."

"The 2nd method, I'll become a governor and when that happens, I'll have huge power, I'll represent the virtual universe company, my words will be much heavier than before!"

Luo Feng frowned.

"However the 2nd method would mean I'd have to give up the purgatory abyss."

"Purgatory abyss!"

"The confusion galaxy's big secret is definitely there, it's just that I haven't found it. Purgatory abyss is the top mission, the secret is definitely even bigger!"

Suddenly, the image of Ke Luo Fu's situation popped up in Luo Feng's mind, his expression couldn't help but change slightly, sweat beaded down his forehead, he had unknowingly been affected by his own greed. From the 6 dangerous level missions before, he had surprisingly acquired the Purple 100 net leaf.

Hence he had been unwilling to give up on Confusion galaxy.

Luckily he had the Mosha clansman to go explore, so even though he had died several times, he was still able to revive it.

"Purgatory abyss is the top mission, if i'm too overconfident, I'll probably die there too." Luo Feng took a deep breath, "When it's time to step back, I have to step back, always chasing my limits... may not always be a good thing."

"What's more, even if I completed the purgatory abyss mission, I'll only get 1 million points. The 1 purple 100 net leaf I acquired before and that flame void gold far exceeds that worth."

"I'll give it up!"

"I'll give up the final purgatory abyss mission and get ready to breakthrough to the domain lord level!" Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

He suddenly felt like giving up at certain times had its own rewards.

...

"Teacher!"

Luo Feng stood before the screen, on it was his teacher True Yan emperor.

"What's the matter?" True Yan smiled and looked at Luo Feng.

"Teacher, I feel like I can breakthrough to the domain lord level

at any time, do you think that it's better for me to stay in the universe level or enter the domain lord level." Luo Feng looked at True Yan emperor, even though he had made a decision, it was better to hear what his teacher thought.

"Ah? You feel like you can breakthrough already?" True Yan revealed a look of glee, laughing loudly, "Is there a need to say, of course you should breakthrough! The path of training, there's time to be prudent and cautious, and other times to be brave and courageous, naturally this time you should push forward! Cutting past all obstructions! What's the point of staying in the universe level for thousands of years like those seniors? Break into the domain lord level...then you'll be competing against the domain lord level geniuses, the pressure will be higher, those are the truly valuable battles!"

Luo Feng's eyes gleamed.

"Move forward!"

"You must have a heart of always pushing forward! What's more...sector lord level is the time where your origin law comprehension will improve the fastest! Whatever you are doing now is only little stuff. The sector lord battles are the most brutal." True Yan emperor looked at Luo Feng, "You should have finished 2 impossible level missions currently, with 1 last chance for 1 more right? What's the difference if you miss one? If you lack points in the future...your teacher will use money to exchange for points and give you. The point rewards of an impossible level mission, isn't worth much to me."

Even at the highest exchange rate, 1 million points represented 1 million mixed elements.

To an absolute being like True Yan Emperor, he indeed wouldn’t care.

Didn’t Sky feather emperor just simply throw out a piece of the flame void gold?

"A heart of always looking forward?"

"I’m only doing the little stuff now?" Luo Feng realized as he smiled at his teacher on the screen, replying respectfully, "Understood, Teacher. I’ll break through to the domain lord level now!"

"Go on!"

"Go explore the starfields, that’s the true place for the strong. Always staying under the protection of the virtual universe company, you won't ever grow." True Yan laughed on the screen.

"Hm."

Luo Feng nodded.